



# MARTIAL WORLD

BOOK 07

*Cocooned Cow*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Martial World

(Wuji Tianxia)

(武极天下)

by

Cocooned Cow

(蚕茧里的牛)

# Synopsis

---

In the Realm of the Gods, countless legends fought over a mysterious cube. However, after the battle it disappeared into the void. Lin Ming stumbles upon this mysterious cube and begins his journey to become the hero of the land.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Hyorinmaru @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601 – Saber Light Domain

---

For a time, every martial artist's eyes turned onto Maha!

Maha coldly snorted, "It's like you believe you're invincible!"

He moved. Crossing hundreds of feet with a single step, Maha arrived directly atop the arena stage.

"You killed Kai Yang, now you think you've already won against me?" Maha's mouth twisted. He couldn't help but acknowledge Lin Ming's soul defense abilities. He had actually even resisted the Emperor Will!

However, none of this mattered to him. Maha was a Giant Demon martial artist. His main form of combat had always been and would always be related to violent and close-combat fighting. Soul attacks were primarily the domain of the Imps.

He extracted the long saber from his back. Maha's saber blade was seven feet long, and in addition to the hilt, this weapon was as long as an adult male. The saber ridge was three feet thick, and the weapon itself weighed no less than several tens of thousands of jins. Giant Demon martial artists generally loved using heavy weaponry like this.

"Words are useless, let's fight!"

Lin Ming snapped the Purple Comet Spear in his hand. On the

spearpoint, electricity sparkled.

Maha gripped his saber with both hands. Clouds of demon essence began to gather around him. With a cut of his saber, saber energy swept out, and wherever it went, tiles would turn into ash before vanishing to nothing!

### Concept of Annihilation!

Compared to Xing Tian, Maha's Concept of Annihilation was several times stronger. With just the saber wind, tiles were destroyed, and even large areas were carved out of the hardened metal ground of the stage that was supported with array formations!

The saber wind blew through the arena. Luckily, all of the surrounding martial artists were masters in their own right. They quickly summoned their bodily demon essence protection to resist this saber wind attack. But as soon as this demon essence touched Maha's saber energy, it would rapidly melt away!

“Terrifying!”

“Even the aftermath shockwaves are like this. A direct hit must be horrifying!”

Lin Ming also felt the pressure of the Concept of Annihilation. He wasn't a stranger to the Concept of Annihilation. Without a doubt, Skysplit Tower had areas where one could perceive the Concept of

Annihilation. Xing Tian and Maha must have comprehended their Concept of Annihilation at this area.

Heretical God Force – open!

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

A spear thrust out and Blood Drinking Seals twisted in circles as they flew, smashing against the Concept of Annihilation in a furious confrontation as it released screeching, bone-aching sounds.

Kacha!

The saber light and spear light simultaneously exploded. Lin Ming gently floated upwards from the force.

Easily breaking apart the Concept of Annihilation, Lin Ming didn't even break a sweat. His expression was calm and his breath was even. Although everyone had expected that Maha's saber strike wouldn't be able to do much to Lin Ming, it was still startling to see him block it so smoothly.

The Concept of Annihilation was not an ordinary Concept, but one of the highest order.

“No need to test the waters. Come at me with everything you have!”

Lin Ming lightly landed, his spear pointed straight at Maha.

“Insolence!” Maha’s eyes flashed with a cold light. “Since that’s what you want, let me help you!”

Maha held his saber against his chest as his demon essence erupted to the limit. In this light, all of the muscles on his body bulged, his veins sticking up like blue worms. A black light enveloped Maha and then instantly expanded to 100 feet. Wherever this light covered, countless saber lights shimmered. Every saber light contained the Concept of Annihilation.

“This is the Saber Light Domain!”

“Maha’s signature move!”

The Saber Light Domain was a style that emerged from the Holy Demon Continent’s western regions. This was a move that used an extremely thick true essence to create countless saber energies. Normally, when a martial artist sent out saber energies, they would need to use them to attack. Regardless of what situation it was, the saber energies needed to be set free, where they would then transform into destructive power.

But the Saber Light Domain that Maha used just now was actually able to gather these saber energies and ensure that they didn’t disperse, instead endlessly enveloping their body. This was a technique that was both offensive and defensive. If a martial artist were to step into this Saber Light Domain, then they would be



directly cut into pieces!

The most powerful point of the Saber Light Domain was that every time Maha used a saber strike, that strike would then fuse into the Saber Light Domain. This meant that the Saber Light Domain would continue to grow stronger!

Seeing Maha go all out with his maximum strength, all of the martial artists present rubbed their eyes.

This was the true battle!

A great number of Giant Demon martial artists began cheering for Maha. This Maha who could use the Saber Light Domain was simply a massive living meat grinder; just who would be able to defend against this?

Not just that, but in comparison to the Saber Light Domain's amazing attack power, its defensive power was even more terrifying. Within the countless and endless Saber Light Domain, any attack that entered would be completely minced to pieces!

“Ho-!”

Maha slashed out with his saber. Near him, countless saber lights were affected by the force of this saber strike. As his saber cut out, saber energies crazily flew out!

This Saber Light Domain had fused in the Concept of

Annihilation. The Saber Light Domain's essence was that it could cut anything within it to pieces. Now with the Concept of Annihilation added on, its destructive power could be imagined!

Lin Ming's expression was finally sincere. All of those that held the famous title of Heavenly Demon Seven Star had true ability. Even the weaker Kai Yang was no exception. If he hadn't ran out of luck and bumped into someone with such an abnormal soul defense, then things would have been different.

But now, the Maha in front of him was even more powerful than Kai Yang!

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to 90%. Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear, the sharp point flashing with sparkling thunder and thick arcs of electricity waving around it like dancing pythons.

Chasing Thunder!

Pouring all of his will and potential into the Purple Comet Spear, this was a killing strike created from the fusion of the Concept of Thunder and the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'!

Lin Ming became one with his spear, turning into a bolt of lightning that howled forth, impacting straight into the Saber Light Domain!

Frontal collision!

It wasn't just the people watching the battle, but even Maha was greatly shocked. The Saber Light Domain could crush and cut everything! When the average person faced this ability, they would retreat and use long distance attacks, slowly consuming the strength of the Saber Light Domain bit by bit.

How could anyone think of directly rushing in!

Chi-la!

Radiant thunder light filled the entire arena. Even the impregnable Saber Light Domain was directly pierced through by this impossibly keen spear light!

Then, the countless saber lights within the domain twined together with the spear light, sending out a series of crackling sounds. Saber light was constantly being broken by the power of thunder! But, the power of thunder was also weakening at the same time!

In this split-second, before the audience even had time to respond, Lin Ming had turned into a bolt of lightning and arrived right in front of Maha!

“Humph! Anyone that rushes in has a death wish!”

Maha roared. Both hands gripped his saber as he slashed down at Lin Ming!

“Mountain Shattering Strike!”

Maha’s Mountain Shattering Strike truly had the ability to split apart a mountain peak. Now, this saber energy transformed into a several dozen foot wide saber light that cut towards Lin Ming!

Such a magnificent and overpowering saber strike caused everyone to be inexplicably frightened.

Kacha!

Countless saber lights broke apart. The bolt of purple lightning that Lin Ming had turned into passed straight through Maha’s Saber Light Domain, breaking straight through the other side!

At the same time, Maha’s saber heavily struck the arena.

Before the tiles came into contact with the blade, all of them were already shattered into fine dust by the saber energy before disappearing without a trace.

The saber light smashed into the metal ground, cutting out a massive 300 foot long fissure in the arena. The entire arena had actually been split in half by Maha’s single saber strike!

The audience felt their blood freezing in their veins. This saber strike was too terrifying!

In the arena, a 100 foot wide and 300 foot long region had been destroyed. The floor tiles there had completely disappeared under the impact of the Concept of Annihilation, and in places further away, they had even turned into sand. Even the hard metal ground that was supported by array formations was cut open, leaving behind shockingly deep cracks.

Everyone's eyes almost turned onto Lin Ming's body at the same time. After Lin Ming penetrated the Saber Light Domain, he only calmly turned around, not a single hair on his head harmed.

As for Maha, his complexion was pale and a trace of blood slowly dripped down his shoulder.

“Maha was injured!”

“Heavens! Even though I was so far from that terrifying saber light I still thought I had been cut apart. But... the one that was injured was actually Maha!”

“That just now should be Lin Ming's ultimate attack. If this continues then he really might be able to win two continuous battles and then challenge Yan Chi! Lin Ming is truly worthy of being called the number one talent of the last 10,000 years!”

“It's not wrong that Lin Ming is strong, but what I don't understand is why although Lin Ming's spear light is extraordinarily fast, it doesn't seem all too terrifying. But on the other hand, Maha's saber light contains the Concept of

Annihilation. You just have to look at the sad state of the arena to see how scary it is. How could it be this result if this two collide?”

The audience wasn't able to understand what had happened. The Concept of Annihilation was known as one of the highest level Concepts, and this reputation was not unearned. Maha had elevated his Concept of Annihilation to this degree, yet when he faced Lin Ming, it was like his Concept of Annihilation was useless.

As Maha looked at Lin Ming, his complexion was ugly. The audience couldn't understand, but he did. In truth, his saber strike just now hadn't even touched Lin Ming!

When his saber cut down, he suddenly had a very strange and weird feeling surrounding him. Then, Lin Ming, in a completely impossible situation, actually managed to escape the path of this saber energy. Lin Ming had only been scratched by some of the aftershocks, but these saber energy aftershocks had been far from being able to break through his protective true essence.

His Mountain Shattering Strike had struck nothing!

“Lin Ming, if you really have the ability then come and break my Saber Light Domain!” Maha tore apart a piece of his clothes that had been ripped by his own spear light, his eyes flashing dangerously at Lin Ming.

“Break your Saber Light Domain?” Lin Ming faintly smiled. Maha's demon essence was condensed to an incomparably thick state, and the Saber Light Domain could grow endlessly as it

contained a terrifying power. Wanting to break it wouldn't be easy.

Lin Ming's cultivation was far inferior to Maha's. Also, Maha was defending while Lin Ming was attacking. The saber light in Maha's domain didn't scatter. After Lin Ming's spear light pierced in, it would be constantly attacked. In this situation it would be an extreme advantage. In this case, if he wanted to crush this saber light with absolute strength then he would most likely need to use the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Lin Ming didn't want to do this. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates was his greatest trump card.

After that exchange of moves, Maha seemed to dread that strange movement of Lin Ming that had dodged his saber attack and proceeded to throw out more saber lights around him, surrounding him even more. This way, his defense would reach the pinnacle.

The Saber Light Domain had always been a marvelous defensive ability. Now that its defensive strength had reached the limit, it was like being protected in an unbreakable golden bell.

Maha had already made his decision. At worst, he would drag this into a battle of attrition. He had full confidence in the amount of demon essence he had as well as his ability to regenerate it.

Lin Ming had already seen through Maha's plans. Battle of attrition? He wasn't afraid of this, but he didn't want to. Skysplit

Tower's third floor was full of enemies everywhere. Lin Ming was inclined to maintain his peak condition as long as possible.

He didn't want to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates nor did he want to start a battle of attrition. His feet began moving, and Lin Ming slowly walked towards Maha, approaching the Saber Light Domain step by step.

What was Lin Ming trying to do?

The audience had no idea.

There wasn't too much protective true essence condensed on Lin Ming's body. But he was walking towards the Saber Light Domain as if he were going to walk directly into it...



# Chapter 602 – Another Killing

---

Use his flesh and blood body to step into the Saber Light Domain?

What a joke!

Such terrifying saber light was also coupled together with the Concept of Annihilation; everything would be crushed upon entry. Generally speaking, a martial artist's bodily true essence protection was the same as scrap paper when faced with these saber lights. Even though Lin Ming's true essence was thick, there was a limit to what it could do. It was impossible for him to depend on his bodily true essence alone to block this storm-like attack.

“What he is doing?”

“He's taking another step forwards... he wants to enter the Saber Light Domain!”

In the special guest section, Feng Shen's eyes were glued onto Lin Ming. He himself had fought with Maha once. When he faced Maha's Saber Light Domain, he didn't have any better method than to delay the battle and slowly whittle the domain away through a battle of attrition.

Now, Maha's strength had obviously risen by another level and his Saber Light Domain became correspondingly more terrifying. To walk into the Saber Light Domain with just their body, even a High Lord would die like this!

Maha also wasn't sure just what Lin Ming was trying to do. He glared at Lin Ming, his true essence revolving to the limit as he said, "If you're trying some trick, then you're looking to die!"

Ca!!

With a step forwards, Maha's saber lights began to stir up strong gusts of wind that covered Lin Ming. "I don't believe that you can block these hundreds and thousands of saber lights!"

In the second that the saber lights were about to pierce Lin Ming's body, Lin Ming lightly caressed his Purple Comet Spear and took a sudden step forwards. The Purple Comet Spear thrust out!

Although this one spear seemed ordinary, an impossible scene suddenly occurred. Lin Ming carried his spear and seemed to pass through space itself, instantly arriving in front of Maha. He had completely ignored the saber lights as if they hadn't even existed!

"What!?!?"

Maha was tremendously shocked!

When Lin Ming had been in the King's Cage, the space storms that he had faced were many times more terrifying and deadly than this Saber Light Domain! By using the power of space within the Saber Light Domain, he had instantly crossed the void

Chasing Sun!

Lin opened up 100% of the Heretical God Force, thrusting his spear forwards!

A brilliantly shining flame combusted in the void like a miniature sun had been birthed within the arena. Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the flame mark there began to issue a radiant light.

By burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, the power of Lin Ming's Chasing Sun had risen to the limit!

“Ahhhhh!”

Maha didn't have time to think about how Lin Ming had passed his spear lights and appeared in front of him. He howled and summoned all the strength within his body, his saber cutting down at Lin Ming.

However... as this saber came cutting down, he suddenly felt everything around him slow down. Those saber lights that were dancing in the air slowed, and even Lin Ming's spear seemed slow.

But this spear, although it was slow, it was actually impossible for him to block or dodge. This was because the speed of his saber had become even slower!

“No!!”

Maha raved like a madman. Demon essence erupted like a volcano within his body, and blood vessels on his arm began to burst open. But, no matter how much of his bodily potential he released, he was unable to break through these shackles of time! He could only stare helplessly as Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear ran right through his throat.

Blood gushed out!

Woosh!

In the next moment, Lin Ming had already left the Saber Light Domain. Behind him, Maha was blankly standing there, his eyes glazed over and fresh blood spraying out from him.

After Killing Kai Yang, Lin Ming had now killed Maha!

Bang!

The thick seven foot long saber fell into the metal floor foundation, breaking it even further. Maha's tall and burly body lost all support, and he plopped onto the floor.

The entire audience was in utter shock.

It could be said that Lin Ming had been able to kill Kai Yang because his specialty was suppressed by Lin Ming. But when he

killed Maha, it had been a true battle under fair circumstances!

Maha was originally ranked third within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Not just that, but after entering the Road of Emperor, his strength had increased astronomically. How could he possibly have died in such a miserable manner?

Lin Ming had only entered the King's Cage, and yet the gains he had made within the King's Cage had far surpassed Maha's gains from the Road of Emperor. Just what sort of abnormally monstrous talent was this!

Also, many martial artists present didn't understand. Just how had Maha died?

What had happened just now?

Maha's Saber Light Domain was a technique that was both offensive and defensive. Its defensive capabilities were especially strong. With the ability to grow endlessly, it could simply be called a perfect defense. But Lin Ming had walked into that Saber Light Domain with just his flesh and blood body, and had somehow instantly passed through space, completely treating the Saber Light Domain as if it were nothing but air.

Then, that spear thrust seemed very ordinary and its speed seemed slow, but for some reason, Maha didn't even have enough time to withdraw his saber and was then killed by Lin Ming!

If this were a normal fight, then people might have even thought that Maha had faked it and lost on purpose. But this was a life and death battle, there was naturally no way he had allowed that to happen.

“Those were the Concepts of Space and Time just now...” In the audience, a martial artist had recognized Lin Ming’s technique.

“That is too terrifying. After reaching the pinnacle in comprehending the Concepts of Space and Time, can Lin Ming actually teleport?”

“It isn’t teleportation. It was only stepping forwards using the Law of Space. We don’t understand this Law, thus it looks like teleportation to us.”

A Fey martial artist explained. As a Fey, he had a somewhat limited understanding into the Concepts of Space in Time. In the ancient legends, it was said that those existences that had reached the utter limits of the Concept of Space, once they touched upon the origin of Space Laws, could actually teleport across vast distances. But, that sort of boundary only existed in the ancient texts. These days, it was unachievable. Not even the Eightfall War Emperor had the ability to do so.

“Aiya! The difference in talent is too great! Each of them had entered into practice areas, but Maha had entered the Road of Emperor and Lin Ming had only entered the King’s Cage. If Lin Ming enters the Road of Emperor in the future, just how strong would he be then?”

Thinking of this, the martial artists present couldn't help but shudder. Killing Kai Yang and then executing Maha, Lin Ming had simply swept away his opposition with absolute force without allowing any of them to resist. Kai Yang's Emperor Will and Maha's Saber Light Domain were completely useless against Lin Ming.

At this moment, a martial artist with a deep voice said, "Don't be an idiot, it's impossible for Lin Ming to have the chance of entering the Road of Emperor. How could the 12 High Lords ever allow that to happen? Isn't that just taking a rock and smashing it against their own feet? The only way would be for Lin Ming to wholeheartedly pledge his loyalty to Skysplit Tower.

None of the martial artists present were fools. They could all see that High Lord Heian had wanted to place Lin Ming in a deathtrap.

"This damn boy, letting him live will only mean disaster for the Blood Slaughter Steppes; it might even mean catastrophe for the Giant Demon and Imp races within the Holy Demon Continent!" In the seat of honor, High Lord Heian traced his ring, his eyes flashing with killing intent.

Lin Ming and the Eightfall War Emperor were too alike. In the King's Cage, everyone's experience was different. Whether it was difficult or the type of cage, it was completely different for each person.

But, Lin Ming and the Eightfall War Emperor had both

comprehended the Concepts of Space and Time within the King's Cage. This sort of chance coincidence caused High Lord Heian to feel fear in his heart.

The Eightfall War Emperor's accomplishments in the Concepts of Space and Time were exceedingly high and he had also reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Because of these factors, no Emperor powerhouse within his same level could even think of offending him.

Now, Lin Ming was also the same. Moreover, what was most horrifying was that the time he stayed within the King's Cage was almost twice that of the Eightfall War Emperor!

If this was allowed to continue, then dozens of years later, as long as Lin Ming didn't die, he would become an Emperor level powerhouse.

And several hundred years from now, Lin Ming would become nearly unrivalled throughout all the lands.

And several thousand years from now, Lin Ming would have a high chance of becoming the number one powerhouse of the entire Holy Demon Continent!

When that time came, the interests of the Giant Demon and Imp races would inevitably be severely damaged.

On the arena stage, Lin Ming was calm as he took Maha's spatial



ring. At the same time, Maha's infernal energy also rushed into Lin Ming's body.

As someone that been ranked in the top three of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, the richness of Maha's infernal energy could be imagined. As half of that infernal energy rushed into Lin Ming's body, Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo instantly promoted to the peak of eight wings!

From a ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, the difference wasn't all that far.

To reach 10 wings was possible, but to go from 10 wings to 12 wings was an extremely long and arduous process. When arriving at that level, the greatest problem would be finding a match. In order to further form the tattoo, one would have to fight with High Lords. But what High Lord would dare to fight?

Not just that, but a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was a great taboo within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This was because once this character became an Emperor level powerhouse they wouldn't be affected by that mystical curse within the Blood Slaughter Steppes that killed all entering powerhouses. A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon could return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes as they wished. This was simply a massive factor of instability!

After killing Kai Yang and Maha, Lin Ming had in fact obtained a Hundred Winning Streak Emblem and earned nearly a 100 slaughter points. But after reaching this level, emblems, slaughter points – none of these mattered much anymore.

Next... this third match was also the last match.

Lin Ming against Yan Chi!

Everyone's eyes turned onto Yan Chi. Yan Chi appeared surprisingly calm, without even the slightest trace of fear.

When Yan Chi had entered the King's Cage, he obtained the title of earth-step Asura.

Of course, when compared with Lin Ming he was completely overshadowed. But when placed within any fifth-grade sect within the Holy Demon Continent, this was actually a first class result!

Without a doubt, Yan Chi was also an Emperor level talent. As long as he could maintain this pace of progress, then it was very likely he would become an Emperor level powerhouse in the future.

His footsteps light, Yan Chi slowly floated onto the arena stage like a fading autumn leaf. Without a sound he extracted his weapon from his spatial ring. This was a black high-grade earth-step treasure sword.

With sword in hand, Yan Chi's aura suddenly changed. It had immediately become sharp, violent, and swift!

It was true that Imp martial artists were skilled in soul attacks, but if anyone were to presume that they were only skilled in soul attacks, they would be making a fatal mistake.

Yan Chi was an excellent example of this.

He was proficient in soul attacks and also in physical attacks.

“Truly worthy of Yan Chi. Facing Lin Ming, he doesn’t have the least bit of panic!”

“This is the bearing of a true master!”

“Don’t underestimate Yan Chi. Lin Ming is strong, but Yan Chi’s strength is also unfathomable. No one knows just how much Yan Chi’s strength has risen within the Road of Emperor. Moreover, Lin Ming has already fought in two matches. Although it looked like he easily won them, in truth his consumption of energy probably isn’t minor.”

Martial artists had limited reserves of true essence. When martial artists fought, they would normally start with probing moves before using their true ultimate techniques. It wasn’t strange for a powerful martial skill to use 10% of one’s true essence. As for a final killing move, it was normal for those to use up 20 to 30% of one’s true essence.

Thus, even if one easily ended their fights, they would still usually consume 10 to 20% of their true essence. If they fought in

two straight matches then they would only have 70 to 80% of their original true essence from when they had been in their peak form. When fighting continuous matches, unless there was an overwhelming difference in strength, it would be difficult to continue.

## Chapter 603 – Battle Spirit

---

Facing Yan Chi on the arena stage, Lin Ming suddenly had a strange feeling rise within him. His opponent was just casually standing there, but he seemed to be sending out some strange and invisible atmosphere. This atmosphere was different from the energy field aura of a martial artist. The aura that a martial artist could send out was able to directly pressure opponents. If a large disparity in strength existed, then it wasn't unusual for this aura to make others vomit blood or even kill them.

But this atmosphere surrounding Yan Chi was much more elusive. It obviously had no power behind it, but it still made one's heart palpitate.

“Soul attacks seem to be useless against you...” Yan Chi devilishly smiled as he gently stroked his sword, “It's just... strength that comes from the will isn't limited to something so simple as soul attacks! Meet my sword!”

As Yan Chi spoke, his body suddenly moved. His small body became extremely light and agile, leaving only a series of blurs behind him as he flittered around. It was simply impossible for others to determine which one was real.

Cha cha cha cha cha!

As Yan Chi rapidly moved, his sword began to leave behind phantom afterimages on the arena stage. When one's speed reached the extreme, it wasn't strange for sword light to leave

behind afterimages, but what was strange was that after Yan Chi's sword phantoms appeared, they didn't disappear. Instead, they remained, turning into complete swords of light.

More and more light swords began to appear, dancing everywhere in the air and weaving a net of light that came falling down on Lin Ming. Using sword light to create a net of light was something that many martial artists could do, but, Yan Chi's sword light was different from that of ordinary martial artists. Atop these sword lights burned a faint and pale gray flame. These flames didn't burn, but rather gave off a very cold feeling, a frosty chill that came from the depths of the soul.

“What a fierce and sharp move. These light swords feel like they've already pierced my heart; just looking at them makes me feel gripped with dread. How is this possible?”

No matter how powerful a sword move was, it didn't matter if it didn't hit. But currently, the sword move used by Yan Chi gave off the illusion of being pierced through.

“The entire arena stage is covered by these light swords, every single angle had been covered. If I were to face this move than I would be instantly defeated!”

As the martial artists in the audience began to heatedly discuss this, within the special guest section, Feng Shen was silently watching. His eyes shined brilliantly as he closely observed the pale gray flames on Yan Chi's light swords.

Yan Chi... had already arrived at this step?

“10,000 Arrows Piercing the Heart!”

Woosh!

Every single light sword formed a great sphere in the air around Lin Ming and then shot straight towards him!

As the pale gray flames burned, it was like they were incinerating the soul.

In that moment, facing these countless light swords, Lin Ming's mind was as still as a placid lake.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

After Lin Ming's Concept of Space had improved by a large margin, his Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique reached Large Success of the second layer. Now, with but a single step, it seemed as if he could escape into the void. With the power of space twisting underneath Lin Ming's feet, he moved at almost impossible angles and dodged the strikes from the light swords.

Bang bang bang!

The sword light fell onto the metal ground foundation like a rainstorm. Hundreds and thousands of sword lights detonated at

once in a spectacular display, completely blowing up the metal floor that was supported by array formations.

But at this time, there was basically no one that cared about the visual effects from the explosion of these sword lights. Their vision was completely concentrated on Lin Ming and Yan Chi!

In the instant that Lin Ming evaded all the swords of light, Yan Chi appeared in front of him!

This feeling, it was like Yan Chi had already been standing here ahead of time, waiting to strike Lin Ming!

“He calculated the direction that Lin Ming would dodge in?”

“Yan Chi hasn’t been moping around when Lin Ming fought Maha and Kai Yang, he’s always been thinking about tactics! He’s certainly afraid of Lin Ming’s weird Concept of Space.”

“Lin Ming’s steps are as fleeting and incomprehensible as gods and ghosts. Yan Chi’s already prepared for this. It’s hard to say who will be the winner of this battle!”

Yan Chi had indeed been standing there early. He had calculated every step and attack in order to arrive at this point, all so that he could take initiative in this strike.

Shattered Soul Sword!



Yan Chi roared out and a grey flame burst atop his black sword. These gray flames burned at least ten times stronger than before!

“Die!”

A sword slashed down and demon essence erupted. This strike seemed as if it could cut apart a mountain.

‘So this was your plan... what a pity, your striking force is lacking. In the face of absolute strength, any calculation you make is useless.’

Lin Ming thought little of this. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Atop the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire began to weave together!

Penetrating Rainbow!

His entire will and potential was poured into this spear strike, fusing together the Concepts of Fire and Thunder. This was the killing move that Lin Ming had created in order to replace Thunderfire Annihilation!

This was the first time that he had used this move in public.

Bang!

The spear light woven with thunder and fire collided with the gray flame. A terrifying pressure wave erupted, completely raising the arena stage. A foot long bump of metal flooring traveled out from the epicenter of the collision like an ocean tide, destroying everything as it flooded out.

This part of the arena had been completely destroyed!

The surrounding martial artists, within such a terrifying explosion, were all repeatedly forced back.

“How terrifying, the level of this attack, if we were caught up in just the aftermath then I fear we would have been severely wounded!”

“After Yan Chi entered the Road of Emperor, it’s true that his strength has grown by a large degree. That sword strike just now felt as if it would cut my heart in half. But what’s even more terrifying is that Lin Ming has only entered the King’s Cage, but the increase in his strength has actually surpassed Yan Chi!”

“A talent like this is beyond our imaginations.”

Yan Chi flew backwards, thrusting his sword into the ground and creating a series of sparks as he slowed himself! Even though he slowed down, he had been sent hundreds of feet back. He fell to his knees, his blood tumbling within him.

As for Lin Ming, he only took a few steps backwards before

coming to a stop.

“He blocked it?”

Lin Ming was surprised. The might of Penetrating Rainbow far surpassed Chasing Sun. A moment ago, he had used Penetrating Rainbow in a close range collision but he still hadn't been able to seriously injure Yan Chi. When their attacks clashed against each other, Lin Ming had clearly felt a very peculiar and keen atmosphere cut apart his Concept of Thunderfire, making it so that the power of his attack had lowered by a great deal.

What was that sharp and fierce atmosphere?

As Lin Ming was surprised, Yan Chi had gone crazy with panic!

Yan Chi had absolutely never expected that his deliberately arranged killing move that also combined his full strength would be so easily fended off by Lin Ming!

How was this possible!?

Yan Chi felt a chill pass through his heart.

In the special guest area, Feng Shen's expression was solemn. “It's true... that gray flame is a battle spirit. I didn't think that Yan Chi would already have a battle spirit. Although it isn't his, he still has it. In this point alone he has already surpassed me...

As Yan Chi had said, the power that came from one's will wasn't just soul attacks. The will had strength that could take other, more unique forms.

When the strength of one's will reached a certain extent, it could turn into a genuine physical attack.

This was the formation of a battle spirit.

The reason that something like an Emperor Will was left behind in the Road of Emperor was that those great Emperors that had once been there had formed their own battle spirits before their deaths. After not scattering for tens of thousands of years, these battle spirits would condense within the Road of Emperor, and could be captured and refined by future generations, thus becoming an Emperor Will.

A battle spirit was the true face of the Emperor Will!

Battle spirits and martial intents, both of these were the two great auxiliary Concepts of martial artists. It was just that a battle spirit had much higher requirements than a martial intent.

Feng Shen had to admit that in comprehension of the soul and will, Imps had a natural advantage.

This was the reason that Maha hadn't been able to comprehend the Emperor Will, and instead, it had been comprehended by Kai

Yang. It was only that Kai Yang's talent and strength were limited, so he could only use the Emperor Will as a weapon for soul attacks, which was completely useless against someone like Lin Ming.

However, Yan Chi could fuse the Emperor Will into his own attacks, restoring it to its true form as a battle spirit. Kai Yang's battle spirit wasn't his own. It was only the battle spirit of some great Emperor that he had captured, and a faint trace of a wisp at that. But even so, this tiny little bit had an unfathomably supernatural power!

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, turning it into an incomparably sharp and keen weapon.

For instance, if a battle spirit was attached to a wilted leaf, then that originally fragile leaf would even be able to cut apart treasures. The stronger the battle spirit was, the stronger the leaf would be. In the Realm of the Gods, it wasn't difficult for a Supreme Elder's battle spirit to allow a wilted leaf to cut apart a high-grade heaven-step treasure!

If a battle spirit was attached to air, then this air would turn into a fatal wind blade that could invisibly kill people.

A battle spirit could even be attached to a martial artist's aura that they released. Once this aura fused with a battle spirit, then its power would rise exponentially. A martial artist wouldn't even need to do anything. With just this intangible battle spirit hanging in the void, they could instantly kill their opponents!

These examples proved just how strong a battle spirit was. But, in order to use a wilted leaf or air to kill others, that was only achievable with a massive gap in cultivation.

In a situation where the difference in cultivation wasn't too great, then the use of a battle spirit lay mostly in its ability to attach to treasures and moves.

Yan Chi's sword was originally a high-grade earth-step treasure. But, after fusing with a battle spirit, its power could be imagined. In addition, he had even used his ace move Shattered Soul Sword. With these three factors combined, it was simply overwhelming!

However, such a sword strike was actually blocked by Lin Ming, even then Lin Ming had only been shaken a bit and forced back a few steps. As for Yan Chi, he had flown back hundreds of feet and had suffered minor wounds!

The difference could be seen with just a glance!

It was hard to imagine just what extent Lin Ming's strength had grown to!

This was the first time that Feng Shen had ever felt a twinge of fear against someone that was born in his generation. To be able to live in the same era as Lin Ming... this could be called a kind of sorrow.

As all of the martial artists were talking excitedly, most of their

discussion revolved around the fact that a great portion of the arena had been destroyed, with even the profound gold foundation that was supported by array formations also damaged, and the aftershocks of the attacks forming waves in the ground. The power of these attacks could be imagined.

In fact, they had far underestimated the level in that exchange of moves just now, because they didn't know about battle spirits.

A battle spirit was something that only Emperor level powerhouses, or at least someone at a high stage of Life Destruction, would be able to touch upon. It was a boundary that was far too distant for normal martial artists.

Being able to comprehend a battle spirit varied from person to person. Those martial artists with extraordinary talent in the aspects of soul and will might be able to comprehend a battle spirit at the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

On the other hand, there were many individuals that couldn't comprehend a battle spirit even after becoming a Peerless Emperor. For instance, races like the Giant Demons, Ferals, and Goliaths. Even as Emperor level powerhouses, because their natural talent in the aspects of soul and will was lacking, there were plenty of these types of people that hadn't yet comprehended their own battle spirit.

Yan Chi's so called battle spirit was only refined from a faint wisp of Emperor Will left behind by an Emperor level powerhouse; it was not something that he comprehended by himself. It could not grow, could not improve, but even so, as something that belonged

to Emperor level powerhouses, its power was without doubt when used at the Life Destruction realm or lower.

However, such a carefully calculated attack had been completely unable to affect Lin Ming. This caused Yan Chi's heart to tremble.

“He even blocked the battle spirit!”

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi.

Yan Chi's complexion suddenly became extremely ugly.



# Chapter 604 – Why Don't You Come Down and Play With Me?

---

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi.

Yan Chi's complexion suddenly became extremely ugly.

He had carefully arranged his tactics and also used his battle spirit; this was the strongest strike that he could use. But even so, it had still failed. If they continued to fight, then the result was almost already decided!

“Lin Ming! Stop here! Don't force me!” Yan Chi grasped his black sword as he grit out the words between clenched teeth.

“Force you?” Lin Ming smiled, “Are you joking with me? When the three you thought to continuously fight me and wear me down, you think that I was forcing you? At that time, you should have thought of this moment. This is a life or death battle. If I was the one losing, do you really think that you would have stopped here? Now that I'm winning, you're telling me not to force you? Is there anything so ridiculous in this world?”

Lin Ming sneered. With a flick of the Purple Comet Spear, arcs of electricity and fire began to twine together at the spearpoint.

“Don't think that I'm really afraid of you. If I detonate this battle spirit that I obtained from the Road of Emperor, I will make it so

that both of us die!” Yan Chi’s eyes flashed with madness. Now that Yan Chi was pushed this far, he had abandoned his cowardice. He would absolutely do what he said he would.

“Battle spirit? Oh?” Lin Ming thought for a moment, “So that thing was called a battle spirit? I seem to have some impression of it...”

The soul fragments that Lin Ming had inherited from the Magic Cube were incomplete, but he had some vague recollections about battle spirits. Battle spirits and martial intents were both called two facets of a martial artist’s Concept of Martial Arts.

However, martial intents were usually supportive skills, there were very few of them that could actually be transformed into something with actual striking power. But, a battle spirit was just the opposite. Most of time they were directly used to increase one’s attack power. They could be attached to anything, and could enhance a martial artist’s attack to the limit.

“I’ll say it again. If I detonate this battle spirit, then I will undoubtedly suffer greatly, I might even die, but you won’t be any better off. I will drag you all the way down with me!” As Yan Chi spoke, his black sword began to burn with a gray flame. The flame became more and more vibrant; just looking at it made the soul feel drowned in ice!

Yan Chi had bet everything on this single gamble. In his desperation, he had called up every single ounce of battle spirit in his body!

Lin Ming simply didn't care. He raised his long spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi's throat. The cold and sharp purple spearpoint hissed as arcs of electricity pierced the air.

"Let's stop here! I will tell you everything I have comprehended about battle spirits." Yan Chi used a true essence sound transmission to speak. Although it was humiliating, when it concerned his life, he could only endure it.

"Oh?" Lin Ming smiled, "Tell me what you've understood about battle spirits, and add three pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bones. If you do then I'll spare your pathetic life."

"Three pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bones!?" Yan Chi fumed. "You think that Demon God Bones are some cabbage you can pick up at the local market? After so many years at Skysplit Tower, the most I've gotten are two longan sized Demon God Bones, and I've already used them! Where can I possibly give you three even larger ones!"

"Well then, since that's the case, go die!"

Lin Ming coldly shouted and thrust out his spear. The Concepts of Thunder and Fire twined together...

Penetrating Rainbow!

"You bastard! Since you want to die so badly, let us perish

together!” Yan Chi’s eyes flashed manically, his face twisting like a lunatic’s, “Combust, Emperor battle spirit!!”

Hoo-!

Atop of Yan Chi’s black sword, dark gray flames spewed forth like an erupting volcano. Blue veins twisted on his face, and all the blood vessels on his arms began to stick out.

With a maddening shout, Yan Chi grasped his sword in both hands and cut down at Lin Ming!

Gray flames exploded in the air. As the explosion raged on, one could hear the wailing sounds of tortured ghosts. These sounds were obviously illusions, but for some reason they echoed directly in one’s ears, sneaking through their brains and causing their spiritual seas to tremble.

Facing this overwhelming battle spirit fire that covered the skies, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. The Heretical God Force’s compressed true essence erupted to the limit and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned within him!

The space under his feet began to strangely twist. Lin Ming became one with his spear, and the power of thunder and fire twisted together faster and faster until it became a tornado, the spiraling force repelling all of the battle spirit power nearby.

Bang bang bang!

Like a flying beam of light, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and cut through the void, tearing apart the battle spirit flames. However, this was still an Emperor battle spirit. Even if it was only a trace, as it bloomed with its final light, its final dregs of power still created a terrifying impact. In the intense collision of energy, the battle spirit fire was a like a knife that cut through Lin Ming's bodily protective true essence and stabbed into his flesh.

However, after Lin Ming had completed 100% Tempering Marrow and even opened the first door of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his bodily defensive power was incomparably tough. Despite the power of the battle spirit stabbing into his body, it was only a minor flesh wound.

Ca!

Lin Ming passed through the screen of flame and shot towards Yan Chi!

“What!?!?”

Yan Chi was immensely shocked. At this point he had already used over 70% of his true essence. Clenching his teeth, Yan Chi bet his last ounce of strength on a single attack and thrust his sword towards Lin Ming's throat. This was an attack that had absolutely no defense behind it. Yan Chi knew that he was dead. Since things were like this, then he would bring Lin Ming with him!

“How naïve...”

Two indifferent words echoed in Yan Chi's ears. This was also the last voice that he heard. In the next moment, Yan Chi's head exploded like an impacted watermelon. Lin Ming's spear ran through Yan Chi's head like a blazing meteor. The powerful impact along with the explosive force of the twisted thunder and fire caused Yan Chi's head to be directly smashed into pieces, his brains and blood instantly evaporating!

As bits of skull and flesh still flew in the air, Lin Ming had already landed on the other side, hundreds of feet away. Behind him, Yan Chi's sword was only half-raised, and it would never go any higher ever again.

This was the difference of absolute speed.

“It's over.”

Lin Ming put away the Purple Comet Spear. In this battle, in a situation where he hadn't opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his victory hadn't come easily. His clothes had been torn apart, and his body was covered with cuts from the battle spirit's power, dozens of areas on his body were bleeding. After all, Yan Chi's battle spirit still came from an Emperor level powerhouse. When it erupted in that final burst with all its might, the strength it displayed was extremely terrifying. In the end, it had even cut open Lin Ming's protective bodily true essence.

In truth, these several dozen bloody cuts on his body couldn't even be considered injuries to him, they just made him look a bit

distressed. Perhaps there were some haughty and proud martial artists that cared about their image and would always want to win in a beautiful and spectacular manner, but to Lin Ming that was nothing at all.

Bang!

Yan Chi's headless corpse fell to the ground.

This was how he had died.

This third match was also the last. With Yan Chi dead, it was Lin Ming's complete victory!

The audience had fallen silent. In three continuous revolving matches that were designed to wear him down, Lin Ming had battled to the last one. Judging from his appearance, he may have been wounded, but he still had strength left!

These three had all been part of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, and not just that, but they had all entered the Road of Emperor, causing their strength to be greatly increased. Originally, no one thought that Lin Ming would win. Everyone simply thought he was too brash and reckless, but, the true final result had defied all expectations. All three great masters had been completely killed off by Lin Ming!

At the start of the fight, who could imagine that Lin Ming, who had only just finished the King's Cage, would have his strength rise

by such a ridiculous degree!

“This is freaking me out. I think that Lin Ming still has at least 50 to 60% of his strength left. I can’t imagine just how much true essence he has within him.”

“Three continuous matches, and all three opponents were from the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. There were even top characters like Yan Chi and Maha, but even so, Lin Ming killed all of them while just receiving some minor wounds.”

These minor flesh wounds, not to mention Lin Ming, but they weren’t anything at all to every other martial artist on the third floor. They would be fully healed in just a few hours.

“Truly worthy of being a Titled Asura. Truly worthy of being known as the number one talent of the Holy Demon Continent’s last 10,000 years. His cultivation is only at the extreme Xiantian realm, but he already has such potential. After he becomes a Peerless Emperor, that will truly be terrifying!”

“Hey, what do you... how many stages of Life Destruction do you think Lin Ming will be able to cross?” A martial artist asked out loud.

Humans were weak, but that was only before they became Peerless Emperors. Humans were talented in their perception, and their compatibility with Laws was only second to the Fey’s. The main limiter of their strength was their body. These weak and frail bodies caused humans to be limited in both striking power and



defensive power.

But the heavens were fair. Before becoming Peerless Emperors, humans had to experience Life Destruction. Life Destruction was the door of death for humanity. The mortality rate of every single crossing was extremely high. This was also the reason that there was a far smaller number of human Emperor powerhouses than every other race.

However, correspondingly, when one successfully crossed Life Destruction, their body would be remolded. The strength of human powerhouses would rapidly rise. If one could cross eight stages of Life Destruction, their strength would far surpass every other race!

Lin Ming’s current strength was already high to the point of being ridiculously freakish. If he crossed eight stages of Life Destruction in the future, just how formidable would he become?

Thinking of this, the martial artists present didn’t dare to imagine any further...

.....

In the special guest section, Feng Shen was listening to the martial artists around him who were talking and expressing their opinions.

He shook his head. These people didn’t understand just how

terrifying that battle was.

That was the detonation of an Emperor battle spirit. Even so, it was still fended off by Lin Ming!

An Emperor battle spirit, even if it was just the faintest of wisps, still contained an extremely terrifying explosive power!

Unfortunately, Yan Chi couldn't control this strength. All he could do was let this battle spirit explode as it wished, spreading the energy in all directions. This caused most of the energy to be wasted, and only a small portion had fallen on Lin Ming.

And when Lin Ming had become one with his spear, he had also used the spiraling power of his spear to deflect the power of the battle spirit, finally receiving only minor wounds at the end.

Feng Shen had extraordinarily good vision. He had seen profound and mysterious principles that Lin Ming had used to avert the power of the battle spirit. This caused him to admire Lin Ming even more. Lin Ming not only had terrifying strength but also a cool mind. In a tense situation he had still chosen to use the most appropriate tactic at the key moment!

‘I... I am not his match.’

Feng Shen was ashamed of his own inadequacy. He was confident that he could have defeated Yan Chi, but to defeat Lin Ming at his peak condition... this was impossible.

Let alone his peak condition, even if Feng Shen went onstage now and challenged Lin Ming, who had already consumed a great deal of his strength, he had to admit that the chances of him defeating Lin Ming were no more than 50-50.

On the arena stage, Lin Ming calmly took Yan Chi's spatial ring and his black treasure sword. At this time, the infernal energy within Yan Chi's body flowed into Lin Ming. The fourth pair of wings on his Heavenly Demon Tattoo widened once again. Now he had reached the very peak of an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, and was only a single step away from being a ten-winged Heavenly Demon.

However, crossing this last step wouldn't be easy. The only way would be to kill someone at the level of a Heavenly Demon Seven Star or higher, otherwise there was no way for this Heavenly Demon Tattoo to grow any more.

"How unfortunate." Lin Ming shook his head. He was just a little bit off!

"Humph!"

In the seat of honor, High Lord Heian coldly snorted. Everything that Feng Shen had thought of, he too had thought the same. He stood up with a dour expression, not interested in staying another half minute, and then turned around to leave.

But at this moment, Lin Ming looked up. He smiled, smirking as

he said, “Heian, running away so soon? Why don’t you come down and play with me?”

What?

High Lord Heian was startled, instantly stiffening on the spot. All of the other martial artists present were beyond shucked. Everyone had incredulous expressions as they looked at Lin Ming.

Just now... what... what did he say?

# Chapter 605 – Force Field in Full Bloom

---

Come down and play?

Lin Ming wanted to challenge a High Lord!?!?

And he did so with such a casual tone. Clearly, he didn't even place High Lord Heian in his eyes.

This was far too brazen!

The 12 High Lords.

Although their talents were inferior to Feng Shen's, and even inferior to Yan Chi's, their ages were high. Of the High Lords, the weakest of them had strength that surpassed every challenger.

It was widely rumored that Feng Shen was comparable to the weakest High Lord, but, this was only a comparison. In a true life or death struggle, Feng Shen would most likely lose.

Moreover, Heian wasn't even the weakest High Lord. He had been a High Lord for many years now. His strength could be ranked in the middle-upper reaches of the 12 High Lords!

But as for Lin Ming, while it was true that he was strong, he had just fought through three matches and consumed a great deal of his true essence. Wasn't challenging High Lord Heian at this time

just looking to die?

“Lin Ming has already fought in continuous battles and now he even wants to fight High Lord Heian... is he insane!?”

“Three matches. Although his wounds aren’t serious, he’s used up at least 40 to 50% of his true essence. Does he want to die or something?”

“Do you think Lin Ming is an idiot? For the last year Lin Ming has fought so many times, but when have you ever seen him lose?” Some people said with dissatisfaction.

“It’s true that he hasn’t lost, but it’s not as exaggerated as you imagine. Feng Shen hasn’t lost either. Those that have lost on the third floor, most of them have already died! You think that just because Lin Ming hasn’t lost in a few battles he can prevail over High Lord Heian?”

After this reversed question, the martial artist who just spoke proceeded to shut his mouth. In Skysplit Tower, the status of the High Lords was deeply rooted within everyone’s subconscious. They had stood at the pinnacle of Skysplit Tower for so many years, controlling the massive amount of resources in their hands, and especially practice places. There was the Road of Emperor, and even... many Demon God Bones!

In this situation where they possessed all these resources, and also with the passing of time, their strength could be imagined!

The 12 High Lords hadn't fought in many years. Challenging them? No one had ever dared to do so!

High Lord Heian looked at Lin Ming for several breaths of time. He didn't think that Lin Ming would actually dare to challenge him, and had been worried about finding an excuse to kill Lin Ming somehow, but now, this fellow had actually delivered himself right up to his door.

This boy had hidden a part of his strength in these past battles, but High Lord Heian's mouth only curved up in a sly smile. He simply didn't care about this. As a High Lord, he was able to freely use any resource within Skysplit Tower, including even the Road of Emperor. In addition to his superior age and cultivation, there was no way he could possibly lose!

“You want to challenge me?”

“I do. After killing Yan Chi, my Heavenly Demon Tattoo hasn't been able to break through to 10 wings.”

His Heavenly Demon Tattoo hadn't broken through to 10 wings?

His meaning was that he wanted to use High Lord Heian to help further his own Heavenly Demon Tattoo?

The surrounding martial artists were all shocked.

What gall!

“Heavenly Demon Tattoo? Hahahahaha!” High Lord Heian wantonly laughed. “Then that being the case, allow me to fulfill your wish!

With a casual step forwards he arrived on the arena stage. No one had been able to discern High Lord Heian’s movements.

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear, pointing it straight towards High Lord Heian. His expression was calm. When he fought with Yan Chi and Maha, he had been always been conserving his strength, and that was for this one battle in front of him.

In this battle, he would use everything he had!

Reasonably speaking, it was far too rash to challenge High Lord Heian at this moment because Lin Ming didn’t even understand his complete strength. But, Lin Ming wasn’t able to suppress the fighting spirit that bubbled up in his heart. He wanted to fight in a hearty and fulfilling battle, using his own peak condition to truly determine just how much his strength had increased after entering the King’s Cage.

At this moment, the atmosphere of the martial arena was incomparably solemn. The entire audience was holding their breath, carefully watching these two people onstage lest they miss a single movement.

In his seat, Feng Shen had subconsciously gripped his sword.



Challenging a High Lord... he also had this idea, but that was only aimed towards the two new High Lords that hadn't even been in their positions for three years. As for challenging High Lord Heian, he wasn't that crazy.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian crossed his arms behind his back. Without a weapon, he casually glanced at Lin Ming and said, "I want to see whether or not you can even force me to draw my sword!"

As he spoke, an intangible aura emanated from him, like billowing ocean waves, wildly raging!

"This aura..."

"How terrifying! This imposing aura isn't even aimed at us, but I feel like I'm caught in the midst of an ocean storm, it's even hard to breathe!"

"If I were just covered in the aura I wouldn't even have the courage to resist. How would I even continue fighting?"

High Lord Heian hadn't even moved, but his aura was already so formidable. Facing this grandiose aura directly, could Lin Ming even withstand the tremendous pressure?

"Force you to draw your sword?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. It was like he didn't even feel this

tyrannical aura that enveloped him. As he gripped the Purple Comet Spear, he slanted it towards the ground and slowly drew a crescent moon on the floor...

Heavenly Demon martial intent, Asura force field – open!

Bang!

The Heavenly Demon force field that was restrained within Lin Ming's body suddenly erupted! Lin Ming had already adapted to the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field within the King's Cage. Facing High Lord Heian's aura, it was simply nothing!

The Heavenly Demon force field spread like heavy mercury, completely tearing apart High Lord Heian's aura. With unstoppable force, it completely engulfed High Lord Heian's aura and covered the entire martial arena. It wasn't just High Lord Heian, but even the martial artists in the closest rows of seats were covered by this force field.

Puff!

The weakest of these martial artists immediately spat out a mouthful of blood, his face turning as white as paper!

“Quickly retreat!”

“What's going on!?!?”

“I felt like my heart stopped.”

Within the Heavenly Demon force field, whether it was the soul, mind, true essence, or body, everything had to bear an immensely terrifying pressure. It wasn't surprising for weaker martial artists to be directly killed by the suppression of the Heavenly Demon force field!

All of the martial artists near Lin Ming turned white and quickly ran far away. Even martial artists that were ranked 50 and above couldn't stay nearby. Although they weren't injured by this pressure, they too would suffer greatly if they stayed here much longer!

“This is the Heavenly Demon force field...”

Feng Shen looked towards Lin Ming, a complex emotion in his eyes. Having entered the King's Cage, he certainly wouldn't forget what the Heavenly Demon force field felt like.

It was because of the increasing strength of this Heavenly Demon force field that Feng Shen finally couldn't withstand the pressure and had to leave the King's Cage.

“I never imagined that after Lin Ming entered the King's Cage he would even comprehend the Heavenly Demon force field...” Feng Shen slowly shook his head. “When others go into the King's Cage, they struggle to resist the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field, using every trick they know. But when Lin Ming entered the

King's Cage, he actually comprehended the Heavenly Demon force field for his own use... what kind of monstrous talent this is?!"

When Feng Shen had entered the King's Cage, he had only lasted 28 days. But, Lin Ming had stayed within for a full 108 days.

In addition to constantly breaking through his limits and increasing his strength, Feng Shen hadn't had any other harvests. In comparison, Lin Ming had not only furthered his comprehensions of the Concepts of Space and Time, but he had even comprehended the Heavenly Demon force field.

This was already on a completely different level.

In the future, if Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, what heights would his strength ascend to?

Thinking of this, Feng Shen thought that it was too unfortunate. It was impossible for Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor because the 12 High Lords would never permit it to occur.

After this battle, if Lin Ming didn't die by some stroke of luck, then he would most likely be forced to leave Skysplit Tower.

There was no longer any place here for him.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian grimaced as he was bathed in the Heavenly Demon force field. The surrounding martial artists were only slightly affected by the fading edges this force field, but

he had to bear the full and complete pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field!

In this environment, he even felt the circulation of his demon essence being stymied within his body.

“After entering the King’s Cage you even managed to comprehend the Heavenly Demon force field... I will acknowledge that you have the qualifications to force my sword.”

High Lord Heian gently caressed his spatial ring and withdrew a dark crimson longsword. The blade of this sword was only two inches wide and less than three feet long. The ridges of the sword weren’t straight, instead having a straight twist that made it seem like a floating red serpent.

“This sword is...”

As Lin Ming saw this dark crimson sword, his pupils shrank. The quality of this sword was absolutely higher than the Purple Comet Spear in his hands!

The Purple Comet Spear was forged from a piece of 10,000 Year Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, as well as all sorts of rare and precious materials. It was personally crafted by Ancestor Chi and refined with the support of an ancient array formation.

Even so, this spear couldn’t compare to the sword in terms of

quality. Could that sword be... a heaven-step treasure?

The only heaven-step and above treasure that Lin Ming had ever seen was the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Of course, the Cosmic Melting Furnace might even surpass the heaven-step rank. At the bare minimum it was a high-grade heaven-step treasure.

Lin Ming had never seen a true low-grade heaven-step treasure before, so he was unable to judge the rank of this dark crimson longsword in front of him.

With an unfathomably deep cultivation, the free use of any practice area, massive amounts of Demon God Bones and resources, and even this suspected heaven-step dark crimson snake sword...

High Lord Heian's strength could be imagined!

In the audience, even Muk Gu, who had always believed in Lin Ming's strength, felt weak at heart. Facing such a formidable High Lord Heian, just how could Lin Ming ever win?

"Dying under my Crimson Ruby Snake, you should be satisfied."

High Lord Heian pointed his sword straight at Lin Ming. He moved, and although no one was able to perceive what actions he took, there was only a light 'chi' sound as if space was torn apart and High Lord Heian's sword suddenly appeared in front of Lin Ming!

What a ghostly sword! There was no surging demon essence nor was there a brilliant sword light. There was only a simple and basic sword strike, but even Feng Shen didn't have absolute confidence he could block this sword!

Lin Ming's eyes widened. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and his form disappeared like a fading wisp of blue smoke.

After fusing his increasingly skilled Concept of Space into his movement technique, his movements were already as illusionary as ghosts and gods, ambiguous and fleeting!

A sword stabbed into Lin Ming's afterimage. High Lord Heian sneered, and with a twist of the snake sword in his hand, a Concept erupted from within it.

Concept of Annihilation!

In that instant, the air itself was destroyed.

Stabbing his sword out again, High Lord Heian's speed erupted to the extreme. Lin Ming's form had just appeared when High Lord Heian's sword already pierced towards his chest!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. As he thrust out his spear he also used Golden Roc Shattering the Void once more!

Hoo-!

In a split-second, Lin Ming appeared hundreds of feet away. But, on his right arm, the blue fabric of his sleeves had silently turned into powder before fading into nothingness.

In that flash, High Lord Heian had only used two sword strikes without any ravishing collisions of true essence. However, all the martial artists present felt like they had lost their breath.

That exchange of moves just now was only testing the waters. It was hard to imagine just how fierce the battle would be when the true fight began!



# Chapter 606 – Contract Beast – Isolation

## Dragon

---

Lin Ming had completely evaded High Lord Heian's two sword strikes. However, the sleeve of his right arm had been turned to dust; this was caused by the Concept of Annihilation.

“Your speed's not bad. I wonder how long you can hide for!” High Lord Heian gripped his sword with one hand and used the other to draw a circle in space. Then, a black light shot out of this circled and twined itself around High Lord Heian. After several breaths of time, this black light condensed into a black python.

This python was the thickness of an arm and its entire body was covered in a red pattern. What was strange was that this pattern was constantly changing, the colors and shapes converging and parting, causing them to appear dazzling. The python's forehead had a demonic brand that looked similar to the Heavenly Demon Tattoo. And in the center of this brand was unexpectedly a single horn. This horn was shaped like a spiral and glittered with a cold light.

“Contract beast?”

There were some martial artists that would raise a contract beast in order to increase their own strength. For instance, Mu Qianyu's Little Flame and Yan Mo, who had been left in the Southern Wilderness by the Sorcerer, were both two kinds of contract beasts.

It wasn't easy to raise a contract beast. First, one had to find a contract beast that could grow to a high level; this was already extremely difficult. Then, in order to have it grow, one needed to invest a massive amount of energy and resources in doing so. Otherwise, if the contract beast was not able to keep up with its master, then it was basically useless.

“What is that contract beast, I've never seen it in the ancient texts...”

“I've never seen it either...”

The martial artists present were nearly all from large sects, and they were all knowledgeable individuals with excellent eyesight. However, not one of them recognized just what this python was that wrapped itself around High Lord Heian. Not even Feng Shen could recognize it.

To someone at High Lord Heian's level who sat on the vast pile resources that was Skysplit Tower, any contract beast he had naturally wouldn't be ordinary. Normally it would be some legendary top contract beast that would be more or less described in ancient texts. Even if it wasn't completely accurate it would still have some details.

But, no one had ever seen High Lord Heian's contract beast before. High Lord Heian hadn't personally fought for a great number of years, so there weren't many people that knew what his methods or techniques were.

As Lin Ming looked at that black python, he also didn't know what sort of beast it was. But, he could clearly feel that the python was emitting billowing waves of infernal energy. Surprisingly, it was somewhat similar to a Demon God Bone.

Heavenly Demon Tattoo, Demon God Bone... could it be...

Lin Ming's heart jumped and he inexplicably thought of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Could this be a creature that originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss?

The Eternal Demon Abyss was isolated from the world. There was a terrifying and rich infernal energy within so it wouldn't be surprising if some sort of top monster or demon was born within it. High Lord Heian had ruled Polar Skysplit Tower for so many years and Skysplit Tower sent organized teams to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss every ten years, so it was normal if there had been some catastrophic alien beast found.

An ancient vicious beast born within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Just what sort of amazing abilities would it have?

Lin Ming couldn't help but keep up his vigilance, secretly guarding against this.

High Lord Heian smiled and suddenly thrust his hand forwards. The black python flew off of High Lord Heian's arm and in the next moment, an incredible scene took place that left the audience bewildered. The python issued a harsh screeching noise and then its body began to melt like heated ice. It started to fuse into the

void before completely disappearing.

“Mm? This is...”

Lin Ming suddenly felt that the power of space around him had been blocked. Even with his understandings towards the Laws of Space, he actually wasn't able to call upon the power of space!

Not just that, but even his Heavenly Demon force field was suppressed to a certain extent. This was from the pressure that came from the black python that disappeared. It had somehow counterbalanced his Heavenly Demon force field...

“Sealed space?”

Lin Ming was alarmed. Vicious beasts had limited wisdom; it was nearly impossible for them to pierce Concepts through meditation, especially for one as puzzling as the Concept of Space. Thus, there was only one possibility, and that was that this black python had been born with a certain understanding of the Law of Space. This was a sort of vicious beast that Lin Ming had never heard of before!

“After guarding Skysplit Tower for so many years, the 12 High Lords have truly unfathomable resources!” In his special guest seat, Feng Shen was startled. Although the 12 Skysplit Towers were not a sect, they in truth could be regarded as a special Holy Land. Not just that, but the Skysplit Towers' resources were much more terrifying than any other Holy Land's!

This was a completely unfair fight. In Lin Ming and High Lord Heian's battle, Lin Ming had the disadvantage in age, cultivation, weapons, and even contract beasts.

"Lin Ming is in danger. If the space around here is sealed then he can only fight in melee combat." There were a number of Fey martial artists in the audience that detected the strange fluctuations in space.

If Lin Ming couldn't use the power of space then he was the same as a bird with a crippled wing. How could he continue to fight?

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian's wrinkled black face was twisted in a creepy grin. "The space around us has been sealed away by my contract beast, the Isolation Dragon. I want to see, without your Concept of Space, without your strange movements, just how you'll dodge this sword of mine!"

As High Lord Heian spoke, his figure suddenly vanished. The crimson snake sword drew a rift in the air, its sword wind traceless.

As the sword howled towards Lin Ming, the demon essence hiding within finally bloomed. An incomparable amount of condensed demon essence fluttered out, formed a red aurora.

Facing this sword, Lin Ming's expression was calm. Since he couldn't dodge, he wouldn't bother to!

Within Lin Ming's mind, he recalled the scene of the Eightfall War Emperor fighting the Giant Demon quasi Emperor, and just how earth-shaking that sword strike had been!

With a deep breath, the Gate of Healing between Lin Ming's clavicles began to form a whirlpool of heaven and earth origin energy. Ever since he returned from the King's Cage, this was the first time that Lin Ming had used the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Bang!

An incomparably vast heaven and earth origin energy poured into his meridians. In that instant, Lin Ming's aura erupted to the limit and even the space sealed by the black python trembled as if it were about to break apart at any moment.

With a thrust of his spear, a boundless wave of true essence circled up. In that moment, it was like time itself had come to a standstill. The spear light and sword light collided, and with the sound of breaking glass, without any flashy explosions, High Lord Heian's sword light was constantly being twisted apart even as Lin Ming's spear light was constantly being melted.

“Concept of Thunderfire, explode!”

In the instant that the spear light faded away, Lin Ming gave a loud shout and the Concept of Thunderfire burst out from within the Purple Comet Spear. A terrifying true essence explosion blasted out. Sound was swallowed, and the entire arena was covered in a

blinding light. In such an explosion, the profound gold floor was completely lifted away. Sheets of profound gold dozens of feet wide either melted away or broke into pieces.

A potent energy scattered in all directions. Lin Ming couldn't hold down his body and was jolted a few hundred feet back.

But High Lord Heian wasn't much better off. He had been almost completely covered by the explosion of the Concept of Thunderfire. His bodily demon essence had shattered, and the power of thunderfire had rushed into his body, violently rampaging through!

He had to summon all of his demon essence to suppress the power of thunderfire within his body. A faint trace of blood flowed out from his shoulder and chest.

What?

After the blinding light faded and the audience saw the scene on the arena stage, all of them were shocked speechless.

In the exchange of moves, almost half the profound gold arena had disappeared. And standing on top of the arena stage, High Lord Heian... had been injured!

The lofty High Lord, one of the strongest powerhouses of Skysplit Tower, had actually been wounded by Lin Ming!

All of the martial artists present didn't know how to express the utter shock and horror in their hearts. They had thought that Lin Ming's strength lay in the Concept of Space that allowed him to move around in an unpredictable manner, and his skill and moves in battle. But in terms of close-range combat, they didn't think he was much better than Maha or Yan Chi.

When Lin Ming defeated Kai Yang, he had relied upon his powerful soul defense. To defeat Maha, he had used a surprise attack with the Concept of Space. And although he had defeated Yan Chi in a melee confrontation, Lin Ming had also been injured.

In this situation, no one thought that Lin Ming's body would contain such a terrifying strength. At the moment that the Eight Inner Gates opened, the aura within Lin Ming's body had erupted until it seemed like an unreachable mountain peak, a point that no human could see.

High Lord Heian's grimaced. He never thought that Lin Ming would actually be able to take his all-out strike.

"This is not possible. How could I not have noticed his hidden strength before? Just where did all this true essence that's flooding his body come from?"

As High Lord Heian held the Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand, his eyebrows twisted together. He could instantly discern an essence gathering martial artist's cultivation with a glance. As for the thickness of their true essence, he wasn't able to see it, but he could feel out an approximation. But facing Lin Ming, this fellow's true essence seemed to come out of nowhere, surprising everyone.



And at that moment, Lin Ming suddenly moved, crossing hundreds of feet in a single step. With the Concept of Thunderfire fused into the Purple Comet Spear, Lin Ming aimed at the void and thrust his spear!

This spear was not shot towards High Lord Heian but instead towards the audience!

The several dozen martial artists that would bear the brunt of this attack were incomparably shocked. This freakish monster Lin Ming, they couldn't even defend against half a strike of his. If they were hit by the aftershocks then they would be severely wounded and anyone struck by the spear would instantly die!

“He's gone mad!”

“Be careful!”

Those several dozen martial artists galvanized their true essence to the limit, using their strongest movement techniques to scatter away. But compared to Lin Ming, their speed was far too slow.

“I'm a goner!”

A martial artist paled, despair filling his heart. But, as Lin Ming's spear light was only 200 feet away from him, a sudden change occurred!

That spear light seemed to smash into something, instantly exploding!

In that brilliant flash of blinding light, an ear-piercing scream suddenly sounded out. This sound was not something that could be issued by a creature!

“No!”

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian’s expression changed.

In that moment, his Isolation Dragon contract beast had been stabbed through seven inches by Lin Ming’s spear!

How was this possible!?

His Isolation Dragon had fused into a gap in space, vanishing into complete invisibility. How could it have been stabbed by Lin Ming!?

“Die!”

High Lord Heian’s sword pierced towards Lin Ming, the crimson snake sword swallowing all light.

But Lin Ming seemed unaware of all this. His voice was chilling as he spat out a few words, “Power of thunderfire, explode!”

Bang!

In the void, blood rained down. The contract beast's miserable scream sounded out through the entire martial arena. The black python had been forcibly ejected from the space gap. Its body was dripping with blood and it had almost been split in half!

[Previous Chapter](#)

## Chapter 607 – A Beautiful Spear

---

As the half-dead black python flew out, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brilliant killing intent. He flicked his fingers and over a hundred Blood Drinking Seals shot towards the grievously wounded black python like a locust swarm, intending to completely destroy it!

The martial arena audience was completely shocked. Those several dozen martial artists that thought they would die under Lin Ming's spear had turned silly with fear. In that instant, before they had enough time to realize what had just happened, High Lord Heian had arrived.

Seeing his contract beast damaged to such a pitiful state, High Lord Heian's eyes turned blood-red.

“Die!”

A sword broke through space, carrying with it all of High Lord Heian's true essence as it thrust towards Lin Ming!

This sword speed had reached the limit. At this time, because Lin Ming had attacked the Isolation Dragon, his back was open to High Lord Heian!

High Lord Heian's sword had already reached Lin Ming's back. The sword energy tore apart Lin Ming's bodily defensive true essence!

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a grin. With the power of space unsealed, true essence moved under his feet.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Ca!

High Lord Heian's sword passed through Lin Ming's back. However, Lin Ming's figure disappeared, vanishing like a fading plume of smoke. That had been nothing but an afterimage!

Meanwhile, a few hundred feet away in the air, the Isolation Dragon had been shredded to bits by the Blood Drinking Seals, its entire body dripping with blood. This time, the Isolation Dragon didn't even have the strength to scream. It was already at death's door!

Seeing this black python pouring blood in midair, the surrounding martial artists were shocked speechless. Although none of them comprehended the Concept of Space, they could still see what had happened with their eyes.

Lin Ming's spear just now had stabbed into a space gap where the Isolation Dragon was hiding, thus shattering the lock of sealed space.

“Too strong! In such a fierce battle, Lin Ming can even branch out his perception to find the black python's hiding place!”

“Perception? Don’t be stupid. The black python had sealed itself into a space gap. That is a completely different level of space that is cut off from all perception. How could one possibly sense it?”

“Then how did he find the black python?”

“How the hell would I know? If I knew the way to do it then I would also comprehend the Concept of Space.” The martial artist who just spoke curled his lips in disdain, not bothering to say anything else.

The space gap was truly able to isolate all perception. Even Lin Ming was no exception. However, Lin Ming had sensed the fluctuations in the power of space and found a point where it seemed out of tune with everywhere else. If the power of space was compared to waves, then the position where the black python hid had produced small ripples. These ripples had exposed the black python’s position.

Lin Ming was highly sensitive to the power of space. Once he captured the exact location, he had infused his spear with the Concept of Space. With his spear piercing the void, it then pushed the black python out of its space gap.

If Lin Ming hadn’t entered the King’s Cage, then his comprehension of the Concept of Space would never have reached this degree.

Xiu!

High Lord Heian put out his hand, turning the dying black python into a stream of black light that submerged into his body.

As he inspected the black python's condition, High Lord Heian's face sank.

The black python was ruined. Flesh wounds weren't anything, and damage to meridians and organs could be cured. But, the core of the black python had been crushed. This basically meant that the black python no longer held any value. Once the core was shattered, it would never be able to grow again.

Lin Ming's guess was correct. This black python was truly an ancient beast brought out from the Eternal Demon Abyss by High Lord Heian, containing an inborn ability to use the Law of Space. However, it had grown for less than ten years and its strength was limited. This was the first time that High Lord Heian had actually brought it out for battle, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would be able to attack the Isolation Dragon in its hiding spot, ruining it for forever.

The Isolation Dragon was an extremely rare contract vicious beast. Its combat strength wasn't too great, but its supportive abilities were wonderful. High Lord Heian had carefully raised it for ten years and had invested a massive amount of resources into it, but as soon as it appeared it had been ruined. High Lord Heian felt his heart dripping blood. His eyes burned with a blazing killing intent!

“Lin Ming! I will kill you!”

“Words are useless. If you have any other moves then bring them out, I’m waiting right here.” Facing High Lord Heian’s killing intent, Lin Ming simply wasn’t affected at all.

In fact, he hadn’t even completely used the power of the Gate of Healing. Since this was the first time using the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in actual combat, his body was still adapting to it.

And most importantly, Lin Ming now realized that even if he erupted his complete power, he still wouldn’t be able to kill High Lord Heian. At most, he would be able to just barely beat him. But, if he wanted to kill him, then he would need to create an opportunity to do so.

.....

Woosh!

High Lord Heian’s figure instantly vanished, appearing right beside Lin Ming. “Don’t think that only you are fast! I too am confident in my speed! I will end this fight soon. Since you want to compare speed, then come at me!”

Ca!

High Lord Heian’s sword pierced forth.



Lin Ming's figure was like a puff of smoke as he vanished once more. Spear light wove into a net that fell over High Lord Heian!

"You want to fight a battle of attrition? Then let's see who consumes all their energy first!" High Lord Heian grinned like a madman. He thrust out the Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand, tearing apart the spear light.

Demon essence and true essence fiercely collided. The ruined arena stage underneath their feet had already ceased to exist.

Bang bang bang!

The two engaged in a battle of speed. Whether it was attack moves, dodging, or even head on melee confrontations, everything they did raised great waves of surging true essence, forcing all of the martial artists in the stands to retreat once more!

"This is amazing! He's fighting equally with High Lord Heian!"

"If this battle continues... I fear that Lin Ming won't be able to last much longer. His cultivation is too low, and he has already consumed a great deal of true essence before this."

In the view of these people, the degree to which Lin Ming's true essence had thickened had far surpassed all other martial artists at his level. But, it was still a bit lacking compared to High Lord Heian. The reason that Lin Ming could fight evenly with High Lord

Heian was all due to his comprehension of Concepts, his sharp and amazing moves, and the strange cultivation methods he used.

If this battle was drawn out until the end, then Lin Ming must lose!

In nearly every aspect of one's combat prowess, Lin Ming was in no way inferior to High Lord Heian. It was just that his cultivation and total amount of true essence was lower. Even so, Lin Ming's strength was hard to measure with common sense.

"If Lin Ming had another year, or even half a year, he would probably be able to defeat High Lord Heian!" A martial artist sighed with emotion. Lin Ming's rise was unstoppable.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian and Lin Ming had already fought for an entire half incense stick of time, exchanging almost a hundred moves!

"Demonic Windstorm!"

High Lord Heian calculated where Lin Ming would land. He thrust out his sword and demon essence rolled up into a billowing red cloud.

"Blood Seal Twisting Murder!"

The moves that Lin Ming used to strike back came from the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. If this style was combined with the

Blood Drinking Seals, then that would save the greatest amount of true essence. The Concept of Thunderfire simply used too much energy.

Lin Ming's total amount of true essence was truly inferior to High Lord Heian's. But, by depending on the Gate of Healing, his endurance far surpassed High Lord Heian's!

But lasting to the final moment was not what Lin Ming wanted. What he wanted was to... make a killing strike!

By conserving the greatest amount of true essence that he could, that combined with the terrifying regenerative abilities of the Gate of Healing allowed him to maintain his peak condition.

Boom!

Spear and sword intersected, true essence exploding. Lin Ming's body flew backwards, blood dribbling down the sides of his mouth. But High Lord Heian wasn't any better off. After Lin Ming's spear light broke through his sword light, a leftover wisp had pierced his chest, breaking past his bodily protective true essence and causing an arrow of blood to shoot out.

The battle of these two had already reached a catastrophic degree.

Lin Ming had been wounded several times, both heavily and lightly. But Lin Ming didn't care about injuries, what he desired

was making sure that High Lord Heian was also injured in the process.

At this time, some people gradually felt that something was wrong. Although Lin Ming's total amount of true essence was obviously lower than High Lord Heian's, for some unknown reason, he was always able to maintain his extreme speed and the power behind his moves!

In comparison, High Lord Heian had weakened somewhat.

“Heavens! There have already been over 200 moves. Although these are small moves, how can he withstand such consumption of energy!? Is he a puppet or something?”

“Don't forget that before this he also fought in three continuous battles, successively defeating Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, yet now he can still fight High Lord Heian to this degree!”

“High Lord Heian's breath is already weakening! What is going on? Is Lin Ming really a Xiantian realm martial artist!?”

The martial artists in the audience discovered this rapidly changing situation and found it incomprehensible.

High Lord Heian also discovered this. He no longer attacked Lin Ming. After another sword strike, he retreated several hundred feet back and stood there.

“You...” High Lord Heian’s expression was dismal. He had already consumed almost half his demon essence, but Lin Ming hadn’t used as much. In fact, his bodily true essence was still extremely thick like it was before!

How could it be like this? What sort of freak was this boy? Was his true essence regenerative ability really that strong?

‘I can’t drag this on anymore. I have to finish this fight as soon as possible. Otherwise, if this continues then I will lose!’

Losing to a mere 20-some year old human boy. High Lord Heian never imagined this day would ever come.

“Lin Ming. I never thought that you could force me to this step. I don’t know what sort of strong cultivation method you’ve practiced to have this degree of endurance, but I will not give you any more chances to consume my strength!”

As High Lord Heian finished speaking he gave a loud shout. He bit down on his tongue and spat out blood essence onto the blade of his sword. The curved crimson snake sword became an even more beautiful red. Soon after, High Lord Heian’s face flashed with an abnormal blush. In order to use this strongest strike of his, he had obviously overdrawn his strength.

“Bloodstained Blue Skies!”

A sword thrust forth, the void trembled! The entire arena seemed

to be dyed red with blood, everyone's vision filling with a dazzling scarlet light. This was an extremely oppressive feeling. It was like they had fallen into a bloody pond in the pits of hell, and now they faced a strike from a death god!

Just looking at this sword made one hallucinate that their heart had been chopped in half.

‘Final strike? What a pity!’

Lin Ming drearily sighed in his mind. He had wanted to slowly consume High Lord Heian's strength to its lowest point while maintaining his own strength at around 90%. Then, at that final moment, he could flare out with all the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and kill High Lord Heian in a single stroke.

But presently, High Lord Heian no longer gave him that chance. It was time to advance to the final battle!

“Heavenly Demon force field – completely open!”

A stormy energy field surged out from Lin Ming's body. Although Lin Ming had used the Heavenly Demon force field at the very start of the battle, that was when he hadn't yet opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, only using regular true essence to drive it, otherwise it would have consumed too much true essence. But now that Lin Ming was in his peak condition, he erupted with the strongest possible Heavenly Demon force field!

A vast pressure gushed out in all directions. With a snapping sound, the ground underneath Lin Ming's feet began to completely crack open from this pressure. The broken fragments of profound gold flooring flew up into the air, and a massive crack spread out like a growing spider web!

As far as a 1000 feet away, the audience instantly felt a pressure that was several times more terrifying than before. Those with weaker cultivations vomited blood, and even those with higher cultivations paled!

How was this possible?

The fight had reached this degree, but Lin Ming was still able to erupt with such an aura?

This people completely didn't understand the Heavenly Demon force field. They only thought that this was the imposing aura that came from Lin Ming.

“Thunder and fire, fuse for me... Penetrating Rainbow!”

The power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was revolved to the limit. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Lin Ming's strength instantly doubled!

The Thunder Soul and Flame Essence within him began to violently tremble. The power of thunder and fire burst out like a volcanic eruption!

Above the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire struggled together. Thick arcs of lightning recklessly danced on the spear, mixing with the surging inferno of flames, burning down the void.

Lin Ming took a step forwards, his spear pointed straight towards High Lord Heian. Spear and man became one, and the horrifying sound of thunderfire reverberated in the air. Lin Ming became a flaming meteor wrapped with thunder as he shot forth!

“What!?!?”

High Lord Heian was impossibly shocked. He had never, ever imagined that Lin Ming could produce such a terrifying combat strength at such a moment. As that aura suddenly burst out and enveloped him, his demon essence that had been like a raging river had suddenly reduced by 20%!

‘This boy! He’s always been hiding this! He wanted to save this for the final strike, he doesn’t want to just defeat me, he wants to kill me!’

As High Lord Heian suddenly realized this, his eyes flashed with the light of lunacy!

This was the final move! If this failed then he would die. Everything was bet on this last desperate attack!

High Lord Heian revolved his demon essence to the limit and spat



out more blood essence. The Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand combusted with a flaming light, the sword sending out excited cries.

As the sword light and spear light struck each other, it was like a meteor smashing into another meteor!

“This isn’t good!”

After seeing this collision, the martial artists that had already retreated to 1000 feet didn’t say anything further, only launching their movement techniques to escape as far as possible!

Bang!

In that instant, a glaring flash burst out, forcing everyone in the entire martial arena to blink as if they were blinded. True essence violently swept up into swirling storms, melting every chair in the first several rows and sending chairs flying away like molten arrows. Luckily, several of the stronger martial artists suddenly took action, using their treasures and skills to send these metal chairs flying back. However, the impact of these chairs still caused their arms to shake with numbness.

What a terrifying strength!

The flash only lasted for a single breath of time before disappearing. The entire arena stage was completely razed to the ground, and not even a single piece of profound gold flooring was

left behind.

Lin Ming and High Lord Heian staggered opposite of each other.

Lin Ming knelt on the ground, using the Purple Comet Spear to support himself. His entire body was dyed crimson with blood, and on his right shoulder was a ghastly wound. His right shoulder had nearly been split apart and his clavicle was broken.

But behind Lin Ming, High Lord Heian was blankly standing there. The left half of his body had... completely disappeared!

Left lung, heart, left arm... in that desperate collision with Lin Ming, all of it had been disintegrated to ashes by the crazy and violent power of thunder and fire.

All of the present martial artists were beyond shocked. They stood there, disbelief in their eyes as they looked at High Lord Heian on the remains of the arena stage. The left half of his body had completely vanished, and one could see that the organs of his right half had been charred black.

High Lord Heian... died?

With unfathomable strength, that overweeningly arrogant High Lord of Skysplit Tower who seemed all-powerful had actually died...

Died under the hands of Lin Ming, a mere human boy...

# Chapter 608 – Becoming A High Lord

---

On the ruined martial arena stage, Lin Ming's entire body was stained crimson with blood. His clavicle was broken, and he was supporting himself with the Purple Comet Spear. He looked like a god of death that had crawled up from an Asura battlefield.

At this time, just looking at Lin Ming made one feel as if their heart was being squeezed tight. No one dared to look Lin Ming in the eyes.

To allow himself to suffer a grievous injury in exchange for High Lord Heian's life, Lin Ming's decisive and ruthless actions had frightened all of the martial artists present, sending chills up their spines.

They had originally thought this would be an even match, and even if victory and defeat were decided, killing the opponent wasn't possible. Normally, one side would admit defeat and the other side would settle for their hard earned victory.

No one ever dreamed that High Lord Heian would be killed underneath Lin Ming's spear.

Within Skysplit Tower, the High Lords were synonymous with kings. They were haughty, inviolable, and their will was absolute.

Such a strong High Lord Heian had actually died by Lin Ming's hands. The impact that this had on everyone was earthshaking.

“Lin Ming had always been hiding his ability. If he erupted with his complete strength from the start then he might have forced High Lord Heian into defeat, but he patiently waited, waited, and waited more, all until that final moment when he was able to kill High Lord Heian with a single spear. From the very beginning, he had been planning on killing High Lord Heian. This is too scary!”

“We can understand this tactic, but who could actually carry it out? Even if we are as strong as Lin Ming, we don’t have his endurance! Lin Ming had only been a tad stronger than High Lord Heian at the start, but as time passed, High Lord Heian’s condition slowly changed and his combat strength began to decline. But Lin Ming was actually able to maintain 80 to 90% of his full strength until that final moment when he exploded with everything he had! This is simply inhuman. Before this he had even fought in three fierce battles!

From the beginning, no one thought that Lin Ming would be able to win the revolving battle against Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, but, what had happened was that Lin Ming had easily killed all three of them. And the madman didn’t even finish there. In a single go, he continued onwards and killed High Lord Heian!

“He came up with this tactic from the start. In order to kill High Lord Heian, he didn’t even hesitate to seriously wound himself. Formidable strength, terrifying talent, inhuman stamina, a calm, decisive, and ruthless mind and tactics, he killed without hesitation all in order to rid himself of future problems. Such a terrifying person and yet he’s only 20 some years old. Who knows what his achievements will be in the future!”

To the audience, Lin Ming becoming a Peerless Emperor was as good as settled. But, the question was whether or not Lin Ming could maintain this momentum, how many stages of Life Destruction he would pass, and whether or not he would become the number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent!

Being able to look down on all rivals in his youth didn't mean that he would be able to dominate the continent in the future. After all, the chances that a genius would fall in the future were difficult to speculate.

“To kill High Lord Heian, Lin Ming's actions were too flashy this time. Although this was a battle in the martial arena, and killing the opponent is in line with Skysplit Tower's rules, the other High Lords won't give up here. This is a challenge to their authority!”

“Not necessarily. The 12 High Lords have never been on the best of terms with each other. One less High Lord Heian means that the other 11 High Lords will be able to divide more resources for themselves and obtain even more wealth and authority.” As the martial artists were discussing, they suddenly saw a black mass of infernal energy fly up from High Lord Heian's corpse. This mass of infernal energy turned into a grim demon in the air. This demon had five pairs of wings; it was a ten-winged Heavenly Demon!

In this instant, the martial artists present finally realized that they had forgotten something. Lin Ming was already a peak eight-winged Heavenly Demon. If he killed High Lord Heian then...

Woosh!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon rushed towards Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming was seriously injured, and he didn't even have 30% of his strength left. Even so, he wouldn't be defeated by something like a mass of infernal energy!

The Heavenly Demon force field opened, a tide of pressure swept out!

Peng!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon fiercely trembled and half of its body dispersed. Lin Ming's right shoulder was nearly split apart so he used his left hand to lift the spear. With a thrust, thunder burst out!

Chi-la!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon's body was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. It turned into pure infernal energy that merged into Lin Ming's body.

With it, the eight-winged Heavenly Demon on Lin Ming's arm began to slowly grow a fifth pair of wings, becoming increasingly clear. This pair was larger than the first four, and the feathers looked as sharp as swords.

Ten-winged Heavenly Demon! This was a High Lord!

“Lin Ming became a High Lord?”

The martial artists present didn't know how to respond, this was truly difficult reality to accept! In Polar Skysplit Tower, it had been ages since a human High Lord had appeared. Moreover, Lin Ming was younger than everyone present.

Just six months ago, Lin Ming had been a newcomer to Skysplit Tower's third floor.

“High Lord... holy...”

“What will the other 11 High Lords do?”

According to the usual practices of Skysplit Tower, before a martial artist became a High Lord they would either be won over, suppressed, threatened, bribed, or even forced to leave. None of these were unusual or surprising situations. Once one became a ten-winged Heavenly Demon, they were a High Lord. This was the rule of Skysplit Tower.

In fact, in a sense, of those geniuses that were suppressed or forced away, most of them were far too weak.

For instance, Da Gu. As the fourth ranked amongst Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, if he hadn't heeded the warning of Skysplit Tower's High Lords and continued to his next match, then it was possible that they would have arranged for Yan Chi to be his

opponent. When that time came, the results could be imagined.

However, towards this monstrous genius Lin Ming whose strength already surpassed High Lord Heian, the High Lords of Skysplit Tower were no longer capable of threatening him. Even that revolving battle of Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi was easily won by Lin Ming. Who else could do anything to him?

In order to kill Lin Ming, that was only possible if four or five High Lords acted together, causing a heaven-shaking and earth-shattering battle!

At that time when the entirety of Skysplit Tower knew of this, it would become impossible to explain why they killed another High Lord without any reason.

Now, it could be said that Polar Skysplit Tower didn't have any way to manage Lin Ming.

“Is this real... there is going to be another High Lord? A human High Lord?”

All of the martial artists present thought they were in a dream. In the last several thousands of years, Lin Ming would be the fastest High Lord born within the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes, as well as the youngest High Lord.

Moreover, he was a human!



Lin Ming swallowed a healing pill. Underneath the dual function of the pill and his own formidable resilience, the wound on his arm was already regenerating. He could even feel the muscles rapidly growing underneath, causing an itching feeling to spread there. The healing of his clavicle would be slower, but it wouldn't take any longer than a few hours.

Lin Ming put out his hand and High Lord Heian's spatial ring dropped into his palm. This black and plain spatial ring was heavy and a size larger than a normal spatial ring.

This was impressively a high-grade earth-step spatial ring!

A spatial ring was rarer than other treasures of the same level. The value of this high-grade earth-step spatial ring was probably no less than Lin Ming's own Purple Comet Spear!

'A High Lord of Skysplit Tower, who knows how much wealth he's gathered over the years!' Lin Ming sighed in his heart. High Lord Heian's cultivation was only equal to a human Revolving Core powerhouse; in terms of combat strength, he was far inferior to a Life Destruction powerhouse. Even in this case, he still had a suspected heaven-step treasure black sword and a high-grade earth-step spatial ring.

It had to be known that Mu Fengxian was only a single stage Life Destruction master as well as the Highest Elder of Divine Phoenix Island. Still, the weapon she used was only a normal high-grade earth-step treasure.

‘If this ring is so valuable, then what would be in it?’ Lin Ming was filled with anticipation.

As for the suspected heaven-step Crimson Ruby Snake Sword, Lin Ming naturally couldn’t forget it, he also received it. If he didn’t count the Cosmic Melting Furnace, then this was the highest quality treasure that Lin Ming had seen up until now. Although he couldn’t use it himself, he could still exchange it for massive amounts of resources.

Seeing Lin Ming take all of High Lord Heian’s wealth, the martial artists’ eyes turned red with envy. This was the total wealth that a Blood Slaughter Steppes High Lord had accumulated for over ten years. Its total value would absolutely surpass that of an ordinary fifth-grade sect Sovereign!

Such a great amount of wealth would be of enormous help to walking down one’s future road of martial arts. Even someone like Feng Shen couldn’t ignore it.

After Lin Ming received everything, he didn’t leave the martial arena but instead sat there and meditated. He was currently in a very poor state and his combat strength had drastically dropped. If someone on the same level as High Lord Heian came now, then they would be able to kill him without a doubt.

Although this possibility was very low, Lin Ming didn’t want to be taken by surprise. Restoring his strength to 70 to 80% in the martial arena and then returning to his practice area was the safest bet.

As long as he could restore his strength, then who could do anything to Lin Ming? Not to mention that he also had the ephemeral Golden Roc Shattering the Void. If he truly tried to run away with his full ability, then not even four or five High Lord Heians would be able to stop him.

Even if their speed could keep up with Lin Ming, their endurance would be inferior to his. Lin Ming could maintain his peak speed the entire time. As for others, even if they popped pills constantly while flying, their speed would become more and more slow.

In this case, Lin Ming no longer had any fear of Polar Skysplit Tower!

Seeing that Lin Ming didn't intend to leave yet, the other martial artists invariably also decided not to go, sitting in their seats and discussing what just happened.

And at this time, on Skysplit Tower's first floor and second floor, there were many martial artists gathered in pubs, restaurants, teahouses, and other places discussing Lin Ming's three continuous fights with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang. The second floor martial artists didn't feel as great a pressure as those martial artists on the third floor did. They were free to choose the time of their match, and if they didn't want to compete they could just ignore it. They had a relatively great amount of time to chat and relax.

Lin Ming's revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had already spread through the entire Skysplit Tower 10 days ago like a

raging storm. Everyone was a martial artist, so who didn't want to see such a peak battle? But those that could truly go to the third floor and watch the match were the extraordinary individuals or absurdly wealthy of the second floor.

As for the weaker rung of martial artists, let alone having the qualifications, but even if they did have the qualifications to go up they still wouldn't be able to afford a ticket.

In a restaurant on the second floor, a mixed race old storyteller was carrying a walking stick in one hand as he made rapid hand gestures in the air with the other.

He was making up completely fantastical fabrications of Lin Ming's three man revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang.

The martial artists of the first and second floor that didn't have the qualifications to enter the third floor and watch this battle could only use their imaginations to fill it in. The storytelling old man had found business in this opportunity, and was casting Lin Ming's three man revolving battle with great gusto.

For a mortal, if they could receive a single Blood Demon Crystal as a reward, this would be enough for them to live in Skysplit Tower for an entire year.

"Pah!" The old man pounded his walking stick against the ground. "...In that very moment, Kai Yang cut down with his saber, using his ultimate technique. But at this time, Lin Ming

stood his ground, unmoving. He flourished his long spear, thrusting it out, and at that moment the heavens shook and the earth shattered, gods cried and ghosts wept... Kai Yang spat out a mouthful of blood and Lin Ming chased him down...”

“Hold on! F\*ck you, what the f\*ck are you making up all this shit for!” An Imp martial artist pounded the table. The storytelling old man had said that Kai Yang had been beaten up by Lin Ming. As both he and Kai Yang were Imps, he naturally didn’t want to listen to this nonsense.

[Previous Chapter](#)

# Chapter 609 – High Lord Heian's Inheritance

---

The storytelling old man was scared. He quickly apologized, “I’m sorry, I’m sorry, this lowly one has only heard everyone say this so that’s why I...”

“You’re just a mortal, so what the hell do you understand.” The Imp martial artist angrily said.

“Consider it over.” The Imp martial artist’s companion waved his hand. “Kai Yang probably isn’t Lin Ming’s match. Lin Ming entered the King’s Cage for 108 days. After he came out, he probably had the strength to rank near the front of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars.”

“It’s already been several quarter hours since the match started. I think that the results have already come out. Lin Ming should be able to defeat Kai Yang, but I wonder how his fight with Maha went?”

“F\*ck, I wish I could watch the match. This sucks!”

As the martial artists in the restaurant talked amongst themselves, the storytelling old man didn’t know if he should continue.

And at this time, the martial artists suddenly heard a loud noise outside of the restaurant, growing louder and more excited with

every passing moment.

“What’s going on?”

The several martial artists were suspicious and were preparing to go out to take a look, when suddenly a martial artist ran in, almost crashing into the group.

The several martial artists were about to lose their temper until they discovered that this person was their companion.

“Big news! Big news!” The martial artist yelled as soon as he passed the door.

“What’s going on? Why are you so freaked out?”

“Skysplit Tower’s High Lords have changed. Lin Ming has replaced High Lord Heian as a new one of the 12 High Lords, given the title of High Lord Evil God!” The martial artist frantically said.

“What did you just say?” The martial artists were stunned. Their first reactions were disbelief, “Lin Ming replaced High Lord Heian? How is that possible? Then what about High Lord Heian?”

“High Lord Heian seems... seems to be dead... dead...”

As the martial artist spoke with ambiguity, everyone present was shocked, completely petrified.

High Lord Heian... died?

.....

Within Skysplit Tower, the news of Lin Ming killing High Lord Heian was spreading at a terrifying speed!

Nearly every martial artist on the third floor was in the martial arena at the moment, so they of course knew the moment that Lin Ming killed High Lord Heian. Of course, the martial artists of the first floor and second floor were much slower in finding out the news.

But this didn't take over an hour.

A High Lord was killed! This was the greatest event that had happened in Skysplit Tower for the last few hundreds of years!

When people heard this news, many of them were filled with disbelief, because these were basically rumors. But as the news began to spread through the entire Skysplit Tower, and with the high-level figures of Skysplit Tower not standing up to clarify these rumors, they had no choice but to believe.

Ten days ago, the news of Lin Ming's three man revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had spread through the entirety of Skysplit Tower. But now, compared to today's news, that was simply child's play!



Initially, people had thought that Lin Ming would likely die in this three man revolving fight, but they never imagined the result would be like it was. It was simply unbelievable. Lin Ming killed Yan Chi and the rest, and then continued to kill High Lord Heian in a single go, becoming one of the current High Lords!

A High Lord was a legendary existence. On the second floor, there basically weren't any martial artists that had seen a High Lord before. And for the mortals of Skysplit Tower, a High Lord was no different from a god, a being that they couldn't even look up to.

.....

At this time, Skysplit Tower's third floor, practice area.

Lin Ming was sitting cross-legged on a stone bed.

He didn't know about the discussions happening outside nor did he care. In fact, even the title of High Lord Evil God was given to him by the martial artists of the third floor, spreading out from that point afterwards. This was naturally a title that originated from Lin Ming's title given to him by the King Tablet, Evil God Asura.

Lin Ming sat in meditation for a while, restoring his condition to its peak state. Then, he took out the four spatial rings he had obtained, one at a time. These spatial rings were respectively obtained from Kai Yang, Maha, Yan Chi, and High Lord Heian.

Of these four spatial rings, three were medium-grade earth-step and one was a high-grade earth-step.

Lin Ming picked up Kai Yang's spatial ring first. Kai Yang was the weakest of the bunch, so he was naturally the poorest too.

After taking out everything within the spatial ring, Lin Ming quickly swept through it all. There wasn't anything too valuable inside. There were pills, jade slips, various treasure, and also over 9000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. The value of these wasn't too small, but Lin Ming didn't even bother to glance at them.

Lin Ming quickly sorted everything out and put everything he didn't need in one spatial ring and the Blood Demon Crystals in another. There wasn't anything in Kai Yang's spatial ring that had interested him, but this was also within his expectations.

Then, Lin Ming picked up Maha's spatial ring.

The contents were similar to Kai Yang's spatial ring, except even more abundant. There were around 15,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, which was always a great and useful wealth.

There were even some acceptably adequate pills. Lin Ming took them out and reserved them for future use.

Then, Lin Ming picked up Yan Chi's spatial ring.

After taking out the contents, there were actually just around 20,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals as well as all sorts of pills. Even the treasures were the highest of high quality.

After sweeping through everything, Lin Ming picked out a jade slip from the chaotic mess. After sweeping his mind through it, he was surprised.

This was Yan Chi's records about his experience with battle spirits.

Battle spirit...

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. When one reached a higher level in the road of martial arts, a battle spirit would become an essential part of a martial artist's strength.

A battle spirit could grow along with a martial artist's own growth, slowly strengthening. Thus, the earlier one comprehended a battle spirit, the more room for growth there would be.

However, if a martial artist had bad luck, poor perception, or their martial arts cultivation had already reached an exceedingly high realm, they would slowly be unable to comprehend a battle spirit.

A battle spirit was in itself an elusive and enigmatic existence, a mysterious and obscure boundary. Sometimes the more one

wanted to comprehend a battle spirit, the less successful they would be. Sometimes the less one thought about it, the higher their chances of comprehending it would be. It was an indescribable factor.

The memories that Lin Ming inherited were incomplete and there was very little concerning battle spirits. With Yan Chi's recorded experiences, even though it was probably riddled with errors and rough spots, at least it could be used as a reference point. In the end, it was better than nothing.

Putting this jade slip aside, Lin Ming waved his hand and put everything else inside a spatial ring.

These three spatial rings had contributed over 40,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals to Lin Ming. This was enough for Lin Ming to squander them as quickly as he could for dozens of years.

Finally, it was time for the main event. This was High Lord Heian's spatial ring.

Lin Ming picked up the spatial ring and sank his mind inside. in the next moment, everything inside was taken out.

For a time, the entire practice area was filled with massive piles of various jade slips, pills, treasures, and several dozens of large boxes.

A rich infernal energy and blood vitality coiled around these

boxes – they were obviously Blood Demon Crystals.

Every large box had 5000 Blood Demon Crystals. With several dozen of these large boxes, there were around 200,000 to 300,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Compared to the total combined wealth of Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, it was at least seven or eight times more.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that the wealth of a High Lord from Skysplit Tower was equal to an entire sect.

“Mm... this is...”

Lin Ming felt that within these dozens of boxes, one of them had an especially rich infernal energy. Lin Ming put out his hand and this box fell into his palm.

This box was a third of the size of the other ones. It was crafted from jade and was engraved with a sealing array formation. This array formation was used to prevent the leakage of energy.

“There's a sealing array formation but the energy coming from it is still so potent. What could be inside?”

Lin Ming unraveled the box's array formation and opened the lid. Instantly, an energy so thick that it condensed into substance began to escape.

Within the box, just the bottom was covered with a layer of light

grape-sized red crystal. Every crystal was bright, translucent, and extremely shiny.

“These are... top grade Blood Demon Crystals?”

Above high-grade Blood Demon Crystals was top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. This sort of Blood Demon Crystal would only originate from the highest quality of Blood Demon Crystal mines. But in these mines, there was only a very, very small amount of top-quality Blood Demon Crystals that would be produced, thus they were incomparably precious.

This sort of thing was too wasteful if used to practice. Even a High Lord of Skysplit Tower wasn't willing to be so extravagant and luxurious.

A top-grade Blood Demon Crystal was mainly used to make breakthroughs in bottlenecks. For instance, if Lin Ming cultivated to the extreme Xiantian realm and wanted to make a breakthrough to Revolving Core, then he could use a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal to greatly shorten the time needed to make a breakthrough.

“This is the good stuff.”

Lin Ming roughly counted them. Within this box, there were only several dozen top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. These weren't something that could be bought with money alone. Even Yan Chi, Maha, or Kai Yang didn't have a single top-grade Blood Demon Crystal in their spatial rings, but High Lord Heian actually had

several dozen of them at once. From this alone, one could see just how wealthy the High Lords of Skysplit Tower were.

“High Lord Heian collected so many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals... he was probably preparing to make his breakthrough to a four-star Demon King.”

To martial artists from the demon races, such as the Giant Demons or Imps, the step from a three-star Demon King to four-star Demon King was similar to a human martial artist's leap from Revolving Core to Life Destruction. It was not a small hurdle.

After a Skysplit Tower High Lord broke through to a four-star Demon King, they would then leave Skysplit Tower. Otherwise, if they stayed within the Blood Slaughter Steppes for too long, then there was a chance they would be killed by the mystical power within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As Lin Ming was putting away these several dozen top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, his mind suddenly stirred. “There seems to be something here...”

Taking out all of the top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, Lin Ming found that there was actually a hidden space at the bottom of the jade box. He pulled open the cover to reveal a small space just several inches wide.

Within this space were two glass beads, one black and one white.

As Lin Ming saw these two colored glass beads, he sucked in a deep breath. These were... Demon God Bones!

Two Demon God Bones! And both of them were much larger than the one that Xing Tian had!

Lin Ming was secretly flabbergasted.

It was impossible to measure the value of a Demon God Bone with Blood Demon Crystals.

Every 10 years, the Eternal Demon Abyss would have a period where it became relatively quiet and tranquil. During this time, Skysplit Tower's High Lords would send out teams of people to scour the boundary edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, sometimes even going themselves.

Demon God Bones were formed when the rich energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss became thick to the point that it was a liquid and then condensed over a period of tens of thousands of years or even a hundred thousand years; it was far incomparable with Blood Demon Crystals. It was of tremendous help to the cultivation of martial artists from any race. Demon God Bones could even help a Demon King or Life Destruction powerhouse attack the bottleneck to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse. Just from this alone, one could see that its effects were similar to the Nirvana Dragon Root, and in fact, the value of a Demon God Bone was comparable to a Nirvana Dragon Root.

Although the Nirvana Dragon Root was rare, it was still only a



medical plant found in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden. The Demon Emperor had initially only been a very strong Emperor level powerhouse. But, the Demon God Bone originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss, and that mystical and strange presence within the Eternal Demon Abyss was far from what the Demon Emperor could compare with when he was still in the Sky Spill Continent.

# Chapter 610 – You Either Leave Or Fight

---

When Lin Ming first swallowed a Demon God Bone, the Demon God Bone had fused together with the Heavenly Demon force field. This had been countered with the Nameless Divine Pill that had been refined from a Nirvana Dragon Root. With the energies together, it was a complete coincidence that their combined powers were able to completely open the Gate of Healing.

From this alone, one could see that a single Demon God Bone was somewhat inferior to the Nameless Divine Pill refined from a Nirvana Dragon Root.

However, it had to be said that regardless of whether it was Xing Tian or High Lord Heian's Demon God Bones, they had all come from the surrounding area of the Eternal Demon Abyss and were also the most common and ordinary level of Demon God Bones.

But within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there were actually higher grade Demon God Bones. There were completely legendary objects; it was almost impossible for anyone to get their hands on them.

Lin Ming browsed through the jade slips that High Lord Heian had left behind. Besides some top cultivation methods, there was a single jade slip that caught his attention.

The contents within were actually a record of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“Eternal Demon Abyss...”

Lin Ming muttered. Mysterious lands always attracted eager people that desired to explore, especially a place like the Eternal Demon Abyss which contained seemingly infinite resources as well as countless dangerous and fatal traps. There were even some Emperor powerhouses that, when their time was about to come to an end, would choose enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. They not only wanted to find their own lucky chance but also longed to decipher that mystical land. They wanted to see with their own eyes just what was within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Sinking his mind into the jade slip, the first thing that appeared within Lin Ming's mind was a map. This was a map of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

On this map, the 12 Skysplit Towers were marked with red dots, and underneath these 12 Skysplit Towers was the tens of thousands of miles wide Eternal Demon Abyss.

This part of the Eternal Demon Abyss map was completely blank.

But several thousand miles around the Eternal Demon Abyss periphery, there were detailed signs, careful descriptions of dangerous zones, locations, spots, all meticulously portrayed and annotated.

In addition, there was even a mark on the map that indicated where it was easy to find Demon God Bones.

If one wanted to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss, the value of

this map as a reference point was unimaginable.

Below all of this was all sorts of varied lore about the Eternal Demon Abyss. Its contents were similar to what Lin Ming already knew. For tens of thousands of years, every single character that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, regardless of whether they were peerless geniuses or Emperor powerhouses, everyone would die there with no exception.

Let alone the inside of the Eternal Demon Abyss, even a thousand miles around the edges was a restricted death zone. Anyone that entered would die!

All martial artists that wanted to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss, including even High Lords, had to be at least 1000 miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, or sometimes even 2000 miles away.

The closer one approached to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the higher grade of Demon God Bones there would be, but, the dangers would also be correspondingly greater and the chances of dying there that much higher!

“According to the records within this jade slip, in just this last millennium, over 170 High Lords have died within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Every time the Eternal Demon Abyss opens there would be one or two High Lords that die!”

Lin Ming was shocked as he saw the data within High Lord Heian’s jade slip. Every time that the Eternal Demon Abyss

opened, High Lords would personally go, and the reason for this was those high grade Demon God Bones.

For a character on the level of a normal Heavenly Demon Seven Star, their strength was far worse compared to a High Lord. They could only stay in the extreme periphery. Finding one or two ordinary Demon God Bones was already considered very good for them.

To find anything of a higher grade was simply impossible.

With 12 Skysplit Towers, that would mean there were around 150 High Lords. Every time the Eternal Demon Abyss opened, one or two would die. That would also mean that the fatality rate of these High Lords was around 1%; this wasn't a too exaggerated fatality rate.

On the road of martial arts, if one was too afraid to take risks then they might as well not practice martial arts and peacefully pass away from old age while enjoying themselves.

"Eternal Demon Abyss... if there's a chance, I want to go too." Lin Ming was very much interested in exploring this land where so many risks and chances coexisted together. Of course, he absolutely didn't dare to enter into the 1000 mile death zone surrounding the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. He didn't think that his life was much sturdier than those of ancient Emperor level powerhouses.

As Lin Ming continued to read through the jade slip it also

described how the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted. It seemed that every several dozens of years, the Eternal Demon Abyss would also erupt once like a volcano, spitting out a massive amount of infernal energy as well as some hidden caches of Demon God Bones from within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

For the last several tens of thousands of years, people had searched the extreme outer edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss for these scattered Demon God Bones, all of them having come from the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

After every one of these special eruptions, the martial artists that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss would have much greater harvests. Of course, the risks would be higher too.

Because after the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, that restless and vibrant energy and some strange life forms would form various danger spots, areas where one's bones wouldn't even be left over.

And in these cases of eruptions, the map would have massive changes to it. The old map would no longer be useful and one could only form a new map. This also meant that it was easier for people to randomly stumble into these danger zones.

It could be said that in the last 1000 years, of the over 170 High Lords that had died, over half of these deaths were because of the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As Lin Ming finished reading through the jade slip, at this moment, a bright light flashed in his room, a sound then floating

into Lin Ming's mind. "I am High Lord Bloodfire. Young Hero Lin, please follow the servants to the fourth floor."

"Fourth floor?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. The fourth floor was the exclusive residency of Skysplit Tower's High Lords.

All remaining 11 High Lords were situated there!

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then left his practice area.

Just outside of Lin Ming's practice area, a pair of beautiful Fey maids were already waiting. These two beautiful girls were the same height and both their stature and appearance could not be any more perfect. Their cultivation was also at the Houtian realm.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, if there was ever a girl that could be so young and have a Houtian realm cultivation while having such a perfect appearance, then they would be the most proud amongst all proud women. However, within Skysplit Tower, they were actually nothing more than maids.

"Sir High Lord, we are here to lead you to the fourth floor and fulfill any desire you have." A young Fey girl said in a soft lilting voice.

"Lead the way." Lin Ming's voice was calm and indifferent.

The third and fourth floors of Skysplit Tower were also connected by a transmission array. In this white hazy transmission array, one needed a token to enter.

As Lin Ming reached this transmission array he stopped and began to patiently study it. As he thought, it was undoubtedly an ancient transmission array. It stemmed from the same foundation as the Realm of the Gods' transmission arrays.

Seeing this familiar transmission array, Lin Ming was much more relieved. This way, at least he wouldn't be trapped on the fourth floor. His fleeting Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique combined with this ancient transmission array meant that he was confident that even if several High Lords sieged him together, he would still be able to safely withdraw.

With a step inside, a light flashed. In the next moment, Lin Ming and the two Fey maids arrived at Skysplit Tower's fourth floor.

The legendary Road of Emperor was also here.

As he was led through a dimly lit corridor, the maids finally brought Lin Ming before a towering and sumptuous grand temple. The gate of this temple was over 100 feet tall and there were all sorts of ancient and mysterious runes carved into it. It was unknown just what material it was formed from.

As Lin Ming arrived at this great temple, the gates opened, making grinding noises as if the structure couldn't resist its own



vast weight.

Past the gate, there were 10 people in black robes, all of them uniformly wearing black cloaks. Some were tall, some were short, and all of them were sitting at a long black table.

With the ten people gathered together, the aura they emitted could be called terrifying.

And this aura was completely aimed towards Lin Ming alone!

Lin Ming's mind went cold. The Heavenly Demon martial intent immediately erupted, offsetting the pressure from this combined aura. His body only shook for a split second but he hadn't taken a single step back.

Without a doubt, these 10 black-robed individuals were all High Lords of Skysplit Tower. Facing Lin Ming, they were only subconsciously emitting their aura in order to frighten him.

“Only 10 of them. Isn't there another High Lord?”

Lin Ming was puzzled. He swept over these 10 individuals. Of these 10, there was a pretty significant gap in strength between all of them. There were even some people that were unfathomably deep. Lin Ming had to admit that he wasn't their match at this moment.

“Heroes truly come from the young!” A black-robed man sitting

in the first seat laughed, his voice deep and loud. “High Lord Evil God, is that your title?”

Lin Ming calmly said, “Titles are meaningless to me. Feel free to call me what you will.” The black-robed man speaking was without a doubt the strongest powerhouse amongst the 10 High Lords here. Lin Ming had to confess that he didn’t have the slightest chance of defeating him.

“Good! I like your straightforward attitude. I don’t want to play games with you. I’ll ask you now, are you willing to leave Skysplit Tower?”

Lin Ming frowned, “You are a ten-winged Heavenly Demon and I am ten-winged Heavenly Demon, why do you want me to leave Skysplit Tower? Is it only because I am a human? Do you think that this Skysplit Tower only belongs to you Goliaths and Giant Demons?”

“Hehe, it’s not only because you’re a human.” The black-robed man in the first seat stood up, his deep and dark eyes like stars in the night. “I allow you to leave because those have been the rules of Skysplit Tower for the last 10,000 years! Skysplit Tower does not allow the existence of twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. But you... if you are freely allowed to grow as you wish, then in another year or two we might not even be your match anymore. When that day comes, who can prevent you from obtaining 12 wings? This is a lesson that was learnt from the Eightfall War Emperor; once is already more than enough. We do not wish for any volatile factors to appear which threaten the status of Skysplit Tower.”

Lin Ming sneered, not speaking. In the end, it seemed that the current rules of Skysplit Tower had already taken the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes as their own property.

Indeed, with the ability to amass such a massive amount of resources and wealth, as well as numerous high level practice areas, who would not be moved by these?

If the Blood Slaughter Steppes didn't contain a mystical force that killed all high level martial artists that stepped into here, then this land would have already been aimed at by the many Emperor level powerhouses and Holy Lands of the Holy Demon Continent. At that time, an unrivalled great war would erupt over the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and the Blood Slaughter Steppes would eventually be carved up by the victors.

And such a war would probably erupt every thousand years, causing the land to be redistributed again.

Now, because of all these strange and secretive rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes forming a pattern, in a sense, the current Blood Slaughter Steppes had become a special sort of sect. As for these High Lords, they were the same as the sect Elders.

“I can leave. I had no intention of becoming a High Lord to begin with, nor do I want to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes for a long time. I only want to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes for another three months and then enter the Road of Emperor. After I come out, I will immediately leave!” Lin Ming already made deep

concessions. With his current strength, coming into direct confrontation with the Blood Slaughter Steppes was not wise or rational. It had to be known that the Blood Slaughter Steppes didn't have just the Polar Skysplit Tower, but also 11 other Skysplit Towers. There were simply masters all around.

“Hehe.” The black-robed man smiled, “I’m sorry, but it’s impossible for me to agree to your request. You can either choose to leave now, or you can choose to fight with me!”

# Chapter 611 – Skysplit Tower's Tower Master

---

Either choose to leave now or chose to fight with the 10 High Lords?

Lin Ming's pupils shrank, his right hand subconsciously tracing his spatial ring.

Under the watchful eyes of everyone on the third floor, none of these people dared to do anything to Lin Ming. But on the fourth floor, if a fight broke out, the martial artists on the third floor wouldn't necessarily know.

“Don't be so nervous. When I say fight, I mean a match on the martial arena stage. Unless I'm forced far enough I won't resort to doing something so silly like breaking the established rules.”

The black-robed person slowly said. The implicit meaning behind his words was that if Lin Ming insisted on staying in Skysplit Tower and insisted on entering the Road of Emperor, then he wouldn't hesitate to break the rules of Skysplit Tower and ruin its reputation to kill Lin Ming.

Martial arena battle...

Lin Ming fell into a silence. He wasn't so brazenly confident to the degree that he felt he was invincible within Polar Skysplit Tower. Not to mention a potential continuous revolving fight, he

didn't even feel fully confident he could defeat this black-robed man in front of him.

The black-robed man's eyes studied Lin Ming, his starry eyes seeming as if they could completely understand him. "Lin Ming, if I'm not wrong, that energy field that you're emitting from your body is a kind of martial intent related to the Heavenly Demon force field!"

Lin Ming's mind went cold. This old fox had extraordinary eyesight, he had actually seen through everything with a glance.

The black-robed man didn't know that one could obtain the Asura force field after completing the entire King's Cage, but he had seen the Death God force field before, which was one held by all twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. Both of them had similarities so he had naturally noticed it.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before frankly admitting it, "Yes!"

The black-robed man smirked, "Although I haven't obtained the Heavenly Demon martial intent myself, I do still have some understandings about it. I don't know how you managed to obtain this sort of force field, but what I do know is that you only gained it after you entered Skysplit Tower. This martial intent has similarities with the Heavenly Demon martial intent. The more martial intents a martial artist receives, the more powerful they become, especially if they can fuse them together... your martial intent and the Heavenly Demon martial intent are similar. I do not believe that you don't desire to obtain the Heavenly Demon

martial intent and then fuse them as one!”

“But to obtain the Heavenly Demon martial intent, you have to first become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This is the absolute taboo, thus, do not be so delusional to think you will enter the Road of Emperor!”

The black-robed man’s antagonizing words relentlessly barraged Lin Ming, leaving him no wiggle room.

Now was the time to deal with Lin Ming. If Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, the black-robed man didn’t have the slightest belief that he would be able to defeat Lin Ming. When that time came, nobody in Polar Skysplit Tower would be Lin Ming’s match and no one would be able to stop him from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

“Lin Ming, you killing Heian was through a mutually agreed life or death battle. Since it is in line with Skysplit Tower’s rules, I won’t pursue the matter any further, but... if you do not leave Skysplit Tower today, I won’t be polite anymore!”

As the black-robed man spoke, he took a single step forwards. His aura suddenly erupted into a blood-red flame around him, making it appear as if he had caught on fire.

This black-robed man was High Lord Bloodfire, and his title had come from the cultivation method that he practiced as well as the bloody flames that surrounded him.

When Lin Ming had killed Xue Man on the second floor, he had seen an image of High Lord Bloodfire in a jade slip of his. Even though Xue Man was an extremely cruel and proud person, when he mentioned High Lord Bloodfire he did so with the utmost respect. This was a respect that came from the bones, and even from fear!

Now it looked like High Lord Bloodfire was one of the stronger High Lords; no wonder Xue Man had feared him so.

The entire hall's atmosphere was grim, everyone tensed for action.

Lin Ming lightly traced his spatial ring as he revolved his true essence. If he couldn't enter the Road of Emperor or even become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, then the Heavenly Demon martial intent would be lacking two forms. How could he even think of fusing them anymore?

"If you are willing to leave Skysplit Tower then I can also compensate you."

High Lord Bloodfire took a step back. Towards a character like Lin Ming, he felt an extremely deep dread. If he couldn't kill Lin Ming and instead provoked him, then it was possible that he would have offended the Holy Demon Continent's future top powerhouse. In that case, High Lord Bloodfire wouldn't ever be able to sleep in peace.

Lin Ming frowned. Naturally, he wasn't willing to accept these



conditions.

At this moment, a brilliant flame lit up in the hall. In the darkness it was especially radiant.

This was a sound transmitting talisman.

As High Lord Bloodfire received this sound transmitting talisman he was immediately startled. He began to look Lin Ming up and down with some puzzlement in his eyes.

“Lin Ming, the Chief High Lord has agreed to allow you to enter the Road of Emperor, but you will need to fulfill a condition.”

“Chief High Lord?” Lin Ming was surprised. Who was the Chief High Lord? Was he Polar Skysplit Tower’s Chief High Lord? Or the 12 Skysplit Towers’ Chief High Lord?

High Lord Bloodfire said, “The Chief High Lord is my Polar Skysplit Tower’s Tower Master. He is also one of the 12 High Lords. Several hours ago he was already returning to Polar Skysplit Tower. He should arrive in another incense stick of time or so.”

So that’s how it was. Lin Ming had already noticed that there were only 10 High Lords here. Counting the already deceased High Lord Heian, there was still another High Lord missing. So, the one that wasn’t here was actually Skysplit Tower’s Tower Master.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming turned vigilant. If High Lord Bloodfire

was already so strong, then what degree of strength would the Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master be at?

In front of such a person...

Lin Ming's mind chilled. He asked, "What condition does he want me to agree to?"

"I'm not sure. You'll need to speak face-to-face with the Chief High Lord." High Lord Bloodfire said, expressionless.

Lin Ming's eyebrows twisted together tightly. High Lord Bloodfire only sat in his seat, not speaking a single word.

A deep silence fell over the hall.

In another half incense stick of time, a sound transmitting talisman lit up the hall again.

High Lord Bloodfire rose from his seat and said, "Come with me. Sir Chief High Lord wishes to see you now."

Chief High Lord...

Lin Ming remained silent. An uneasy feeling filled his heart. This nervousness, this anxiety, it all stemmed from his lack of strength.

Before now, when he talked to Da Gu about Skysplit Tower and the Eternal Demon Abyss, Da Gu hadn't known that Polar Skysplit Tower had a Tower Master.

Da Gu had once said that Feng Shen was able to compare to a weaker High Lord. These words had made Lin Ming subconsciously think that the strength of the 12 High Lords wasn't out of his reach.

When he rushed out of the King's Cage and also broke through to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in the meantime, Lin Ming had great confidence in his own strength. This was the only reason he had willingly agreed to a revolving battle with Yan Chi, Kai Yang, and Maha, even following that with killing High Lord Heian.

Within Polar Skysplit Tower, strength was everything. When Lin Ming had killed High Lord Heian, that had created a great deterrent for anyone plotting against him. In this case, Lin Ming believed that although he couldn't defeat some of the High Lords, he would still be able to escape, freely coming and going.

However, he never imagined that the disparity in strength between Skysplit Tower's 12 High Lords was so great. The weak were around Feng Shen, and the strong were strong to a ridiculous degree.

High Lord Heian's cultivation was equal to the human middle Revolving Core realm, and his strength approached the start of Life Destruction. But, the Chief High Lord of the 12 High Lords probably had a cultivation approaching Life Destruction, and his strength was likely far above a first stage Life Destruction master.

In the face of such a person, it was impossible for Lin Ming to be at ease.

“What? You don’t want to enter the Road of Emperor?” High Lord Bloodfire’s lips curved up in an interested smirk, “Sir Chief High Lord was originally cultivating at the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple but, for you, he especially hurried back to Polar Skysplit Tower, and yet you don’t dare to see him?”

High Lord Bloodfire was trying to stir up Lin Ming.

Towards these childish tactics of trying to rankle him, Lin Ming didn’t care. It was just that the current situation was...

Lin Ming turned his head to see that the surrounding nine other High Lords had also risen from their seats. Although they seemed to just be casually standing there, if Lin Ming really tried to run out now, then these nine High Lords would be able to instantly cut off Lin Ming!

With the elusive and fleeting Concept of Space, Lin Ming had some confidence that he would be able to escape this hall. But the problem was there was still an unfathomably powerful Tower Master somewhere!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, all sorts of possible scenarios racing through his mind.

‘He promises that I can enter the Road of Emperor as long as I agree to a condition. What sort of condition is that?’ Lin Ming wasn’t naïve enough to think that Polar Skysplit Tower’s Tower Master recognized his abilities and wanted him to enter the Road of Emperor. Then, this condition was very intriguing. Could it be to sign a soul contract?

If he didn’t agree, what would happen then?

The best case was that Lin Ming would be forced to leave Skysplit Tower and the worst case was that he would immediately be attacked.

In this situation, Lin Ming felt that his chances of escaping through four floors was very slim.

Crap!

Lin Ming couldn’t help but admit that he had underestimated the strength of the 12 High Lords.

The reason he had made such an erroneous judgement was because of his conversation with Da Gu as well as the fact that the Eightfall War Emperor became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon

Without a doubt, the Eightfall War Emperor of the past was weaker than Lin Ming and his talent was also inferior. By all reasoning, if the Eightfall War Emperor could become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon then it shouldn’t be too difficult for Lin

Ming too. But, the sudden developments had gone beyond his imagination.

Just how had the Eightfall War Emperor become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon?

Lin Ming couldn't imagine how. In this case, with resistance at every step, the plotting of the High Lords once becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, and even the Tower Master who was above the High Lords, just who could grow to a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon in this situation?

“Lin Ming, what's going on? You don't want to go?” High Lord Bloodfire said in a joking manner, “Do you want the Tower Master to come looking for you instead?”

Lin Min stroked his spatial ring, connecting his sense to the Purple Comet Spear inside. He wasn't in the habit of putting his fate in the hands of others.

Today, he wouldn't enter the Road of Emperor, nor would he become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

Then he could only wait until the day he reached the Revolving Core realm and then return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. He didn't believe that at that time anyone could still stop him!

“Hehe, little boy, you're quite the wary one eh?” Another High Lord said. The Giant Demon who spoke was High Lord Shengong.

He had been Xing Tian's boss.

Lin Ming looked at High Lord Shengong, a cold light flashing in his eyes.

But at this moment, a hoarse voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "Go with him. Go and see that Skysplit Tower Tower Master."

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was shocked. Demonshine!

"The damage to your soul has recovered?"

Lin Ming asked, pleasantly surprised. Demonshine had been deeply sleeping within his spiritual sea. The two of them didn't need to use a true essence sound transmission and could directly communicate with each other.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had been in the Holy Demon Continent for nearly two years now. Demonshine had been sleeping this entire time, so he had nearly forgotten about him.

"I've recovered, hehehe..." Demonshine malevolently chuckled, a wicked flavor in his voice. "Now that I mention it, this Skysplit Tower's rich infernal energy is really suitable for healing this Saint's wounds. There's also that Heavenly Demon Tattoo, now that's the good stuff. It was really beneficial to this Saint's soul.

Boy, you absolutely have to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Escaping now doesn't suit the awesome style of this Saint!"



# Chapter 612 – The Only Way Out Of This Desperate Situation

---

“The Heavenly Demon Tattoo is helpful to you?” Lin Ming asked, puzzled.

“Hehehe, this Saint is originally a demonic cultivator and the Heavenly Demon Tattoo can condense infernal energy. The more demon wings there are the more infernal energy there is and the better the effects are. Of course it’s a great help to this Saint. This Saint already woke up a year ago, but because the infernal energy here is so rich, this Saint chose return to a sleeping state in order to slowly recover my strength. This Saint also has a general understanding of what has happened for the past year. A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo is absolutely something that you cannot miss out on. This Saint is depending on it to help recover strength! If you run now, then the Heavenly Demon Tattoo will slowly dissipate and all that effort for the last year or two will be completely wasted!”

The two of them were directly communicating using their souls. Although there was a very complex conversation happening between them, all of this happened in just a brief moment. Lin Ming eagerly asked, “What level has your soul force been restored to?”

Demonshine smugly smiled and said, “This Saint’s soul force has been restored to about the standard I was at when I was sucked into the space of the Magic Cube.”

“The same standard as when you were sucked into the Magic

Cube's space?" Lin Ming was startled. This old dog was probably also some character when he still traveled the Realm of the Gods. Although Lin Ming thought of him as just a dog, since Demonshine was able to follow the Demon Emperor, he probably had some skill.

According to the old dog's own boasting, he used to be a three-headed Demonic Divine Hound with the title of Hallowed Lord Demonshine, even successfully building up an invincible diamond divine body to the Large Success stage. But afterwards, his divine body was destroyed and his soul was sucked into the Divine Crystal Magic Cube. Of his trinity of consciousness, now there was only a single one left over. Three heads had then become one.

Originally Demonshine had been nothing but an incomplete soul, and after being sealed within the Magic Cube for countless years and constantly worn down over time, the weakness of his soul force could be imagined.

But now Demonshine had said that his soul force was restored to the point just before the Magic Cube had destroyed him. Although his soul was still incomplete, it should still be quite terrifying.

"Can you handle Polaris Tower's Tower Master?" Lin Ming fervently asked. If this was so, then this could really be called seeing a ray of hope after being pushed to a dead end.

Demonshine shook his head, "Nope, not possible."

"Then you want me to walk to my own death?" Lin Ming was left

speechless. This damn old dog kept giving him the impression that he was a lazy boaster that couldn't be counted on when it mattered. "In the past weren't you called a Hollowed Lord within the Realm of the Gods? And yet you can't even deal with some small fry from the mortal world?"

"Humph! This Saint only has an incomplete soul left over without even a mortal body. Where am I supposed to have attacking power from? When this Saint was at his most glorious time, with just a little sneeze from this Saint, the spittle would be able to fill that so-called Tower Master chock full of holes!"

Hearing the old dog's bluster, Lin Ming almost collapsed on the spot. This fellow still had the mood to speak like this. "Then what should we do now?"

"Hehehe... this Saint may not have a body and may not have any attack power, but I still have a soul. I can still help you out with my soul, for instance... when you sign the soul contract..."

As the old dog spoke to here he evilly giggled twice and said, "After this Saint's soul force was mostly restored, my soul perception is now much more sensitive than yours. You may not know, but of the 10 High Lords present, two of them have slave seals planted in their bodies. They are under the control of someone else!"

"What?" Lin Ming was immensely shocked.

A slave seal and soul contract were two completely different

things.

A soul contract was when both parties would write up their requirements on a special array parchment. Afterwards, both parties would willingly leave behind a drop of blood essence and make an oath on their souls.

This sort of contract normally wouldn't have requirements that were too excessive. If they were, then no one would sign it. After a martial artist signed this soul contract they could still act according to their own will and move freely about.

Not just that, but a soul contract usually had a time limit placed on it. For instance, Yan Chi and Maha both signed soul contracts for 50 years. After the 50 year deadline passed, the contract would automatically be terminated.

But a slave seal was different!

A slave seal was a special technique of the demonic path. It was a method used by stronger martial artists that had deep cultivations in order to control weaker martial artists. Once a slave seal was planted in their bodies, it would stay there until their master decided to take it back or the master died. Otherwise, the martial artist would be enslaved by this slave seal until the time of their death.

Not only did the enslaved martial artist have no independence but they didn't even freedom of thought. Normally, they wouldn't act any different from a normal person, but once the slave seal was

activated, the enslaved person would have to completely obey their master's orders. Even if their master ordered them to die, they would do so with unblinking eyes!

“Who was enslaved?” Lin Ming's heart chilled. Of the 12 High Lords of Skysplit Tower, two of them actually had a slave seal planted within them!

Not just that, but it seemed that the other High Lords didn't even know that their companions had been bound with a slave seal.

Who had the ability to quietly plant a slave seal within a High Lord? Could it Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master?

What did he want to do?

To Lin Ming's amazement and dismay, he discovered that the inner workings of Skysplit Tower were much more complex than he had imagined!

“The ones that are enslaved, one of them is High Lord Bloodfire, and the other is that old Imp that was floating in the air.”

High Lord Bloodfire had a slave seal planted in him?

Lin Ming's mind went cold. High Lord Bloodfire was the strongest powerhouse of these 10 High Lords.

As for the old Imp, he was actually middle-aged. It was just that Imp martial artists always had wrinkled faces so they appeared older than they were. This Imp wore a domed hat and he was in a sitting position as he floated in the air, no more than five feet tall.

This old Imp looked unsightly, but Lin Ming could actually feel an immeasurably deep strength coming from his body, and his soul force was like a deep ocean, vast and mysterious.

This Imp was also a top master. Even if he was weaker than High Lord Bloodfire, it wouldn't be by much!

In other words, the strongest of the 10 High Lords had slave seals planted within them!

As for the other High Lords, the reason that they weren't controlled was most likely because of the limited slave seals one could use.

If this was really done by Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master, then for the past many years, in order to solidify his own status and obtain the maximum amount of benefits, he had planted slave seals in these High Lords. Perhaps he had done so when these High Lords were still challengers.

The Tower Master naturally didn't dare to move against someone like Feng Shen with such a formidable background, but for those like Yan Chi and Maha, they might have already been controlled!

In the future, he could use these people to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss. Everything that they found from there would all belong to the Tower Master!

He could both consolidate his authority as well as obtain massive benefits. This was truly killing two birds with one stone!

“Lin Ming, if I’m guessing right, then this Tower Master wants to see you in order to control you. He obviously sees the value in your potential, and taking you for himself would be a great boon to his own power. As for you, once you’re controlled then you can forget about ever getting out. The only way would be if your cultivation is higher than his by several realms. But once he finds out that your cultivation is approaching his, he’ll just command you to have your cultivation never exceed his own. Your strength will stagnate from then on, all the way until he dies and you are freed. And even then, before he dies of old age, he might try to hide his secret by killing you and you wouldn’t even be able to resist!”

Demonshine’s words made Lin Ming’s scalp tingle with dread. This sort of ending was absolutely more horrible than death.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming’s heart surged with a rich killing intent. If all of these conjectures were right, then he would have to kill this Tower Master in order to rid himself of all potential future threats!

“Demonshine, can you eliminate the slave seal without being discovered by the Tower Master?”

“Hohoho! Who do you think this Saint is!” Demonshine proudly humphed. “This Saint is the ancestor of the demonic path! All of these demonic methods and cultivation techniques of the Holy Demon Continent are just leftover playthings from when the Demon Emperor was still here. All of these legacies keep growing worse with every generation. It’s true that that Saint doesn’t have any attack power right now, but I have more than enough ability to play around with some soul methods. How could I possibly be found out by a little junior? In the past when this Saint was still all-powerful and shaking the foundations of the Realm of the Gods, that junior’s grandfather from a hundred generations back hadn’t even been born yet!”

Black lines formed on Lin Ming’s forehead. He was speechless. No matter how he played it, this old dog just didn’t seem too reliable. But at this point, Lin Ming could only believe him. In this desperate situation, he had to keep trying no matter what!

“Boy, what’s with that look? With this Saint here, I guarantee you that I can lead that Tower Master to run circles. At that time, you can secretly rebel. Just act as if you’ve fallen for his trap and play dumb and no one will suspect you.

“Slowly, that silly fellow will relax his guard around you and even allow you to enter the Road of Emperor! As long as you can wait it out for a year or so, make some great successes in the Road of Emperor and have your cultivation break through to the Revolving Core realm, then you can easily kill that fellow and become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon! At that point, the Death God martial intent will be yours!



“As long as you have a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo then the mystical force of the Blood Slaughter Steppes will not kill you and you can return to Skysplit Tower whenever you want! Wait until the time that your cultivation is high enough, re-enter the Road of Emperor, reach the end in a single go and finally obtain the Prime Emperor martial intent!

“Then, with the complete three major martial intents of Asura, Death God, and Prime Emperor, if you can fuse them, it will become your greatest killing move! Holy shit! How great would that be! Even this Saint would be jealous of you then!”

Demonshine’s depiction had turned the impossible into the possible. At present, Lin Ming was too weak. In a situation where he was surrounded by enemies on all sides, this was the only way to simultaneously obtain all three different martial intents!

Originally, even Lin Ming had believed that it was nearly impossible to obtain the three different forms of martial intents. Now, he could finally see a path opening before him. “Demonshine, if this plan works out, then I swear to you that I will help you reform your mortal body in the future!”

“Hehe, boy, I’m glad to see you still have a conscience. To be honest, this Saint also sees that you have a bit of potential in your future. If I train you well enough then you might be able to reach the lowest standards that this Saint was at back in the day, so of course, I will do my best to raise you. Certainly, in the future, if you really have the ability to help me recover to how I was when my soul was sealed, then that will be enough.”

Lin Ming laughed, no longer caring about Demonshine's boasts. Different situations called for different measures. Perhaps this might actually be a great lucky chance for him instead!

.....

“Lin Ming, are you going to go or not? Where did all your bluster just now go to? The Tower Master came back to see you, and yet you don't dare to see him?” High Lord Bloodfire's taunting voice sounded out in Lin Ming's ear, interrupting the soul exchange that he was having with Demon Shine. This entire exchange just now had only lasted a mere 10 breaths of time.

Lin Ming deeply looked at High Lord Bloodfire, his eyes now containing a trace of pity and compassion. This High Lord Bloodfire seemed like a normal person, but in truth he was nothing more than a puppet. As long as he was in the presence of the Tower Master, he would be absolutely servile.

Towards this type of person, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't argue back, or even hold grudges.

“Let's go, lead the way!”

“Mm?” High Lord Bloodfire looked at Lin Ming with surprise, a tiny, undetectable smile appearing on his lips. This boy was truly stupid to the extreme. But even so, being able to become a servant of Sir Chief High Lord was also a form of honor.

# Chapter 613 – Demonshine, Go!

---

Travelling along the dark corridor, all the way into the deepest depths of the fourth floor, High Lord Heian finally arrived in front of a shadowy temple. As he opened the door, there was only a gently creaking sound as it swung open.

The darkness within that temple hall was like the endless maw of a ravenous beast.

“If you please, High Lord Evil God.” High Lord Bloodfire said with a twisted smile.

Behind him, several other High Lords followed, faintly cutting off Lin Ming’s escape paths.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before Demonshine’s voice sounded out in his mind, “Go in, they don’t matter.”

As Lin Ming stepped inside, his field of vision completely darkened.

Creak...

The door leading in slammed shut. Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen into a completely separate dimension. There was no sound, no light, nothing at all.

“Don’t worry. Everything you’re seeing is an illusion, including this great hall and even the door into here. In fact, when you entered through the door you actually passed into an illusory magic array arranged by that old fellow. Look, that old fellow is standing right in front of you at this moment. He wants to take advantage of the moment when you’re startled and plant a slave seal in you!”

“Illusory magic array?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He was very familiar with array formations and he also had the Samsara martial intent to defend his mind. It wasn’t impossible for him to destroy this array and break out of here.

“Calm down, don’t break this array otherwise that old fellow will think that the illusory magic array isn’t enough to deal with you. It will be troublesome if he tries to hold you down himself. Just fidget a little like you’re struggling here, and then we’ll put together a good play for him.”

“Mm...”

Lin Ming nodded, immediately calming down. But at this moment, there was a screaming noise as a trident-holding ten-winged Heavenly Demon appeared out of thin air and rushed towards him!

Lin Ming eye’s filled with a hint of believable panic. He thrust out his spear, Chasing Thunder!

The power of thunder was particularly potent in dealing with ghosts and illusions. With a scratching sound, the ten-winged Heavenly Demon turned into a wisp of black smoke that quickly faded away.

“In the chaos of fear and confusion you can still defend your mind. Indeed worthy of being a Titled Asura.” Outside of this illusory magic array, around 100 feet away from Lin Ming, a black-cloaked man was quietly muttering to himself. His eyes were as deep as the stars in the night sky, and from his appearance, he wasn’t from any specific race. Instead, he seemed like a hybrid of a Giant Demon and Goliath.

Of the Bloods Slaughter Steppes’ 12 Skysplit Towers, he was the Tower Master of Polaris Tower – High Lord Limitless Demon.

“Unfortunately, your cultivation is too low to break through this 10,000 Devouring Ghost Array Formation. When these 10,000 ghosts overcome your mind, you are mine!”

Within the illusory magic array, more and more ghostly ten-winged Heavenly Demons were appearing at an increasingly fast apace. Not only were there ten-winged Heavenly Demons but there were even some massive twelve-winged Heavenly Demons mixed in. It was becoming difficult for Lin Ming to deal with.

Puff!

With a light sound, Lin Ming finally wasn’t able to avoid the

attack of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. A wisp of soul force pierced into Lin Ming's spiritual sea like a needle!

Lin Ming grimaced. He revolved the Samsara martial intent and twisted this wisp of soul force into pieces. But then, the other Heavenly Demon ghosts followed this up with a barrage of attacks.

“Hahaha! So what if you're the number one talent of the last 10,000 years, you'll still become my faithful dog! I'm really looking forward to your growth. During the trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss, you will be my best tool!

“Soul slave seal, go!” The middle-aged man squeezed his fingers and formed a pitch black seal. With a flick, it shot straight towards Lin Ming!

This seal was mixed into the attacks of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon; it was impossible for Lin Ming to find.

“Mm? You've broken my soul seal? Good! Very good! I like you more and more! Such a fierce tiger is truly worth taming.”

“Soul slave seal, three as one, go!” The middle-aged man flicked his fingers and three black seals flew towards Lin Ming. Taking advantage of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon's attacks, they rushed into Lin Ming's body!

The three seals mixed together as one. During this, Lin Ming intentionally weakened the defense of his Samsara martial intent.

Ka ka ka!

Two of the three black slave seals were twisted apart, leaving only one that soared towards Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

“Demonshine, it's your turn!”

“Hehe, alright.”

These past years, a bond of trust had formed between Lin Ming and Demonshine. The first reason for this was because their common interests aligned, and the second reason was because of the frightening deterrence of the main soul within the Magic Cube. Because of this, Demonshine had long since discarded any thoughts of swallowing Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

As the seal flew into the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine turned into a three-headed demonic divine hound that rushed out from the spiritual sea. Only in this soul world was Demonshine able to maintain his most mighty and valiant appearance.

Demonshine roared and separated a mass of pure soul energy from his own body. This soul energy rapidly turned in a ball of light in the air.

Puff!

The black slave seal sank into this ball of light, instantly turning it pitch black!

“This Saint has separated a piece of soul energy to create a miniature replica of your spiritual sea. Once this slave seal is planted into this replica spiritual sea, it won’t be able to affect you in any way. As long as you don’t try to rashly disturb this slave seal, that old fellow will never know what happened. As for those orders that he sends to you through this slave seal, I will reiterate them to you and you can act along.”

“Understood.”

To use a portion of his soul force to create a fake spiritual sea in order to deceive the Tower Master, Lin Ming couldn’t help but admire Demonshine’s methods. Although this old dog boasted a bit too much of his past exploits, when he was in the Realm of the Gods he was still someone that had qualified to participate in the encirclement of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Although his current soul body was injured, dealing with someone from the mortal world whose strength was in the earliest stage of Life Destruction was too easy for him.

The illusory magic array slowly faded. Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bit of a confused color.

“Haha, congratulations to Sir Chief High Lord for obtaining another general.” High Lord Bloodfire said from outside the illusory magic array.



“Mm. Bloodfire, you’ve done well this time. Three years later, the Eternal Demon Abyss should reopen again. When that time comes, I will allow you and Lin Ming to accompany me to the 1000 mile perimeter of the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

“Yes, Chief High Lord. Is it time to allow Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor now?” Bloodfire thoughtfully asked.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred at these words. Road of Emperor!

Although he was faking being controlled, Lin Ming still didn’t like this situation. He simply didn’t like being forced to follow the whims and mercy of others.

Right now, what he was thinking of was to enter the Road of Emperor as soon as possible and obtain the highest level of strength that he could. He could then end these matters within the Blood Slaughter Steppes and return to Sky Spill Continent.

The situation of the Sky Spill Continent caused Lin Ming to worry endlessly.

In a flash, almost two years had passed. How were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan doing? Was Divine Phoenix Island able to persist until now?

When Lin Ming first left the Sky Spill Continent, his cultivation had only been at the early Xiantian realm and his strength was comparable to a normal peak early Revolving Core powerhouse. As

for killing Lei Jingtian, a large reason for that was because of the suppression of the Demon God Imperial Palace's laws – it couldn't really be considered his true ability.

Now, Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the extreme Xiantian and he had also made breakthroughs in other areas. His strength was on the verge of being at the Life Destruction realm. As long as he could break through to Revolving Core, Lin Ming had confidence he could defeat a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse, or even kill them.

Only by reaching Revolving Core could Lin Ming return to the Sky Spill Continent. Otherwise, it would be meaningless to return.

And the Road of Emperor was the fastest shortcut to making a breakthrough in his strength. Although Lin Ming wasn't sure if he could reach the Revolving Core realm within, his strength would surely be increased by a great deal. Even if he couldn't break through to Revolving Core, there was the high chance he would finally become strong enough to fight with a first stage Life Destruction master.

“Road of Emperor...”

Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master hesitated for a moment. He glanced at Lin Ming and said, “Do you want to enter the Road of Emperor?”

Lin Ming expressionlessly replied, “I naturally desire to enter the Road of Emperor, but I shall follow the commands of Chief High

Lord.”

The Tower Master shook his head and said, “Wait another two or three years for the Road of Emperor. It’s still too early as of now.”

Two or three years!

Lin Ming was dismayed. In two or three years, he estimated that he would be able to quickly break through to Revolving Core during this period. But, the Tower Master would likely closer monitor his cultivation; he wouldn’t allow him to make a breakthrough so easily. If he couldn’t enter the Road of Emperor then there was also no meaning in staying at Skysplit Tower!

“This old fox is too damn cautious!” Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine was vulgarly cussing.

“Did he discover something unusual?”

“Humph, if the fake spiritual sea that this Saint created could be so easily unraveled by this sort of junior, then this Saint might as well die right now! What he fears is the speed of your growth. He is afraid that if you grow too fast and your strength surpasses him too far, then at that time he won’t be able to control you.”

Lin Min took a deep breath. Whilst being in Polar Skysplit Tower for the last one or two years, it was truly filled with layer upon layer of obstructions!

He really couldn't imagine how the Eightfall War Emperor had once become a twelve-winged Heavenly demon!

Demonshine seemed to know what Lin Ming was thinking and said, "According to this Saint's speculation, when the Eightfall War Emperor was here, there still wasn't a unified management organized, nor was there anyone that tried to stop the birth of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Or else, let alone the Eightfall War Emperor becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he would be lucky if he was able to leave Skysplit Tower alive."

These past years, the Blood Slaughter Steppes had been doing everything in their power to avoid the birth of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. For Lin Ming, a single person, to resist the 12 Skysplit Towers, the hurdles he faced could be imagined.

"Lin Ming, starting from today, go practice on the third floor. Remember, without my order you cannot break through to the Revolving Core realm!" High Lord Limitless Demon icily issued an order before turning to leave.

Lin Ming responded with silence, frowning as he left. Entering the Road of Emperor was far more difficult than he had imagined.

"Lin Ming, don't be so restless. Although you can't enter the Road of Emperor now, at least you can still stay in Polar Skysplit Tower and practice. As long as your strength slowly rises then all problems will be easily solved. As for this Polaris Tower Tower Master, it's impossible for him to always be checking up on your cultivation.

“If I’m right, then he can’t stay in Polar Skysplit Tower for too long. He will likely need to go to the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple that was mentioned and be supervised there. Otherwise, even this Tower Master might have the chance of becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This is something that the supreme ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes will absolutely not allow.”

As soon as Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming’s mind moved. Indeed, this Polaris Tower Tower Master was already a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon. If he wanted to, it wouldn’t be too difficult for him to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This sort of event would naturally not be allowed to happen.

The rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were truly strict. There were even layers of rules aimed at limiting the Tower Masters.

“Demonshine, even if Polaris Tower’s Tower Master doesn’t notice my cultivation, I can’t wait that long. If I follow this path to break through to Revolving Core then it might take another one or two years. That is simply far too late. I made a promise that I would return in 10 years, but now I can’t imagine what the situation in the South Horizon Region would be like in 10 years. I want to return to the South Horizon Region within three years. Now, for time... there is only a year left!”

# Chapter 614 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts

---

“Sir Evil God, these Blood Demon Crystals are for you.” An impeccably beautiful Fey girl was kneeling in front of Lin Ming, offering up a tray with her hands. A jade box rested on the tray, and within the jade box was the small amount of top-grade Blood Demon Crystals that a High Lord would receive every two months.

Two months had passed in the blink of an eye since Lin Ming became a High Lord.

After he faked having the slave seal planted in his body, his days at Skysplit Tower had become peaceful; there were no more High Lords plotting against him again. Lin Ming had become a true and recognized High Lord of Skysplit Tower. Now, wherever he moved in the fourth floor, every servant would have to bow or kneel to him as he passed.

“I understand. You may leave now,” Lin Ming calmly said, leaving behind the jade box.

“Yes.” The young Fey girl bowed as she excused herself. Within Skysplit Tower, every High Lord had ten such exceedingly beautiful, top quality Fey girls under their command, rigorously serving them. If the High Lords wanted, they could freely use these girls in any manner they wished.

“Your cultivation has consolidated a great deal these last two months, hehe.” Demonshine jauntily laughed from within Lin

Ming's spiritual sea.

“Indeed. Although I can't enter the Road of Emperor, it's quite good to be able to enjoy the other resources of Skysplit Tower's fourth floor.”

Lin Ming had used these past two months to completely solidify his cultivation. Within the King's Cage, he had broken through his limits multiple times, but his cultivation wasn't steady due to this, and he needed stability in order to slowly consolidate it.

Lin Ming declared, “At most I'll wait for another half year. If there isn't a chance for me, then I will look for my own chance to enter the Road of Emperor!”

“Lin Ming, if you enter the Road of Emperor then High Lord Limitless Demon will know that something happened to the slave seal in your spiritual sea.”

“It doesn't matter whether he knows or not,” Lin Ming casually said. “I've already investigated the matter clearly the last two years. The Road of Emperor and King's Cage are similar in that they are both self-contained worlds. As long as I can enter the Road of Emperor, it doesn't matter what High Lord Limitless Demon discovers. If he wants to deal with me then his only choice is to wait for me to come out. But at that time I may possibly be his match!”

“You're right, but at that time, High Lord Limitless Demon might look for someone to help deal with you. Or he might set up a killing

array to wait for you outside. You shouldn't take such a drastic approach until you're forced to."

As Demonshine finished speaking, the ground suddenly and violently shook. Within Lin Ming's practice area, the stone bed, furniture, everything began to tremble. Lin Ming was dumbfounded, just what was going on!?!?

Skysplit Tower was a relic left behind by some mysterious force from the ancient times. It contained its own array formations and was extremely firm. When Lin Ming killed High Lord Heian, the profound gold arena stage had been destroyed, but there wasn't even the tiniest bit of damage to the actual third floor infrastructure. Thus, one can see just how solid and stable Skysplit Tower really was.

Such a sturdy Skysplit Tower could actually shake?

The shaking continued, and it was even becoming more and more violent. Lin Ming was amazed. Just what was going on?

Lin Ming left the practice area and discovered that the corridors, halls, roads, distant temples and buildings—everything was shaking. The entire Skysplit Tower was swaying!

Just what was this?

It wasn't just Lin Ming but also Skysplit Tower's servants who were panicking. Skysplit Tower seemed ready to collapse at any



moment due to these vibrations. It was at a height of tens of thousands of feet!

Lin Ming wasn't sure what was happening when he just happened to see High Lord Bloodfire pass by. "Brother Bloodfire, what is going on?"

High Lord Bloodfire actually had a joyous expression plastered on his face at this time. "Brother Lin, I never thought that our lucky chance would arrive so soon. The shaking of Skysplit Tower should be because... the Eternal Demon Abyss has erupted!"

"The Eternal Demon Abyss erupted?"

Lin Ming paused. In a jade slip that had been left behind after High Lord Heian's death, it had recorded such eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Every several decades or even centuries, the Eternal Demon Abyss would have a large-scale eruption just like a volcano.

Then, a massive amount of infernal energy would gush out. Simultaneously, some Demon God Bones would be thrust out of the Eternal Demon Abyss with this massive amount of infernal energy.

For millennia upon millennia, the reason that people could find Demon God Bones at the very outer edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss was all thanks to these natural eruptions.

After every eruption, those martial artists that braved the Eternal Demon Abyss would have great harvests, but correspondingly, would suffer higher risks as well. After the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, the violent surges of energy would overflow and form various danger hotspots and death zones, causing people to die when they wandered into these places.

Lin Ming also remembered that in that jade slip, it stated that in the last millennium, 170 High Lords had fallen victim to the Eternal Demon Abyss. Of these High Lords, half of them perished because they explored the Eternal Demon Abyss right after these eruptions.

“Brother Lin, the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss can last for several months or even a year. During this time period, anyone who enters will die. But after the eruption ends, the Eternal Demon Abyss will enter a stable period. When that happens, we can enter the Eternal Demon Abyss together and seek lucky chances for Sir Chief High Lord as well as ourselves. For these following days, you should prepare for this!” High Lord Bloodfire excitedly said.

“Seek lucky chances for the Chief High Lord?” Lin Ming looked at High Lord Bloodfire with pity in his eyes. To risk his own life to look for lucky chances for others, and also to do it with such joy in his eyes, in a manner that he couldn’t wait to go, was truly the horrifying nature of the slave seal. With the slave seal planted within you, it would be better to die!

At this moment, two sound transmitting talismans appeared in front of High Lord Bloodflame as well as Lin Ming. The contents of

the messages were similar; it was about the matter of the Eternal Demon Abyss eruption, as well as telling the two to prepare for this, increasing their strength as much as possible in order to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss.

But at the end of this sound transmission, there was some news that overjoyed Lin Ming. This was because Lin Ming was allowed to enter the Road of Emperor to increase his strength, so that he could better prepare for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“Road of Emperor!”

Lin Ming took a deep breath.

His wait was finally over!

Life was full of twists and turns. Because of the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he finally had the chance to gain entry to the Road of Emperor!

As long as he could enter the Road of Emperor, even if he couldn't break through to the Revolving Core realm, Lin Ming believed he wouldn't need to fear High Lord Limitless Demon anymore!

“Haha, Brother Lin, congratulations! As long as you are loyal to Sir Chief High Lord, he will not treat you unjustly. Do you want to prepare a bit or would you like me to bring you there now?” High

Lord Bloodfire had also received similar news.

“No need, let’s go now,” Lin Ming calmly said as he tamped down the rising elation in his heart. He had food and drinking water in his spatial ring so he didn’t need to make special preparations.

“Good! Let’s go then!”

High Lord Bloodfire led the way. The Road of Emperor was located in the center of the third floor. After journeying down several roads and corridors, they finally came to a temple. This temple was built entirely out of obsidian, and when stepping into it, it seemed as if it was a completely separate dimension.

Within this temple, there were all sorts of ferocious and savage looking demon statues. Without exception, all of these statues were twelve-winged Heavenly Demons.

And a massive blood red altar was surrounded by these statues. This altar constantly emanated a rich infernal energy, as if it were completely carved from Blood Demon Crystals.

“The entrance to the Road of Emperor is above that altar. Step onto the altar and sprinkle your blood onto it, after which you will be able to enter the Road of Emperor. Brother Lin, I wish you good luck.”

# Chapter 615 – Entering the Road of Emperor

---

Lin Ming stepped onto the crimson altar. As he felt the thick bloody infernal energy emanating from the altar, he was secretly surprised.

This altar was carved from a massive chunk of pure Blood Demon Crystal. Not just that, but it was high-grade Blood Demon Crystal. Within a Blood Demon Crystal mine, they were usually found in small blocks and chunks; it was particularly rare to find such a massive hunk of Blood Demon Crystal like this one.

Lin Ming stood at the center of the altar and cut his own palm. He believed that High Lord Bloodfire wouldn't have set any traps here for him. After all, High Lord Bloodfire still believed that he had a slave seal planted within him and was completely subservient to the Tower Master's orders.

Blood flowed onto the altar and was instantly absorbed into the deep crimson stone. After several breaths of time, beneath Lin Ming's feet, a massive deep red totem lit up. This was also in the pattern of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

In the next moment, a radiant red light shot up into the sky, directly swallowing Lin Ming within.

Infernal energy, an evil, dangerous, and brutal energy directly smashed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, followed by a massive pressure on his soul. If it wasn't for the fact that he had passed the King's Cage and had already become accustomed to the Heavenly

Demon force field, then this pressure would have caused him to nearly faint. In fact, many martial artists – including Yan Chi and Maha – would immediately faint upon first entering the Road of Emperor, only waking up after a long time.

The Heavenly Demon martial intent was released, and Lin Ming used the Asura force field to resist the pressure of the Road of Emperor. In the next instant, he had arrived in another space.

The place Lin Ming appeared at was still a deep red altar. This altar was the exact same as the one at the entrance to the Road of Emperor. As he looked beneath, he saw that under the altar was impressively the dark abyss. A rich infernal energy wafted up from this abyss. Lin Ming had a deepening suspicion that this abyss under the altar was the source of infernal energy. If he fell all the way down, then he would fall into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

Above this abyss was a ten foot wide wooden plank road. This road wasn't supported by anything. Instead, it was firmly suspended in midair. Along this wooden plank path, every 100 feet or so, there would be a group of lights. Underneath these lights were statues carved from obsidian. These statues didn't have any support either – they were also held up and suspended in the air through some mystical power.

As Lin Ming looked at these quietly burning ghostly blue flames, he could feel a very rich soul force coming from them. It was like these weren't flames but rather the blaze coming from a burning soul.

What a strange place!

Lin Ming was startled. He tried to fly, but as he expected, flying was restricted in this area. But that was probably for the best. If he really tried to fly and fell down into this abyss then he would most likely die.

The Road of Emperor was the same as the King's Cage: both were mere practice areas. But since ancient times, for those martial artists whose luck was poor, or those who misjudged their own strength, there would always be people that perished in here.

Without a doubt, this ten foot wide plank road was the Road of Emperor. Lin Ming didn't hastily step onto the Road of Emperor. Instead, he sat down in meditation, adjusting his mental and physical state to their peak condition, and then stepped onto the plank road.

As soon as he entered the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming immediately felt a pressure cover him. This pressure was completely different from that of the Heavenly Demon force field's pressure. This pressure came from soul and will, and Lin Ming was no stranger to this pressure either.

This pressure was the Emperor Will.

When Lin Ming fought with Yan Chi and Maha, he had once felt a part of the Emperor Will. When an Emperor level powerhouse died, the will they left behind would not fade away even after thousands of years. This was the so-called battle spirit.

A battle spirit was the condensed will that a martial artist could form after they reached a certain boundary. This will could be attached to any object, and could be used in a multitude of ways, such as killing people.

For instance, if one attached a battle spirit to the air, they could directly crush a massive boulder into powder.

If they attached a battle spirit to a skill or treasure, they could double their attack power, or even increase it by several times over!

“Emperor battle spirit... I wonder when I will be able to comprehend my own battle spirit.” Lin Ming was filled with expectations. When a martial artist reached the Emperor level they would normally have their own battle spirit. Of course, there were even some lucky individuals who didn’t need to be at the Emperor level. If they had a great enough destiny fall unto their body, they could often comprehend a battle spirit at the higher stages of Life Destruction.

This was only the situation within the Sky Spill Continent. If it were the Realm of the Gods, then it was probably even more abnormal. It wouldn’t be strange for those at the Revolving Core to be able to comprehend a battle spirit.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming asked, “Demonshine, when would a top talent of the Realm of the Gods usually comprehend their own battle spirit?”



Demonshine, who had been staying within Lin Ming's spiritual sea the entire time, hadn't replied. In fact, it was like Demonshine hadn't even heard his question. This caused Lin Ming to be a bit surprised. As soon as they entered the Road of Emperor, Demonshine had been incomparably quiet, not even making the smallest noise.

"Demonshine?" Lin Ming asked, worried.

"Lin Ming, this Road of Emperor... I feel like I've been here before..." After being silent for a long time, Demonshine quietly and eerily spoke.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was slightly startled.

"Well, it's more accurate to say that my big brother came here." Demonshine sounded a bit sad. This sort of mood rarely ever happened to the proud and talkative dog.

"Your big brother?"

"My original body is that of a Three-headed Demonic Divine Hound, and my soul is also a trinity of three souls in one. My big brother was born first, and then as his strength grew, my second brother was born, and finally, me. When we sieged the Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the past, Big Brother and Second Brother tried to protect me, and because of that they were twisted to nothingness in the soul storm. Within my body are some of the remnant soul fragments of my big brother and second brother."

As Demonshine finished speaking he let out a long sigh. In just the snap of the fingers, tens of thousands of years had passed. Recalling the past now really made one feel a bitterly painful nostalgia.

As Lin Ming heard Demonshine speak, he suddenly froze, a light seeming to go off in his mind. Yes! He had forgotten but something!

When Lin Ming was still on the second floor, he had killed Xue Man and obtained a nameless ancient tome from his spatial ring. This tome had vivid, lifelike images of people rubbed into all the pages; one could even faintly feel the aura and dignity of these characters as they were when they were alive. Near these images were written notes that listed out these character's lives. As Lin Ming had read through them, he realized that every single one of these characters were all either Emperor level powerhouses or peak Emperor level talents of the last tens of thousands of years of the Holy Demon Continent!

This included the Netherworld Great Emperor, and even the Demon Emperor was impressively included in there.

Lin Ming immediately dug out the tome and quickly found the page that the Demon Emperor was listed on.

Within the tome, the Demon Emperor was holding onto the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, his ink-black hair recklessly flying in the wind. One could even vividly feel the terrifying aura and majesty of the Demon Emperor.

Beside the Demon Emperor's picture was a note.

“Demon Emperor. His birth was ominous and his death was ominous. Cause of death is unclear.”

“This is...” Demonshine was stunned. He exclaimed, “This rubbing is exactly the same as the Demon Emperor himself.”

“Yes, it is exactly the same. Not just that, but the Demon Emperor died in the Realm of the Gods and he was an existence from tens of thousands of years ago. So, who carved the image of the Demon Emperor and how did they know that he died?”

Lin Ming's mind was filled with doubts.

Demonshine said, “Lin Ming, look at the base of those lights.”

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming looked up and was suddenly astonished. In front of him, not too far away, was a carved relief of a Fey martial artist at the base of the lights. This Fey martial artist was handsome and held a longsword in his hands. He was a jade-like beauty with a heroic appearance.

Lin Ming suddenly remembered that this Fey martial artist was one of those whose images were rubbed within the tome!

Lin Ming opened the tome and found that the carved relief of this

martial artist was the exact same as the rubbing!

“Lian Ku. Born in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 26,720, died in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 26,750. This person was a peerless talent of elegance and grace. He reached the Fey King realm at 24 years of age, and within his realm there was no worthy opponent for him. His path to becoming a Fey Emperor was inevitable, but what a pity, his destiny was lacking. As he was seeking his own lucky chance in a danger zone, he perished there, ending his life at 30 years of age.”

A Fey King was equal to the human Revolving Core. For someone to become a Fey King at the age of 24 was similar to reaching Revolving Core at an age of 24. This was a speed that would be around five or six years faster than Mu Qianyu. In fact, it wasn't even that different from Lin Ming!

A peerless hero of his generation, his path to becoming an Emperor was a matter of time. However, he perished in the middle of his path.

“Lin Ming, I remember some things. In my big brother and second brother's memories, these lights that you see each represent an Emperor level powerhouse. Even if they aren't Emperor level powerhouses they are still peerless talents of their generation that should easily have become Emperor level characters. But these people all have two things in common. The first is that they are dead, and the second is... when they were young, they once stepped into the Road of Emperor!”

These lights each represented an Emperor level powerhouse that

had once entered the Road of Emperor?

Lin Ming's mind chilled. As he looked at these quietly burning ghostly blue flames, he couldn't feel any heat from them. Rather, he felt a bone-biting chill, as if these flames were burning souls.

Of course, this was only a feeling. If they really were souls then they would have burnt out long ago.

Demonshine said, "The will lights of the Road of Emperor are not crafted by human hands, but naturally formed. Otherwise, across a span of tens of thousands of years, no one would have the ability to carve out a lifelike impression of all these peerless characters, perfectly keeping even their aura and majesty."

"If I'm not wrong, then every peerless genius of their era who has entered the Road of Emperor will be remembered by the Road of Emperor. After they die, lights would form here as a symbol to them.

As Lin Ming heard Demonshine speak, he felt an inexplicable chill fill his heart.

The Road of Emperor... just what was it?

The force underneath the Eternal Demon Abyss that was behind the mystical curse... what was that too?

After every martial artist died, flames would light up as a symbol

to them. Then, what was it that the Road of Emperor used to remember them?

A part of their will? Spiritual energy? Or maybe a soul mark?

Even a peerless existence like the Demon Emperor, a great character even within the Realm of the Gods, still couldn't rid himself from the Road of Emperor's memory. After he perished in the Realm of the Gods, the Road of Emperor also formed a group of lights that corresponded to him.

Like mortals that could not escape the cycle of samsara, those peerless geniuses that stepped into the Road of Emperor similarly couldn't rid themselves of their destiny. No matter how unrivalled they were in their lives, they still returned here, ashes to ashes, dust to dust.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and clenched his fists. Regardless of what was at the end of the Road of Emperor, regardless of what was at the deepest depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would not hesitate to continue forwards.

The world was large, far beyond what he could ever imagine. Even the Demon Emperor, standing before the true peak of martial artists, was probably just a minor, unworthy person.

In the past, in order to compete for the Magic Cube, he had died. This Magic Cube that had extinguished the lives of 10,000 powerhouses from the Realm of the Gods, just where had it come from also?

All of these powerful and mysterious existences did not cause Lin Ming to be crestfallen or even feel low. Instead, there was nothing in him but a limitless fighting spirit. He had already set firm his determination to step onto the highest peak of martial arts, and have a good look at what the scenery from that peak would be like.

# Chapter 616 – Battle of Wills

---

Lin Ming followed the Road of Emperor, going forwards one step at a time. Every 100 feet or so, there would be quiet, eerie blue flames that appeared, burning in the air like spectral illusions.

“Gu Yu... 9000 years, he was a peerless heroic youth of the Giant Demon race. A Titled Asura of Fascination Skysplit Tower, he died at 30 years of age.” Every time that Lin Ming saw new will lights appear, name of that martial artist who corresponded with that light would materialize in his mind.

Fascination Skysplit Tower was one of the 12 Skysplit Towers. Thus, it could be seen that this Road of Emperor wasn't solely just the heroic young elites of Polar Skysplit Tower, but of the 11 other Skysplit Towers also. It was even possible that the Road of Emperor found in the other 11 Skysplit Towers all shared the same path.

The Emperor Will filled every inch of the Road of Emperor. Not just that, but as Lin Ming moved forwards, it became increasingly strong.

Ho—

After Lin Ming passed by Gu Yu's will light, the light extinguished itself. All the way down, every time Lin Ming passed a light, that light would naturally fade away. So far, he had passed by ten lights, and ten lights had been extinguished.



“Xiao Yu. Three thousand years ago she was a proud heavenly daughter of the Fey. A Titled Asura of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower. At 36 years of age, she perished, her cultivation at the 5-star Fey King realm...” As Lin Ming saw the eleventh will light, some information about Xiao Yu appeared in his mind.

As he passed this light, it also faded away.

Lin Ming found that all of the martial artists he saw so far hadn't lived to the age of 40. Every single one had died when their cultivation was at most a 5-star or 6-star Fey King.

When Lin Ming had read through the nameless tome, Peerless Emperors had occupied the vast majority of the pages. Were the will lights of the Emperor level powerhouses further back?

Thinking this, Lin Ming continued, slowly and cautiously. He could feel the pressure of the Emperor Will becoming steadily stronger.

“Lin Ming, careful!”

“Mm?”

As Lin Ming passed by another will light, he suddenly heard Demonshine's voice call out.

Right after, a bright ray of light emitted from a will light and stabbed into Lin Ming!

Bang!

A massive pressure arrived within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. He grimaced, taking a step back as he immediately revolved the Samsara martial intent to block this pressure.

However at this moment, it seemed as if his body had been separated from his soul.

Fighting spirit filled his heart.

This fighting spirit was not Lin Ming's, but rather came from that light.

A bloody battlefield. Endless plains of slaughter and death. An armored martial artist fought with every ounce of his being. Within Lin Ming, he could clearly feel the infernal energy of the endless killing grounds.

“This is...”

The feeling suddenly disappeared here. With the sound of a gust of wind passing overhead, the light was extinguished!

It was over?

Lin Ming looked at that light. He had a faint impression of the

man that was carved into that relief. His name was Zhang Jun. He was a quasi Emperor powerhouse. In his life, he was a peerless talent of his generation. He died before his time, just a single step away from becoming a true Emperor level powerhouse.

That just now was...

“Lin Ming, what you felt just now was the battle spirit of that this martial artist left behind. All of these lights beside the Road of Emperor contain the will of those powerhouses that died.”

As Lin Ming walked, he had already passed over a dozen lights already. The inherent strength of their will was very small, but just now Zhang Jun’s light had actually contained a vast will that smashed into his spiritual sea. Although he had been able to bear it, he had been forced to take a step back.

“Lin Ming, I remember now. The first half of the Road of Emperor is a test to bear the Emperor Will. Those lights that you first encountered up until now were all from weaker martial artists that hadn’t even formed a complete Emperor Will, thus you were able to easily pass through. But from now on, every step you take will be much harder than the last.

“The Road of Emperor is paved with the immense will of countless Emperor level powerhouses. How deep you can go will all depend on whether or not you can resist their will!”

“I understand.” Lin Ming glanced behind him. It was clear now that after he successfully withstood the will of a martial artist,

their will light would naturally extinguish.

The next one...

Lin Ming looked at the light ahead of him and was surprised to see that this light burned several times more vibrantly than the ones before. The flames were already twice as high. To be more precise, after this light, the later lights would continue to become more and more exuberant. This also symbolized that the inherent Emperor Will of these lights was also becoming stronger!

Now, Lin Ming was prepared. He took a deep breath, adjusting his mind to an ethereal state as he simultaneously revolved the Samsara martial intent, and then stepped deeper into the Road of Emperor.

The moment that he passed the next will light, Lin Ming felt another great pressure enveloping him, even more formidable than the one before.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

Lin Ming instantly felt his soul and body separate, his mind arriving in a completely separate dimension. At this moment, a 10 foot tall demon was cutting down at him with a massive axe.

What a superficial move!

Lin Ming coldly snorted. Although this enemy's attack seemed to be deadly, the truth was that it was full of holes. The speed of it was slow to the point that it simply didn't enter his eyes.

He took a step back and flourished the Purple Comet Spear. He wanted to use Chasing Thunder to deal with this demon, when at this time, Lin Ming was shocked.

Let alone using Chasing Thunder, but even taking out his spear felt incomparably slow. This feeling was the same as if Lin Ming had returned to the Body Transformation stage. After being used to the limits of his own speed and strength, he found it hard to adapt to suddenly losing all of this.

“What's going on!?”

Seeing the large axe cut down at him, Lin Ming's pupils contracted. Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming retreated backwards, but his speed was several dozen times lower than its peak state!

Too slow!

Chi!

Lin Ming could only helplessly watch as that massive blood-red

axe cut into his body, right through the middle!

A severe pain seemed to come out from his soul. At this moment, the feeling of death was so real!

Ever since Lin Ming started practicing martial arts, he had faced life or death situations several times, stepping near death's door during many of these. But, it was only close to death, it had never been like today where he watched as he was cut directly in half!

Fresh blood sprayed out. Lin Ming's face twisted in pain and a feeling of death spread through his spiritual sea.

Samsara martial intent!

Kacha!

Lin Ming forcefully twisted apart the symbol of that deathly energy.

‘Everything is only an illusion! I have been practicing martial arts for almost eight years now, and my heart of martial arts has been tempered every step of the way. I will not allow some phantom mirage to kill me!’

Lin Ming's mind flashed with this thought. In that moment, he felt a vivid force swell up within his body, making him feel several times stronger than before!

His body that was cut in half slapped back together, instantly regenerating. Lin Ming grabbed the Purple Comet Spear and thrust out!

“Chasing Thunder!”

Little arcs of electricity sizzled around the Purple Comet Spear. These arcs of electricity were too weak – he was fundamentally unable to use Chasing Thunder.

“My strength has been reduced by 99%!”

Lin Ming had never felt this powerless before. Although his strength had suddenly risen just now, he was still only capable of such a weak strike.

But what surprised Lin Ming was that the great demon in front of him seemed to have consumed every bit of its strength in that last attack. It weakly stood there as Lin Ming’s spear pierced into its body. With a pitiful scream, it melted into a pool of blood and pus.

The illusion disappeared and Lin Ming returned to the Road of Emperor. He was still standing on that lonely plank road, and the will light beside him had now extinguished.

He passed.

Lin Ming felt a cold sweat drip down his back. The illusion he just felt was far too real. There was really a moment where he thought he had died.

Being cut in half had left a deep pain in his soul, as if his soul was being torn in half. Lin Ming was certain that even being physically cut in half like that wouldn't be so painful.

“Was that just a battle of wills?” Lin Ming asked.

“Yes. It was a battle of wills. You felt your strength weakened by 99% because your will hasn't yet manifested, let alone condensing into a battle spirit. Thus, in that world of will, you are in fact a weakling!”

“I really am weak!” Lin Ming nodded. That demon he had faced just now was already weak to the point of being a complete mess. His moves were slow and ridiculous, everything that demon did was just for looks. But as for Lin Ming, facing this demon fellow that he would normally be able to kill without even lifting his finger, he had actually been cut in half. If that wasn't weak then what was?

Demonshine slyly smiled, shaking his head as he said, “I said that you are weak, but that is only in comparison to a true Emperor Will. In fact, your weak level is already abnormal. You should know that 99% of martial artists first facing an attack of wills would not even be able to make a counterattack; they wouldn't even be able to move. They could only stare helplessly as their enemy's attack splits apart their body. And I'm talking about a top genius, there isn't even mentioning an ordinary martial artist. An



ordinary martial artist wouldn't even have the qualifications to undergo this sort of smelting trial. Their spiritual sea would be instantly crushed to nothing by the Emperor Will!"

"Oh?" Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Indeed, his willpower had always been his most impressive aspect. If Lin Ming's abilities could be arranged in order, then his willpower would absolutely be first, followed by his perception and then his natural talent.

"Hey hey, boy, this Saint rarely compliments others so how come your reaction is so cold? You are at the extreme Xiantian realm, but other martial artists are at Revolving Core realm, Demon King realm, Fey King realm, and if their perception is poor, then even a Life Destruction martial artist may be beneath you."

"There is no limit in this world, there is always a higher mountain and a higher heaven." Lin Ming shook his head. He had experienced a great deal in his journey to the peak of martial arts so far. He was well aware that he was just a frog in a well, but the greatest difference that separated him from those other frogs was that he was aware of just how great the outside world was.

"In that battle just now, I feel like my willpower was tempered, becoming stronger."

When Lin Ming had broken through the illusion, he felt an influx of strength into his will. Although he had already left the illusion, that strength still remained there, permanently becoming a part of him.

“Of course. This is the terrifying advantage of the Road of Emperor: it is able to temper your will. If you can withstand it then you can even form your own battle spirit!” Demonshine excitedly said, “At that time, you will no longer feel weak within your world of will, in fact, it is possible that you will be even more powerful than in reality!”

# Chapter 617 – One Light One World

---

“I will be more powerful in the will world than in reality?” Lin Ming asked, slightly startled. “Then what happens if I kill others in the will world? Will they die in the real world? Or would they be affected in some other way?”

Demonshine said, “If you can completely destroy someone else’s will within the world of will then they will also die in the real world!”

Lin Ming felt a chill crawl up his back as he heard this, “But I should have died just now. That bloody axe already cut me in half, but I’m not dead yet.”

Demonshine chuckled, “Hehe, this Saint said that you will only die if your will is destroyed in the will world. This Saint didn’t say that you would die if your body was cut in half in the will word. Destroying someone’s will isn’t as simple as it seems.”

“I see...” Lin Ming nodded. He had fallen into the mindset that being cut in half would kill him. But, the truth was that the world of will had a completely different set of laws that governed it. Perhaps, within the will world, being cut in half was the same as a minor wound.

Demonshine continued, “Within the will world, being split in half, beheaded, or even crushed won’t kill you. This is why there are many martial artists that when they reach a high level, such as your so-called Emperor level powerhouse, if they have confidence

in their own willpower, will have matches in the world of will. In there, it's not as easy to be injured. But of course, in a real life or death battle, they would combine the power of their will world and their actual combat strength into one whole and fight in the real world. This is also how they can use their highest degree of strength.

Every time Demonshine mentioned the Emperor level powerhouses and Emperor level talents of the Sky Spill Continent, he would usually add in something derisive before it, such as 'so-called'. Obviously, to him, these powerhouses were nothing more than low grade minions. If they went to the higher level Realm of the Gods, they simply wouldn't even enter Demonshine's eyes.

“Combat in the world of will only looks at how strong or weak your willpower is – your actual combat strength is irrelevant! Within the will world, you are god. You can create and be anything you want. For instance, as long as your will is strong enough, you can create a heaven-step treasure, a saint-step treasure, a powerful summoned beast, contract beast, or if your willpower is at the very limit, you can even summon a God Beast. As long as your willpower is strong enough, you can completely sweep away all opponents even if they are several times stronger than you in reality.”

Create a saint treasure? Create a contract beast? Or even a God Beast? Lin Ming was shocked. “I can even create a God Beast? Would it really have the power of a God Beast though?”

“Within the world of will, the God Beast that you create will truly have the power of a God Beast. But, that is only limited to the will

world. As this Saint has said, within that world, you are god!”

“The will is an important symbol of whether or not a high level martial artist is weak or strong. The sooner you comprehend a battle spirit, the greater its advantages will be towards your future. This is because a battle spirit, regardless of your perception, lucky chances, heart of martial arts, and other factors such as that, will often naturally grown along with your cultivation. Lin Ming, this Road of Emperor is your chance. Even if your strength doesn’t grow here, you still have to start forming the foundation for your battle spirit. When you reach a high boundary, your willpower, which is in essence your battle spirit, will be a great portion of your strength. Not just that, but at that level, it will even be an integral part of your combat style. People at that level will also respect a martial artist that has a formidable will more.”

“Mm, I’ve got it.” Lin Ming nodded. The same ability would often have different values for different people. For instance, within the Sky Fortune Kingdom, even if a landlord and merchant had the same amount of wealth, a landlord’s status would be higher than the merchant’s. This was because land farming was considered a more legitimate business, while being a merchant was much more low class, even if they earned the same amount of money. In fact, after many merchants earned a fortune, they would often purchase large swathes of property and became local landlords, even if the profits from these properties were far lower.

“Lin Ming, continue on. If you can use this Road of Emperor to thoroughly temper your will, then it will have a profound influence on your future growth. Don’t miss out on this chance!”

“I will!”

Lin Ming was overjoyed that he met Demonshine from the Magic Cube’s space. With his guidance it was much easier to see the path before him.

Otherwise, if he came to the Road of Emperor and used increasing his strength as the only goal, he would have missed this rare chance.

Continuing along the Road of Emperor, the will lights that appeared were from quasi Emperors, they burnt even more vividly than before.

As Lin Ming stepped forwards, a light flashed, and he once again appeared in the world of will.

“Hahahaha!”

Laughter echoed in Lin Ming’s ear like a thunderclap. This was a voice that came from this world of will. The more powerful the willpower was, the more heaven-shaking and earth-shattering the voices would be.

Kacha!

Between heaven and earth, a massive thunderbolt crashed into the ground. A Goliath martial artist with a full head of red hair grasped a halberd and rushed towards Lin Ming.

“Concept of Thunder?”

Lin Ming was surprised to discover that even in the world of will, there were still manifestations of Laws.

With the Concept of Thunder combined with this strange halberd skill, this quasi Emperor level powerhouse’s attack was certainly strong, it was just that its speed was slow.

It was obvious that the will that this quasi Emperor powerhouse left behind was very slow. Perhaps it was because it had been worn down through the long passage of time, or perhaps it was because the amount of will left behind in the light wasn’t much to begin with, otherwise, the momentum of this quasi Emperor powerhouse’s attack would be much more than this.

Lin Ming directly faced this Goliath powerhouse’s halberd. He did not dodge, only thrusting his spear out. This was because he knew that with his current speed, dodging was impossible.

Puff! Puff!

Two bursts of blood shot out like a rain shower. In the world of will, having his body pierced through was a horrific pain as if his soul was being shredded to pieces.

Lin Ming originally wasn’t a match for this quasi-Emperor’s will. However, the strength of this quasi-Emperor’s will wasn’t able to

sustain itself; every time a bit of this strength was consumed, it would be gone. But as for Lin Ming, his will actually grew without end.

This was his greatest advantage.

After a harrowing and violent battle, Lin Ming successfully destroyed the Goliath quasi Emperor powerhouse.

Ho—

The corresponding will light was extinguished, and Lin Ming was ejected from the world of will.

“I can actually comprehend a great number of things from these seniors’ martial arts skills!”

Aside from tempering his will, when that quasi Emperor attacked just now, the moves that contained the Concept of Thunder gave Lin Ming some inspirations.

Because the will that this quasi Emperor had left behind was already very weak, the attacks were slow and the striking power was also low. This way, the mysteries within those attacks were much more clearly seen and easier to understand.

“If I’m not wrong, then most of the young heroic elites that enter the Road of Emperor probably use the majority of their energy to study their opponents’ moves and Concepts.



“Even Yan Chi and Maha, as Imps who are proficient in soul force, probably also tried to comprehend these Concepts and moves. It’s just that at the same time they were probably trying to figure out how to capture some of this Emperor Will for their own use. But, no matter how much Emperor Will they captured, in the end it wasn’t theirs, so it had no capacity for growth.”

The moves and Concepts of quasi Emperor and Emperor level powerhouses were no doubt valuable. But compared to tempering the will and forming a battle spirit, they were far less important. It was simply incomparable.

However, one couldn’t blame Yan Chi and Maha for being short-sighted. Their own willpower was limited, so the chances of them ever forming their own battle spirit was far too distant a goal. Normally in the Holy Demon Continent, a martial artist would form their own battle spirit around the time they became a Peerless Emperor. As for Yan Chi and Maha, the two of them only had a cultivation of a one and two star Demon King.

In addition, Yan Chi and Maha were only from relatively normal sect backgrounds. These sects had never produced an Emperor level powerhouse, so the knowledge and legacies they had of battle spirits was literally nothing at all. Yan Chi and Maha simply didn’t know the method to form a battle spirit, nor did they understand their importance.

Lin Ming carefully recalled the attacks of that Supreme Elder from just now, and after perceiving some insights, he decisively moved on to the next battle spirit light.

Compared to the last flame, this one was far too bright. It was extremely radiant and dazzling, like a smaller, darker, sun.

Lin Ming's mind moved. His eyes locked onto the relief below the lights, and he saw that indeed, this will was left behind by a true Emperor level powerhouse that had died!

“Gu Xiao, Giant Demon. She walked the world 6000 years ago. She became a Demon Emperor at 109 years of age, and perished at 130 years of age. When she died, her cultivation was a one-star Demon Emperor.” Information about Gu Xiao appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

Without a doubt, if this Gu Xiao could become a Demon Emperor then she was an Emperor level talent. However, after becoming a Demon Emperor, she was only the most ordinary of Demon Emperors. All those able to become Demon Emperors were Emperor level talents. Wanting to stand out in this crowd of monstrous geniuses was extremely difficult!

Gu Xiao had become a Demon Emperor at 109 years of age – this achievement wasn't early. In fact, her talent was much worse than Xiao Yu and Gu Yu's from before. Those two had earned the glory of becoming Titled Asuras. If they hadn't died at such a young age, they definitely would have become existences capable of jumping ranks to fight even after becoming Emperor level powerhouses.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and adjusted himself to his peak state. What he was about to face was a true Emperor level

powerhouse. Even if this person was the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses, they were still an existence he couldn't even compare to. He naturally had to be extremely sincere in this battle.

Stepping into the range of Gu Xiao's will lights, Lin Ming only felt as if he had crossed a space barrier, arriving at a completely different dimension.

One light, one world. The will of a true Emperor level powerhouse was enough to manifest their own world.

When Lin Ming's will entered this world, he felt like a mortal that had been dropped naked into a field of winter snow. This kind of chilling cold was enough to freeze his marrow.

A thick killing intent suddenly filled the air. With a rustling sound, a massive python suddenly appeared out of thin air and killed its way towards Lin Ming.

“A transformation?”

Lin Ming recalled that Demonshine said that within the world of will, a martial artist was god. They could turn their will into different forms in order to kill their enemies.

This massive python in front of him was most likely the transformed shape of the Emperor Will.

This python was over 100 feet long and its body was as thick as

Lin Ming's waist. It opened its massive jaws and bit towards Lin Ming. Its speed was much quicker than the last several martial artists'!

With Lin Ming's speed, it was impossible for him to dodge this bite. He fiercely grit his teeth and thrust the Purple Comet Spear into the python's open mouth!

Bringing with it the Concept of Thunder, the Purple Comet Spear was like a bolt of lightning that shot into the python's upper jaw. Blood sprayed out, but that python also bit down on Lin Ming.

Bang!

The earth was cracked apart as the python's giant head crashed into it, and Lin Ming was swallowed into the python's stomach.

"Lin Ming, you are not a match for this Emperor Will. Immediately withdraw!" Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

# Chapter 618 – A Shining Will

---

The python's stomach was like a separate world. Locked within, Lin Ming was tossed around like a leaf in a storm.

Bang!

His consciousness crushed, Lin Ming gave a stiff cough, instantly feeling like he lost sense of his own existence. His brain was muddled, and his senses were in confusion, as if he had been cut off from all contact with the outside world.

“Lin Ming, hurry up and withdraw from the world of will! If you suffer such heavy damage in the Road of Emperor's will world, you won't die but it will damage your will!” Demonshine shouted out. But in this situation, his voice no longer reached Lin Ming's ears.

Chaos ran rampant!

After an indefinite amount of time passed, a weak whirlpool formed within this chaos. After this whirlpool appeared, it began to slowly and gradually expand, spinning faster and faster. In the center of this whirlpool was an azure light; this light was the essence of Lin Ming's endless will.

After this azure light appeared, it shot out like a vorpal sword, cutting through space. With a ripping sound, the void itself seemed to tear apart. The azure light pierced through all, directly shooting through the python's back!

‘Reform the body.’

Within Lin Ming’s mind, his will pulsed with an intense belief. As long as his willpower was strong enough, he was god here. He could control all!

In the void, countless rays of azure light rapidly spun together, rapidly coalescing into Lin Ming’s body, restoring all of his senses.

Seeing Lin Ming reappear, Demonshine’s puppy eyes turned perfectly round. He never expected that Lin Ming would be able to break out of the python’s body and extricate himself from danger. This was a vicious beast that was formed by an Emperor level powerhouse!

“Sssaa!”

The python let out a loud roar as it rushed forwards once more.

“Purple Comet!”

Lin Ming thrust out his hand and the Purple Comet Spear instantly materialized in his palm! Blazing on spear shaft, thunder and flame howled!

“Penetrating Rainbow!”

Spear and man became one. Lin Ming shot straight towards the python!

After his will went through another transformation just now, Lin Ming's striking power had surged greatly. On the other hand, the python itself was severely wounded.

Peng!

Lin Ming flew forwards with the spear, directly piercing through the python's jaws. The python let out a miserable cry as a fountain of blood gushed out from its head. Its body began to violently twist and contort, slowly losing the power to struggle before turning into a stream of light that floated away.

In the next moment, Lin Ming withdrew from the world of will.

In front of him, the lights that symbolized Gu Xiao's will still burned as radiantly as before without a hint of even extinguishing. This meant that Lin Ming hadn't been able to withstand Gu Xiao's will.

Lin Ming had merely destroyed a python that Gu Xiao's will had created. Lin Ming had, in actuality, failed to kill the main body. Currently, it was far too difficult for him to deal with the will left behind by an Emperor level powerhouse.

This was the will of an Emperor level powerhouse... Lin Ming took a deep breath. His back was already soaked with sweat. The

recent battle had exhausted a great deal of his energy.

“Boy, you really are a monstrous genius!” Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine was praising him. “Today, you’ve made amazing progress with your willpower. If it continues to grow like this then you really might be able to form your own battle spirit before you reach Revolving Core! Aside from all other aspects of talent, in will alone, you are the most magnificent junior I have ever seen!”

Forming a battle spirit before Revolving Core...

Lin Ming’s eyes blazed with a fiery light. He was increasingly knowledgeable of just what a battle spirit was. For him, if he wanted to use the Road of Emperor to break through to the Revolving Core realm, then it would be easy. But if he could condense his own battle spirit now, then it would be of unlimited benefit to his future growth.

“It seemed that Gu Xiao hadn’t even formed a battle spirit yet?”

“Yes. Gu Xiao is only the lowliest of ordinary Demon Emperors. A true Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit will leave behind an even more terrifying will. If the current you faces an Emperor Will that possesses a battle spirit, then you will instantly be smashed to smithereens. If you can temper your will to the point that you can withstand that sort of impact, then you might be able to form the seed of a battle spirit within your will.”

.....



Within the tens of thousands of miles that comprised the Blood Slaughter Steppes, other than the 12 main cities, there was also a blood red temple. Blood Slaughter Divine Temple was its name.

Within this temple lived the master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and also the only Emperor level powerhouse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes... Luo Sha.

Titled High Lord Divine Demon, Luo Sha was also the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon of the 12 Skysplit Towers.

The giant blood red doors opened and Luo Sha strode out of the great temple, his red cloak dragging on the ground as his footsteps echoed in the emptiness.

High Lord Divine Demon was 15 feet tall, the height of two adult men. He was considered a giant even amongst the already tall Giant Demons and Goliaths.

“Father.”

As High Lord Divine Demon left the temple, a middle-aged man, already kneeling on one knee, waited for him outside. This middle-aged man wore a dark blue robe and his eyes were as profound as the stars in the jet black sky. If Lin Ming could see this person then he would have recognized him. This person was the Tower Master of Polaris Tower, High Lord Limitless Demon.

Nearly no one knew that the Tower Master of Polaris Tower was Luo Sha's son.

“Father, I have already followed your instructions and enslaved Lin Ming.”

“Mm,” High Lord Divine Demon nodded. “Lin Ming, even with a slave seal planted within him, will surely blossom in glory in the future. He will be a big boost to our forces.”

“Father, I have already sent Lin Ming to the Road of Emperor. When he reappears several months from now, his strength will surely have risen by another step.”

“Road of Emperor...” Luo Sha faintly smiled. “The Eternal Demon Abyss has erupted. Every Skysplit Tower has sent many people to enter the Road of Emperor and gain experience. These people think that they can increase their strength, enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, and take a share of the treasures. Exquisite Tower's Lan Xin, Heavenly Cloud Tower's Duanmu Qun, Five Color Tower's Zhuan Yu – all of them are future successors to their Holy Lands, characters who can be called Saintesses and Saint Sons.”

“These people have all entered the Road of Emperor. Duanmu Qun is even entering for the second time. I wonder just how far in they will manage to go.”

As High Lord Divine Demon spoke to here, Polaris Tower's Tower Master frowned. The people who his father mentioned just

now were not only monstrous talents, but also had extremely terrifying backgrounds. They came from Holy Lands with four or five Emperor level powerhouses, some of which were two-star Fey Emperors or even three-star Fey Emperors!

Even the Blood Slaughter Steppes was terrified of these superpowers. They had no choice but to open a part of their resources to the descendants of those elite Holy Lands. This included the Road of Emperor and even the Eternal Demon Abyss. All of it was a compromise.

“The eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss is rare opportunity. You will also enter!” High Lord Divine Demon ordered.

“Yes, Father.”

After the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the chances of dying within rose to over 30%. Polaris Tower’s Tower Master had sufficient strength, and coupled with his years of understanding of the environment of the Eternal Demon Abyss, his chances of dying inside were much lower.

# Chapter 619 – Lin Ming’s Choice

---

Road of Emperor, world of will –

Blood rained from the skies. Lin Ming’s spear pierced through a tiger type vicious beast, but his body was also slashed by that tiger’s claw, the entire right half of his body completely breaking apart as crushed bits of meat flew everywhere.

This sort of battle could be called utterly tragic. Luckily, this battle was held within the world of will. If this were the real world, then even Lin Ming would need several months to recover from such a heavy wound.

Ho –

Lin Ming was drawn out of the will world, thick drips of cold sweat dripping down his face and back. Half the reason was because he had consumed a great deal of energy, and the other half was because of the excruciating pain he had suffered.

In a fight within the world of will, the feelings of being ripped and torn apart were still there. As soon as the soul was broken apart, a bone-aching pain would follow. Even though Lin Ming’s will was extremely firm, it was still difficult to bear this pain for days on end.

“Mm?”

As Lin Ming left the world of will, he was shocked as he saw the Road of Emperor in front of him.

The original single planked Road of Emperor that led towards an infinite jet-black darkness had actually divided in two!

In front of Lin Ming, there were two Road of Emperors!

The first Road of Emperor was the same as before with lights that hovered at both sides. But on the other Road of Emperor, it was instead surrounded by stone tablets!

“What is this? A test? An illusion?”

“It is neither a test nor an illusion. For you, it is a chance, a choice that you can make.” Demonshine said from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, “You have already been defeated in front of Gu Xiao’s will lights many times now. Gu Xiao is an Emperor level powerhouse who hadn’t yet been able to create her own battle spirit; she can be considered amongst the worst of Emperor level powerhouses. Behind her will lights are Emperor level powerhouses that have condensed their own battle spirit, including even two-star and three-star Demon Emperors. Not only have they formed their own battle spirit, but the Laws they have perceived have reached a very high limit, the peak that these so-called Emperor level powerhouses can reach. You have already been stranded here for 10 days. The Road of Emperor probably recognizes that it’s impossible for you to go any further, thus it has created another path for you. This is a choice that you may choose so that you won’t leave without having accomplished anything.”

Demonshine had once followed the Demon Emperor into the Road of Emperor. The current situation was only his guess, but it should be more or less right.

“In other words... I can reduce the difficulty?”

Lin Ming was inexplicably filled with a disheartened feeling. Up until this point, he had encountered powerful martial artists everywhere and there hadn't yet been any martial artists whose talents had exceeded his own. But now, as he was crossing the Road of Emperor, he was actually pushed back to this degree.

Only 10 days here and he was given the chance of reducing the difficulty.

He was obviously disappointed.

“Hehe, boy, you shouldn't be so sad. After passing through the entire Road of Emperor, you can become an Emperor level powerhouse. What sort of cultivation do you have? And you still want to cross the Road of Emperor? Dream on! If that actually happened then wouldn't the Chief High Lord Limitless Demon or South Sea Demon Region Sovereign just be crushed under your feet? Boy, although your willpower is formidable, your cultivation is far too low. Compared to the will of an Emperor level powerhouse, the difference is simply far too great. Still, this Saint is pleasantly surprised that you were able to kill the python, scorpion, and tiger that Gu Xiao created!”

At that time when Gu Xiao had formed a python, Demonshine had urged Lin Ming to quickly leave the world of will. He believed that Lin Ming would be defeated without question, but he never imagined that he would actually win. Relative to Lin Ming's cultivation, this was absolutely only possible because he was a freakishly monstrous genius.

"The difference is indeed too great." Lin Ming shook his head. For more than 10 days he had been fighting Gu Xiao's remnant will.

However, he had never seen the true form of Gu Xiao's will. Every time he fought with Gu Xiao's will, Gu Xiao would first send out three vicious beasts to deal with him; these were a python, scorpion, and tiger. After these three fights, Lin Ming had basically consumed every ounce of his willpower.

"Lin Ming, there are many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals in your spatial ring and even two Demon God Bones right? Your foundation is very solid. If you use these top-grade Blood Demon Crystals and Demon God Bones, then with the tempering of the Road of Emperor, it will be very easy for you to break through to Revolving Core in a short period of time. When that happens, you can start forming your battle spirit and it will be much easier than it is now. At least, you should be able to defeat the will of an ordinary Emperor level powerhouse."

Cultivation had an effect on willpower. The deep one's will was, the easier it was to form a battle spirit. Lin Ming's will was tenacious and resilient, but his cultivation wasn't deep and his background was insufficient. Willpower was easy to exhaust, but

forming a battle spirit was another story altogether.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “If I fully concentrate on breaking through to Revolving Core, then it will still take a great deal of time if I want my foundation to remain solid. Moreover... the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss will end in half a year to a year – I don’t have the time to wait. After I leave the Road of Emperor, I don’t know what will happen between me and High Lord Limitless Demon. I have to seize this chance and try to form my own battle spirit as early as possible. My advantages in the future will also be greater too.

Lin Ming wanted to form his own battle spirit while he was still at the extreme Xiantian realm. Compared to condensing his battle spirit at Revolving Core or Life Destruction, there would be more room for growth.

“Well, there are many people who understand that but very few people who can actually follow through. Who doesn’t want to form their own battle spirit as soon as possible? You make it sound as if it’s as easy as folding paper. The will is not the same as the physical body. Once the will is injured, it is very difficult to heal. If you can’t withstand this suffering, then not only will you not be able to form your own battle spirit but you’ll only end up causing permanent damage to your will instead.”

Demonshine shook his little doggy head, not too approving of Lin Ming’s choice. “The Road of Emperor has given you another choice. This second path is instead surrounded by Emperor tablets. It is specially aimed at increasing your cultivation and strength. If you choose this road and walk down it, then with your talent it



shouldn't be too difficult to break through to Revolving Core. Your strength and moves will all be greatly enhanced. As for the first road, that only aims at tempering your will. If you walk down that road then your strength won't rise by too much. If you are successful, then the advantages to you will naturally be incalculable. But, if you are defeated then not only will there be no benefit to you, but you will damage your will instead. Think carefully before you make your choice."

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming understood.

Two roads. One road aimed at the world of will and the other road aimed at realistic strength. To martial artists at lower realms, having a greater strength in the real world was much more valuable – this was true even for Lin Ming.

Maha, Kai Yang, and others like them, after being defeated in a trial of will, most likely diverged onto this other path in order to increase their cultivation and strength.

Lin Ming could envision that if he stepped onto this second path, his strength would sharply rise. However, if he stayed on the first path, while he wouldn't see short-term benefits, it would have unlimited benefits for his future growth.

If Lin Ming missed this chance then it would become very difficult to form his battle spirit.

He could forget about attempting to do so during the Xiantian realm. If he couldn't even form his battle spirit during Revolving

Core, then he could only wait until he reached Life Destruction.

Within the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent, forming a battle spirit during the Life Destruction realm was a first class achievement to be proud of. But, if this achievement were placed within the Realm of the Gods, then it wasn't much at all.

Lin Ming's sights were set very far. If his starting points kept falling behind those geniuses of the Realm of the Gods so much, then how could he ever manage to compete with them if he ever truly soared into the Realm of the Gods in the future?

"Can't I choose both roads at once?" Lin Ming didn't have much hope for this but he still asked.

"Nice try, friend. You can, if you complete the Road of Emperor. By that time, all of the mysteries of the Road of Emperor will be opened to you. You can experience the fires of will, the Emperor stone tablets, and maybe even things that I don't know about. But... after passing through the Road of Emperor, you will become a Peerless Emperor. If you want to completely finish the Road of Emperor now, then it is absolutely, absolutely, absolutely... impossible. Honestly make your choice, because once you do, the other path will vanish. Choose as you will." Demonshine said absolutely three times in a row, enunciating these words clearly to completely dispel all of Lin Ming's unrealistic fantasies.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, hesitated for a moment, and then firmly said, "I choose the road of will!"

Demonshine seemed to already expect that Lin Ming would make this choice. He shook his head and lazily said, “Well, good luck to you. This Saint is going to take a nap now.”

After Demonshine’s soul was injured he had to spend 90% of the day resting in sleep.

Lin Ming didn’t bother with Demonshine anymore. He sat down and began to adjust his breathing. He took out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring and began to slowly absorb the Blood Demon Crystal’s energy.

Lin Ming didn’t know this, but as he was facing his choice in the Road of Emperor, within the Exquisite Tower’s Road of Emperor, a beautiful and slender young Fey girl was similarly making her choice.

This young Fey girl had long blue hair and her eyes were also blue. Her face was lovely, without even the slightest flaw. It was just that on the cheeks underneath her eyes, there were several small blue scales. But these scales did not ruin her beauty. Rather, they lent her an air of mystery and wonder.

She was the number one talent of the Exquisite Tower, Lan Xin. She came from a Fey sect, the Blue Silver Holy Land. She broke through to a one-star Fey King at 25 years of age and was equal to a human early Revolving Core master. In fact, she was even a bit better.

Although her cultivation was higher than Lin Ming’s, in terms of

willpower, she was far inferior. When she faced a quasi-Emperor's will world, she couldn't pass. She had already been stranded in front of this quasi-Emperor's will light for 12 days now.

In the Road of Emperor, there was a general time given to each challenger. This was 12 days.

If she couldn't break through the road of will during this period, then that only meant her talent or cultivation was lacking. In short, if she couldn't pass through the complete Road of Emperor then it was impossible for her to become an Emperor level powerhouse here.

These were one of the mysteries that Lan Xing didn't know of. She was only curiously looking towards the stone tablets that surrounded the second Road of Emperor. As she glanced at them, she was immediately attracted to these stone tablets.

“This is...”

The stone tablets had all sorts of strange figures and diagrams engraved upon them. But, as she saw these images, she felt as if her soul was falling within, unable to release itself.

“What a strange stone tablet!”

Lan Xing hesitated for a moment and then stepped onto this second Road of Emperor. In the moment that she did, the first Road of Emperor disappeared. It was like the series of lights that

she had first passed through, slowly fading away.

Lan Xing was dazed. She was faintly aware that she had unknowingly made a choice of some kind. Since she chose this Road of Emperor with the stone tablets, that meant she had given up the road with the will lights.

Having lost the road with the will lights, Lan Xin thought it was a bit regretful. But, if she were given the chance to make her choice again, she would still choose this one. After having stayed on the road of will for several days, her strength hadn't increased by much, but the soul-tearing pain she had experienced during that time still made chills crawl up her spine.

# Chapter 620 – Prime Emperor Force Field

---

Lan Xin was a woman, but her will and beliefs were very firm, otherwise she never could have arrived at this point. However, when facing that soul-tearing pain in the road of wills, she really found it hard to bear, and she had to do so every day without end, from morning until night!

Even when withstanding such tortuous pain, the increase in her strength was actually limited. Lan Xin found this hard to accept.

As Lan Xin stepped onto the second Road of Emperor, she regretted a bit that she wouldn't be able to sharpen her will any further. But this regret also disappeared soon, because she had been completely attracted to the first Emperor stone tablet.

Now this was truly worthy of the Road of Emperor's great fame! The road of will that she had passed through until now hadn't been much better than the King's Cage.

After Lan Xin made her choice, at Heavenly Cloud Tower, Duanmu Qun was also making his.

Duanmu Qun's background was even more terrifying than Lan Xin's.

Lan Xin also originated from a Holy Land, but even Holy Lands were divided into ranks. According to the longstanding traditions of the Holy Demon Continent, once an Emperor level powerhouse was born to a fifth-grade sect, then that sect became a Holy Land.

Those Holy Lands with only a single one-star Emperor level powerhouse were naturally the weakest; in fact, some could even be considered mere high level fifth-grade sects.

As for those Holy Lands that had two Emperor level powerhouses, or even five or six, some of which were even two-star, three-star, or had formed their own battle spirit or had reached high attainments in certain Laws, those were the pinnacle existence of Holy Lands. This sort of Holy Land could be considered a peak fifth-grade sect.

Higher than that was a sixth-grade sect. That would be a Holy Land on the same level as the Demon God Imperial Palace.

Duanmu Qun happened to come from a super Holy Land that was almost a sixth-grade sect.

He was different from Lan Xin. Before entering the Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun already had a decent understanding of it.

The moment when he was given the choice to take a second Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun knew that he had failed.

He ruefully shook his head and said, "It looks like I was too confident. I, a mere one-star Fey King actually wants to condense his own battle spirit. My goal was simply too arrogantly high. This is only the second quasi Emperor will light but I am unable to continue any further. Behind this I would even have to bear the will of true Emperor level powerhouses! The difficulty of that

could be imagined! Even if I grit my teeth and continued on, it would still be useless.”

Duanmu Qun was a peerless genius of his era when it came to willpower. Not just that, but he had a terrifying background and a talent that surpassed even Lan Xin. In addition to his exceedingly high perception and top cultivation methods, Duanmu Qun could be said to truly be a favored son of heaven.

These past twenty some years, every outstanding heroic youth after heroic youth was defeated in front of Duanmu Qun. Even deacons that were several dozen years older than him were not his match. Gradually, inevitably, this invincible, infallible mindset had engraved itself into Duanmu Qun’s bones.

This was the self-confidence and pride that belonged to a top genius.

He had fantasized that when he entered the Road of Emperor, he would be able to complete it in a single go and form his own battle spirit!

However, reality had slapped him down. This first quasi Emperor will was also the weakest quasi Emperor will. Duanmu Qun had spent tremendous amount of time and energy in order to defeat it, but against this second quasi Emperor, he was completely helpless. The disparity between them was simply too great.

Shaking his head, Duanmu Qun self-deprecatingly said, “The Highest Elder was a four-star Fey King when he first touched upon



the threshold of a battle spirit, and was finally able to form his own when he was a five-star Fey King. I will sincerely take the second road with the Emperor stone tablets. If I continue down the road of will, then not only will my strength not rise but I might even be injured.”

Duanmu Qun was reluctant to leave the road of will. But, he finally tamped down the feeling in his heart and stepped onto the road with the Emperor stone tablets.

Although he understood in his heart that the advantages he obtained would be greater if he traveled down the road of will, that advantage, no matter how great it was, simply couldn't be used at present. It was not as beneficial as receiving an immediate increase in his strength.

Calming his heart, Duanmu Qun began to perceive the first Emperor stone tablet.

.....

One month later, Polaris Tower's Road of Emperor –

Lin Ming had already defeated the vicious beasts that Gu Xiao's will summoned. Now, he was directly fighting the main body of Gu Xiao's will.

Bang!

Within the world of will, Lin Ming's will was scattered once again. This soul-tearing pain almost caused him to faint on the spot.

“Reform!”

Lin Ming shouted out loud and his dispersing body began to gather back together. Within the world of will, all power depended on the strength of one's will! Within Lin Ming's mind, he recalled the time when he was still at the Body Transformation stage and had encountered the ownerless soul fragments within the world of the Magic Cube. He recalled the time when he fought against Demonshine, and he recalled the time he had experienced 100 samsaras within the Sorcerer Pagoda.

“My will is indomitable. My soul is endless, indestructible. Even when I faced the soul fragments of the Supreme Elders of the Realm of the Gods, I still wasn't swallowed by them. Even when I faced 100 samsaras, I wasn't lost in my illusions. Although you are an Emperor level powerhouse, and in terms of strength I admit I am still far weaker than you, but in the aspect of will, how can I willingly lose to you!”

Lin Ming gave a loud shout, grasped his spear and shot towards Gu Xiao!

Bang!

A golden light flashed. Half of Lin Ming's body was pierced by this light, but in the last moment before his will was about to

collapse, he suddenly threw out the Purple Comet Spear in his hands.

Blazing with thunder and fire, the Purple Comet Spear drew a dazzling arc through the air as it pierced into Gu Xiao's body!

Blood rained.

In the next moment, Lin Ming had returned to the real world. "This is the first time I've wounded him!"

Lin Ming dripped with a cold sweat from the pain. As he wiped the sweat from his face, he collapsed to the ground in exhaustion.

Taking out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring, Lin Ming sat in meditation and began to restore his energy. These past days, he had been undergoing intense tempering of his will in countless battles. After the passing of a long time, unconsciously, the strength of his willpower had greatly increased.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine awoke from his deep slumber. As he stretched out his feet he said, "Boy. You. Are. Crazy. If you continue like this then it will be easy for your will to be damaged. Your face is white to the point where it doesn't even have a hint of blood to it; this is proof that you overdrew your willpower."

How could Lin Ming not know the truth behind Demonshine's words? When he was still in the Body Transformation stage, he

was clearly aware that if he practiced too much it would leave hidden wounds in his body. But at that time, in order to break through to the Pulse Condensation period, he had no choice but to tread onwards regardless of the consequences.

Now, the same was true.

The only advantage that Lin Ming had from the past was that he had sufficient resources. It wasn't like the past where he couldn't even afford medicine.

Lin Ming had killed many geniuses of Skysplit Tower these past two years, and in doing so obtained a great number of pills that were used to nourish the soul. Those Imp race geniuses were mostly masters of soul attacks, and soul attacks were also the types of attacks with the greatest risks. If one wasn't careful then it was possible to be wounded from backlash, thus they naturally had to prepare a large amount of soul recovery pills.

Especially after he had killed Yan Chi and Kai Yang. Those two had both been Heavenly Demon Seven Stars of Skysplit Tower. Yan Chi had also been the second ranked master and extremely wealthy.

Lin Ming was glad that he killed Yan Chi; otherwise, he wouldn't have dared to continue fighting today.

Taking out one of Yan Chi's soul recovery pills from his spatial ring, Lin Ming quickly swallowed it. This pill was called a Nine Revolution Mind Pill. Yan Chi was the sort that valued wealth

almost more than his life. He couldn't even bear to swallow a whole pill at a time, but rather swallowed them half at a time. He would never do something as wasteful as Lin Ming.

Once the pill reached Lin Ming's stomach, he felt an incomparably pure energy slowly nourishing his mind and soul. Lin Ming also felt his partially broken will slowly recovering.

The Imps were the race with the most talent in the aspect of souls. Naturally, the soul recovery pills they used were much superior to those of humans.

.....

Another two days passed. Lin Ming still hadn't been able to defeat Gu Xiao, but this time he had actually succeeded in leaving two wounds on Gu Xiao.

Then three, then four!

Five days later, Lin Ming was able to fight several violent rounds with Gu Xiao. Using the method of damaging himself to damage his enemy, he managed to cut off Gu Xiao's arm.

Seven days later, Lin Min finally managed to stab Gu Xiao with three spears in a valiant effort. Then, with spear and man as one, he used Penetrating Rainbow and stabbed through Gu Xiao's will.

After defeating Gu Xiao, Lin Ming's broken body had already

reformed several times and his willpower was on the edge of collapse.

In the last moment that Gu Xiao's will was smashed apart, Gu Xiao's remnant will turned into a pure energy that slowly flowed into Lin Ming's own will. At that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his mind had opened and his entire body was brimming with warmth. It was like he had returned to the womb of his mother – he felt incomparably comfortable and at peace.

“This is...”

Lin Ming was surprised. His damaged will and soul force, under this cozy warmth, were quickly recovering.

In several dozen breaths of time, that warmth disappeared and Lin Ming felt that his own state of mind had strengthened a great deal, his willpower rising once more. If he faced Gu Xiao now, he believed that he could fully destroy Gu Xiao's will while retaining at least 30% of his soul force.

“If I destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse then I can obtain the power of its will. The longer I last, the more power of will I will accumulate. I might even be able to form my own battle spirit.”

Lin Ming muttered to himself. In that moment he had withdrawn from the world of will.

“Boy, you actually won!” Demonshine was immensely shocked. This was the first Emperor level will that Lin Ming had defeated, using an entire month of time to do so.

Everything was difficult at the beginning. As it went on, it would naturally become easier. If this continued, then it was highly likely Lin Ming would be able to form his battle spirit!

“What a freak...” Demonshine mumbled. He couldn’t help but use this word to describe Lin Ming. How was Lin Ming a martial artist from a little sect in the mortal world? He seemed more like a talent that was carefully raised up by a large sect within the Realm of the Gods.

“Demonshine, you said that if I can destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit, I can form my own battle spirit?”

Demonshine coolly shrugged and said, “This Saint was just casually speaking. If your perception is high and your destiny is excellent then you might be able to comprehend one early. Otherwise, it’s useless even if you can destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit. In any case, this Saint is going back to sleep. Don’t bother waking me up, alright.”

Demonshine wiggled around and slowly sunk back into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, leaving Lin Ming there to helplessly shake his head.

Following this, Lin Ming spent every day fighting and killing in

the world of will.

When he destroyed the will of the second Emperor level powerhouse, this Emperor level powerhouse hadn't formed a battle spirit either and his cultivation was only at a one-star Demon Emperor. Lin Ming accepted a serious injury in order to defeat it.

Next, this was followed by the third and the fourth.

The opponents grew continuously stronger. However, every time that Lin Ming destroyed the wisp of these Emperor Wills, some of their energy would flow into his body, nourishing his will and mind.

Time passed by. Soon, Lin Ming had been frigidly fighting for three months.

On this day, when he stepped into the will world of an Emperor level powerhouse, he was actually shocked.

This feeling... was it... a martial intent?

Within this world of will, Lin Ming clearly felt the terrifying suppression of a force field, causing the strength of his will to sharply fall.

A martial intent that aimed at the world of will... could it be... the Prime Emperor force field of the Heavenly Demon martial



intent?

# Chapter 621 – Blooming In Splendor Through Competition

---

According to the temple spirit, the Heavenly Demon martial intent was divided into three different forms. They were respectively the Asura force field obtained from the King's Cage, the Death God force field obtained from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, and lastly the Prime Emperor force field from completing the Road of Emperor.

Lin Ming didn't know what the Death God force field was like, but he had personally experienced the Asura force field. The Asura force field was absolute multi-level suppression. Whether it was physical strength, the undulations of organs, the circulation of true essence in the meridians, perception, all of this and more was completely suppressed to the point that it was several tenths less than at peak condition. The weaker one was, the harder this suppression would fall. To extremely weak martial artists, their heart might even stop if they entered this force field and their spiritual sea would collapse. This was also the reason that geniuses would die within the King's Cage.

Although the Asura force field was terrifying, it was only for the real world. After entering the world of will, the Asura force field was no longer effective.

Now, within the world of will, Lin Ming also felt the absolute suppression of a Heavenly Demon force field.

Lin Ming immediately thought that this might be one of the Heavenly Demon martial intent's three great force fields, the

## Prime Emperor force field!

It was the same as the King's Cage. After completing the entire trial, one could obtain the Prime Emperor force field. But, before that, Lin Ming would have to withstand the suppression of this force field!

If he wasn't wrong, then the power of this suppression would only grow stronger!

Thinking that he would have to face an Emperor level powerhouse that had a battle spirit while under the suppression of this force field, Lin Ming immediately felt his own weakness. The disparity was simply too great. No wonder it was said that anyone that passed the Road of Emperor could become a Peerless Emperor.

Within the world of will, Lin Ming's will once again took a human form, with all of the organs of a human, as well as meridians and a dantian.

The will body within the world of will was the same as Lin Ming's body in the real world.

Now, under the suppression of the Prime Emperor force field, the organs of Lin Ming's will body, the meridians, the dantian – all of this came under a massive pressure, causing his strength to weaken by 50%.

When Lin Ming had fought in the world of will, even when he

exhausted all of his willpower and approached the point of collapse, there were always points on his will body that he hadn't tempered.

But now that he was placed under this pervasive pressure, Lin Ming could merely stand still and he would still feel every inch of his soul resisting the Prime Emperor force field, thoroughly exercising him.

'The Asura force field aims at the real world and the Prime Emperor force field aims at the will world. Both of these force fields are like twins that complement each other. Truly, this Heavenly Demon martial intent is wonderfully unique.'

Lin Ming praised in his heart. But at this time he couldn't spare another thought, because right in front of him, his next enemy had already appeared. This was the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse!

Although his opponent hadn't yet condensed a battle spirit, they still once had a cultivation of a three-star Demon Emperor. If it wasn't for the suppression of the Prime Emperor force field, then Lin Ming might have had a low chance of winning. But now, the chance of success approached zero.

No miracle happened. Within three moves, there was an explosive sound as Lin Ming's will body was smashed apart. In the next moment, he withdrew from the world of will, his entire body covered in a cold sweat.

It was too painful!

In these three months, Lin Ming had consumed 60 to 70% of Yan Chi and Kai Yan's soul recovery medicines. If it wasn't for the fact that he would obtain pure soul energy to nourish his will after extinguishing an Emperor Will, then Lin Ming would have already collapsed.

"These medicines, I should use them sparingly..."

Lin Ming swallowed down half of a soul restoring pill and also pulled out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal, immediately going into meditation. Not only did he not feel fear facing the Prime Emperor force field, but he was instead filled with a brilliant fighting spirit. The Prime Emperor force field was able to temper the will body; it was the best whetting stone to help form his battle spirit.

.....

Time quietly passed. In the blink of an eye, fourth months passed since Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor.

Outside of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss continued unabated. The scope and magnitude of the vibrations had weakened by a great deal now. Now, there would usually only be a large-scale vibration at the Skysplit Towers every two or three days. If this continued, then it was estimated that the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss would completely finish in another three months.

Afterward, there would be a stable period of two or three months. One could enter the massive Eternal Demon Abyss and explore the most infamous death zone of the Holy Demon Continent.

From High Lords to the peak talents among the challengers, everyone was preparing for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“I heard that the High Lords of all the Skysplit Towers are planning to explore the area 1200 miles from the edge.” Within the Heavenly Cloud Tower, several top ranked martial artists of the third floor were discussing the journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The thousand miles around the immediate edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss was an absolute death zone. Even a bird would find it impossible to cross. There was no point in desiring or wishing for this region. Anyone who entered would die – not even High Lords were exceptions.

But a distance of 1000 to 1200 miles was a red danger zone. This chances of dying here were relatively high, but the harvests were correspondingly rich.

“1200 miles? Amazing, those people are too bold. These people are really dreaming big, they would even risk their lives like this.”

“Even the direct descendants of Holy Lands like Zhuan Yu,

Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and famous High Lords like Polaris Tower's High Lord Bloodfire, White Stone Tower's High Lord Three Eyes – all of them are planning to enter this area. There's nothing more to say about it. Without risk, it's only possible to live a mediocre life.”

The road of a martial artist was paved with layers of obstacles and dangers. Even a top Emperor level talent was no exception. If they turned timid in their adventures and hesitated to grasp every lucky chance they could, then the halo of their Emperor level talent would slowly fade away until they ended up only being able to become a high stage Life Destruction master, never being able to take that final step.

“Yes, ah, there's also that Polaris Tower's Lin Ming. That fellow is simply a monstrous freak. He's a Titled Asura! For the last 10,000 years there have only been 30 to 40 Titled Asuras even with all 12 Skysplit Towers combined. I wonder whether or not he will enter that 1200 mile region.

“He should be entering it. I heard that he already entered the Road of Emperor. When he comes out, I have no idea just how strong he'll be. I wonder how he compares to Heavenly Cloud Tower's Duanmu Qun?”

“Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor and Duanmu Qun also entered the Road of Emperor. So have Exquisite Tower's Lan Xin, Five Color Tower's Zhuan Yu, Great Ax Tower's Hei Shi, and also other famous talents, all of them have entered the Road of Emperor. Each and every one of them are monstrous geniuses. I have no idea who will have the greatest improvements after

coming out!”

As the two martial artists were talking, a sound transmitting talisman lit in front of them, appearing especially bright in the dark hall.

“Oh? Great Ax Tower’s Hei Shi just came out! His cultivation has risen from a one-star Demon King to a two-star Demon King! That is just his cultivation too, I wonder how much his moves and Concepts have improved by. This Road of Emperor is even better for improving one’s moves and Concepts!”

The martial artist who spoke was obviously filled with envy.

The Skysplit Towers gathered all the peak killing path talents of the entire Holy Demon Continent. It could be said that there were more geniuses there than dogs in the world. Cultivation was not the only factor in one’s combat prowess, but it was an important factor. A two-star Demon King was a bit abnormal. Much less, Hei Shi’s Concepts and moves had most likely improved too. It was hard to imagine just how terrifyingly high his combat strength had risen to.

“Before Hei Shi entered Skysplit Tower he was already a bit better than the weakest High Lord. After coming out, he can probably fight on par with an upper middle ranked High Lord.

Normally, a High Lord’s talent was far less than that of a peak challenger talent. It was because the peak talents nearly all originated from Holy Lands, so they never desired or planned on



staying in Skysplit Tower and becoming High Lords. Only those with ordinary backgrounds that were also willing to submit themselves to the Blood Slaughter Steppes' supreme rulers could become a High Lord.

Thus, as long as these Holy Land descendants stayed for long enough, their strength would sooner or later surpass the High Lords'.

"This is too incredible. The last 10 years of the Blood Slaughter Steppes challengers have talents that far surpass the past generations'. Even Polaris Tower's Feng Shen is said to have entered the Road of Emperor. The sect behind him should have paid no small price for this.

The martial artists of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were all looking forwards to a few months from now when all these peak talents would begin exiting one at a time. That would truly be a blooming moment for all of these geniuses. As for the Eternal Demon Abyss, that would be the true test for all of these individuals. At that time, who was a True Dragon, who was a fake, all of these would be made brutally clear.

Four months passed, and then in the blink of an eye, the fifth month passed too. Feng Shen exited! And then Lan Xin also exited!

These peerless proud sons and daughters of heavens, each of them had scarily prodigious backgrounds. Feng Shen's background ranked slightly worse amongst them, but he was still from a Holy Land.

Facing this group of characters, the high level personnel of the Blood Slaughter Steppes naturally didn't dare to do anything to them. Now when they returned to Skysplit Tower, their strength would surpass a great number of High Lords. It would become increasingly difficult for the Blood Slaughter Steppes to control them.

However, these various Holy Lands weren't unreasonable. After this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, they would all have their respective descendants leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

At this time, when these Holy Land descendants left, those challengers who had talent a level lower than them and had also pledged their allegiance to Skysplit Tower would become new High Lords, replacing all those that died within the Enteral Demon Abyss.

In this way, this generation of challengers would be considered finished. Then, the Blood Slaughter Steppes would welcome a new generation of young heroic elites, starting the cycle anew once again.

Five months later, on the 160<sup>th</sup> day, besides Duanmu Qun and Lin Ming, every other challenger had made their exit.

Their cultivation had significantly improved. And in comparison to their relative cultivation, their comprehensive combat strength rose even more!

All of these martial artists burned with a brilliant fighting spirit. They all impatiently desired to go to the Eternal Demon Abyss to prove themselves.

Normally, all of these top geniuses had great pride and belief in themselves. After entering the Road of Emperor, they all believed they had perceived the greatest profound and mystical principles from within, and that their increased strength was also the greatest. They earnestly wanted to compete with other young heroic elites and see just who had obtained the greatest benefits from the Road of Emperor.

This could be considered the proof of talent.

For those martial artists that wished to, they really did compete with each other. Their combat strength had truly risen, and this was mainly reflected in their moves, comprehension of Concepts, and cultivation. Without doubt, when these individuals were given the choice to take two different paths within the Road of Emperor, all of them had stepped onto the path of Emperor stone tablets instead of the path of will lights.

Even Duanmu Qun was the same.

Within Heavenly Cloud Tower's Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun gasped, his face pale and his body shaking with weakness. He took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. After meditating for some time, some color was finally restored to his complexion.

“My Road of Emperor... has also reached the limit.” Duanmu Qun

let out a long breath, shaking his head. He realized that this was the furthest he would be able to go.

# Chapter 622 – Forming a Battle Spirit

---

“This is the 21<sup>st</sup> stone tablet. I’ve stayed here for a full month and 10 days and only just managed to break past it...”

Recalling the experience of these last 40 days, Duanmu Qun felt a lingering fear. These stone tablets were not as simple as they seemed. Once anyone touched upon them with their perception, they would have to withstand the terrifying impact force from the stone tablets. Let alone comprehending the mysteries within these stone tablets, touching their perception on these stone tablets could grievously injure them!

Walking all the way down, of the 20 stone tablets he had passed through earlier, the pressure would increase with every one. The first 10 stone tablets weren’t anything, he had easily passed those. For the 10 after that, the difficulty had risen by a great margin, but Duanmu Qun had still been able to just barely cope with that.

After the 20<sup>th</sup>, the 21<sup>st</sup> stone tablet was the true terror. Duanmu Qun had spent a total of 40 days on this single stone tablet alone.

Persisting until he had broken this last stone tablet, it was already the limit that Duanmu Qun could withstand.

As he looked at all the Emperor stone tablets that lay in front of him, Duanmu Qun could only sigh in frustration. The disparity was just too great!

Just the 21<sup>st</sup> stone tablet had caused him to exhaust every last ounce of his potential. The difficulty of those stone tablets ahead could be imagined.

Actually, Duanmu Qun didn't even know how many stone tablets were in front of him.

The Road of Emperor. After completing this road, one would become a Peerless Emperor.

This was certainly not a lie!

Moreover, those Emperor level powerhouses that were born from the Road of Emperor were surely not the ordinary kind, but those existences that peered down from the very pinnacle of strength!

“There's no limit in this world; no matter how strong you are, there is always someone higher. I thought that my talent far surpassed every other heroic young elite of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, but I never that I would be pressured by a mere Lin Ming. If I was compared to those talents from ancient times, I would be even more pathetic!” Duanmu Qun shook his head in self-deprecation. This Road of Emperor was most likely constructed for those young talents of ancient times to gain experience. What he had seen was only the tip of the iceberg, and yet he had reached his limits. Just how strong could those young heroic elites of ancient times have been?

“I should leave now. After being in the Road of Emperor for 160 days, the increase of my strength has been immense. I wonder how

I did compared to Lin Ming?”

Besides Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun was recognized as the number one talent of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. His background was that of the quasi sixth-grade sect, the Divine Wood Holy Land. He himself was a Fey, and his understandings of Laws had reached an extremely high degree. His perception was incomparably monstrous, and with his young age, he had already thoroughly studied his Divine Wood Holy Land's core cultivation methods.

The Fey had a naturally superior compatibility with Laws than humans, and in addition to being personally directed and taught by the three-star Fey Emperor, the Highest Elder of the Divine Wood Holy Land, Duanmu Qun's attainments in the Concepts of Space and Time were very high. In terms of the Concepts of Water and Wood, he was also satisfactory. In the comprehension of Concepts, he was confident that he wouldn't lost to anyone.

Duanmu Qun thought that even if his overall talents were inferior to Lin Ming's, that didn't mean he was weaker. After all, he was a bit older.

Moreover, ignoring other aspects of talent, just in terms of the comprehension of Laws, Duanmu Qun felt he was above Lin Ming.

And in this Road of Emperor, it specifically tested one's perception and comprehension of Laws. The stronger one was in these aspects, the more truths and mysteries they would be able to grasp from these Emperor stone tablets.

Towards the 21<sup>st</sup> stone tablet, even with Duanmu Qun's understanding of Laws and Concepts, he had already exhausted everything he had. He very much wanted to know just how far Lin Ming had gone.

“Lin Ming, I wonder which stone tablet you've managed to reach? If you haven't reached 20, then I will truly be disappointed... after leaving Skysplit Tower, I will be looking forwards to a match with you!” Duanmu Qun thought aloud, his eyes flashing with a vivid fighting spirit.

The average person would have thought that it was sad to be born in the same era as a monstrous genius, but Duanmu Qun didn't think so. If he sat alone on the highest peak with nothing but his own desolate solitude, then that would only be an immeasurably chilly position, and he would be doing nothing more than wasting his own potential. On the other hand, if he had a rival, then both of them could try to surpass the other and they could both make great strides of progress beside each other.

This was the self-confidence that belonged to a true top talent.

After being in the Road of Emperor for 161 days, Duanmu Qun finally left!

Duanmu Qun's exit caused a great stir within Heavenly Cloud Tower. Even the nearby Skysplit Towers were made aware of this news.

A rumor was passed on that after Duanmu Qun left the Road of



Emperor, his every action would cause the power of space around him to be restlessly aroused.

This was an extremely high boundary that would only occur when one's understandings of Laws reached a terrifying level. Like an order being followed once given, this was a similar truth. Duanmu Qun was far away from reaching this sort of boundary, but it was still enough to scare everyone.

The current Duanmu Qun gave off an unfathomably deep feeling.

At this point, of all the geniuses that had entered the Road of Emperor, the only one that hadn't yet come out was Lin Ming. This made everyone especially want to know just what sorts of improvements Lin Ming had made within the Road of Emperor.

.....

In the world of will, a dazzling flame flashed past. Lin Ming had become one with his spear, and he was like a meteor as he passed through the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse.

Bang!

The will body shattered into pieces, becoming countless streams of light that slowly flowed into Lin Ming's body. A feeling like a spring breeze spread to every corner of Lin Ming's body.

"I've been in the Road of Emperor for five months and finally

managed to adapt to the suppression of the Prime Emperor martial intent!”

Lin Ming withdrew from the world of will and swallowed a soul recovery pill.

At this time, all of the top-grade soul recovery pills had been eaten by him. Now whenever he withdrew from the world of will he could only take medium-grade and high-grade soul recovery pills to revitalize his soul. Luckily, every time that he destroyed the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse, a wisp of their will would remain and flow into him, a pure power of soul that was able to repair the damage done to his will body. Otherwise, there would probably have been hidden wounds left behind in Lin Ming’s spiritual sea already.

Looking at the endless will lights that extended to the far distance in front of him, Lin Ming took out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal and began to meditate again.

For five months, he had spent this entire time fighting.

He had to regularly suffer the soul-tearing pain of having his will body ruined. This sort of excruciating pain was even more insufferable than physical bodily pain, much less that he had endured it for five months so far.

“These past days, I still haven’t been able to form my own battle spirit, but because I’ve been using so many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, my cultivation has risen to a half-step Revolving Core.”

Because Lin Ming's foundation was completely solid, he almost wouldn't have a bottleneck from the Xiantian realm to Revolving Core realm. Moreover, top-grade Blood Demon Crystals were originally excellent for making breakthroughs through bottlenecks, so his cultivation had constantly been rising throughout this time.

As for his battle spirit, he still hadn't formed one, but Lin Ming could feel a dim and hazy mist gathering above his spiritual sea. This was pure willpower. Every time his willpower increased through battle, this mist would become richer and thicker.

After another 40-some days passed, Lin Ming had already been in the Road of Emperor for an entire 200 days.

During these 200 days, the pressure of the Prime Emperor force field constantly grew heavier, but the growth of Lin Ming's willpower was even quicker. This allowed him to adapt to the massive pressure within the world of will.

The mist within his spiritual sea became increasingly thick, to the point that it nearly turned into droplets.

Cha!

A beaming bolt of lightning cut through the world of will, completely crushing an Emperor Will and turning it into the pure power of soul.

“Finally, I’ve defeated the will body of a three-star Emperor level powerhouse...”

Lin Ming fell to his knees, using the Purple Comet Spear to prop himself up. From his head to his toes, there wasn’t a single place that wasn’t a mess. His left shoulder was nearly completely ruined, his chest was stained red, blood gushing out of it, and his organs were in chaos.

If this was the real world, in this situation he would have long ago lost any and all combat strength.

Lin Ming had been fighting this three-star Emperor level powerhouse’s will body for a full 10 days, and today, he had finally defeated it.

A pure energy flowed into Lin Ming’s body, quickly repairing his broken body. This sort of restoration brought along a wonderful feeling with it. The pure power of soul was like a quiet drizzle of rain falling down on him, making him feel happy and comfortable.

Lin Ming immersed himself in this comfortable and wonderful feeling for an unknown time. Suddenly, there was a pain between his eyebrows, as if all the strength of his body was rushing to that single point, able to erupt at any moment!

“Mm... this is...”

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. He was surprised to find that the thick mist that hovered over his spiritual sea had suddenly contracted in upon itself!

“Could this be...” Lin Ming suddenly thought of a possibility, a faint sense of incredulity filling his heart.

“Hahaha! Boy, congratulations! You've succeeded!” Demonshine's jazzy voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

“Battle spirit? Is this really a battle spirit?” Lin Ming was ecstatic with happiness. He stared with wide eye as amazing changes began happening to the thick fog within his spiritual sea. Among these changes, a faint pain of will spread through Lin Ming's mind. However, this sort of pain only made him feel inexplicably excited.

Nothing was impossible to those that were willing to try hard enough. Lin Ming had spent almost an entire seven months, suffering massive pain to his soul to constantly temper his will and mold his battle spirit. And today, he was finally successful!

To do this, he had sacrificed his cultivation speed and didn't hesitate to give up perceiving the Emperor stone tablets. Now, at this moment when his battle spirit formed before his eyes, Lin Ming felt that all of this sacrifice and pain was well worth it!

Part of the reason why Lin Ming could form his own battle spirit was his effort, but the majority of it was all because of his incomparably firm will and mindset.

Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was originally extremely tough and impervious. In addition to repeatedly swallowing soul fragments from the Magic Cube and also cultivating the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', not only had his willpower strengthened, but after obtaining the Samsara martial intent, this had caused a qualitative increase in Lin Ming's willpower.

In terms of the force of his will, there was no martial artist at Lin Ming's realm that could compare with him. Similarly, soul attacks were nothing more than a joke in front of him.

If it wasn't for Lin Ming originally having such talent of will, then tempering his will would have been useless to begin with. In fact, constantly overdrawing the power of his will would have done nothing but damage his mind.

"This is... a battle spirit?"

As Lin Ming looked at the skies over his spiritual sea, he could see that the mist there seemed much more pale, and in the center of that swirling mist seemed to be a vague, tiny azure spear; it seemed unreal, obscure, and illusory.

This spear was as thin as a chopstick and only half a foot long. The spearhead was the size of a knuckle, and the entire shaft was azure, shining with a cold light.

"This is my battle spirit?"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen a battle spirit. The memories he had absorbed were very vague concerning battle spirits. As for what they looked like, he didn't know.

Demonshine chuckled, "Hehe, that's right. Every battle spirit has a different shape. Some people have battle spirits that are shaped like weapons they often use, for instance, spears, sabers, and swords. There are also some people who have battle spirits that are like the elements they specialize in, such as flames, ice crystals, thunder bolts, and others. There are even some specialized battle spirits, ones that look like beasts, plants, furnaces, and so on. Take good care of your battle spirit and raise it well! Your battle spirit is just like a baby right now, but even so, it is still extremely terrifying!

"You are truly an abnormal freak! You formed your own battle spirit and you haven't even reached the Revolving Core realm yet. I have no idea just how terrifying you will be when this battle spirit grows up!"

## Chapter 623 – Exit

---

Within the black darkness, a cold light flashed. A low-grade earth-step treasure sword was tossed into the air where it was slowly spinning around.

But at this moment, the treasure sword spinning in the air began to tremble. The air around it spun into a sharp vortex, causing even the space to tremble. With a shill grinding noise, the earth-step treasure sword actually exploded in the air, turning into countless shards of metal!

After being twisted apart in this vortex, the metal fragments began to follow the flow of wind, causing the vortex to shine with a keen light. With a faint howling, space itself seemed to be torn apart. If a martial artist were to be placed with this sharp vortex they would have longed been grinded into a meat patty.

“This is the striking power of a battle spirit.”

Within the world of will, a battle spirit was the most terrifying weapon. But in the real world, a battle spirit actually couldn't be used to directly attack; it had to be attached to some material object. A moment ago, Lin Ming had attached the battle spirit to the air, causing a sharp vortex that had twisted the earth-step treasure to pieces.

Attaching a battle spirit to the air wasn't considered a strong use of it. The strongest use of a battle spirit was when it was attached to a treasure and used in techniques. Lin Ming hoped to find a rival



to battle so that he could see just how far his battle spirit could go.

“I wonder how much my strength has increased by...” Lin Ming thought out loud as he stopped spurring his battle spirit, causing the metal fragments to immediately fall to the floor.

“Hehe, after comprehending your own battle spirit, your defensive ability, true essence thickness, and speed, none of those have increased by too much. But, your striking power has absolutely risen by an astronomical degree. Even though your battle spirit is only in its elementary form, it is still terrifying. When it grows in the future, you won’t even need to move. Just send out your battle spirit and it will be able to kill others without them even seeing!

“Afterwards, when your battle spirit reaches the Large Success stage, you can even have it attach to your armor to enhance your defense. In short, as you grow stronger, this battle spirit will become an increasingly important aspect of your strength. This is also the reason that when martial artists are at the same cultivation boundary, the martial artist that is stronger in their world of will is much more respected and feared. This is because their capacity for growth is greater. Now, you’ve comprehended your own battle spirit before you’ve even reached Revolving Core. The room for your growth is... limitless.” Demonshine sighed, truly envious of Lin Ming’s lucky chance.

“I wonder if I’m a match for High Lord Limitless Demon now...” Lin Ming had been on the Road of Emperor for more than half a year now. His cultivation and techniques hadn’t increased by much, but his striking power had leapt up because of the formation

of his battle spirit. Now, if he faced High Lord Limitless Demon, he still wasn't too sure of his chances.

However, even if he could deal with High Lord Limitless Demon as he was now, Lin Ming wouldn't have went against him at this moment. He still wanted to borrow High Lord Limitless Demon's name in order to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was far too early to kill High Lord Limitless Demon.

“It shouldn't be too long until the Eternal Demon Abyss opens; I don't have enough time to make a breakthrough to the Revolving Core realm. With the time I have left, it's much better for me to use it to sharpen my battle spirit!”

Lin Ming continued towards the next will light. If he wasn't able to test the power of this battle spirit in the real world, then he could test it out in the world of will.

After entering into the world of will once again, Lin Ming felt something completely different.

He felt that his body and surroundings had become remarkably real, with almost no difference from the real world. His perception had become incomparably acute, and strength filled his body. His speed, his thick true essence, his comprehension of Laws, everything had come back!

In front of him was the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse. This figure was completely wrapped in a layer of black fog, impossible to clearly see.

“Kill!”

A thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. Lin Ming hadn’t even moved, but an incomparably sharp spear actually appeared in front of him, piercing towards the figure’s heart!

Blood sprayed out and the will body slowly faded away, turning into a pure energy that flowed into Lin Ming’s body, vitalizing his will.

“This is visualization?”

Lin Ming remembered that feeling just now. As Lin Ming had said, in the world of will, he was god. He could create any weapon, vicious beast, or if he was strong enough, he could even form a God Beast!

And these forms he visualized, these weapons and vicious beasts, they could become the most dangerous and deadly of tools.

“The difference in the world of will between those that have a battle spirit and those that don’t is simply too great. Before I formed my battle spirit, I would have to suffer several grievous wounds and risk myself in order to destroy an Emperor level powerhouse’s will body. But now, after I formed my battle spirit, I can actually instantly kill them.”

In truth, what Lin Ming had destroyed was not the true will of an

Emperor, but rather a similar Emperor Will formed from energy that the Road of Emperor created based on its memories of these ancient Emperors.

These energy forms had their own attack power, but they were naturally inferior to the true will of an Emperor level powerhouse. Otherwise, even if Lin Ming had comprehended a battle spirit it would still have been impossibly difficult for him to win.

Next, Lin Ming continued sweeping his way through. With a battle spirit, these Emperor Wills that didn't have a battle spirit were completely outmatched.

In such battles, the elementary form of Lin Ming's battle spirit within his spiritual sea constantly solidified, continuously growing.

Feeling his battle spirit growing stronger, Lin Ming eagerly awaited fighting in the real world; he wanted to see just how much his strength had increased by.

On this day, as Lin Ming stepped into a new world of will, he suddenly felt a terrifying pressure fall on him, causing all the blood in his body to come to a standstill even as it swelled up in his chest.

Looking up, Lin Ming could see a blurry face in the skies, looking illusory and cloudy.

“Junior, you are not my match. Stop here, and return.”

A voice echoed out from the endless horizon, reverberating in Lin Ming's ear like a thunderclap.

Lin Ming was shocked as he heard this voice. Before now, he had already destroyed the will bodies of dozens of Emperor level powerhouses, but none of them had ever spoken. Because of this, Lin Ming had subconsciously come to believe that these will bodies were nothing more than dead objects or simulations conjured up by the Road of Emperor. Otherwise, if top talents destroyed so many Emperor Wills when they came in, then these Emperor Wills should have already been used up.

In this world of will, could there really be a true wisp of remnant soul from an Emperor level powerhouse?

This thought just formed in Lin Ming's mind when an overwhelming pressure came crashing down on him from above, causing his body to shatter into pieces. In the next moment, Lin Ming had withdrawn from the world of will, his body streaming with a cold sweat.

The disparity was too great!

From the last will world to this one, the difficulty had soared up by countless times!

“This is an Emperor level powerhouse that had formed his own battle spirit, he might even have left a wisp of his consciousness inside the will light. I am absolutely not his match.”

The difference just now was like the difference between the mud and clouds; it was so great that Lin Ming couldn't even summon the thought of resistance before he was destroyed.

Had he reached his limit?

Lin Ming looked at the will lights that stretched far off into the distance and shook his head. He still had such a long way that he hadn't yet traveled but he had already reached his limit. He wasn't even close!

“Boy! Are you still not happy enough!?” Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine jumped out and grouchily said, “The road of will lights far surpasses the stone tablets in terms of difficulty, but now you've even crossed through a good half of it! What more do you want? You're just a half-step Revolving Core boy, if you so easily crossed the Road of Emperor then what good would it be?”

The Road of Emperor not only included the road of will lights but also other sections. But currently, Lin Ming had chosen the road of will lights. If he entered the Road of Emperor next time, then this would be where he would continue from.

Before he finished walking this road, it was impossible for him to step onto the Road of Emperor stone tablets. Thus, there was no more point in staying here.

“This is the end so far!”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. It was about time for him to exit.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had stayed within the Road of Emperor for seven months now. Unconsciously, his birthday had passed yet again. After leaving the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming was now 20 years old.

This time, the eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss had died down. In another two months, the energies would stabilize and the 12 Skysplit Towers would open the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss. At this time, all of the outstanding young elites and High Lords would be able enter the Eternal Demon Abyss to seek their own lucky chances.

When Lin Ming exited, it naturally aroused a great amount of interest.

To them, Lin Ming would be a powerful competitor.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was a land of death. Since ancient times, countless heroic young elites and extraordinary High Lords would perish here. Some would die from the danger zones of the Eternal Demon Abyss, and some would die at the hands of other martial artists. In fact, this second reason was one of the major reasons for death in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there were lucky chances abound, but there were also no rules. Killing someone and stealing their wealth was common, especially in the new era after an

eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss when there were even more lucky chances and treasures to be found. Before entering, many martial artists were already cleaning their murder weapons.

To martial artists that walked the killing path, such an environment was sure to be a frigid and bloody battle.

However, those martial artists that qualified to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss were either peerless geniuses or High Lords, all of them hardened veterans. Despite how powerful one was, facing such a great group of tigers, one had to be careful, otherwise it was possible to end up being the one killed instead.

So, investigating the information of other people that would enter was also one of the necessary preparations for entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, Blackstone, and other top talents were naturally the focus of these investigations. As for High Lord Bloodfire, High Lord Three Eyes, and those like them, they had been High Lords for a long time so there was no need to mention them.

But as for Lin Ming, as a rising star that had killed High Lord Heian, he too was the focus of attention.

“Before Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor he had strength equal to an upper middle High Lord of Polaris Tower. After leaving the Road of Emperor, he probably has strength equal to Polaris Tower’s top three High Lords!”



Within Heavenly Cloud Tower, the dozen or so High Lords had their minions researching their competitors' strength in order to prepare themselves for the Eternal Demon Abyss. Naturally, they mentioned Lin Ming.

Another High Lord said, "Of the 12 Skysplit Towers, Polaris Tower's High Lords are only in the lower middle ranks. But, our Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lords are overall ranked number one. Lin Ming is strong, but if he were placed in our Heavenly Cloud Tower group then he wouldn't be so exaggerated. Lin Ming is a powerful competitor of ours, but we don't need to especially fear him."

"I wonder how that Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin would compare with him. Especially that Duanmu Qun. I heard that his strength wasn't necessarily any worse than Lin Ming's to begin with. After entering the Road of Emperor, his cultivation rose, not to mention his comprehension of Laws. His harvest in there was certainly great."

As these martial artists were speaking, a sound transmitting talisman suddenly lit in the main hall. As the leader of these High Lords heard the news, a strange look suddenly crossed his face.

# Chapter 624 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

---

“What happened?” The others asked as they noticed the strange expression on the High Lord’s face, puzzled by what it meant.

“Lin Ming exited the Road of Emperor.”

“He finally came out? That fellow went in for seven whole months...” The Road of Emperor was different from the King’s Cage. If one wasn’t strong, then it was impossible to stay within the King’s Cage for a long time. But, the Road of Emperor was different. If one wanted to, they could procrastinate inside for a long time, thus, the time stayed within didn’t correspond to one’s strength.

“But... what I find strange is that Lin Ming didn’t break through to the Revolving Core realm.” The leader of the High Lord frowned, a bit skeptical.

“What? Seven months and he still hasn’t broken through to Revolving Core?” All of the martial artists were surprised upon hearing this. Immediately, joy flooded their expressions. To them, Lin Ming not breaking through to Revolving Core was wonderful news.

To a top talent, Revolving Core wasn’t a great bottleneck; it was just a matter of time before breaking through, let alone after entering the Road of Emperor where it was easy to increase one’s strength.

Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor for seven months. After such a long time, they had thought that Lin Ming would have broken through to Revolving Core. None of them imagined that he would still be stranded at a half-step Revolving Core.

Every great boundary of the essence gathering system was divided into four smaller boundaries – these were early, middle, late, and extreme. From extreme Xiantian to half-step Revolving Core wasn't even a small boundary. Half-step Revolving Core, in truth, was just the peak of extreme Xiantian.

After Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, his cultivation only rose by half a small boundary. Compared to Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and the other geniuses, he had been completely overshadowed!

“How could this be?” A martial artist said with an inconceivable look. He was already accustomed to the fact that Lin Ming would create miracles. Now that Lin Ming had such a poor performance, it really did feel weird.

“Hehe, this isn't too strange. He either met a bottleneck of some kind, or else his perception was poor and he couldn't understand the Emperor stone tablets!”

An Imp martial artist chuckled. He was Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Black Ash. Amongst the 16 High Lords of Heavenly Cloud Tower, High Lord Black Ash only ranked ninth. He hadn't been too confident that he would be able to deal with Lin Ming

once he reached the Revolving Core realm. After all, a martial artist going from Xiantian to Revolving Core was a tremendous leap. But now that he heard that Lin Ming hadn't broken through to Revolving Core, he was immediately filled with confidence again.

“Don't be careless. Lin Ming's perception is absolutely not bad, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time. Who knows just what that fellow was messing around with in the Road of Emperor.” The head High Lord said, doubtful.

“Brother Cloud Demon, you are far too cautious. Your strength can be ranked in Heavenly Cloud Tower's top five; why would you care so much about a junior? It's true that Lin Ming is talented, but he's far too young. Half-step Revolving Core... humph. During this adventure into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had better not run into us, because if he does... hehe...”

High Lord Black Ash maliciously smiled, not bothering to hide his killing intent. Lin Ming's name could be said to resound like thunder within Polaris Tower, but in Heavenly Cloud Tower, his reputation was far less astonishing. Whenever stories were passed on, there were bound to be exaggerations. The overall strength of Polaris Tower's 12 High Lords was also much worse than that of Heavenly Cloud Tower's.

High Lord Cloud Demon hesitated for a moment, not speaking anymore. Whether or not Lin Ming had obtained any other benefits within the Road of Emperor, the truth was that he still hadn't broken through to Revolving Core.

“Good, we’ll stop talking about Lin Ming for now. We will move on to another powerhouse that needs our attention more – High Lord Three Eyes!”

Mentioning High Lord Three Eyes, even the arrogant High Lord Black Ash’s smile faded away. High Lord Three Eyes had been famous for a very long time, he wasn’t someone that a junior like Lin Ming could compare to.

.....

Polaris Tower, Tower Master’s Grand Hall –

In a dimly lit hall, the black-cloaked Polaris Tower Master was sitting back in an obsidian chair, frowning as he looked at Lin Ming in front of him.

Beside Lin Ming were several other High Lords of Polaris Tower, they were all members that would be entering the Eternal Demon Abyss this time. Before Lin Ming had left the Road of Emperor, there were countless rumors circulating about Polaris Tower concerning just how much Lin Ming’s strength would have grown. Some people believed that Lin Ming, after exiting the Road of Emperor, would have a comprehensive combat strength equal to Polaris Tower’s top three High Lords, that he might even be able to equally battle with High Lord Bloodfire.

However, the truth was that after returning to Skysplit Tower, Lin Ming’s cultivation had only risen by half a small boundary;

this was unexpected for everyone.

This was far too poor a result. Even if his comprehension of Laws had risen some, there was no reason for his cultivation to have increased so little.

If this had happened to someone else, then this could be barely acceptable. But, Lin Ming was a Titled Asura, a pinnacle level talent. After staying in the King's Cage, his strength had risen to a horrifying degree. Then, after entering the Road of Emperor which was even more terrifying than the King's Cage, how could his strength not have risen even more?

“Lin Ming, what did you experience in the Road of Emperor that delayed you for so long? How come I feel that your strength hasn't risen by much?”

The Tower Master asked after a period of silence. This time, in allowing Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor, he had also freed Lin Ming from the order of not breaking through to the next realm. All of this was in order to prepare Lin Ming to break through to the Revolving Core realm. If Lin Ming broke through to the Revolving Core realm then the slave seal he planted would become unstable, but for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, the Tower Master was willing to risk this danger. But, he hadn't expected that Lin Ming would laze around in the Road of Emperor for seven months and only be at a half-step Revolving Core.

Lin Ming bowed and expressionlessly said “Most of the time I spent in the Road of Emperor was for perceiving the Emperor

stone tablets. I also made some further comprehension in Laws, but besides that, I didn't have any special experiences."

"Mm..."

The Tower Master didn't suspect that Lin Ming would be lying. He had planted his slave seal in Lin Ming's spiritual sea and could still clearly feel it. With the slave seal in place, it was impossible for Lin Ming to lie to him.

'Seven months perceiving the Emperor stone tablets and yet you've only obtained such little improvement. Even when Kai Yang entered the Road of Emperor, his results were far more than this. Lin Ming's perception should be far superior to his, otherwise how could he possibly have comprehended the Concepts of Space and Time? Did I damage Lin Ming's perception when I planted the slave seal in him?'

Arguably, a slave seal shouldn't injure a martial artist's soul. Someone with a slave seal planted within them, besides being absolutely obedient to Polaris Tower's Tower Master, shouldn't have any other differences. However, the mind and soul were two of the most difficult existences to decipher. Perhaps this slave seal really had damaged his perception somehow.

"You may leave now." The Tower Master waved his hand.

"Yes." Lin Ming faintly answered before excusing himself.

“Sir Chief High Lord, when Feng Shen entered the Road of Emperor, his cultivation rose from an early one-star Fey King to a two-star Fey King and his total combat strength also rose by a great deal. When I saw him one month ago, I could clearly feel the faint power of Laws emanating from him. I estimate that Feng Shen already has strength equal to our Polaris Tower’s top five ranked High Lords.” After Lin Ming left, another High Lord in the hall reported on Feng Shen’s results from the Road of Emperor.

Feng Shen was a Holy Land descendant afterall, he was completely incomparably with Yan Chi and Maha. Before entering the Road of Emperor, Feng Shen only had strength comparably to the lowest ranked High Lords, but now, he had strength equal to the fourth or fifth ranked High Lord. This was a terrifying rate of progress.

The High Lord continued to say, “If we change Feng Shen’s cultivation to that of a human’s, then it would be the same as rising from the early Revolving Core to the peak of the middle Revolving Core. In five months, Feng Shen’s cultivation has risen by one and a half small boundaries in the Revolving Core realm. But, Lin Ming used seven months to rise by just half a small boundary in the Xiantian realm. The difference between these two is far too great!”

“It truly is difficult to understand...”

Another High Lord followed. His meaning was that Lin Ming’s performance had really hit rock bottom. It was difficult to imagine that this situation would happen to a Titled Asura.



“There are some geniuses that suddenly exhaust all their potential, it isn’t too surprising.” In a corner of the hall, High Lord Shengong spoke. He didn’t have any great grudge with Lin Ming, but because of the matter concerning Xing Tian and High Lord Heian, if Lin Ming ran into bad luck then High Lord Shengong would definitely be among those cheering.

In the seat of the Chief High Lord, the Tower Master was silent throughout. Seven months for just a small half boundary... and in the Xiantian realm too. To an Emperor level talent, this was something they could accomplish even without entering the Road of Emperor.

Some could say that Lin Ming was lying somehow or had even intentionally failed, but there was no reason for him to do so. First because he had a slave seal planted within him, and second because it was impossible.

‘If his perception was really affected by my slave seal... then this Lin Ming’s value has truly dropped. If I can’t raise him then there’s no point wasting one of my limited slave seals on him. I might as well give up on him. This time, I’ll let him enter into the 1200 mile danger zone and have him seek some lucky chances for me. This can be considered a good enough use for trash.

‘If he can find something then that would be for the best. If he can’t find anything then he has no right to continue any further. He can fend for himself from then on.’

As the Tower Master was thinking this, he stood up and dourly said, “There is still two months until the Eternal Demon Abyss

opens. Everyone, prepare as much as you can. This is everything for today!”

.....

As the time of the Eternal Demon Abyss opening approached, Lin Ming spent most of his time sitting on the stone bed of his practice area, meditating and tempering his will at the same time.

It was impossible to use two months to break through to the Revolving Core realm. Since this was how it was, he might as well temper his battle spirit so that he could grow as soon as possible, allowing his striking power to reach the limit.

The martial artists of the 12 Skysplit Towers were also preparing in their respective ways. The weakest of those entering the Eternal Demon Abyss had to be at least at the level of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, otherwise, going in was only a suicide wish. With this massive group of powerhouses gathered together, the fierce battles that would occur could be imagined.

Like this, time quietly passed, and the day that the Eternal Demon Abyss would open finally arrived.

On this day, Lin Ming, as well as all the other martial artists that were entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, gathered on the fourth floor. Besides the 12 High Lords, there was only one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars who would enter the Eternal Demon Abyss – Feng Shen.

Da Gu and Xun Ji had eventually chosen not to participate in this excursion. Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had died. As for the other Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, they had left Skysplit Tower, leaving Feng Shen as the only one remaining.

Thus, for Polaris Tower, there would be a total of 13 individuals entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Polaris Tower Master brought everyone to a transmission array on the fourth floor. With a flash of light, everyone arrived at another space.

The Polaris Tower Master glanced over everyone and slowly said, “This is the fifth floor of Skysplit Tower. The entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss is here.”

Fifth floor...

Lin Ming gasped. He already knew that Polar Skysplit Tower had five floors, but as for what was in the fifth floor, that had always been an enigma to him.

So, it turned out that this was the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss...

# Chapter 625 – A Gathering of Elites

---

The Polaris Tower Master led everyone forwards. The fifth floor was not as high as the first four floors, it was only several hundred feet high. As the group walked forwards, it was very quiet. However, there seemed to be a suffocating sense of oppression in the air, forcing the martial artists present to summon energy to resist this pressure.

Lin Ming was very familiar with this pressure.

This pressure was the Heavenly Demon force field.

It wasn't even just the Asura force field or Prime Emperor force field, but rather a fusion of two kinds.

Sha sha sha sha...

The lonely and desolate space echoed with the footsteps of the crowd. When they came to the end of a dark corridor, Lin Ming could see that on both sides of the following path were lamps. These lamps had a number of similarities to the lamps that held the will lights in the Road of Emperor. But, these lights had long since gone out, with nothing more than a thick layer of dust covering them.

After another half hour of walking, the Polaris Tower Master finally stopped. In front of him was a large gate with two doors. This gate was 100 feet high, and the ancient doors were carved with a number of mystical and cryptic patterns. All of the patterns

revolving around the center of the gate were carvings of twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. The Heavenly Demon carving stared out with its vacant and godless eyes, its 12 wings recklessly spread out, filling the space around it with a feeling of oppression and mystery.

“We’re here. This is the entrance.”

The Polaris Tower Master gently grabbed the door handles and said, “Flying is prohibited within Skysplit Tower, and the Eternal Demon Abyss is no different. It is located 100,000 feet deep below us. If flying is impossible, then there simply isn’t any way to go down. But... there are some places that are exceptions, such as... here!”

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke he suddenly pushed the doors open. As the doors opened, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air as he saw the scene inside. Behind these doors was a vast and endless night sky, with bright stars shining everywhere. It was impossible to tell whether these dazzling stars were real or an illusory array formation.

“Go in. This is the only channel to fly into the Eternal Demon Abyss. The 12 Skysplit Towers’ channels are all connected together. Flying to the bottom of this will lead to the true entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

After the Polaris Tower Master spoke he took the lead and flew into the vast starry sky, his figure instantly disappearing. Soon, he was followed by High Lord Chi Yan and High Lord Shengong...

Lin Ming was the fifth to jump in. After entering this endless starry space, he suddenly felt a terrifyingly rich infernal energy rush at him.

As he went down, the temperature became increasingly low and the infernal energy became increasingly thick.

Lin Ming didn't use true essence to fly, but completely allowed the force of gravity to pull him down. His speed quickly rose to hundreds of feet per second, and as air whistled in his ears, the infernal energy was becoming thick to the point where it almost condensed into essence.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 100,000 deep underground. In addition, Polar Skysplit Tower was originally 60,000 to 70,000 feet above the ground. This meant that the drop down was nearly 200,000 feet, or more than 100 miles.

This was a breathtaking number. After falling down for a long time, Lin Ming felt the several High Lords in front of him begin to slow down. He followed them, using the Concept of Wind to decelerate his speed.

At this depth, the cold air seemed to pierce into the marrow. With every breath, icy crystals would immediately form. If a mortal were to be placed in this environment, they would directly freeze to death.

The further down it was, the colder it became.

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master stopped in midair and started to move in a different direction. Everyone turned to follow him.

Lin Ming casually flew on. The entire space around him was utter darkness without the slightest sound, nothing but an utterly deathly silence.

Raising his head and looking at the skies, he could see stars hanging high in the air. For there to be a vast starry sky underground was truly unbelievable, and yet it was impossible to tell whether this was real or an illusion.

The Polaris Tower master wasn't fast. In just around an hour, they finally fell onto an open space. In this open area, there was a large number of people gathered, all of them either consciously or unconsciously releasing a heartstopping aura. Without a doubt, they were all top masters of Skysplit Tower, either High Lords of Heavenly Demon Seven Stars.

The majority of those present were High Lords with a small number of Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Of those Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, all of them were top ranked challengers of their Skysplit Towers.

If this were a usual journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, there wouldn't be so many masters gathered together. But, this time just happened to coincide with an eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, so the situation had completely changed. Even the Tower

Masters of the various Skysplit Towers wouldn't miss out on this chance.

High risk also meant high returns.

“Lin Ming, in front of us are those from Heavenly Cloud Tower and Blue Silver Tower. Both of those Skysplit Towers are stronger than ours. Our Polaris Tower's total strength could only rank eighth or ninth out of the 12 Skysplit Towers. As for that Heavenly Cloud Tower, they are ranked number one. Blue Silver Tower can also be ranked in the top five.”

As Lin Ming just touched the ground, he heard High Lord Bloodfire's true essence sound transmission in his ear. After High Lord Bloodfire was controlled by the Polaris Tower Master, he was completely loyal and devoted to him. As for Lin Ming, who was faking being controlled, High Lord Bloodfire regarded him as a 'companion' with complete trust.

“I see. Are there any among them who are stronger than Brother Bloodfire?” Lin Ming casually asked. During this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, everyone was a possible enemy. It was necessary to know as much about his potential opponents as possible.

“Of course there are. Those two fellows from Heavenly Cloud Tower, Cloud Demon and Hidden Cloud, are both stronger than me. But there might even be several more than are similar to me. In addition, Heavenly Cloud Tower's Duanmu Qun is not a High Lord but his strength is actually more terrifying than most High Lords'. Duanmu Qun's background is that of a super Holy Land.



Before he first entered the Road of Emperor, his strength surpassed Feng Shen by a large margin. Now that has he reentered the Road of Emperor yet again, I fear that his strength might be no less than mine!”

Lin Ming was no stranger to Duanmu Qun’s name. With High Lord Bloodfire’s description, Lin Ming couldn’t help but size up Duanmu Qun. This fellow was slender with an otherworldly handsome appearance. Just by standing there, he seemed to give off a heavenly bright and breezy energy like the fresh spring wind. His face was like jade, his temperament, appearance, strength, everything he had was truly irreproachable.

As Lin Ming looked at him, Duanmu Qun also seemed to sense something. Duanmu turned towards Lin Ming and faintly smiled.

Lin Ming respectfully nodded in return.

In the casual exchange between Duanmu Qun and Lin Ming, many people finally noticed Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was a human. In this crowd of Giant Demons, Fey, Goliaths, and Imps, a human martial artist was very eye-catching. In addition to his age and cultivation, his status was easily known.

To be able to stay in the King’s Cage for a full 108 days. This point alone made Lin Ming well known throughout the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes.

“He’s Lin Ming?”

“Yes, that should be right.”

“He hasn’t broken through to the Revolving Core realm. How strange...”

To a pinnacle Emperor level talent, from Xiantian to Revolving Core, even without going into the Road of Emperor, it would only take one or two years to make this breakthrough. Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor for seven months, but he had only risen by half a small boundary. None of this made sense to anyone.

“Hehe, let’s test him out.” An Imp martial artist began to move towards Lin Ming as he spoke. He was Heavenly Cloud Tower’s High Lord Black Ash. As he moved, he was preparing to use his aura to suppress Lin Ming in order to force out a bit of his true ability and see the depth of his strength.

“Don’t stir up trouble!” High Lord Cloud Demon blocked Black Ash, frowning, “Black Ash, what are you doing? Once you enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, everyone will be your enemy. If you randomly offend someone before even entering, at that time you might find yourself surrounded by enemies from all sides and have them kick you when you’re down. Even if Lin Ming didn’t make a breakthrough in the Road of Emperor, he still isn’t someone that can be easily bullied by you!”

High Lord Cloud Demon occupied an impressive status within Heavenly Cloud Tower, Black Ash had no choice but to give up his

antics. But, Black Ash still disapproved of this. Heavenly Cloud Tower's overall strength was number one amongst all 12 Skysplit Towers. He always felt that Cloud Demon was far too careful.

As time passed, martial artists from several other Skysplit Towers began to arrive. They were Five Color Tower, White Stone Tower, Great Ax Tower, and in addition to Blue Silver Tower, Heavenly Cloud Tower, and Polaris Tower, this was six Skysplit Towers. These six Skysplit Towers were located closer to each other, so they had assembled at the southern tip of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The other six Skysplit Towers had gone to the northern tip of the Eternal Demon Abyss. These 12 Skysplit Towers formed a circle, and the Eternal Demon Abyss was in the center of this.

After everyone from the six Skysplit Towers completely arrived, a black-robed old man stood up and said, "Everyone, I will now announce the rules for entering the Eternal Demon Abyss."

The sudden appearance of this old man caught Lin Ming's attention. This old man's cultivation was a three-star Demon King, which was equal to a human late Revolving Core powerhouse, and perhaps even just a bit better.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there was nearly no one with a Life Destruction cultivation. This was because once one stepped into the Life Destruction realm, or a cultivation similar to that, they might fall under the mystical curse that stemmed from the depths of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The higher stage of Life Destruction one was, the higher their chances of being cursed.

“I am the supervisory deacon from Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. I am responsible this time for opening the Eternal Demon Abyss. Although mostly everyone here is familiar with the rules, I shall repeat them again.

“A thousand miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss is an absolute null life zone. Everyone who enters past here will die. In addition, from 1000 miles from the edge to 10,000 miles outwards are the surroundings of the Eternal Demon Abyss. There are lucky chances everywhere here, but also fatal dangers abound. What you find will all depend on your own lucky chances. The deeper you go, the greater your lucky chances will be. In principle, after entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, killing is forbidden. But there will always be those unscrupulous and dangerous individuals. If anyone were to encounter this situation, then killing in self-defense is also reasonable...”

As the old man spoke to here, Lin Ming was left speechless. Any defense was reasonable? This was nice to hear, but in fact, the truth was that killing within would happen without restraint from anywhere and anyone. If a martial artist died within the Eternal Demon Abyss, it would be impossible to determine just how they died.

“However... there is a point you should remember. If you kill others within the Eternal Demon Abyss, you can still obtain their infernal energy to nourish your Heavenly Demon Tattoo. According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, a middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon is the limit. If you surpass this limit, then this old man will have no choice but to use certain methods to disperse some of the infernal energy from your body. These methods will not cause any lasting damage to you, but I ask that you be mindful

of this.

As the old man spoke, Lin Ming suddenly became aware.

So that's how it was...

He had always wondered why so many High Lords had Heavenly Demon Tattoos at the middle ten-winged stage. Before this, he had thought it was strange. Normally, after a martial artist became a High Lord, they wouldn't further participate in the life and death battles of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, so just where would their infernal energy come from?

From the early ten-wings to middle ten-wings, one needed quite a bit of infernal energy. This was the same as killing two or three High Lords. If someone only killed eight-winged Heavenly Demons then the infernal energy acquired wouldn't help the tattoo grow by much.

That said, it wasn't like an eight-winged Heavenly Demon was a random amateur that could be chopped up either.

## Chapter 626 – The Door In Space

---

‘These High Lords’ middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoos were originally condensed within the Eternal Demon Abyss... but I remember that the Polaris Tower Master already has a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. How come that old man hasn’t dispersed his infernal energy yet?’

Lin Ming could faintly feel that the Polaris Tower Master’s identity wasn’t so simple.

As Lin Ming was thinking about the Polaris Tower Master, the Polaris Tower Master’s voice suddenly sounded in his mind, “This time entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, you will go into the 1200 mile periphery to seek lucky chances for me. Understood?”

‘Go into the 1200 mile area to seek lucky chances for you?’

This was a land where the chances of dying were extremely high. After entering, he would also have to risk his life and desperately battle with others, and this fellow wanted Lin Ming to struggle for him? Lin Ming sneered. He began to agree, “I understand, but... in the range of 1200 miles there are many dangers abound. I wonder whether Tower Master has a jade slip map or something similar so that I don’t enter a danger zone by mistake.”

Hearing Lin Ming ask this, the Polaris Tower Master hesitated. The 12 Skysplit Towers had many maps about the Eternal Demon Abyss, but the truth was that the vast majority of these maps had problems and omissions. After all, every time the Eternal Demon

Abyss erupted, there would be great changes concerning the locations and kind of danger zones that there were.

However, the Polaris Tower Master had a relatively accurate map. This map was created through many years and the sacrifice of countless lives who had explored the area; it was extremely valuable.

The reason that the Polaris Tower Master could obtain this map was all because his father was the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes as well as the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

There were only a few copies of this map. He hadn't intended on giving it to Lin Ming because he feared that Lin Ming would die within the Eternal Demon Abyss and the map would be revealed to others.

If those Holy Land descendants were to obtain this map then it would be much easier for them to find and obtain resources from the Eternal Demon Abyss in the future. This was certainly a scenario that the Polaris Tower Master didn't wish to see.

After a brief hesitation, the Polaris Tower Master said, "Lin Ming, I truly have one copy of such a map, but, you cannot ever reveal this map. If you meet a fatal danger within the Eternal Demon Abyss and are close to death, you must first destroy this map. Am I clear?"

"I am clear." Lin Ming expressionlessly said. This Polaris Tower Master relied on the slave seal he thought he had planted within

Lin Ming and didn't even try to dress up his words. He directly told him to destroy the map before he died.

The Polaris Tower Master touched his hand atop Lin Ming's palm and with a gentle wipe, inserting a jade slip into Lin Ming's spatial ring.

With a quick sweep with his sense, Lin Ming determined that this truly was a map of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“If you are prepared, then I shall open the array formation. Everyone is limited to six months within the Eternal Demon Abyss. If you do not emerge after six months, then you will have to stay in the Eternal Demon Abyss until the next time the array formation opens. But... since ancient times, if a martial artist did not come out before six months, they would completely vanish with no one ever knowing where they went. In this half year, everyone please keep this in mind.

As the old man finished speaking, he took out three black glass beads from his spatial ring and began to arrange them on the floor.

Lin Ming discovered that not too far from the open area he was standing in, there were small grooves in the floor that these black glass beads were inserted into, perfectly matching them. Lin Ming was very familiar with these black glass beads – they were Demon God Bones.

After the three Demon God Bones were inserted into the floor, the earth suddenly began to shake. Not too far away, the space in



front of everyone began to distort. A moment later, space itself seemed to melt away as a spatial door suddenly opened within the void. Behind this spatial gate was a grey space. This strange world was filled with a endless mist.

In the next instant, Lin Ming felt like an esoteric gate opened wide in front of him. A boundless, ancient, and pure death energy surged out from this space, extremely shocking and oppressive to the heart.

“So it’s this place... I, I’ve come here before.” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Oh? You’ve come here before?” Lin Ming was startled but immediately calmed down. The Demon Emperor had been through the Road of Emperor, so it wasn’t strange if he had gone to the Eternal Demon Abyss too. “Do you remember any dangerous zones inside?”

“I remember a little, but not too much. It was my big brother who followed master here. According to my big brother’s memories, master stayed here for 20 some years...”

“Twenty some years?” Lin Ming was stunned. “Wasn’t it said that those that don’t come out in half a year never emerge again? How could the Demon Emperor actually stay here for 20 some years?”

Demonshine chortled and then shook his doggy head, saying, “In the past, master was a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. He had

already broken through the Emperor boundary several hundred years before. After experiencing a deep and painful bottleneck, he only then returned to the Eternal Demon Abyss, exploring this land for 20 some years. Naturally, he's not someone you juniors can compare with. The so-called 1000 mile absolute death danger zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss is only applicable to you juniors."

"He broke through the Emperor boundary before returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss..." Lin Ming suddenly became aware. Normally speaking, after the change to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there were very few Emperor level powerhouses that came to the Eternal Demon Abyss. This was because only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Emperor level powerhouses could step into the Blood Slaughter Steppes without dying to the strange curse that permeated the land.

Thus, in the vast majority of situations, those martial artists that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss were extraordinary young elites. As for the Six-fingered Sin Fey, Demon Emperor, and other such Supreme Elders, they became twelve-winged Heavenly Demons in the Skysplit Towers before returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss as Emperor level powerhouses. With their strength, as long as they didn't directly enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, they could still explore along the edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss with relative ease.

After the spatial gate fully opened, the old man responsible for opening the Eternal Demon Abyss said, "Now we shall begin dividing the teams. Every Skysplit Tower will send one or two people to form a 10 man squad. A supervisory deacon from the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple will lead that group 1500 miles

from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Afterwards, the supervisory deacon will return on the route he came from. At that point, whether you wish to return or continue forwards will all be up to you. First, it will be my squad. Who will go with me?”

As the old man spoke, Lin Ming was startled for a moment. Using a squad as a forward unit?

If every Skysplit Tower sent out one or two people, then they would be able to mutually supervise each other. Then, at least at the very beginning, the killings wouldn't start. And with a supervisory deacon at the start, that also stopped some martial artists from trying to secretly become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

The six Skysplit Towers each sent out one or two people, quickly forming a squad of 10. With a word from the old man, everyone set off.

They walked through the illusory spatial gate, their forms vanishing into the endless gray fog.

“Lin Ming, you and Bloodfire will go with that Imp supervisory deacon. He is the most experienced here and can guarantee your safety the most to the 1500 mile range. Afterwards, you will begin to move alone.” The Polaris Tower Master's true essence sound transmission sounded in Lin Ming's ear.

“Understood.” Lin Ming responded, glancing at the short old Imp among the supervisory deacons. The Imp looked old to begin with.

Lin Ming didn't know how old this fellow was, but he could see that the dark black skin on his face was all scrunched up together; he looked like an old mortal man who had experienced great hardships and suffering in his life.

Quickly, the old Imp walked out in front of everyone and said, "I am Sada, Who would like to go with me?"

From Polaris Tower, Lin Ming and High Lord Bloodfire both stepped out. Obviously, High Lord Bloodfire had also received the Polaris Tower Master's orders.

"There are still seven spots. Who would like to come from the other Skysplit Towers?"

"Hehe, count me in." From the Heavenly Cloud Tower, High Lord Black Ash stepped forwards, grinning as he looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remembered this fellow. When he arrived, this fellow was eagerly looking at him, not even masking the killing intent in his eyes. Against this sort of self-important loser, Lin Ming was disinclined to even look at him.

"There are still six spots." Sada called out again.

"Me." With the crisp voice of a woman, Lan Xin from the Blue Silver Holy Land stepped out.

As Lan Xin stepped out, several young Fey men from White Stone Tower and Five Color Tower were instantly excited. They scrambled forwards to join the team, and Sada's squad was instantly full. In fact, there was even one more.

Lin Ming was left speechless. At this time, there were still some people that had the state of mind to chase after girls? This was just too ridiculous!

But as he thought more carefully about it, Lan Xin originated from a Holy Land, and an upper ranked Holy Land at that. Her background even surpassed that of Feng Shen. To other Fey martial artists, if they could ever obtain Lan Xin's heart and marry her, then who cared about love? Resources were much more important!

Moreover, all these martial artists that pursued Lan Xin were originally Emperor level talents. Besides their relatively normal backgrounds, they were matched with Lan Xin in other aspects; they all held out on some hope. Although they were far from comparable with Duanmu Qun, Duanmu Qun was an even more outstanding character than Lan Xin, thus it was impossible for him to marry and join his wife's sect, the Blue Silver Holy Lands. Only Lan Xin could marry and join him, but, this was the same as the Blue Silver Holy Lands letting a future Emperor Level Powerhouse slip out of their grasp. Naturally, the Blue Silver Holy Lands would not allow this to happen.

On the other hand, if Lan Xin chose one of her pursuers, then it was likely that the Blue Silver Holy Land would gain another Emperor level powerhouse in the future.

Between the two choices, the better one was clear at a glance.

The young outstanding Fey of Skysplit Tower had all calculated this point, thus they all tried to woo Lan Xin so that they would have to struggle for a few hundred years less.

Lin Ming quickly realized the reason behind all this. In fact, this scene could be described as quite reasonable.

“There’s one too many!” Sada said, frowning.

“Hey, this brother, could you help me out here and...” The slowest Fey martial artist to scramble out gave Lin Ming a friendly smile, hoping that Lin Ming could drop out and give him his spot.

Lin Ming thought this was funny. He had never met this fellow, so on what basis would he give up his spot to him?

“You talk too much!” Sada grew a bit angry. He pointed at the Fey youth and said, “According to order, you will step out!”

The words were like a cold bucket of water directly poured over the flames of the Fey youth’s hope, extinguishing them. The Fey youth felt wronged, but he didn’t speak out.

Lin Ming could see that four or five of these Fey youth were Heavenly Demon Seven Stars and not High Lords. Some of them

might even have pledged themselves to the High Lords and become their dogs. After all, their talent was decent and they were young; all of them were generally below 30 years of age.

‘In terms of strength and experience, these people are far inferior to the High Lords. If I’m in the same squad as these fellows, it’s actually much better than being in a squad with High Lords...’ Lin Ming thought as he traced his chin. Actually, it seemed that he needed to thank Lan Xin.

“Let’s go!”

Sada brought everyone and stepped into the spatial gate. Lin Ming followed, and his form quickly disappeared into the hazy dark fog.

## Chapter 627 – Evil Being

---

10,000 miles around the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the infernal energy was so thick that it was nearly concentrated into droplets. In this, Lin Ming could feel the energy within his body being pulled at by this thick infernal energy, as if it were faintly gushing out of him.

‘What an amazingly rich infernal energy. This fog is infernal energy that has condensed and formed into essence. If I could practice demonic realm cultivation methods here...’ Lin Ming shook his head as he thought of this. When a martial artist cultivated they would often have to enter into meditative states. In this state, a martial artist’s defensive ability would be very low. Doing that within the Eternal Demon Abyss that was filled with all sorts of dangers was simply asking to die.

“Hehe, boy, what do you think? The atmosphere here is great!” An annoying voice suddenly called out to Lin Ming. Each syllable was like a needle that jabbed into the ear, causing anyone listening to feel very uncomfortable.

Lin Ming turned around to see that the one speaking was High Lord Black Ash.

He frowned, not answering.

High Lord Black Ash didn’t mind. He continued to say, “Boy, I guess that when we’re 1,500 miles from the edge, you will continue to go forwards. At that time, how about we go together? We can



take care of each other, haha!”

“Sorry, but I’m not interested. Also... it would do you good to stop trying to probe me by attaching your perception to your words.” Lin Ming’s voice was cold.

High Lord Black Ash stiffened. This boy was too sensitive! His method of probing others was extremely secretive; the normal person would only hear a grating voice upon their ears, but Lin Ming had actually instantly seen through his tricks.

Sada moved forwards unhurriedly. He closed his eyes and felt the wind, saying, “From here on out, we are 8,500 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss’s 1,500 mile radius zone. Our travel time by foot will be around 20 days to a month. During this month, you must follow my orders. If we encounter some evil being, you absolutely cannot take the initiative to do anything, you absolutely cannot! Otherwise, this may possibly lead to serious consequences!”

“Evil being? What evil being, hm?” A Fey youth asked, interested. As someone that qualified to come to the Eternal Demon Abyss, there was naturally no need to mention his strength and talent; he had full and complete confidence in himself. He was wondering whether or not he should be the one to step forwards and save the day if they encountered some danger. Even though he might not be able to be the hero that saved the maiden, he could at least leave a good impression on Lan Xin. To women, even if they were powerhouses, deep down they always wished to be protected.

This time, during this journey to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the

most important target for him was to capture Lan Xin's attentions and heart. Compared to marrying Lan Xin and joining her Blue Silver Holy Land, any lucky chance he found here would simply be garbage.

Sada slowly explained, "Around the Eternal Demon Abyss there are many strange and evil beings that breed within the thick infernal energy. These existences are bizarre and enigmatic. No one knows where they originate from, and in normal times, naturally we need not fear them. But, there are some evil beings that were projected out during the Eternal Demon Abyss's eruption. If we run into this sort of thing, we must run far, far away! Fighting them is simply suicide!"

"Evil beings that were shot out by the Eternal Demon Abyss?" Lin Ming's heart chilled. The Eternal Demon Abyss was without a doubt immeasurably terrifying. A massive claw had come out from that strange hole and killed 12 Emperor level powerhouses instantly. From that sort of place, even if it were just a dog or cat, that simply wasn't something anyone here could deal with.

Although the several Fey youths were proud and arrogant, they weren't stupid. As they heard Sada mention the evil beings of the Eternal Demon Abyss, they kept silence. They were well aware of just useful their skills were here.

"Good. If there aren't any more questions then we'll set off. Also, there's one more point. Try to avoid fighting as much as possible, but if you're really forced into a situation, then suppress your strength as far as possible. Only use 30% of your power to fight, do not use 40%, and do not create any surging waves of true essence

or demon essence or start stirring up the massive amount of infernal energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Understood?" Sada's expression and tone were harsh. Seeing the Fey youth from before look a bit unhappy, he said, "This isn't playtime for children. Hey, you, can you hear me?"

"I heard you." The Fey youth revealed an impatient and impetuous expression, perfunctorily nodding, "I am not a child."

Sada glared at the Fey youth and said, "Let's go!"

As one, the group began their journey. The next 8500 miles around were relatively safe. There basically wasn't any situation where a martial artist would kill others. With someone guiding them, the dangers they encountered were even fewer. Of course, the lucky chances they found in this way were also limited, and with so many people together, it wouldn't be much after being divided so many times, and Skysplit Tower also took a great portion of that.

As time passed, the group continued marching forwards. The surrounding environment could be described as gloomy, filled with a vast, endlessly hazy fog. Fortunately, they could use the stars in the sky as their guide so they didn't lose direction.

The ground was covered with bumpy red rocks. Occasionally, one could see broken stone tablets scattered about. The writing and seals on these stone tablets had long since blurred after so many tens or hundreds of thousands of years.

These boring days of travel happened without complaint for one or two days, but after a dozen days or so, many people began to feel impatient.

During these days, they hadn't even seen a hair of these so-called 'evil beings', much less a lucky chance.

Sometimes, it was far too boring. Some of them were even looking forwards to one of these 'evil beings' appearing so that it could alleviate their boredom.

"I say that we can go fast. Here, there's nothing else but fog and rocks. We only walk several hundred miles per day, the heavens only know how long it will take us to cross 8500 miles. If I could fly, it would only take several hours! What sort of evil are you even thinking about? We've walked for so long and haven't even seen anything at all!"

To cross hundreds of miles in a day was something that even well-trained mortal soldiers were unable to accomplish. But in front of these outstanding heroic youths, this sort of speed was a pace as slow as a snail's crawl.

Sada suddenly stopped, his head spinning around towards the Fey youth like a tiger, his ice cold eyes causing the Fey youth to pause.

"The dangers of Eternal Demon Abyss are not as simple as you think they are. You should already be glad that you can arrive there safely without danger, so shut your damn trap. Once we

arrive within 1500 miles of the Eternal Demon Abyss, my role is over. You can do whatever you like then. Even if you jump into the Eternal Demon Abyss itself, it is something I don't care about."

The Fey youth also began to grow angry, "How interesting! Why do we need you to guide us? Why do you so-called supervisory deacons need to go with us? Isn't it to monitor us? Are you afraid that we'll find some lucky chance, or are you afraid that we'll kill each other and become twelve-winged Heavenly Demons?"

The Fey youth's tone was aggressive, "With you leading the way, who knows whether or not you're quietly pocketing everything along the way! If we really run into danger, you might be the first to run while leaving us behind! We are looking for lucky chances here, not running about as your bodyguards, acting as cannon fodder when you need it!"

Sada's expression sunk to the floor, "If you aren't willing to go with me then f\*ck off!"

"Humph! Who is afraid of you? Let's go! Come on everyone!"

The Fey youth shouted out to several martial artists. However, no one responded to him. Following this Sada was truly the same as giving up on lucky chances, but the goal of most people here was to reach the 1500 mile radius zone. In this outer 8500 mile radius, there basically weren't any lucky chances, so giving up on them was fine too.

Lin Ming was indifferent to all this. As they travelled these past

days, he had always been practicing his breathing.

Although he hadn't been able to calm his heart and mind because of the brisk pace they were making, the infernal energy here was surpassingly rich; it was the ideal condition for practicing the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. This total practice speed wasn't much slower than practicing in closed-door meditation.

In order to guarantee that he would have the most solid foundation, Lin Ming estimated that he would have to practice for half a year to break through to Revolving Core. If he meditated on those stone tablets in the Road of Emperor, it might have taken just a few months. But, unfortunately, the path Lin Ming had chosen was to continue down the road of will lights, thus he had to continue down that path, giving up on the Emperor stone tablets.

Seeing no one respond to his shouts, the Fey youth's complexion immediately became ugly. He didn't care much about face, and was really ready to walk away at any time. In truth, he didn't fear venturing off by himself. But, once he did, he wouldn't have any further chances with Lan Xin.

The Fey youth had hopped on the tiger and couldn't back down now. As he glanced at Lan Xin, he saw that she was controlling her breathing, simply not even caring about him at all.

The mindsets of these outstanding young talents were mostly that of arrogance and easy to anger. With his stubbornness even in this awkward situation, the youth was about to spit out several vicious words before leaving, when at this time, a change occurred.

Not too far away, there was a wailing cry. This sound was absolutely not that of a human. It was like some vicious beast was screeching out while having glass shards crammed in its throat, it was grating to the extreme.

“What is that!?”

Everyone immediately tensed up, taking out their weapons.

Sada extracted a crescent sickle, his entire body on full alert. He quickly said in a low voice, “Without my order, do not act rashly.”

“Ahhh!!”

With another miserable scream, a gray shadow jumped up from not too far away, rushing towards the group like an arrow!

The Fey youth who had been blabbering on would be the one to bear the brunt of this attack!

“Don’t be nervous! This is only...!”

Sada’s hadn’t even finished his words when that angry Fey youth gave a sudden shout and stabbed out with his sword!

“Go die!”

A deep blue sword light pierced through the vast skies. The gray shadow was directly penetrated with this sword light. Space trembled, strong winds howled. The rich infernal energy all around them was cut in half, swept away!

This sword was a strike for the Fey youth to vent his anger. This Fey youth had been able to come to the Eternal Demon Abyss and was also a top ranking character amongst the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. He had reached Large Success in his comprehension of the Concept of Wind, and had even touched upon the Concept of Space.

A strike with all his power behind it could be imagined.

Sada's eyes instantly turned red, "Do you want to kill us? I told you not to use your full strength and create true essence waves and also not to stir the infernal energy here! You..."

"F\*ck off!" The Fey youth violently interrupted Sada. "I do not serve you, so why the hell would I care about what you want! Also, you fellows as well! You've been bullied by the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple to the point that you're willing to submit yourself to all these garbage conditions! I've never been so angered by such a useless bunch before!"

Although the Fey youth wanted to marry Lan Xin and enter her Blue Silver Holy Land, doing so was easier said than done. That being the case, he might as well leave in a cool and awesome manner, making it so that his thoughts were smooth.



Even with all his grievances expressed, even the group of people that wouldn't follow him weren't saying anything. He felt nothing but incomparably free and comfortable. But at this time, everyone's expressions around him began to change.

Lan Xin pointed at the Fey youth's legs, her complexion paling as she said, "You... your leg..."

# Chapter 628 – Bloody Lands

---

“My leg? What’s wrong with my leg?” The Fey youth suddenly asked, jerking his head down. As he saw what had happened, a ringing panic settled in his mind.

At some point, without him knowing, on both his legs his flesh had started to rot into pus and blood, leaving behind only bloody foot bones to support him on the ground.

The pus and blood silently passed down. When it was absorbed by the dark grey ground, the ground became an incomparably crimson red!

“AhhhhhhhHH!”

The Fey youth let out a frightened cry, his body falling backwards and directly onto the ground. But, as soon as his hands touched the ground, even those parts started to rot. His flesh turned gooey, soon changing into liquid pus and blood!

His hand and wrist bones were quickly revealed, dripping with thick vicious blood.

“No... no...!”

The Fey youth was completely horrified. He waved his hands and feet in front of him as if there were something terrible there. However, his flesh was turning completely rotten. With every inch

he crawled back, he left massive amounts of broken meat hanging on the rocks under him. His thighs, butt, everything began to turn into thick bloody goo, a hideous stench emitting from it.

“Save me! Save me!” The Fey youth finally remembered Sada. He put out a pleading hand towards Sada, but Sada actually took two steps back. His face was full of alarm as he shouted, “No one approach him!”

In truth, Sada didn't need to give out this warning. Nobody dared to approach. In fact, everyone was spreading out from the Fey youth.

Kacha!

The Fey youth's legs cracked open, the bones crumbling apart like slag. Every other bone became similarly brittle; with just a slight bump, they would break apart. It was like thousands of years of bodily decay had been compressed into several breaths of time.

The Fey youth's eyes began to sink back their sockets, his hair growing long and pure white. In just two breaths of time, his hair had withered into dry hay, his face becoming as wretched as the bark of an old tree. He stretched out his left arm in one final attempt, as if he were trying to grasp something. As a low and despairing moan emanated from his throat, in the end, everything he did was useless.

Then, as his arm shattered to pieces, the Fey youth's entire body turned into a gooey puddle of blood in front of everyone's horrified

eyes, with even his organs turning into rotten bloody syrup. Then, the bloody goo was absorbed into the dark gray ground, the bones left turning into ash.

Another moment later, all that was left of the Fey youth was a small pile of red ashes. Besides that, it was as if he had never existed...

Those present were completely shocked. Even Lin Ming, who had an incomparably firm will and mindset, felt a chill spread out from his back, directly shooting towards the heavens.

These martial artists had all walked the killing path. Never mind seeing the dying, but everyone here had killed at least hundreds of people, if not more. But, seeing someone die in this manner before their eyes was truly appalling!

Even Sada, a veteran of the Eternal Demon Abyss, gulped a mouthful of saliva, beads of sweat dripping down his forehead. In the incomparably strange and bizarre Eternal Demon Abyss, there were a plethora of various ways to die. But, this was the first time that he had seen a way like this!

Nobody spoke. Everyone maintained full vigilance, keeping a careful eye on their surroundings.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring, his breath caught in his throat. He had originally thought that the danger of the Eternal Demon Abyss came from the evil beings that lived here, and fighting with these evil beings would cause martial artists to perish. But he never

thought that death could arrive in this manner. He had helplessly watched as a martial artist rapidly decayed in front of him without even his bones left, but he still hadn't had any idea where this evil being was or what it had done!

The scariest thing in this world was the unknown. Martial artists did not fear ghosts or gods. The so-called ghosts were merely those that practiced ghostly cultivation methods, and those so-called gods were nothing more than exceedingly powerful martial artists. But right now, everyone felt as if they had returned to being a mortal, a mortal that was wading through the dark, frightened by the supernatural creatures of the night.

They had only gone 5,000 miles or so towards the Eternal Demon Abyss, so how could something so bizarre happen here?

“Sir Sada, what is this?” High Lord Bloodfire asked with a true essence sound transmission. Of everyone here, he was the only one who had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss before. Ten years ago, he had been one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars with a strength similar to Yan Chi. At that time, the Eternal Demon Abyss hadn't erupted, and he hadn't gone as deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss as others. Still, he had never seen such a scene like this.

“I'm ashamed to say it, but this is the first time that I've encountered something like this. That gray shadow just now, from my experience, should have only been a demonic ash fly that was condensed from infernal energy, with a cultivation of only a few hundred years, just a minor creature. But I never imagined something like this would happen. I think that the true essence storm just now must have aroused some ancient evil being from its

deep slumber...”

Sada didn't dare to speak out loud, instead using a true essence sound transmission to inform everyone.

A deeply sleeping evil being? Could this be an evil being that was shot out by the Eternal Demon Abyss' eruption?

Thinking of this, everyone felt their backs go cold. No matter how confident they were, no one was confident enough to believe they could contend with an evil being that originated from deep within the Eternal Demon abyss. Especially this sort of invisible evil being. The death was inexplicable, shocking, alarming – there was no one who could even summon the courage to resist it!

“Demonshine, what's going on here?”

Lin Ming could only ask Demonshine. Demonshine had followed the Demon Emperor to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss and stayed there for 20 some years. The Demon Emperor had even gone within the 1000 mile death zone radius around the Eternal Demon Abyss. He could only hope that Demonshine might have some inkling as to just what was happening.

Demonshine tried hard to recall the sealed memories within him. After a quarter hour of silence, he said, “It was my big brother who accompanied master to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. I haven't inherited too many of my big brother's memories, so for this kind of situation, I can only make an approximate guess. I think that there was possibly some ancient powerhouse buried here who

practiced blood demon cultivation techniques, or, there might possibly be some sort of extremely dangerous vicious beast that was sealed below. Regardless of what it is, when they were still alive, I fear that they were an existence that not even the Emperor level powerhouses of this Holy Demon Continent could deal with... but, after they died and had been buried for tens or hundreds of thousands of years they turned into a Demon God Bone, and not a normal one at that!”

Lin Ming had already heard Da Gu say that there were different ranks of Demon God Bones. The Demon God Bones that the High Lords of Skysplit Tower had were only the most ordinary and inferior kind.

Demonshine continued speaking, “If Demon God Bones are divided into human, earth, and heaven steps, then that Demon God Bone you have now is only a human-step one. Within Skysplit Tower, a human-step Demon God Bone is already extremely rare; I think that even the Polaris Tower Master doesn’t have an earth-step Demon God Bone. As for the even higher ranking heaven-step Demon God Bone, I estimate that not even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes has seen one. This sort of object probably has an inborn intelligence. Even if a martial artist has a lucky chance, unless they have a great destiny befall their bodies, it is impossible to obtain it. I have no idea just what sort of Demon God Bone was bred within this ancient powerhouse’s tomb underneath us, but you had best forget about it. This is a dangerous and ominous place. The faster we leave, the better!”

Lin Ming didn’t need Demonshine’s warning to know that he shouldn’t bite off more than he could chew and try to dig out the buried bones of this ancient Supreme Elder or extreme vicious

beast. Otherwise, he really would think that he had already lived too long.

Everyone stood motionless for a full hour, on absolute guard. The fog gradually enveloped them and the light dimmed, but... nothing happened.

Was it over?

Everyone's bodies were wet with sweat. They had a faint gladdening feeling that they were survivors of a catastrophe. But before leaving this unhallowed grounds, no one dared to relax even a bit.

“Let's retreat first... everyone, do not make any noise!”

No one needed Sada to tell them not to speak, everyone was even trying to suppress their breathing as much as possible.

“I feel that... it's becoming more and more dark...” The one who spoke was High Lord Black Ash, using a true essence sound transmission to speak. As he spoke, everyone discovered that the thick fog around them was becoming increasingly concentrated, dense to the point that one could take out a sword and cut through it. The darkness was also becoming increasingly suffocating. By all reasoning, the Eternal Demon Abyss was underground and there was no day or night here. The only light they had was from the vibrant and shining stars from up above, so there shouldn't be a time as dark as this...



Sada sensed something. Looking up, he discovered that the starry skies had already disappeared into the vast, endless fog.

“Shit, without the stars to set our direction, we will become lost if we walk.”

“Should we fly up to get a better sense of direction?”

“Have you forgotten that flying is banned within the Eternal Demon Abyss? Even if flying wasn’t suppressed, I wouldn’t dare to fly. Flying up is only looking for death!”

“Then what do we do? Where should we go?”

Everyone was feeling weak at heart. Now that they were covered in this fog, they couldn’t walk away, nor could they stay.

But at this time, the air filled with a faint fragrance. Then, a dreamlike singing began to waft out...

The singing of a woman!

To suddenly hear the singing of a woman in this sort of place... everyone’s hairs began to stand on end.

This song seemed to come from the distant horizon, bringing with it an inescapable bitterness and utter anguish. As one listened to it, it felt as if their souls were trapped within, a strong sense of

lingering and grief remaining in their hearts, telling them not to leave, not to go.

“Lonely...

“Lonely...

“Come down and stay with me...”

.....

“Do not listen to that singing! Seal up your ears with demon essence!” Sada’s expression suddenly changed, no longer having time to send out more true essence sound transmissions. With a shout, demon essence erupted from his body, forming an enchantment of energy around him, isolating himself from all sound.

The sudden eruption of energy shoved away some of the thick fog. Then, Lin Ming saw an appallingly creepy scene. A young Fey youth was standing there, his shoulders dangling down and empty green eyes glazed over, as if he had fallen under a spell. He started to use his hands to claw his body, and quickly, his body was covered with blood from self-inflicted wounds.

The more he clawed at himself the more brutal and violent he became. The Fey thrust his hands into his body, digging out his blood vessels, organs, completely pulling out everything. He even dug out his own eyes, his entire body flowing with blood.

Lin Ming instantly determined that this youth's spiritual sea had fallen into the enemy's hands; he had become a useless zombie that was being manipulated.

“Lin Ming, front left, break out there!” Demonshine's voice hurriedly sounded out, “I know what we've met. The front left, as long as you have enough strength you can break out of this cage, otherwise you too will suffer the same fate if you stay!”

Hearing Demonshine's sudden voice, Lin Ming no longer hesitated. He grabbed the Purple Comet Spear and true essence erupted from his body to the limit.

The Heretical God Force opened completely and the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was also pushed to the extreme.

“Penetrating Rainbow!”

Spear and man became one. Lin Ming's body was like a meteor as he shot through space and slammed into the front left fog. With a cracking sound, as if something were breaking and tearing apart, the thick black fog there was completely ripped asunder. In an instant, Lin Ming had crossed 10,000 feet and then continued to run straight forwards.

“Run away together!” Sada saw Lin Ming move and shouted out.

## Chapter 629 – Transformed Demon Bone

---

His whole body bursting with true essence, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear as thunder flashed on its point. Running at full speed, he was like a war god, unstoppable, overwhelming!

“Now, the right side, 300 feet, strike with everything you have, break through!”

Demonshine’s voice resounded in Lin Ming’s mind once more. Without any hesitation, Lin Ming pooled true essence into the Purple Comet Spear and used Penetrating Rainbow once more!

With another cracking sound, it was like some invisible barrier shattered underneath Lin Ming’s spear. In the next instant, he had already run outside of the thick black fog. Everything suddenly slowed down, returning to normal.

The fog was a much lighter gray, and he could even see the stars faintly up above.

He made it out!

Lin Ming let out a long breath, not relaxing his guard. In a single breath he rushed more than 10 miles away before stopped.

“What was that just now?” Lin Ming asked Demonshine.

Demonshine hesitated, not too sure, and said, “It should be... a Demon Blood Bone.”

“What is that?”

As Lin Ming asked this, several other people made it out of the hole that Lin Ming had crushed through the dense barrier of fog. After the sudden events just now, they had dropped from 10 to eight people. Every one of them had frightened expressions, their faces wan.

Too horrifying!

These martial artists that walked the killing path were not afraid of fatal danger zones, otherwise they never would have come to Skysplit Tower to begin with.

But that strange feeling just now, that pitiful way of dying, left a lingering feeling within them that made their scalps tingle with fear.

“This little brother is called Lin Ming, right...” The squad leader Sada looked at Lin Ming with some surprise. He hadn’t seen that black fog array formation before and had no idea how to break through it. It was possible that all of them could have been wiped out within. But suddenly Lin Ming had rushed forwards and even made his way out.

“Yes.” Lin Ming nodded.

“Little Brother Lin, did you see through that danger zone just now and discover how to break through?” Sada noticed that when Lin Ming was rushing out he had actually changed directions once. Was this done unconsciously, or did he notice something?

After Sada asked this question, Lan Xin also looked at Lin Ming curiously. As for the others, they had a bit of doubt and confusion on their faces.

Lin Ming firmly shook his head and said, “I only thought that it was better to die fighting than to wait for death. I just randomly rushed in a direction, but I didn’t think I would actually be able to rush out like that.

As Lin Ming spoke, Sada revealed an understanding expression. The truth was that he didn’t believe Lin Ming had the ability to see through that black fog to begin with. After all, this was the first time that Lin Ming had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As for the several other Fey youths, they felt depressed after hearing this. If they had known this earlier then they would have rushed out randomly too. How come they hadn’t thought of this!

Rush out in a single go and lead everyone out. A hero rescuing a maiden, perhaps they might have been able to capture Lan Xin’s heart. But, this great limelight and glory had actually been snatched away by a human boy.

A Fey martial artist sourly mumbled, “In this Eternal Demon

Abyss, randomly rushing or randomly using moves can easily take a life. The reason that we fell into that dangerous spot just now was all because some other fellow decided to randomly attack...”

Lin Ming naturally heard the envy in this other youth’s voice. Towards this sort of unreasonable and nonsensical jealousy, Lin Ming didn’t even want to bother acknowledging it. He and Lan Xin weren’t even of the same race.

Sada coughed, interrupting the Fey youth’s words and said, “No matter what, this time our luck is all thanks to Little Brother Lin. But later, remember not to be so impulsive. Before anyone acts, make sure you suppress your strength as much as possible and don’t make any great movements, lest we disturb any evil being that is sleeping deep underground.

“Alright. We’ll take a short break and then set out again.” Sada looked at the stars, determining his position once again. Although they had deviated from their original route, it wasn’t by too much.

Lin Ming didn’t bother paying attention to the others. He sunk his consciousness into his spiritual sea and continued to ask Demonshine, “Demonshine, what is a Blood Demon Bone?”

Demonshine answered, “A Demon God Bone is the energy left behind by a Supreme Elder after they die. After being sealed underground for tens or hundreds of thousands of years, this energy then condenses into a crystal form, usually in the shape of a glass bead. Normally, a Demon God Bone is only pure energy, the will has already dispersed. But, there are sometimes exceptions. For instance, there might be an ancient Supreme Elder, and

because their will is too strong or they practiced some strange cultivation method, their will can pass through all these years without dispersing, only slowly weakening instead. Finally, this will will fuse together into the Demon God Bone, forming a special Demon God Bone called a Blood Demon Bone. This sort of Demon God Bone has its own consciousness, and will take the initiative to absorb the blood essence of martial artists to revitalize its damaged soul. If it obtains enough blood essence, it can even cultivate to become a demon!”

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath of air. This was truly a great world, all sorts of strange things were possible. For a Demon God Bone to fuse with an Emperor Will, be born with a consciousness, and then later even cultivate to become a demon. This sort of thinking was unimaginable.

However... to use blood essence to revitalize a damaged soul...

Lin Ming suddenly paused. The Magic Cube was also the same!

Even Demonshine had originally wanted to absorb the blood essence of the Ancient Giant Demons. Unfortunately, he had lost it to the Magic Cube.

This increasingly confirmed Lin Ming’s guess that within the Magic Cube, there was some incomparably powerful injured soul that was waiting for blood essence to repair itself.

“Demonshine, is this Blood Demon Bone a so-called heaven-step Demon God Bone?”



“I’m not too sure. It shouldn’t be heaven-step, but rather a high-grade earth-step. If you can obtain it, not only will it help you to break through to Revolving Core sooner, but you can even use it to help raise your battle spirit. A Blood Demon Bone is absolutely a great treasure to temper a battle spirit!” Demonshine said, his voice full of temptation.

“It doesn’t matter how good it is, it’s impossible for me to obtain it. I almost lost my life just now...” Lin Ming shook his head, a bit regretful. He knew just how far he could push himself.

“Hehe, well, logically speaking, this Blood Demon Bone is not what someone with your cultivation can mess with. But... you have a battle spirit, and that is the greatest weapon you can rely on!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred.

“The greatest difference between a Blood Demon Bone and an ordinary Demon God Bone is that that Blood Demon Bone contains an Emperor Will. After gaining its own consciousness, it will go out to hunt and kill martial artists of its own initiative, absorbing their blood essence. In a way, it is similar to a spider that is waiting for martial artists to rush into its web! But, the way that a Blood Demon Bone attacks is through a will attack. The two Fey idiots just now were defeated in the world of will by that Blood Demon Bone, that’s why they weren’t able to summon any resistance at all in the real world.

“But you are different. You have a battle spirit. You are not like

them at all!”

Lin Ming pondered this for a moment. In the Road of Emperor, he still vividly remembered the massive gap that existed between him and an Emperor battle spirit.

He couldn't help but ask, “My battle spirit is still only in its elementary form. But that ancient powerhouse that left behind the Blood Demon Bone probably reached Large Success of his battle spirit. I fear that I am far from being its match.”

Demonshine shook his doggy head and revealed a smirking satisfied expression that he knew far more than Lin Ming, “The ancient powerhouse certainly reached Large Success in forming its battle spirit, otherwise it would have been impossible for it to leave behind a Blood Demon Bone. But, that ancient Supreme Elder died far too long ago. It must have been at least tens if not hundreds of thousands of years. Through the span of time, even that powerful will would slowly weaken. This Blood Demon Bone contains that will, but that will already has no relation to the ancient great Emperor that died. It is only a blood demon, dependent on swallowing others' blood essence in order to strengthen its consciousness and cultivate to become a true demon. Its true strength isn't any greater than yours, otherwise do you think you would have really been able to break out just now?”

Demonshine's words caused Lin Ming's heart to move even more. If he could really obtain this Blood Demon Bone for himself then the advantages were obvious. After breaking through to Revolving Core, he would then have the strength to return to the South Horizon Region!

The South Horizon Region was the place that Lin Ming always worried about. He wished that he could return immediately.

“How can I find it?” Lin Ming asked.

“Hehehe, just follow this Saint’s instructions and you’ll be fine, but... this Saint has a condition, and that is... after obtaining the Blood Demon Bone, I get half!”

“Alright!” Lin Ming thought for the briefest of moments before agreeing.

The Blood Demon Bone was originally a treasure that was closely related to the will – it could even temper a battle spirit. Presumably, it would be very helpful to Demonshine in repairing his damaged soul.

Without Demonshine, Lin Ming simply wouldn’t have dared to capture this Blood Demon Bone, much less that he and Demonshine also shared a mutually beneficial relationship, with each helping the other obtain what they needed. He had also been helped by Demonshine many other times, so giving half of this Blood Demon Bone to him was reasonable.

“Alright, I will now tell you the main points for capturing the Blood Demon Bone...”

The method for catching the Blood Demon Bone was much

simpler than what Lin Ming thought it would be like. After approximately understanding the process, he stood up and then began walking back to the area of the dense block fog.

“Lin Ming, where are you going?” Seeing Lin Ming walking back to that danger zone, Sada felt a creep crawl over his scalp. Lin Ming actually wanted to return there?

Lin Ming shook his head and casually lied, “When I struck out just then, the power was too great and I ran too fast, dropping a spatial ring there. There are some important things inside, so I have to go back to look for it.

Dropped a spatial ring?

Wasn't that just too careless right now!

Normally, a martial artist would always leave a touch of perception on their spatial ring so they would know as soon as it fell. But in a panicked, frantic situation such as what just happened now, it was possible to drop it in a moment of inattentiveness.

“However precious those things are in your spatial ring, they are not as precious as your life!” A clear voice called out. The one speaking was Lan Xing. In her opinion, if Lin Ming went back then he might not be as lucky as he was escaping. It was possible he could die.

High Lord Black Ash stared at Lin Ming as if he were an

absolutely klutzy idiot. Several other Fey youths were also looking at Lin Ming with gloating expressions. Most of them thought that if Lin Ming went back now, his chances of living through that danger again would be exceedingly slim.

“Brother Lin, what is in your spatial ring? If it’s resources, then Sir Chief High Lord can recompense you.” High Lord Bloodfire said, even as he subsequently used a true essence sound transmission, “Our main mission this time is to enter the 1200 mile region to seek lucky chances for Sir Chief High Lord. This is our most important objective. If it’s just some personal wealth, then it’s better to forget it.”

Hearing High Lord Bloodfire’s true essence sound transmission, Lin Ming truly felt sad for him. This Bloodfire so desperately wanted to go adventuring into danger zones just so he could seek lucky chances for others.

“Brother Bloodfire, that ring is truly useful to me. There are some weapons, pills, and array flags that greatly relate to my combat strength.” Lin Ming lied again.

“Alright. Then you go. Come back as soon as you can.” High Lord Bloodfire had no choice but to give up.

“Lin Ming, we will only wait one hour for you. If you can’t return before then, then we will set off regardless.” Seeing that Lin Ming was so adamant on going back, this was all Sada could say.

Lin Ming nodded. “Okay.”

# Chapter 630 – Capturing the Demon Bone

---

With every step he took, the fog around Lin Ming became increasingly thick. At first, it was only like a thin layer of gauze, but slowly, it was concentrated to the point of almost turning into essence.

A suppressive atmosphere spread out along with a vivid infernal energy.

Lin Ming restrained his aura as much as possible, while keeping his mind on high alert within his spiritual sea as he waited for the Demon Bone's surprise attack.

In the end, the transformed Demon Bone was only a high ranking Demon God Bone that had a wisp of Emperor Will within it. The only attack method it could use was also only a will attack.

“Lin Ming, first pretend that you're not its enemy while I find the location of its main body. We will have to dig it out in a single go. We will only have one chance. If we fail, this demon spirit will be prepared and it will be impossible to fool it again.”

Lin Ming nodded. According to Demonshine, this transformed Demon Bone was usually a few thousand feet deep underground; it would only come close to the surface when it was hunting. This was also the only chance to capture it, otherwise, in this Eternal Demon Abyss where one's divine sense was suppressed and with this transformed Demon Bone that was so good at hiding, it would simply be impossible to find it again.

After walking a dozen or so miles, Lin Ming's speed was sometimes fast and sometimes slow. Finally, he heard that sweet melodic singing again.

“Lonely... I'm so lonely... come down and stay with me...”

It was like the song of an ancient woman as she waited for her husband's return. Lin Ming's steps paused, his eyes flashing for a brief moment in the dim light.

It came!

Lin Ming's mind went cold. Hearing the song this time, he was much calmer than he was last time. It was very easy to distinguish the soul attack that lay within this sweet song.

The true function of the song was to charm a martial artist's heart and drag their consciousness into the world of will.

If a martial artist had never come into contact with the world of will, they wouldn't have a clue what was happening to them. They would simply stumble in muddle-headed; the results from that could be imagined.

In the world of will, Lin Ming stood in a vast green wilderness. Here, he didn't feel any killing intent at all. Rather, he just felt a trace of a new budding spring.

This sort of scenery was...

From the dark, deathly gray surroundings to suddenly arrive at such a beautiful spring prairie, the visual impact was startling.

At this moment, in front of him, a female appeared. She wore a long, fiery red skirt, and her figure was slender and exquisite, her appearance similar to someone Lin Ming had met before.

“Stay with me! Follow me!”

A gentle whisper rang in Lin Ming’s ear, striking him like a bolt of lightning. This woman... was Mu Qianyu!

The Mu Qianyu was extremely lifelike, with even her frown and smile, everything was the same as in Lin Ming’s memories.

In that instant, Lin Ming truly did have the briefest flash where his soul fell into illusion. But, he quickly recovered his mind.

“This transformed Demon Bone can actually have me see the Qianyu in my memories. It can call back my memories to have my mind fall into illusion... this is truly a great method!”

Lin Ming always felt that his will was as firm as iron. But even so, he had almost lost his mind. If it were someone else instead, they simply wouldn’t have the strength to resist. No wonder those two Fey youths had died so easily. Once their will was defeated, their bodies simply became this Demon Bone’s food.



“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin... we finally meet again...” Mu Qianyu beautifully smiled, her laughter like the spring rain. Her appearance, manner, movements, everything was consistent with the true Mu Qianyu.

Although Lin Ming clearly knew this was an illusion, he still felt his mind tremble. It had been almost two and a half years. This entire time, he had worried about Divine Phoenix Island, worried about his parents, and worried about Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu.

At this time, Demonshine’s voice suddenly sounded out, “Lin Ming, I’ve found it. Wait three more breaths of time and then attack with everything you’ve got! With your battle spirit, you have no need to fear it at all!”

Three breaths of time...

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up, silently counting in his heart as he lightly traced his spatial ring, his mind linking to his Purple Comet Spear.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what are you doing? Why do I feel as if I sense killing intent from your body, you... you want to...” This ‘Mu Qianyu’ covered her mouth with her hands, her eyes filling with a hidden bitterness and sadness.

Two breaths of time...

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, could it be you want to harm me...” ‘Mu Qianyu’ stretched out a hand as if she wanted to touch Lin Ming.

One breath of time...

Lin Ming took a step back, avoiding Mu Qianyu’s hand.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you...” ‘Mu Qianyu’s eyes were pitiful.

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a deep killing intent. His voice was low as he said, “You did what you should never have done. You turned into someone important to me in order to deal with me; how can I ever let you live!”

The Purple Comet Spear was drawn. Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the azure battle spirit howled, merging into the Purple Comet Spear. With a thrust, thunderfire howled!

“Mu Qianyu’s beautiful face changed. Her incomparably exquisite expression instantly became horrid and hideous. Her hands became claws that were matted with fur, and a hoarse keening cry came out of her throat, filling the air with a sad and mournful song even as she grabbed at Lin Ming.

“Humph!”

Lin Ming coldly coughed. In the world of will, the battle spirit was king!

Kacha!

The demon claw was directly pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. The Purple Comet Spear didn't lose any momentum and immediately thrust through the demon's chest. That demon's hideous face immediately revealed intense panic!

"Lin Ming, now is the time, don't let it escape!"

Lin Ming thrust out his hand, loudly shouting, "Seal!"

Thunder and fire formed a cage in thin air, sealing the demon within. Here, in the world of will, Lin Ming could use any method he wished to defeat his enemy, as long as his will was stronger.

As for the Blood Demon Bone in front of him, all it had was a wisp of Emperor Will; it was far from forming a battle spirit. Naturally, it wasn't Lin Ming's match.

"One mile straight ahead of you, 300 feet underground, that is where it is!"

Demonshine took advantage of the time when the Blood Demon Bone was distracted with Lin Ming in the world of will to accurately pinpoint the exact location of its main body.

“I’ve got it!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bright light. As the Blood Demon Bone’s soul was still sealed within the world of will, his own will had withdrawn to reality. He pulled out the Purple Comet Spear – Penetrating Rainbow!

Lin Ming didn’t even need the blink of an eye to cross one mile. There was only a flaming rainbow of light that pierced through the void as the ground suddenly exploded. Tens of thousands of jins of earth were turned over. One with his spear, Lin Ming was like a nail that thrust into the sharp rock, instantly reaching the position that Demonshine had said!

There, an enchantment of energy spread out for several dozens of feet. And within that enchantment, there was a crimson glass bead a bit smaller than a pigeon’s egg, hiding at the very center.

Kacha!

How could the frail enchantment possibly defend against Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear? In the instant that Lin Ming had arrived, his attack had already broken it apart!

The transformed Demon Bone panicked. It galvanized the energy around its body as if it wished to escape into the dirt, but how could Lin Ming allow it to do as it wished!

“Concept of Space, seal!”

The space around the transformed Demon Bone instantly collapsed, forming a cage from the power of space around the transformed Demon Bone, imprisoning it within. With Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Concept of Space, wanting to create a stable long-term cage was impossible. At most, he could create one that lasted for several breaths of time. But, this was enough!

As the Demon Bone was trapped, Lin Ming immediately twisted his fingers, creating hundreds of seals that shot forwards. These golden seals all fell upon the Demon Bone. This was the sealing technique used for Thunder Souls and Flame Essences. Using it to deal with this Demon Bone was also suitable!

“Ohhh!”

The transformed Demon Bone issued a miserable scream. To see a little glass bead make such a sound felt extremely strange.

Lin Ming simply didn’t care at all. His fingers became faster and faster as more seals fell upon the Demon Bone. As the seals were finished, Lin Ming flicked his finger and thin strands of thunder surrounded the Demon Bone, quickly forming a cocoon of lightning around it. Lin Ming still wasn’t assured. He also placed a wisp of the power of space around the cocoon, then took out a jade box and placed the cocoon in the jade box.

With so many layers of protection, the Demon Bone wouldn’t be able to escape even if it had wings!

Demonshine chuckled and said, “That was well done. Boy, you really are ruthless in your actions. I thought that you might not have more than a 30% chance of capturing the Blood Demon Bone, but I never imagined you would be so clean and decisive. The Blood Demon Bone was really caught by you and it didn’t even have a chance to respond!”

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “That’s also thanks to you finding it so soon.”

Lin Ming could feel that Demonshine’s soul force had rapidly recovered to a great extent. After he broke through to the Xiantian realm, he had faintly felt that Demonshine’s soul force had been inferior to his own. But, after all these years, Demonshine’s soul force had already surpassed his own by a great deal. To find some clever Demon Bone hiding in a spot one mile away and 300 feet deep, Lin Ming didn’t believe he had this ability.

This was the skill of a Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. In the end, even a skinny camel was still bigger than a horse. As time passed and Demonshine’s soul force restored even more, the disparity between them would only grow.

Lin Ming had just covered the jade box when Demonshine said, “Boy, hold up.”

“Mm?”

“Let this Saint go in and enjoy himself first, hehehe!”

Demonshine rubbed his doggy paws together, his long tongue sticking out to lick his lips. His expression was no different from a sexual predator running into a bath full of beauties.

Seeing Demonshine act like this, Lin Ming couldn't help but laugh.

“Boy, what are you laughing your ass off about? Rest assured, this Saint will make sure to keep your half for you. I will not cheat you even a little bit.”

Lin Ming drily coughed, “I don't want to eat your leftovers.”

After successfully obtaining the Blood Demon Bone, Lin Ming's mood was very good. He could break through to the Revolving Core realm and even raise his battle spirit. But, this place wasn't good for going into closed-door seclusion to make his breakthrough. He had to find a relatively safe place to do that.

Demonshine unhappily said, “What do you mean this Saint's leftovers? This Saint will first subdue this tiny bone's spirit and then divide half for me and half for you. After this Saint processes his treasure, it will be much easier for you to swallow. It won't be like that time where it was so rough you even had to swallow the Nameless Divine Pill and suffer so much distress!”

Lin Ming smiled, “That's fine then, ah... we just had a fierce battle, it's not good to stay here too long. Let's leave first.”

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, fierce fighting could easily awaken evil beings that were slumbering deep underground. If something jumped out that Lin Ming couldn't deal with, then there really would be no escape to heaven or hell for him.



# Chapter 631 – Departing Alone

---

“Demonshine, since we’ve captured the Blood Demon Bone, I plan on heading off by myself now so that group of fellows thinks that I’ve died. I have to look for a place as soon as possible and make a breakthrough to Revolving Core!”

The reason that Lin Ming kept delaying breaking through to Revolving Core was because he didn’t have a chance to. When he was walking the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming had chosen to travel the road of will lights; that was completely unhelpful to Lin Ming’s cultivation. If he practiced by himself, it would take up to a year if he wanted to make a breakthrough with the most solid foundation possible.

Lin Ming could not waste this much time.

All along, Lin Ming had greatly desired to break through to Revolving Core. Currently, rising through the small boundaries of the Xiantian realm, relative to Lin Ming’s currently terrifying combat strength, wouldn’t have too great of an impact. But, Revolving Core was different, that was a true leap in strength. That was because only after breaking through to Revolving Core would he officially enter the ranks of the masters and gain the qualifications to return to the Sky Spill Continent.

As for the battle spirit he formed before, that only increased his striking power. Facing the Polaris Tower Master, Lin Ming didn’t believe he could defeat him as he was now.

In order to truly increase his strength, he had to break through to Revolving Core!

“Boy, you are impatient aren’t you? Don’t forget that we’re still in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Where can we possibly find a safe place for you to make a breakthrough?”

Lin Ming said, “I have the map that the Polaris Tower Master gave me. I’ve already looked over the map before. There truly are places where one can go into closed-door seclusion. Although they aren’t absolutely safe, they are still relatively safe. When that happens, and with you protecting me, I’ll just need to squeeze out half a month at most to make a breakthrough to Revolving Core!”

“Boy, I think you are nuts. This father only has a soul body left over, how can I possibly protect you?” Demonshine grouchyly said.

“If you go and possess a body then you’ll have some combat strength!”

“F\*ck!” Demonshine cursed without any sense of the grace of the master he was, “Do you think it is so easy to seize a body? A soul can only seize bodies a limited number of times! Moreover, once they do, if the soul and body are incompatible with each other, then a fierce battle can even occur! Even still, just adapting to the body will take a long time. Even if you offered up your body to this saint, this saint would still have to consider a number of factors. And now you want this father to seize the bodies of all these trash!!!? You should be slapped for even thinking of this!”

When a different soul and body fused together, there would often be an intense and violent battle. The fusion itself was not a short term process. If the method was too violent, then this would often damage the body instead. This was also the reason why so many mortals, after having their bodies possessed by a fox spirit, would slowly wither away, finally having all their essence energy sucked dry.

Lin Ming didn't speak. He really didn't know that there would be so many conditions for seizing a body.

At this time, Demonshine said, "Here's my suggestion. You continue to follow that group of people and go forwards with them. Although it's not too convenient, they can still be a shield for you when an evil being attacks. The evil beings will usually target the weakest first. For instance, that Blood Demon Bone attacked the two fellows with the weakest will first. If it wasn't for the way they died giving me some clues as to what that evil being was, it would have been impossible for you to catch the Blood Demon Bone."

If there weren't other people present as a shield, then the Blood Demon Bone would have attacked Lin Ming instead. Even if Lin Ming won the battle of wills against the Blood Demon Bone, he still wouldn't have been able to catch it. He would only have alarmed it and caused it to run away instead.

Demonshine's words weren't without reason. However, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then shook his head. "I've already decided. As for needing a shield or something like that, I can find that whenever. Later, I can join another group, but it doesn't have

to be with those same people.

“I need to break through to Revolving Core. I need strength. Breaking through to Revolving Core in a place like this is dangerous, but with my strength as it is now, isn’t walking 1200 miles near the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, especially when it just erupted, not also dangerous? Just now, the reason that I could deal with the Blood Demon Bone was completely because the Blood Demon Bone could only use will attacks, so it just happened to be suppressed by me. What if I encountered something that was good at physical attacks? Would I really be a match for these kinds of evil beings? What if I met a turbulent flux of energy from the Eternal Demon Abyss? If everything is a risk, then I would rather choose to break through to the Revolving Core realm! Because after I do, I will have enough strength to seek my own lucky chances. But, without breaking through to the Revolving Core realm, I fear my current journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss will only result in piddling mediocrity!”

Lin Ming’s mind had been decided. To someone like Lin Ming, with such a firm heart of martial arts, it was usually difficult for him to change the choices he made. Such a person would often be stubborn and not even consider just how far they could push themselves. But sometimes, as the matter continued, because they had a great destiny befall them or perhaps because they were absolutely confident in their own strength, in the end, they could use their actions to prove to the world that their choice had been right all along!

Demonshine saw that Lin Ming wasn’t going to change his mind and shook his head. He said, “Well then, that’s fine too. But, if you insist on breaking through in these damned lands, this Saint still

won't seize a body to protect you, that is absolutely impossible! This group of so-called 'Emperor level talents' is nothing more than trash in this saint's eyes! It's not like I'm trying to be picky here!"

Demonshine had always been arrogant. Naturally, the geniuses of the mortal world didn't enter into his vision. These so-called geniuses were only Emperor level talents if placed in the Sky Spill Continent or Holy Demon Continent. But in the Realm of the Gods, the Emperor level talents they mentioned were on completely different levels.

Lin Ming said, "I understand. At that time, if there really is danger, it's enough for you to give me a warning."

.....

.....

"Time's up!"

10 miles away, Sada was watching the last grain of sand fall through the hourglass in his hands. He gazed deeply towards the direction that Lin Ming had gone in. All he saw was a thick fog, without even a hint of Lin Ming's shadow.

Lin Ming... he died here?

"That idiot, I told him not to go back, haha, I've never seen such

stupidity before!” High Lord Black Ash guffawed.

In that sort of environment, without even knowing where the enemy was, two martial artists had died a miserable and shockingly tragic death. Those two were Emperor level talents! Within the 12 Skysplit Towers, they were top ranked Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Even if they were weaker than a High Lord, it wasn't by that much!

But even such extraordinary people could summon no resistance against their deaths. They hadn't even seen the shadow of the enemy!

In this sort of situation, High Lord Black Ash only had one explanation. That was... the disparity between them had been too great!

That evil being had been so much stronger than them that it could play with them in the center of its palm. And finally, Lin Ming was forced to go back for some stupid spatial ring, possibly even walking into a trap. Wasn't that just seeking his own death?

It wasn't just High Lord Black Ash that had these thoughts, but many others as well. A Fey youth said 'lamentingly', "I warned him not to go back, but... yeah, this Lin Ming was far too confident. Just because he randomly broke through the fog the first time, he believed he could do the same the second time, and now look what happened!"

As the Fey youth spoke, his blue eyes couldn't help but glance

over at Lan Xin, as if he wanted to find a trace of disdain or ridicule for Lin Ming on her face.

This was the exclusive mindset of male animals. This Fey youth knew that a Fey Holy Land would never accept a human marrying into their sect, but Lin Ming had still stolen their thunder so he was jealous of him all the same. At the time, all of them were scared, none of them daring to move lest they alert the evil being. But, Lin Ming had actually dared to rush out, leading them to escape in a single go. This had greatly contrasted against the Fey youth's timidity at the time.

And now, Lin Ming had done something stupid, and it was far worse than what they had done. This caused a lofty sense of superiority to rise in their hearts. That Fey youth's expression seemed to say, 'Look, that Lin Ming was such an idiot! He luckily bumped his way into an exit once, but that loser thought he could do it again. The result was... death. We weren't timid, we weren't scared, we were just being careful! In this Eternal Demon Abyss, it's not wrong to be so cautious.'

Randomly stumbling his way through, he had hit the jackpot the first time. But, the second time was absolute death!

After this Fey youth spoke, two other Fey youths echoed his sentiment, "Indeed. Ah, we should be more careful from now on. That Lan Yuan, the first fellow to die was also a bit simple-minded. How could he not have taken Sir Sada's advice? He actually ended up attracting an evil being to us. Fortunately, we're no longer with that Lin Ming fellow. If he continued to go with us, then who knows when he would do something hotheaded and put us all in

danger, hahaha!”

Several Fey youths were gloating as they talked, weaving a story that Lin Ming was their unlucky star. If their squad really did keep such a simple-minded and hotheaded fellow with them, then it would easily place the entire group in danger.

Lan Xin didn't seem to hear their discussion. She had always been looking far off into the distant hazy fog. She suddenly said, “A quarter hour before, there was an intense collision of energy. Did you notice...”

The intense collision of energy that Lan Xin mentioned was obviously when Lin Ming had used Penetrating Rainbow to dig out the transformed Blood Demon Bone. Lin Ming had gone all-out with this attack, and the energy fluctuations were easily seen even 10 miles away. Naturally, these martial artists had also seen it.

“Yes, I did. I guess that attack was Lin Ming's final struggle before death. After that attack, it completely disappeared. It proves that after that strike, the outcome was decided. But since Lin Ming hasn't returned yet, who won and who lost can be imagined!” A Fey youth rationally analyzed the situation.

Although Sada felt that something was off, he couldn't help but acknowledge this too. The Fey youth's analysis made a great deal of sense. It was likely that Lin Ming had died.

“This damn Lin Ming!” High Lord Bloodfire frowned. He didn't hold out on any further hope. Of everyone here, he most



understood Lin Ming's strength. Although Lin Ming hadn't been able to break through to Revolving Core, he absolutely had the strength to rank amongst the top five High Lords of Polaris Tower. If Lin Ming could enter the 1200 mile radius zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss, then he truly could have been a great help to him. When that time came, they would have been a powerful combination, able to seek a great lucky chance for Sir Chief High Lord. What a pity, that plan had now come to nothing, leaving him with nothing but the desolate sense of being alone.

“Sir Sada, let's go!” A Fey youth said. The one hour agreement had ended, and even an extra incense stick of time after that. It was becoming increasingly clear that Lin Ming had died.

Sada sighed, “It's true that we can't wait here forever. If Lin Ming didn't die he should have returned long ago. Let's continue then.”

Sada didn't think of the possibility that Lin Ming would not only be alive, but also intentionally leaving their group. Alone, without a guide, without a squad, his chances of living in the Eternal Demon Abyss would certainly be slim to none.

# Chapter 632 – Swallowing the Blood Demon Bone

---

As Sada and his squad were still wandering around, Lin Ming had already rushed several dozen miles away.

“Lin Ming, you better count your blessings. This saint knows a great number of things about the Eternal Demon Abyss, but the number of things that this saint doesn’t know is even greater. It’s true that this saint’s soul force is heaven-shockingly powerful, but my combat strength is actually limited. If an enemy comes and invades your spiritual sea with their spirit, then this saint can chomp them to bits without mercy. But, if it is a true physical attack, then it will all depend on you.”

“I’ve got it.” Lin Ming originally hadn’t expected to rely on Demonshine too much. Lin Ming glanced at the map. In truth, the jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master had given him couldn’t be totally considered a map. Rather, it was a collection and summary of experiences.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, a map that listed danger zones was meaningless. This was because every time the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, there would be large-scale changes in the surrounding terrain, and the evil monsters and dark spirits would often move around to resettle themselves.

As a result, any marked danger zones and safety zones of the Eternal Demon Abyss were useless even as reference points.

Only an old horse like Sada, who had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss several times or even over a dozen times, could use his own experience and judgement to determine the risks of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The map in Lin Ming's hand didn't list out any danger zones or safety zones, but rather, it described a variety of possible danger zones and safety zones. If one ran into a scene similar to what was described in the map, then they could use this information as a reference to judge whether it was dangerous or not.

“The fog is thick in front, and the infernal energy is faintly surging around. According to the jade slip this should be a place where some demon or monster is buried. The ghostly energy soars to the heavens, causing the surrounding infernal energy to become turbulent. Because most of this ghostly energy is dispersed, the chances of a Demon God Bone forming there is low. Rather, all sorts of evil beings will gather at this point. This sort of area has no lucky chance, rather, there are only dangers all around. It is absolutely best to avoid this area!”

Lin Ming promptly made a judgement according to the jade slip and bypassed this danger zone.

As he walked along, he couldn't help but marvel at just how useful this jade slip was. No wonder the Polaris Tower Master had been so careful, and even wanted him to destroy this jade slip if he fell into a fatal situation. If a Holy Land descendant were to get their hands on this jade slip and make use of this map, then the value of it could be imagined.

“Lin Ming, be careful, in front!”

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the energy field would suppress perception and the thick fog would cover one's line of sight. A normal martial artist would be able to sense a range of several hundred feet, and Lin Ming, even though his soul force was so potent, he could only cast out his senses to merely a thousand feet. This was even shorter than a mortal's line of sight. Demonshine's soul force, on the other hand, was much more formidable than his, so his senses could spread out for several thousand feet. It wasn't strange for him to discover something abnormal first.

“Three altogether, they should be bloodfire beasts...”

If they could cultivate for 7000 to 8000 years, then they could even gain strength equal to a Life Destruction martial artist. But, these three bloodfire beasts in front of him were only equal to middle Revolving Core martial artists.

“Lin Ming, suppress you strength as much as possible when you kill them. The bloody infernal energy here is thick; there might be other evil beings lurking about. If they are alerted, then the consequences will be dire...”

“Understood.” Lin Ming flicked his fingers and dozens of Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air, gently trembling.

After several breaths of time, three humanoid vicious beasts rushed towards him, their bodies blazing with fire and blood. The

brilliant flames on their body caused one to feel as if their soul was burning.

“Die!”

Lin Ming waved his hand and the Blood Drinking Seals shot out. In order to ensure a fatal blow, Lin Ming had fused a wisp of battle spirit into these Blood Drinking Seals.

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, strengthening its power. Even a withered leaf, after having a battle spirit attached to it, could instantly become an incomparably sharp killing tool, much less the already keen Blood Drinking Seals.

With a ‘cha cha cha’ sound, the crystal cores in the bloodfire beasts were instantly split in half by the battle spirit infused Blood Drinking Seals. The bloodfire beasts miserably screamed, their bodies fading away into nothing.

In an instant, three middle Revolving Core enemies were all slain. Lin Ming had taken step by step to arrive where he was now. His strength had undergone earth-shaking changes since he first came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Lin Ming picked up the broken crystal cores. Although these crystal cores were far inferior to Demon God Bones in value, they were still better than top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. He naturally couldn’t waste them.

Unconsciously, several days had passed. Lin Ming had already walked around a thousand miles. His pace wasn't fast because he was always carefully analyzing the turbulent flows of infernal energy as well as the terrain, judging the safest route possible. Sada had also done this, hence why he had been so slow in guiding them.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, it was better to be safe than sorry.

“We’ve walked over a thousand miles and we’ve encountered seven to eight danger zones but no safe zones!” Lin Ming said with a bit of frustration. In the Eternal Demon Abyss, the dangerous areas were naturally much more frequent than the safe areas.

“Hehe, this road is one you chose. To break through to Revolving Core in this perilous hellhole of the Eternal Demon Abyss, only you could think of something so silly!” Demonshine curled his lips and lazily wiggled his butt. He continued, “This Saint is going to take a nap. The infernal energy of the Eternal Demon Abyss has too many benefits for repairing this saint’s damaged soul. When I’m sleeping, don’t bother me if there’s no trouble, and definitely don’t bother me if there is!” Demonshine said playfully.

“I’m sorry, but it seems that you’ll have to delay your sleeping plans... that infernal energy pattern in front, if I’m not wrong, should be called a twisted python. It is one of the relatively safe zones listed in the jade slip.”

“Oh?”

Demonshine looked up. In front of him, the infernal energy formed a gray and hazy wind, stirring up the fog into little vortexes. In fact, the infernal energy here seemed to be even thicker than normal.

“Did you make a mistake? I feel that the infernal energy here is very thick. Are you sure this isn’t dangerous?”

Demonshine had a deep understanding of the evil beings and spirits of the Eternal Demon Abyss. As for the patterns of infernal energy and terrain, he honestly hadn’t studied this. With the Demon Emperor’s strength, how could he have bothered with this? What the Demon Emperor had studied was how to catch the evil beings and spirits that wandered this land. Being able to determine what evil creature he was chasing would give him the greatest lucky chances.

Lin Ming said, “According to the jade slip, this twisted python geography continues for over a thousand miles. This is because two different flows of infernal energy intersect here and then revolve around each other, forming a ghostly energy current like a giant twisted python. Here, the infernal energy is thick in the surroundings, and the deeper you go, the thicker the infernal energy will be. But, at the very center point of this twisted python terrain, there should be a hundred mile wide area where the infernal energy is extremely thin. In the central 10 miles, the infernal energy might even be lower than that of Skysplit Tower. That is the so-called safe zone. Of course, relatively speaking...”

Demonshine scratched his doggy chin and said, “This twisting

python terrain continues for a thousand miles. If you want to reach the center, that will be 500 miles. This 500 mile walk won't be easy..."

Lin Ming faintly smiled, "That's why I'll have to rely on you. It's best if you discover dangers ahead of time and then inform me so I can avoid them."

"Relying on me? Do you think I'm some sort of slave or something? After this saint woke up, I've been worked so hard by you! How about this, after you break through to Revolving Core, if you obtain anything good in the Eternal Demon Abyss, I'll take half of it. If so, then this saint will, of course, have to reluctantly agree to such a difficult task."

"You don't even know what there is to find yet you already want half. You really are a greedy lion opening its mouth." Lin Ming said, speechless. "You contributed to obtaining the Blood Demon Bone so I gave you half of it. For whatever comes next, if you put in the effort, then I'll give you half. But, if you don't need to do anything, then we'll split it 80 to 20. Consider that your reward for helping me break through to Revolving Core."

"Me 80 you 20?" Demonshine asked, pretending to be confused.

"Playing this sort of joke isn't very fun." Lin Ming's smile had disappeared. At this moment, he didn't have free time to bargain with Demonshine.

"You're too mean and stingy! We'll divide it four to six!"



“two to eight!”

“three to seven!”

“Two to eight!”

“Okay, okay... two to eight, it is two to eight.” Demonshine could only helplessly give up. Lin Ming was the type who absolutely kept his promises. Bargaining with him might end up backfiring.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and then displayed his movement technique as he soared into the thick gray fog.

As they rushed in, the infernal energy became increasingly rich. Demonshine also played his due role. His sense of perception was far wider than the majority of evil beings' within this twisting python terrain area.

Avoiding these evil beings didn't mean that Lin Ming was afraid of them. Rather, he feared that fighting them would lead to stronger evil beings coming forth.

Occasionally, there would be times when he couldn't avoid some evil beings. At this time, Lin Ming would use his battle spirit infused Blood Drinking Seals, instantly killing them without slowing down.

Like this, Lin Ming arrived in the 100 mile center zone of twisting python energy current without danger. Here, the thickness of infernal energy truly had dropped by a great deal.

Then, Lin Ming no longer suppressed his speed. He immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void and in just several steps, arrived at the 10 mile center zone of the twisting python energy current.

“It’s here! The jade slip wasn’t wrong.”

The infernal energy current of the center ten miles was less dense than even that of Skysplit Tower. In this sort of infernal energy barren land, evil beings normally wouldn’t come here.

“This place is truly a remote and desolate god-forsaken land.” Demonshine glanced around, probing the surroundings. He didn’t like this place; the infernal energy here was too low.

“This is it. I will close up here for half a month and break through to Revolving Core. Then, I will enter the 1200 mile forbidden zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss by myself!”

“Boy, you are completely bonkers, sufficiently crazy! If you close up and break through to Revolving Core here you will definitely stir up the flow of energy. Even a safe zone will become unsafe. I hope you don’t become eaten by some monster spirit or something.” Demonshine lazily said. Still, he stretched out his perception as far as possible, doing the best he could to guard Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and then took out the Blood Demon Bone from his spatial ring, slowly unraveling the spells around it. These past days, Demonshine had used some unknown method to take away his half. The Blood Demon Bone had shrunk, and the originally savage and manic energy had weakened.

This was much more convenient for Lin Ming to absorb. If this was his usual closed-door seclusion where he had a measure of absolute safety, then some manic energy wasn't too dangerous. But here, absorbing a simpler form was much safe.

Lin Ming grasped the Blood Demon Bone and slowly poured his true essence within. A moment later, the Blood Demon Bone actually turned a ball of dark red fluid. Without hesitation, he lifted it up and swallowed it!

A crazy and dangerous energy immediately filled Lin Ming's body!

The Blood Demon Bone first impacted Lin Ming's will. He felt his mind shake, and then he arrived in a completely blood red world of will!

# Chapter 633 – Impacting the Bottleneck

---

“This is an ancient Supreme Elder’s battle spirit!”

The instant that Lin Ming entered the blood red world of will, he could feel a faint coercive pressure. Although this pressure wasn’t too obvious, it still brought with it a vast and wild energy that caused the mind to shake with fear!

It was very obvious that, because such a long span of time had passed, the ancient Great Emperor’s battle spirit had already weakened to the point of being pathetic. Otherwise, how could Lin Ming have possibly captured it?

Thinking of this, Lin Ming sighed, a bit gloomily. No wonder how powerful one was before death, no matter how heaven-shaking or earth-shattering, after death, they were nothing but ashes that returned to the earth. The body rotted, their energy concentrating into a Demon God Bone. As for the battle spirit, although it was in a sense endlessly enduring, after tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years, it would slowly weaken, in the end becoming simply ‘nothing’.

Lin Ming wondered. If one could reach the highest boundaries of martial arts, could they break through the cycle of Samsara and live in perpetuity?

Lin Ming knew that, regardless of the Supreme Elder that had developed ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, or the Saintess that was sleeping deep within the Magic Cube, neither of them had

been able to fully step onto the peak of martial arts. He wondered, did the Evil God that created the Heretical God Force ever reach such a boundary?

Lin Ming had steeled his heart and soul to climb to the peak of martial arts. A big portion of the reason for this was because he wanted to take a peek at the pinnacle of martial arts and see just what it was like.

A red energy gathered in front of Lin Ming, forming an incomparably fierce demon.

Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "This is the evil spirit that absorbed the ancient Emperor Will and evolved to this state. Although it was born from the womb of the ancient Great Emperor, the truth is that it has no relationship to them. Extinguish it, and use it to temper your battle spirit!"

Not only could the Blood Demon Bone help a martial artist break through a bottleneck, but it can even be used to temper the will. This was a rare treasure. If it wasn't for this point, then Demonshine wouldn't have been tempted by it to begin with.

After the red evil spirit formed, it rushed towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming's mind stirred, and the Purple Comet Spear appeared. Thunderfire sparkled on the spear point, and with a sizzling sound, that blood red evil spirit was stabbed by a spear light. In the world of will, the battle spirit was king. The complete Blood Demon Bone wasn't even Lin Ming's match, much less this incomplete form in front of him.

A faint trace of red light escaped. Without hesitation, Lin Ming absorbed all of these energies into his will body. He saw these faint traces of red will intrude into his spiritual sea, clawing towards his soul.

With it, a violent and tyrannical consciousness flooded Lin Ming's consciousness.

“Incorporate this energy, erase its soul mark, and turn it into the purest soul energy to absorb.” Demonshine reminded Lin Ming. The truth was that Lin Ming didn't need a reminder, he already knew what to do. With his battle spirit gradually forming, his consciousness was as stable as a mountain. Swallowing this will would only be a matter of time.

With his consciousness linked to his spiritual sea, in the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the faint traces of red energy were spinning around the tiny spear that was his battle spirit, constantly being absorbed into it.

Time passed second by second. From its illusory, translucent appearance, the little spear became increasingly solid. Its entire body seemed to take on a metallic color as if it were being formed from ancient bronze.

A day later, this spear completely formed, with only some missing parts at the end of the spear shaft.

Lin Ming was aware of the changes in his battle spirit. Using his

mind to connect to his battle spirit, the little spear fiercely trembled, as if it didn't want to be suppressed, wanting to rush out of Lin Ming's spiritual sea instead.

“Good young man!” Demonshine couldn't help but praise out loud, “Your cultivation hasn't reached Revolving Core and yet your battle spirit has passed its elementary form and is rapidly taking shape! You are truly a monstrous genius! To form a complete battle spirit before Revolving Core, this can't be done with just talent or any sort of heavenly treasures, none of that is sufficient. What you would need is an incomparably formidable will!”

In terms of willpower, there was no need to mention Lin Ming's heart of martial arts. In addition, he had repeatedly swallowed the soul fragments of the Magic Cube and even had the Samsara martial intent helping him. In this aspect, the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent were all left in the dust by him. In fact, even the geniuses of the Realm of the Gods would find it hard to compare.

Lin Ming remained silent, not saying a word. He clenched his teeth, completing the final tempering of the battle spirit. At the end of the spear shaft where it was incomplete, the wisps of energy were constantly solidifying it.

After two hours, the battle spirit had taken complete shape. In that instant, a faint dragon roar seemed to sound out as a vibrant and vigorous energy dissipated from the dark yellow battle spirit, filling the skies above his spiritual. Even the sleeping Demonshine was startled within Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

“It really formed! A dark yellow level battle spirit!”

“Oh? Dark yellow level?” This was the first time that Lin Ming had heard the different classification rankings of a battle spirit. From the sound of it, a battle spirit had to be raised up, with great potential for growth.

Demonshine said, “The ranks of a battle spirit from low to high are dark yellow, silver white, gold, bright blue... because of these different colors, they are separately called a bronze battle spirit, silver battle spirit, gold battle spirit, and blue soul battle spirit. Currently, your battle spirit is a newly formed bronze battle spirit! Generally speaking, an Emperor of the mortal world would have a bronze battle spirit! But your cultivation is merely at the Xiantian realm and you already have a bronze battle spirit. Your future potential will be boundless! It looks like this saint made a good choice in choosing you, hahahaha!”

Demonshine happily laughed. Lin Ming was also in a good mood. After absorbing the will body of the Blood Demon Bone, there was still the main event. That was... breaking through to Revolving Core!

With its will erased, all that was left over of the Blood Demon Bone was the purest form of energy!

This energy had been sealed within Lin Ming’s body with the power of thunder.



After removing the seal of thunder, the Blood Demon Bone's energy flooded into him, like a dam that had suddenly burst!

A vast, torrential wave of energy surged into Lin Ming's meridians, flushing in every direction. Even though Lin Ming's meridians were tough, it was still difficult to accept such a baptism; some meridians even began to break. But, with Lin Ming's formidable regenerative ability, this minor damage wasn't considered anything at all.

“Gather the energy in your dantian; condense the cyclone to a core!”

Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind. In truth, Lin Ming didn't need Demonshine's words; he already knew what to do. Out of the cultivation methods he had studied, the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was well suited for moving infernal energy.

By forcefully revolving the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, Lin Ming directed all the energy within his body to rush towards his dantian.

Energy came from all directions like a massive ocean tide. Wherever it went, even if the meridians were blocked, it would wash everything away. All of this energy finally poured into the dantian with overwhelming force, smashing together!

Bang!

For a time, it was like Lin Ming's dantian had exploded. The originally spinning true essence cyclone was completely broken!

Lin Ming stuffily coughed and spat out a mouthful of blood. Using such a wild and brutal energy to break through to Revolving Core was not something that most martial artists could withstand. If the meridians weren't toughened and the foundation wasn't extremely solid, then if a martial artist rashly did this it was very likely their dantian would explode, causing them to perish in a miserable fashion!

As for Lin Ming, by virtue of his solid foundation, he could stiffly compression this turbulent energy into his dantian. Under such a potent storm of true essence, the massive pressure caused the true essence there to condense into tiny grains!

The tiny grains grew more and more, becoming increasingly crowded. They were like tiny Blood Demon Crystals that floated within Lin Ming's dantian.

A new true essence cyclone slowly formed. The difference from the last true essence cyclone was that this one contained a great number of solidified true essence grains!

If Lin Ming could gather all of these true essence grains together, slowly forming them into a revolving core, then he could officially break through to the Revolving Core realm!

This process could not be hurried. If this was a normal breakthrough, then even an Emperor level talent might need to

close up for half a year to condense their core. Using the energy of the Blood Demon Bone, the time Lin Ming needed was greatly shortened. Still, it might take around 10 days to half a month.

Not bothering to wipe the blood from the corners of his mouth, Lin Ming manipulated the remaining energy to continuously gather in his dantian. As the pressure in his dantian grew, more and more true essence condensed, forming solid grains. These tiny solid grains slowly began to be sucked into the spinning true essence vortex.

And in the center of this cyclone, a tiny rice sized crystal core appeared. After this crystal core emerged, tiny grains of true essence constantly fell onto the crystal core, slowly becoming a part of it.

In this way, the crystal core slowly snowballed to a larger size...

Time passed a day at a time.

In the blink of an eye, 10 days had passed. From the time Lin Ming had first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, a month had passed.

According to the speed of a normal squad, this was the time they would have traveled 8500 miles deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

On this day, there were indeed five squads of people gathered at

the 8500 mile meeting point.

These five squads originally had some 50 people, but now, there were only 39 remaining. 11 martial artists had perished so far. The probability of dying had far exceeded the former trips into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“This is it. We are only responsible for bringing you here. As for the remainder, that is all up to you!” A guide said.

After speaking, the guides all sat down and began to meditate, recovering their energy. After all, this entire time they had been constantly exploring, analyzing the situation, and calculating scenarios, all of this together was a major burden on the mind, causing them to consume a great deal of mental energy. And the return trip would also be another month long journey. Naturally, they had to readjust to their peak condition before headed back.

As the guides sat down to rest, the other martial artists began milling about.

“Lan Xin, how was your harvest?” Among the group, Duanmu Qun had travelled so long and was still able to maintain his breezy and handsome appearance. As he saw Lan Xin, he moved over to her. Both of them were of the same race, and, as descendants of Holy Lands, they naturally knew each other.

“Very average.” Lan Xin shook her head. Along the way, Sada’s squad had only found three Demon God Bones. These three Demon God Bones were the size of a wild chicken’s egg. As far as Demon

God Bones went, they were quite large. However, compared to their large squad, the harvest was quite small, much less that according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, half of all findings had to be given to the guide.

“It’s already good that you could arrive here safely. Your squad...” Duanmu Qun glanced over Lan Xin’s squad. Out of 10 people, there were only seven left. They were missing two Fey youths as well as Lin Ming.

“Mm? Lin Ming? How come he’s not here?” Duanmu Qun asked, surprised. He didn’t believe that Lin Ming would fall on this 8500 mile journey. He only thought that he had some matter to attend to so he left off by himself.

“Lin Ming...” Lan Xin shook her head. “Lin Ming is missing. He might be alive, but the chances of him having perished are higher.”

As Lan Xin spoke, Duanmu Qun was completely stunned. “Missing? Perished?”

## Chapter 634 – Forming the Revolving Core

---

Normally, the ones that die in a squad were the weaklings. Duanmu Qun didn't think that Lin Ming would fall here. Even if he heard this news from Lan Xin's own mouth, he found it hard to believe.

“Hehe, it's not that the chances of him dying were high, but his death was basically determined.” Not too far away from Lan Xin, a Fey youth smirked.

If this was just after a disaster and everyone had scattered, then it could be said that Lin Ming had gone missing. But, the situation was different. They had arranged to meet after an hour but Lin Ming still hadn't returned. If he hadn't died then just what could it be?

“What really happened?” Duanmu Qun asked.

The Fey youth vividly recounted the process of Lin Ming's death, highlighting repeatedly that he had loudly discouraged him from returning, but Lin Ming had only insisted on being foolish. Finally, he had chosen the wrong method to tackle his problem and ended up never returning.

After the Fey youth spoke, Duanmu Qun frowned. A lost spatial ring? This reason seemed a bit far-fetched, but still passable. If Lin Ming had really fallen here because of this reason, then that was too great of a pity. To not be able to find a rival in his life... it was like Duanmu Qun had lost a goal in life.

Standing alone on a peak, if one didn't see a higher peak, then it would be easy for their vision to be limited, resulting in them wasting their potential.

As they were speaking, another squad arrived. This squad only had eight people remaining. In this group were two heaven-step Asura Emperor level talents. One was Feng Shen, and the other was the Great Ax Tower's Blackstone.

As soon as Feng Shen arrived his eyes locked onto Sada's squad. He clearly remembered that Lin Ming was in this squad. He was curious as to just what lucky chances Lin Ming had obtained.

However, as he didn't find Lin Ming, a bit of confusion clouded his eyes.

“There's no need to look, Lin Ming's gone missing!”

Duanmu Qun's voice sounded out near Feng Shen's ear.

The peak Emperor level talents of the Skysplit Towers were often Fey. Feng Shen also came from a Holy Land and was old acquaintances with Duanmu Qun.

“He's missing?” Feng Shen asked, startled.

“Mm... the chances of him dying are very high...” Duanmu Qun

shook his head, thinking it was too great a pity.

“Lin Ming died?” Blackstone arrived with Feng Shen, and after hearing this news, was initially surprised. But he immediately smiled with disdain. Seeing was far better than believing. These top Emperor level talents were never convinced by word of mouth unless they could see with their own eyes. Blackstone had long heard rumors about Lin Ming’s talent and genius, but he had naturally played these all down in his heart.

Blackstone originally didn’t believe Lin Ming was so great. Now that he died in the 8500 mile journey here, he had an expected and satisfied expression on his face.

He laughed and said, “I heard that Lin Ming was the greatest number one talent of the Holy Demon Continent for the least 10,000 years. But, it seems this fame was a bit cheap. To die here, heh, how mediocre!”

Feng Shen frowned as he heard this. He scowled as he said, “The facts are still unknown. According to common sense, Lin Ming should have died. However, there are always incredible and unbelievable miracles occurring around Lin Ming!”

“Hehe, Feng Shen, I think you’ve been unnerved by Lin Ming in your heart and already have thoughts taken root in your mind that you are inferior to Lin Ming! Once you have such thoughts, you will never surpass that person in your life!” Blackstone looked at Feng Shen with derision. When a talent loses their proud and lofty nature, their potential for growth greatly suffers.



Feng Shen didn't speak anymore. His natural disposition was disinclined to argue with others to begin with. All he thought that was when Lin Ming entered the King's Cage for 108 days, everyone had thought he had died, but, he had emerged at the last moment, not only alive, but with strength that had soared shockingly, instantly proceeding to kill High Lord Heian.

This was the same as that time... could Lin Ming have really died?

Seeing Feng Shen's silence, Duanmu Qun walked over and patted Feng Shen's shoulder in consolation, saying, "Although Blackstone's words are crude, he does still have a point. The thought of being inferior to Lin Ming had truly taken root in your heart!"

Feng Shen shook his head and calmly said, "If I am inferior then I am inferior, it's as simple as that. I never thought of surpassing Lin Ming. As long as I can keep up with his footsteps, then that is enough for me to be a leading hero of the future world."

With nothing else to say, he went to sit on a boulder and meditate. Out of all the young geniuses present, he was the only one who had come from the same Skysplit Tower as Lin Ming.

He was the only one who had seen Lin Ming's terrifying talent with his own eyes, his jaw-dropping speed of growth and his heaven defying strength!

When Feng Shen had seen all of this with his own eyes, he had only been able to sigh with envy and admiration!

News of Lin Ming's disappearance quickly spread around. After all, these people hadn't come from the same Skysplit Tower as Lin Ming so they were naturally suspicious about his rumors to begin with. After hearing that Lin Ming most likely died here, they also began to believe that this was as expected. Surely, Lin Ming was overrated.

Regardless of whether Lin Ming had truly been strong, his luck was simply too bad, or, perhaps the rumors were also exaggerated. In short, a genius that died was no longer a genius.

An Emperor sat on a throne of a million bones. No matter how brilliant or majestic Lin Ming had been before his death, after dying, he had simply become one of the countless bleached bones paving the road for others to become Emperors!

The topic of Lin Ming's disappearance or death aroused several hours of discussion. Then, it began to die down. There were too many geniuses that died. With the passing of time, such people were destined to be forgotten in the sands of time.

The people waited like this for three days. Slowly, they discovered that something was wrong. At the time they first set out, besides some lone Chief High Lords, there were a total of nine squads. But now, they were one squad short! There were only eight squads left, and in these three days, there had been no sign of them.

It had to be known that the guides had special methods to communicate with each other. But now these communication methods were like stones dropped into the ocean, without the slightest response.

Had they been annihilated!?

Realizing this, everyone felt chills creep up their backs.

An entire squad of 10 people, including even an experienced guide and powerful High Lords, was actually completely annihilated. Just what sort of terrifying situation had they come across?

Was it the legendary evil spirit from the Eternal Demon Abyss?

Thinking of this, every martial artist felt a surging cold in the air. If their squad had encountered the same things, then their fate might not have been much better!

At this point, Sada quietly stood up and said, "It's time, we will not wait here any longer. We will return. You can consider returning with one of us eight guides back along the old route we took. But, all the resources that are found on the return trip will not be shared with you. Or, you may now enter the 1500 radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss' edge. There, the dangers are doubled or even tripled. Even we do not dare to rashly enter, so carefully consider your choice!

After Sada finished, he glanced over the crowd. A great number of martial artists had hesitation in their eyes. After learning that an entire squad had been annihilated, this news left a lingering fear within their minds. If they entered deep within the 1500 mile radius periphery of the Eternal Demon Abyss, their team might break up. Then, not only would they need to resist the threats of those evil spirits, but they also had to defend against their own companions murdering them for their wealth. The risks could be imagined!

Thinking of this, those talents that had originally been full of confidence and wanted to rush into the 1200 mile radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss began to show signs of retreat.

They looked at each other with dread. In the face of such great lucky chances as well as such significant dangers, everyone hesitated...

.....

As all the martial artists were gathered at the meeting point 1500 miles from the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming was in the middle-late stages of breaking through to Revolving Core!

All of the energy within Lin Ming's meridians had been poured into his dantian. True essence was constantly forming into tiny grains, slowly spinning into a true essence cyclone there. The more it spun, the closer they approached the center, finally settling at the center of the cyclone and condensing into a spinning crystal core.

This was... the Revolving Core.

The reason that the Revolving Core was called 'revolving' core, was because the core was always spinning.

When a martial artist was at the Houtian realm, their dantian had just opened and their true essence was in chaos. With no regulations at all, the efficiency of this true essence was naturally low. When a martial artist reached the Xiantian realm, the true essence would form a stable true essence cyclone in their dantian, increasing the efficiency by another level. However, the total amount of true essence wouldn't increase by too much. Finally, when a martial artist arrived at the Revolving Core realm, the true essence cyclone in their dantian would condense into a revolving true essence crystal core, with their total amounts of true essence increasing by a large margin!

The spinning true essence turning into a crystal core was just like some celestial bodies of the universe turning into a rotating form.

This was the so-called similarities of the Great Dao. The human body became a miniature universe.

As another day passed, the Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian was now the size of a pigeon's egg.

Demonshine watched from the side. These days, this sleep-loving old dog had been finding it hard to stay awake as it was always carefully guarding the surroundings. As a result, it witnessed the

entire process of Lin Ming attacking the Revolving Core realm.

A pigeon's egg sized Revolving Core was a tad larger than a normal martial artists Revolving Core. Demonshine wasn't surprised by this. In general, the more true essence a martial artist had, the larger their Revolving Core would be.

If the Revolving Core that Lin Ming formed wasn't much larger than other martial artists, then Demonshine would have thought that something was wrong.

Another day later, Lin Ming's Revolving Core grew yet again, this time turning into a more normal looking sphere. Now, it was around the size of a walnut. This Revolving Core was about 25% larger than a normal martial artist's Revolving Core.

Demonshine rubbed his chins with his paws, nodding in praise.

Another day passed. The Revolving Core grew once more to the size of a wild hen's egg. Now, Demonshine was finding it hard to remain calm. This size had exceeded his expectations!

But this wasn't Lin Ming's limit. After another day, the Revolving Core became the size of a chicken's egg. Demonshine began to gulp. This was already twice the size of a normal martial artist's Revolving Core!

"This boy, just what degree will he grow to?" Demonshine sucked in his long doggy tongue, his eyes staring unblinkingly at

the true essence crystal core condensing in Lin Ming's Dantian.

Then, the fifth day followed. The Revolving Core did not increase in size. But after that, Demonshine's astonishment did not stop, rather, it increased.

The Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian hadn't changed in size, but the inherent true essence began to grow more concentrated. As more true essence grains fused with the Revolving Core, the energy within became increasingly rich!

On the sixth day, the Revolving Core shrunk, going back to the size of a wild hen's egg. But, not only did the total amount of true essence not decrease, but it instead increased by another level!

At this point, Demonshine was already a bit numb.

This boy was simply a monstrous freak, an abnormally monstrous freak!

On the seventh day, the Revolving Core shrunk once again, returning to the size of a walnut. This Revolving Core wasn't much larger than an ordinary martial artist's, but the total true essence quantity within was many times greater than that of an ordinary martial artist's!

# Chapter 635 – The Revolving Core Changes

---

On the eighth day of forming the core, Lin Ming's Revolving Core was the exact same size as an ordinary martial artist's, except that the energy within was several times greater.

Compared to an ordinary martial artist's Revolving Core, the Revolving Core within Lin Ming's dantian was a much darker hue, and also spun several times faster.

Normally, the faster a Revolving Core spun, the more volatile and active the energy was within, meaning that when it erupted all at once, it would be much more terrifying.

With such a solid energy and fast spinning speed united, Lin Ming's potential strength could be imagined!

"This boy is a damn farm animal, just what fodder was he fed growing up..." Demonshine mumbled to himself. Lin Ming's talent was something even he was jealous of. Only by insulting Lin Ming a bit could Demonshine feel a bit better about himself.

At this time, the Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian reached the finale of its condensation process. The Revolving Core no longer changed in size, instead beginning to take its final form. The surrounding energy within the dantian completely gathered onto the Revolving Core, continuously streaming onto this crystalline core.

The Revolving Core became increasingly round. When it was



around 99% formed, the energy within the dantian began to suddenly accelerate!

At this time, the true essence crystal core became the incarnation of a voracious monster, completely and recklessly swallowing all of the true essence in Lin Ming's dantian, leaving it empty of energy. This caused every single bit of true essence in Lin Ming's body to converge into his dantian like an ocean falling into a sinkhole.

Lin Ming's dantian became a powerful bottomless pit of suction. It set off a massive whirlpool of true essence, sweeping in all of Lin Ming's energies.

In a mere few breaths of time, all the energy in Lin Ming's meridians was sucked dry!

Then, this suction force spread through Lin Ming's body. Heaven and earth origin energy was also sucked in by this powerful force, continuously gathering into Lin Ming's dantian!

At the moment a martial artist completed their Revolving Core, it would result in a qualitative change. It would become solid, round, and filled with a deep gravitational force!

It was just like when a star of the universe collapsed into a white dwarf star or neutron star. Once it collapsed, the mass would stay the same and the size would decrease but the gravity would experience a massive leap upwards!

When the cyclone within a martial artist condensed into a Revolving Core it was also a similar process of collapsing. The instant that a Revolving Core formed, because of the intense suction, it would completely condense all energies into the dantian. Within the void of the dantian, the newly condensed crystal core would cause a massive whirlpool, sucking in all the surrounding energy and leading the total true essence amount to have a massive leap.

This sort of leap would bring doubled or even quadrupled strength. Not just that, but after the Revolving Core formed, this sort of true essence crystal core would continuously maintain this attractive force. This was the reason that a Revolving Core martial artist far surpassed a Xiantian martial artist in condensing energy towards their dantian. Whether it was cultivation speed, endurance, regenerative ability, everything would rise.

With these several reasons added together, this was the reason that a martial artist would experience a massive leap in strength from Xiantian to Revolving Core!

Thus, this was why even a Saint level talent like Mu Qianyu, when at half-step Revolving Core, still found it only barely possible to fight a true Revolving Core martial artist.

The attractive pull of Lin Ming's true essence crystal core was far more terrifying than that of an ordinary martial artist. The true essence whirlpool increasingly intensified without any signs of stopping. It formed a massive cloud of purple heaven and earth origin energy above Lin Ming's head. At the center of these vast clouds, a funnel-shaped tornado extended downwards, enveloping

Lin Ming at the very end and steadily streaming into his dantian.

Seeing such a situation, Demonshine couldn't even sit still anymore.

Oh heavens, this momentum was so great, it would be visible from several hundreds of miles out!!!

If Lin Ming had closed up within a place of absolute safety then no matter how great the momentum, none of it mattered. Even if he had primed heavenly tribulation to come down on his head, it would still have been fine! But, this place was different. This was the Eternal Demon Abyss, where every step was filled with killing intent and fatal dangers!

Seeing this abnormal situation last for another quarter of an hour without ending, Demonshine's forehead began to become wet with a nervous sweat.

"Oh good friend Lin Ming, how come you haven't finished yet? Just when the f\*ck is this going to end!?"

At this time, Demonshine was on the same sinking boat as Lin Ming. Without Lin Ming, his damaged soul wouldn't even have a chance to possess or do anything at all!

Demonshine had been counting on Lin Ming ascending into great achievements in the future and being able to profit from this. If Lin Ming died here, then all his efforts would be wasted!

Anxiously, with great fear, another incense stick of time passed. Finally, Demonshine's complexion changed.

As he expected, the worst turn of events had occurred.

Just a few thousand feet away, seven or eight evil spirits had gathered together, avariciously eyeing the direction Lin Ming was at.

.....

At this time, several hundred miles away, under a cliff, two Giant Demon martial artists and a Goliath martial artist were grouped together. The Goliath martial artist was standing guard while the two Giant Demon martial artists were sitting down in meditation. The injuries on their bodies weren't too serious, but these injuries would have still been fatal for a common mortal. Just two hours ago, these two Giant Demon martial artist had swallowed pills and were in the process of recovering from their wounds.

“What f\*cking bad luck, I can't believe we followed an idiot guide here, and to think that the f\*cker actually dared to call himself a living map of the Eternal Demon Abyss! F\*ck!” After a quarter hour, the Giant Demon martial artists had finally healed their wounds and began to cuss out loud.

These three people were part of the missing ninth squad of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Their entire squad hadn't been fully annihilated, but rather, only the three of them had survived. The

other seven, including the guide, had been completely wiped out!

“I was almost killed by that idiot! Luckily, our strength is outstanding and our luck is good, otherwise we would’ve already become that evil being’s supper!”

Remembering the experience from just several days ago, the three of them felt a lingering fear cloud their minds. That had simply been a nightmare. They didn’t know where the enemy was and all they could do was watch helplessly as their companions slowly burst into puddles of rotten meat, their blood and organs pooling on the ground.

In all fairness, the guide truly could be considered experienced and his strength was also good. But in the face of such a situation, he had made the wrong judgement. He had everyone stand back to back in a circle and stand guard, causing more and more people to die. Finally, several people couldn’t stand it anymore and separately escaped. As for the guide, he had paid for this wrong judgement with his life.

In the end, only the three of them had managed to run away.

These three were all High Lords and also the strongest three of their squad. In terms of individual strength, they could rank amongst the top five High Lords of Polaris Tower. As for the Goliath martial artist, he could even rank in the top three.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, every single step was filled with death and there were danger zones and deathtraps

everywhere. Sometimes, a squad would experience a complete disaster and only the strongest would be able to survive.

“Brothers, what should we do now? The three of us came to the Eternal Demon Abyss, but we haven’t even had any lucky chances, instead, we’ve almost lost our lives. Should we return like this?” the Goliath High Lord asked. The two Giant Demon High Lords remained silent. Up until now, they had only found two ordinary Demon God Bones. Once divided, it wasn’t much at all. They truly were loath to return like this. But right now, they didn’t even have a guide. The three of them were like headless flies within the Eternal Demon Abyss, running around randomly was far too dangerous!

The Goliath High Lord saw the other two not speaking, and after some thought, said, “The lucky chances within the Eternal Demon Abyss are hard to find, but once they are found they might possibly be the greatest lucky chance we will ever experience. There are many different grades of Demon God Bones. The two we have are the lowest grade. If we can find an earth-step Demon God Bone or even the legendary heaven-step Demon God Bone, then our future days as Peerless Emperors will be just around the corner!”

Within Skysplit Tower, High Lords were indeed powerful, but, in terms of talent, they were actually inferior to the peak existences within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, much less Holy Land descendants like Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin.

Without true talent, how could they reach this level? After staying in Skysplit Tower for many years, once a High Lord reached a cultivation similar to Life Destruction, they would

naturally need to leave Skysplit Tower. Thus, every few dozen years, there would be a new group of High Lords at the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

But among so many High Lords, it was exceedingly rare for any of them to become Peerless Emperors. This was because they lacked talent and potential.

Without a great lucky chance, these three had almost no hopes of becoming a Peerless Emperor.

A Life Destruction powerhouse and an Emperor level powerhouse were on completely different levels. Whether it was strength or lifespan, they were simply incomparable. The temptation of becoming a Peerless Emperor was far too great!

The two Giant Demon High Lords were also unwilling. One of them was about to speak when he was suddenly startled. Blankly gazing off into the distant sky, he could see faint purple clouds in the heavens. Even the surrounding fog had been pushed away by these purple clouds so that they were much more clear and vivid.

“Look over there? What is that?”

“Mm?” As the other two turned to look, they were also shocked speechless!

This sort of change likely meant that there was a massive lucky chance that had appeared!

Of course, this also meant that there might be a terrifying existence there, a grave and fatal danger.

Or it could even be both. Dangers following a lucky chance... that was the most likely conclusion!

“What should we do? Should we go have a look?” One of the Giant Demon Lord proposed after a moment of hesitation. He looked towards the Goliath High Lord, the strongest of their three man group.

The Goliath High Lord grit his teeth. Without a doubt, this was a gamble. But, on the road of martial arts, how could there be no dangers?

There were many people that looked belittled martial artists who had relied on lucky chances to become Supreme Elders, saying that it was only their luck that was good. But, in truth, this was simply pure envy. There were far too many lucky chances in this future, but they were nearly always accompanied with a corresponding danger. The crux was whether or not one was willing to grasp this chance, and whether or not they had the strength to take it!

If one was always timid, hesitating and waffling over every single lucky chance, that was no different than resigning oneself to a life of mediocrity! They might not even be able to reach a high stage of Life Destruction, much less become a Peerless Emperor!

“We’ll go. The three of us will go together and restrain our auras



as much as possible. We will take a look at the situation, and if there's no hope for us to deal with it, then the three of us will immediately flee. If there is even a glimmer of hope, then we'll bet everything on this to pave our own road of Emperor!"

"Good, I'm also of the same idea!" The High Lords quickly reached a consensus. With such a lucky chance in front of them, if they didn't even take a look then they would regret it for the rest of their lives.

These three High Lords suppressed their auras as much as possible. With a lucky chance in front of them, they wouldn't be demure. But, they still had to be cautious as they advanced forwards at high speed!

They quickly rushed through the twisting python terrain. The swirling currents of infernal energy were broken through by them.

Within this twisting python terrain, there were a number of low-level evil spirits. To these three High Lords, as long as they weren't evil spirits that had rushed out from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss after breeding for tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years, then they could deal with one or two.

Like this, they slowly approached the area where Lin Ming was closed up, breaking through to Revolving Core.

But at this time, Demonshine was actually battling with several evil spirits. This battle had already been going on for a long time...

# Chapter 636 – Battle Spirit Protection

---

The condensing of Lin Ming's Revolving Core had galvanized a mighty phenomenon. The surrounding true essence was stirred into a massive vortex of heaven and earth origin energy, forming massive purple clouds of energy several dozen miles wide. For such a sight to appear within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the results could be imagined.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine could only helplessly watch as more and more evil spirits gathered, crying and groaning over the situation. Now, he finally understood what it was like to be surrounded by wolves.

But, there was still a silver lining to this horrible situation. These evil spirits were all of the low-level variety. They weren't those freakish existences that were shot out from deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Demonshine didn't have a physical form and his real world striking strength was weak. He could only release his soul force to form an energy field, using this to deter these evil spirits.

Demonshine's energy field was truly powerful. It brought with it a vast and ancient atmosphere that could only come from someone from the Realm of the Gods. However, the temptation of Lin Ming's bubbling blood vitality was too great. These evil spirits incomparably desired this blood essence. Under the direction of their most primal nature, these evil spirits slowly approached Demonshine.

Demonshine could scare off three or five, but not a group. After these evil spirits gathered

together, they launched an attack on Lin Ming!

And at this time, Lin Ming had both his eyes closed, his senses completely cut off from the outside world. He had entered into a deep meditative state; it was unknown just how long this would continue for.

“Ohh!”

The first evil spirit plunged towards Lin Ming. With one at the lead, another evil spirit rushed in. Demonshine concentrated and a brilliant light flashed out from his eyes...

Mind control!

An evil spirit suddenly shook, and its savage crimson eyes suddenly became dazed and empty. In midair, it suddenly twisted around and shot toward the second evil spirit. Without time to respond, the second evil spirit was smashed into the ground, injured.

Soon, these two evil spirits began to engage in a brutal melee on the ground. A moment later, the evil spirit that was controlled by Demonshine ripped the other one to shreds.

“Just using mind control once already consumes so much of my

soul force; I absolutely can't last too long. Lin Ming, oh good brother Lin Ming, please wake up now!"

Demonshine was nervous. This was truly a dragon being played around with by shrimp. To think that there would be a day where he, a noble and awesome Hollowed Lord from the Realm of the Gods, would actually be bullied around by such a group of piddling low-level evil spirits!

After destroying an evil spirit, three or four immediately replaced it. Seeing this, Demonshine felt bitterness swell in his heart.

"OhhhHH!"

Two more evil spirits rushed forth. These two evil spirits were stronger than the last two. Demonshine grit his teeth and consumed 20% of his willpower to control these two evil spirits.

"Ahhhhhhhh!"

More and more evil spirits threw themselves forwards. Taking control of three evil spirits, Demonshine waged a vicious war with them. However, it was difficult to face so many with so few and Demonshine's current ability was limited. Two evil spirits dodged around Demonshine and ran towards Lin Ming, biting onto his bodily true essence protection.

Before Lin Ming had entered into meditation, he had arranged an

energy defense within his body. As an evil spirit rushed at him, an arc of purple thunder erupted from his body. This thunder was composed of the Disenchanted Dream Light and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. The Disenchanted Dream Light could overturn the soul and mind, and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was especially useful in subduing ghosts and demons.

These evil spirits gave miserable shouts and were bounced off!

However, there were far too many evil spirits. As one was sent flying away, another one took its place.

As Lin Ming's body sparkled with the light of thunder, some evil spirits were burnt into gray smoke by the power of thunder. But, this pain only aroused the bloodthirsty and vicious nature of these evil spirits. All of the evil spirits crazily rushed towards Lin Ming. Demonshine's capacity to block them all was limited!

The energy of the protective layer of thunder was rapidly consumed. A moment later, it could not avert any more evil spirits.

A massive number of evil spirits hung off Lin Ming's body. It was like a pack of wolves that had bitten and clawed onto a giant beast.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine was panicking.

"F\*ck! Boy, consider that I must have owed you in some past life! Remember this!"

It wasn't that Demonshine couldn't fight with his full force, it was just that this soul was damaged. Once he did something, his soul would be injured. Back when Lin Ming was travelling through the ancient transmission array and was suffering through the space storms, there had been a time where he had completely exhausted all of his energy. It was only with Demonshine's help that Lin Ming had been able to barely pass that crisis.

However, the price of this was that Demonshine had fallen into a deep slumber for nearly two whole years.

Now, Demonshine had finally woken up after much hardship. If it wasn't for the nourishment of the infernal energy as well as the Blood Demon Bone, Demonshine absolutely wouldn't be willing to expend his full strength to help, injuring his soul even further. But, he had no choice now. Once Lin Ming died, he would have to follow him into death!

From Demonshine's body, a small portion of his divine soul began to burn. Massive rays of light suddenly shout out from all over Lin Ming's spiritual sea! These golden lights were like sharp swords, instantly piercing through over a dozen evil spirits and burning them into smoke!

This was Demonshine's materialized divine soul attack.

This sort of divine soul attack was a double edged soul. To use the soul to struggle, damaging oneself to kill the enemy. Especially in a situation where the defense in soul force wasn't that great, the damage incurred would be higher. This was why the Imps who excelled at soul attacks always brought soul recovery medicines

with them.

Demonshine's soul was originally incomplete to begin with. After using such a soul attack, the damage to his own soul could be imagined.

After killing over a dozen evil spirits at once, the damage to Demonshine's soul was not minor. Fortunately, he had recovered a great deal of his strength these past two years, otherwise using an attack that consumed so much soul force would have caused him to fall unconscious again.

And as Demonshine was groaning in his heart, not sure of what to do, he suddenly noticed that not too far away, there were two Giant Demons and a Goliath martial artists staring at Lin Ming, an eerie expression on their faces.

In that instant, Demonshine's heart fell to subzero temperatures!

Of these three people, Demonshine had some knowledge of two of them. They were High Lords from the other Skysplit Towers!

One wave hadn't ended and another one came! Demonshine wasn't naïve enough to believe that these people had come to lend a helping hand!

In fact, these three High Lords might be thinking that this was their lucky chance!

“Isn’t that Lin Ming?” After the Goliath High Lord carefully led the other two to the center of the twisting python terrain, he didn’t find any lucky chance. Instead, he found that someone was making a breakthrough here!

“That really is Lin Ming. He’s breaking through to Revolving Core? Is he crazy?”

“This stupid idiot. He actually tried to make a breakthrough here and brought a group of low-level evil spirits to surround him! This is just looking to die!” A Giant Demon High Lord sneered. In his opinion, this was no different than suicide!

“Maybe Lin Ming came across some lucky chance and couldn’t suppress his true essence, leaving him with no choice but to make a breakthrough here. I remember before that his cultivation was still a great distance from Revolving Core; he should still have had half a year at least before having any chance of making a breakthrough. If he didn’t come across some lucky chance then this would be completely impossible!” The Goliath High Lord’s eyes flashed with naked desire. A lucky chance that could allow a martial artist to make a breakthrough... this was exactly his greatest wish!

“He doesn’t have anyone with him, he’s alone. Something must be strange. And not just that, but the momentum from his breakthrough is so abnormally great. If an average person were to break through to Revolving Core, there definitely wouldn’t be such a scene.”

“There’s definitely something wrong!”



The three High Lords instantly agreed that Lin Ming must have come across some great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss, thus the reason for such a massive momentum when breaking through. As for Lin Ming's squad, they had probably died or scattered away, thus this lucky chance had fallen completely into Lin Ming's hands alone.

This sort of thing, just whose eyes wouldn't turn red with greed?

These three people looked at each other, each seeing a thick killing intent in the other.

If they killed Lin Ming, there was an extremely high probability they would be able to obtain his lucky chance!

Let alone that Lin Ming was in his most critical moment in his breakthrough to Revolving Core, but even if Lin Ming had made a breakthrough his strength wouldn't be stable for a short period after that. Also, these three people were all masters among the High Lords. They had complete confidence in their own individual strength. As for Lin Ming's strength, they only had heard limited rumors about it.

“Kill him! No mercy!” The Goliath High Lord said.

Now Lin Ming was surrounded by evil spirits; it would have been better for them to wait until their battle was done so they could swoop in afterwards. But, Lin Ming's breakthrough had reached the crescendo. Who knew when Lin Ming would make a

breakthrough to Revolving Core? It was best to take action earlier lest there be even more problems later!

These three people all revolved their demon essence and rushed out together. One of the Giant Demon martial artists took out a long saber and slashed down at Lin Ming's chest!

Kacha!

The saber directly killed four or five evil spirits and completely broke through Lin Ming's protective true essence!

The evil spirits grew enraged by these actions and rushed at the three High Lords!

“Out of my way!”

The Goliath High Lord gave a loud shout and swept out the massive staff in his hands, directly sweeping out all these low-level evil spirits. Three of the evil spirits bore the brunt of the attack and were directly twisted into pieces by the energy storm, vanishing into blue smoke!

“I'll send you along the way!”

The last Giant Demon loudly laughed. Grasping a hammer, he slammed it down towards Lin Ming's chest!

Seeing this massive hammer come down, Demonshine's pupils shrank. This time, he had consumed too much of his soul force; he was unable to mount a defense against these three High Lord's attacks.

Lin Ming's bodily true essence protection was broken, how could his mortal body defend against these attacks...

Would he die like this?

As this thought flashed through Demonshine's mind, all he heard was a muffled thump as Lin Ming was smashed by the hammer and sent flying backwards!

The true essence funnel twisted. Lin Ming's body fell hundreds of feet away, his fate unknown.

"Haha! What kind of so-called ten thousand year number one talent is this! What a load of crap! He still dies at this father's hand!" A Giant Demon martial artist who had attacked laughed impudently. After being hit by his hammer, anyone's ribs who would all be broken apart, their organs smashed to bits!

To kill a Titled Asura, the Giant Demon High Lord only felt that his thoughts were incomparably smooth as he was filled with a great sense of accomplishment.

However, after a few more loud laughs, his laughter began to die down. He looked at the sight in front of him with disbelief. Even

the two other High Lords were shocked.

A few hundred feet away, Lin Ming's breath was steady. He simply didn't seem like someone that

had been heavily wounded.

.....

Sweeping out with his divine sense, he saw that the clothes and flexible armor on Lin Ming's chest had been completely smashed apart. As for his body, there was only some broken skin and flesh; the ribs were completely fine and intact!

“This... how is this possible?”

The Giant Demon martial artist's eyes widened as he gripped his hammer. To be hit by his hammer, even a block of profound gold would be smashed flat. But, Lin Ming had only been slightly injured?

Was this a human body? It was even more resilient than profound gold?

At this time, within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, even Demonshine was incomparably amazed. He had also been wallowing in dashed hopes. If it was just one person, they he could seize their body. With his soul force, stealing the body of a High Lord was in fact easy.

But, the problem was that there were three people. If he stole one of their bodies and was killed by the other two, then his divine soul would shatter. Thus, seizing a body was the same as suicide to Demonshine.

In his despair, he never imagined that Lin Ming would actually be able to withstand this attack.

This wasn't just the bodily defensive power that came from Tempering Marrow; that Giant Demon High Lord's striking power was not a joke.

This was... could it be... battle spirit protection?

A light went off in Demonshine's mind and he was instantly stunned.

# Chapter 637 – Power of the Revolving Core Realm

---

A battle spirit was the manifestation of a martial artist's will. A battle spirit was invisible and without form, but it could actually be attached to anything, turning it into an incomparably sharp killing weapon. A withered leaf, with a battle spirit attached, could even cut apart a treasure. This meant that when one's battle spirit was attached to a withered leaf, the degree of its hardness had surpassed that of a treasure.

Using the same logic, if a battle spirit could be attached to a treasure armor, then it would make that treasure armor even more solid.

But, speaking was easier than doing. After a martial artist just formed their elementary battle spirit, it was still impossible for them to freely manipulate it.

A battle spirit could easily be used for attack. This was because a battle spirit only needed to be concentrated onto certain points.

But using a battle spirit for defense was much more difficult. This was because one had to spread the battle spirit evenly over a surface.

In the moment that Lin Ming was just attacked, his battle spirit vanished from his spiritual sea, evenly spreading out over his body and merging with his skin. This caused Lin Ming's skin to instantly become as tough as a high-grade earth-step armor. With the

addition of Tempering Marrow, which made his ribs a nearly impassable fortress, both of these factors combined were able to abruptly block the Giant Demon High Lord's hammer!

As Demonshine realized all this, he paused. Did the battle spirit in Lin Ming's body spontaneously protect him? Or had it been under his control?

If it was under his control, did that mean that Lin Ming had awoken?

As Demonshine was rapidly thinking, the three High Lords that had sneak attacked Lin Ming all had gloomy expressions. To use the flesh and blood body to resist the attack a treasure weapon... how was this possible?

"Is there some kind of special energy on his body?" The hammer-wielding martial artist muttered. He didn't believe that someone could use just their body to resist his attack.

"What nonsense. Watch this!"

The other Giant Demon High Lord shouted out and stepped forwards.

"Mountain Shattering Strike!"

In order to ensure a killing blow, the Giant Demon High Lord used a martial skill. If he didn't take advantage of this time to kill

Lin Ming, then once Lin Ming completed his Revolving Core, matters would become troublesome.

With an explosive banging sound, the ground underneath Lin Ming was chopped apart and the earth ruptured. But, in this turbulent flow of demon essence, Lin Ming's body was sent flying up again, all of his clothing torn and as he dripped with blood all over!

“He didn't die?”

The saber-wielding Giant Demon High Lord was bewildered. He had used a martial skill just now but had only managed to wound Lin Ming.

Just what in the world was this?

Lastly, as the Goliath High Lord saw this, his eyes flashed with a sharp light. His body began to emit explosive 'ka ka ka' sounds.

Sky Piercing Devil Arts!

This was a secret arcane skill of the Goliath race used to detonate all of the power within their body. Although this move damaged his body, with it, the Goliath High Lord could put his everything into this attack!

After the second attack had failed to kill Lin Ming, a dark and foreboding premonition filled his heart. He thought that if Lin



Ming awakened now, the results would be extremely bad for all of them!

Lin Ming's current condition was far too weird!

Demon essence was drawn from all over his body and began to flow into the Goliath High Lord's staff. He would take this staff and directly smash it into Lin Ming's skull!

The skull was a vital point of the human body. The Goliath High Lord didn't believe that Lin Ming could have such a strange and mystical protection on both his chest and head. He would smash apart Lin Ming's head like a sweet watermelon!

Wind howled. The staff contained a massive energy, twisting the space around it. With a shout, the staff came crashing down!

But in this instant, all the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy went wild. The demonic clouds of infernal energy in the sky madly funneled towards Lin Ming's dantian. Energy flowed out like a vast and surging stormy sea, rocking the earth.

At this moment, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly shot open, his vision like bolts of lightning shooting out!

As the Goliath High Lord saw Lin Ming's eyes open, he was incomparably shocked. At this time, it was impossible for him to stop. With an earth-shaking bellow, all of the demon essence was revolved to the point where his meridians were about to break

apart, all in order to display the highest power of this staff strike. He estimated that since Lin Ming just woke up, he wouldn't have the time to dodge this attack.

The staff whistled as it came crashing down. By the time Lin Ming's eyes had fully opened, the staff was a mere two feet from his forehead.

Bang!

A golden light erupted and energy surged up in massive waves. The Goliath High Lord only felt his hands shake as the arch of his palm cracked. The staff in his hand seemed to suddenly be stuck in stone, unable to move a single inch.

Looking down, he saw that the end of his staff had been firmly grasped by Lin Ming. And, underneath Lin Ming, a massive web of cracks extended out in the earth, reaching out to over a thousand feet, deep fissures in the ground.

This web of cracks was obviously created from a great impact force. But, Lin Ming had withstood this crushing shock without his arm even bending.

“This... this...!”

The Goliath High Lord looked at the end of his staff that was held in Lin Ming's right hand, his lips shaking. His strike that had contained his complete strength was actually received by the

unarmed Lin Ming?

This staff strike was enough to shatter apart a great mountain!

“Lin Ming... you... ” The Goliath martial artist’s voice shook. The power of the Lin Ming in front of him had exceeded his scope of understanding.

At this time, a thick killing intent spread out from Lin Ming’s body. Naturally, the Asura force field had also expanded. With the Goliath High Lord’s strength, facing this force field, even he felt as if resistance was impossible!

Run!

The Goliath High Lord didn’t know what sort of lucky chance Lin Ming had come across, but, without a doubt, the truth was that he had no ability to resist the Lin Ming presently in front of him!

Without a single word more, he turned around and fled. He didn’t bother trying to take back the treasure staff. He knew with absolute clarity that it was impossible for him to take back this staff from Lin Ming’s hand!

The other two High Lords were not stupid. Seeing the Goliath High Lord run, they also turned around to escape. Not just that, but they both chose different directions.

Lin Ming sneered. He reached out his hand to grasp the void.

## Cage of Space and Time!

The three High Lords felt as if they had suddenly slowed down, the space around them becoming incomparably thick. It was like they had fallen into a thick bog; there was simply no way to escape.

Lin Ming's cage of space and time was far inferior to that within the King's Cage. It couldn't truly lock in someone; it could only slow down their movements. But, this was enough!

Lin Ming's feet moved and his body exploded forwards. He didn't take out the Purple Comet Spear, only using the staff in his hand. Using this staff as a spear, he thrust it towards the Goliath High Lord!

“Ahhhh!”

The Goliath High Lord howled like a crazed mad man. He took out another staff from his spatial ring and pounded it towards Lin Ming.

This was a strike that was completely offensive without the least bit of defense. The Goliath High Lord was well aware that he was not Lin Ming's match. Before he died, he would either grievously wound Lin Ming or force him to defend.

However, his plan was destined to fail.

In the moment that the Goliath High Lord attacked, he felt the time around him suddenly slow to a ridiculous rate. As his staff was only half way out, Lin Ming's staff had already stabbed to his chest.

With the battle spirit fused with the staff, there was only a light piercing sound like a chopstick poking into paper. That staff, without any impediment, pierced through the Goliath High Lord's protective demon essence, continuing to pass straight through his body as if he were made of tofu.

The Goliath High Lord only felt a cold feeling in his chest and an emptiness in his soul. As he looked in front of him, Lin Ming had already disappeared. Turning his head down, all he saw was an arm-thick hole gouging directly through him!

Because the speed was too quick, blood hadn't begun to gush out yet...

To instantly kill the Goliath High Lord, this was simply nothing to the current Lin Ming!

Lin Ming suddenly changed directions. The space under his feet seemed to shrink, and with just a few steps, he had caught up to one of the Giant Demon High Lords.

The Giant Demon High Lord was already horrified, panic etched all over his face. As he saw Lin Ming suddenly appear before him, his complexion completely paled. He simply couldn't organize a decent counterattack. In truth, it would have been futile

regardless. His attack speed was simply pathetic.

With a flash of black light, Lin Ming's staff had already pierced through the Giant Demon martial artist's throat. Because the speed was too quick, the Giant Demon martial artist's neck had been severed at the same time, his head falling off!

As Lin Ming withdrew his staff, the head flew into the air!

Next, as the last High Lord saw his companion miserably die without even being able to put up an iota of resistance, despair filled his heart. When Lin Ming rushed towards him, he died without any surprise.

As the staff was thrust into that martial artist's back, in that instant, his spine and organs were all twisted to pulp!

From the time that Lin Ming had intercepted the staff, it had only taken him three breaths of time to kill three High Lords!

To Lin Ming, as he was now, a martial artist on the level of a High Lord simply had no ability to resist him. It was as easy as chopping a chicken!

Initially, when Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor, he hadn't made a breakthrough in his cultivation. But, he had comprehended a battle spirit. Because of this, in truth, his strength had actually surpassed that of a High Lord. It was just that he was still inferior to the Tower Master.

Now that Lin Ming had broken through to Revolving Core, his strength had enhanced several times over. Now, killing a High Lord level martial artist only needed a brief moment.

After he killed three High Lords, Lin Ming felt the thick killing intent in his body begin to gradually fade away.

At this moment, a thick infernal energy dispersed outwards above the corpses of the three High Lords, forming into a ten-winged Heavenly Demon that clawed at him.

To the current Lin Ming, these kinds of Heavenly Demons formed from infernal energy were just a joke.

With a flick of three fingers, he attached a wisp of battle spirit to the air, instantly defeating the three Heavenly Demons.

After the Heavenly Demons exploded, they turned into pure infernal energy, quickly gathering into Lin Ming's body and helping to form his Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

The fifth pair of wings became increasingly clear. Lin Ming had originally been an early ten-winged Heavenly demon, but now after killing three High Lords, two of which were early ten-winged Heavenly Demons and one a middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon, his own Heavenly Demon Tattoo had grown, stepping into the middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon stage.

As Lin Ming saw his Heavenly Demon Tattoo grow once more, his eyes sparkled. “I’m getting closer and closer to a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, If it’s possible, I should try to condense my twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo here in the Eternal Demon Abyss. This will be my best chance to do so!”

The Heavenly Demon martial intent consisted of three different force fields – Asura, Death God, and Prime Emperor. As for the Prime Emperor force field, Lin Ming didn’t think much of that. With his current strength, it was basically impossible for him to fully cross the Road of Emperor.

As for the Asura force field, Lin Ming had already obtained it.

Now, the only force field he could comprehend was the Death God force field. After forming a full twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, it would be his!

Quietly, he picked up the three High Lords’ spatial rings. As he was about to probe them, he heard Demonshine’s voice in his head.

“Lin Ming, you are simply a vicious beast in human form. You’ve left me speechless!”



# Chapter 638 – Three Thousand Boundless Worlds

---

Suddenly hearing Demonshine's praising words, Lin Ming was curious, "What sort of degree do the geniuses of the Realm of the Gods reach?"

"Realm of the Gods..." Demonshine was slightly startled. He immediately sighed and slowly said, "The Realm of the Gods is a terrifying place; it was far too vast and boundless. Even when I followed Master, we only moved within a very minuscule range of the Realm of the Gods. In the Realm of the Gods, there are countless masters and countless naturally talented geniuses! Those are truly terrifying existences which people simply cannot compare to!"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen the boastful and loud Demonshine look so crestfallen and powerless. He couldn't help but ask, "Just how big is the Realm of the Gods?"

Demonshine said, "I cannot say how large the Realm of the Gods is, but, I will talk of the planes below the Realm of the Gods first. That is a plane like the one the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent exist on. If I'm not wrong, these continents existed on the same planet, but are simply very far from each other, separated by a great ocean."

"The lower mortal world that the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent exist on is called one of the three thousand boundless worlds, a domain below the Realm of the Gods. When I say three thousand, this is not what is usually thought of by three

thousand, but three different thousands multiplied together. How many do you think that is?”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. A thousand times a thousand times a thousand was 1,000,000,000!

1,000,000,000 lower mortal worlds, that was simply difficult to imagine!

With so many lower planes and so many living creatures, just how many masters would there be?

Demonshine continued, “Some of those abnormalities from the Realm of the Gods are already removed from the scope of humanity. There are some humans and other races that are half God Beasts or even more. The talent of their bloodlines is immeasurable!

A half God Beast bloodline...

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Initially, when he had inherited just a drop of blood from the Ancient Phoenix and True Dragon, these two drops of blood not only strengthened his body, but also changed his true essence properties and increased his talent.

If this was the effect of just one or two drops of a God Beast’s bloodline, then what would it be like if he were half God Beast?

It was unimaginable!

Lin Ming recalled that when he entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had learned it was a trial ground left behind by the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Could this so-called Ancient Phoenix Clan be one of those God Beast races like Demonshine mentioned?

Thinking of this, Lin Ming marveled at how wondrous it was. When he first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had only been able to complete the general level smelting trial; he basically lacked the qualifications to complete the king level trial. As for Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, Mu Fengxian, all of them current or past Saintesses of Divine Phoenix Island, they had only been able to complete the soldier level smelting trial!

To be a soldier in an army, that was the same as being cannon fodder.

Realm of the Gods...

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, unconsciously gripping his fists. That broad and endless world was the Holy Land of all martial arts!

So many masters, so many geniuses, this caused Lin Ming's heart to burn with a brilliant fighting spirit!

He didn't fear masters nor did he fear geniuses. If a person did not seek opponents or find a higher peak, they would limit their own potential. Only by entering into a land with countless masters would Lin Ming ever have a chance of reaching the peak of all

martial arts.

“Demonshine, let’s go!” After a brief silence, Lin Ming finally spoke. The road was beneath his own feet. Whether or not he would be able to rise in glory within the Realm of the Gods, all of that depended on the current foundation he would build.

“Let’s speed up!”

Lin Ming already had the contents of the jade slip’s map memorized. As his figure faded, his feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and he rushed straight towards the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Currently, low-level spirits were no longer a threat to Lin Ming. But, as for those existences from the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming still had to be cautious of them. The strength of those old monsters was difficult to imagine.

.....

Three days later, Lin Ming arrived at the 1500 mile radius zone from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Without stopping, he zoomed past.

On the fourth day, Lin Ming arrived at the 1200 mile radius zone from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. This was approaching the fatal 1000 mile life forbidden zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss. Here, the dangers would rise exponentially. Of course, the

lucky chances that could be found here were enough to make one go mad with greed.

“Demonshine, let’s look for people!”

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 10,000 miles wide and had a circumference of over 30,000 miles. But, the truth was that the area most frequently explored by the 12 Skysplit Towers was a small portion of the southern and northern tip. During every exploration, the northern six towers would explore the northern region and the southern six towers would explore the southern region, thus, the area actually wasn’t too large.

It wouldn’t be difficult for Lin Ming to find others in this core region.

Forming a team had its benefits. The greatest was that, once they encountered a dangerous situation, there would be people that could act as a shield. Like this, Lin Ming would be able to observe the sneak attacks of the evil spirits and formulate a counterattack.

Generally, an evil spirit would first sneak attack the weakest.

A weak martial artist understood this reason, but they didn’t have any other choice. If they didn’t team up with a powerhouse then the chances of them dying were much higher. In fact, their life might be in danger if they encountered enough low-level spirits.

As Lin Ming walked, Demonshine let loose all of his perception to sense the surroundings, looking for martial artists. At the same time, Lin Ming followed the map notes in his memories and examined the surrounding terrain to stay as far away from danger zones as possible, even as he looked for lucky chances.

.....

At this time, a thousand miles away from Lin Ming, a squad of martial artists was being led by several senior High Lords, exploring the land.

In this area, for a radius of several dozen miles, the sand and rocks were a light blood red color. Around this area were two mountain ranges. Looking from afar, these two mountain ranges looked like the horns of a beast, surrounding the land around them.

This terrain could be called strange to the extreme.

“Sandlight, are you sure there’s an earth-step Demon God Bone buried here?” A High Lord from White Stone Tower asked after searching for a long time. The one he was talking to was an Imp martial artist that came from Five Color Tower, High Lord Sandlight.

Normally, a High Lord would only stay in his position for a few dozen years. Afterward, because they made a breakthrough to something equivalent to the Life Destruction realm, they would then leave Skysplit Tower. High Lord Sandlight had already been

at the Blood Slaughter Steppes for 40 years now and had come to the Eternal Demon Abyss three times; this would be his fourth. He could be said to be very experienced, at least, not much less than any of the guides.

High Lord Sandlight investigated the terrain again and said, “Yes, I should be right. I believe that there is a high-grade Blood Demon Bone buried somewhere around here. If you look at the two surrounding mountain ranges, they form a natural cage of infernal energy, causing a massive amount of infernal energy to be sealed in here. This sort of place is easiest for a Demon God Bone to form, in addition, the ground beneath us is a blood-red, which is also a sign of a Demon God Bone. The Demon God Bone here is absolutely at the earth-step rank or even near the heaven-step rank!”

Listening to High Lord Sandlight say this, the martial artists were excited. A heaven-step Demon God Bone was simply a legendary treasure. But, they didn’t expect to find that. They would be satisfied as long as they could find an earth-step Demon God Bone here.

As everyone was putting effort into searching, no one saw a strange and greedy light flash in High Lord Sandlight’s eyes as he turned around.

# Chapter 639 – Living Sacrifice

---

The seven man squad had already been searching through this blood-red land for an hour. High Lord Sandlight seemed to be very patient, but some of the newcomers were intolerably impatient. With such a great lucky chance in front of them, they were all excited.

“Mm? What’s that?”

A Giant Demon martial artist saw that not too far away there was a bump of dirt in the ground, as if there was a grave mound there. Normally, this sort of mound wasn’t anything strange, but the Giant Demon martial artist could feel a rich and sleepless energy moving about there.

This energy caused the Giant Demon martial artist to pause. What was under that mound? Could it be the earth-step Demon God Bone that High Lord Sandlight mentioned?

After thinking of this, the Giant Demon martial artist’s heart began to race within his chest. Looking all around, he determined that no one was paying attention to him and he began to slowly tiptoe over to the mound.

This blood-red island was several dozen miles wide. The squad had split up to each seek their own lucky chances. If one of them found the treasure alone, then they certainly wouldn’t share it.

The Giant Demon martial artist also had this idea. He raised his



guard as he slowly approached the mound. As he closed in, he could feel the energy becoming increasingly rich.

“There really is something buried here.”

He thought for a moment about how to dig out this mound. Using his hands would be a bit improper, so he brought out a halberd from his spatial ring; using this halberd to dig would be much safer. But at the moment he extracted the halberd, his body suddenly shook. His eyes burst open and all the flesh of his body was instantly charred black, his body turning to ash in the next moment. All of his blood vitality had turned into a deep red wisp of light that shot into the mound!

A gentle breeze blew past and the ashes of the Giant Demon martial artist scattered into the wind. From beginning to end, the Giant Demon martial artist hadn't even said a word.

The squad continued to search. Another hour later, some people began to discover that something was strange.

A few people had vanished into thin air!

“Stop, stop everything!” A martial artist cried out. He didn't dare to shout loudly but used a true essence sound transmission instead. “I feel that... there are a lot less people!”

After the martial artists of the squad heard this, they gathered together. As they met up, they sucked in a breath of cold air. Three

of them had disappeared and they hadn't even noticed!

“Where did they go?”

The martial artists present felt a bone freezing cold in the air. They didn't believe that these three had quietly left the squad. The greatest probably was that all three of them had been killed!

The three of them were all strong High Lords, but they had been killed so quietly. There hadn't even been a sound! This was far too horrifying!

“We must leave immediately!”

A High Lord from the Great Ax Tower said, his face paling. Although a lucky chance was tempting, they still hadn't found anything for such a long time and three people had already died, quietly and without their notice. If this continued, then just how many more of them would die?

Moreover, they hadn't even been able to see this enemy. Those that died must have instantly died. The difference in strength was too great!

Even with a lucky chance in front of them, continuing to struggle for it when they didn't even have the strength to obtain it was just the actions of a fool.

“Let's get out of here.”

A Heavenly Demon Seven Star from White Stone Tower concurred.

“You want to retreat? We’re about to find it soon, so why would we retreat? If we leave now, then all of our efforts would be wasted.” High Lord Sandlight shook his head as he spoke.

“I agree. There are already some clues appearing. As people that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, we should already be prepared to die. How can there not be dangers on the road of martial arts?”

A High Lord echoed. His name was High Lord Sky Eye. Like High Lord Sandlight, he too came from Five Color Tower.

After hearing that High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye wanted to stay, the two previously speaking martial artists glared at them as if they were crazy.

“If you want to stay so badly then I won’t stop you. Let’s go!” The High Lord from Great Ax Tower said, raising his foot to leave.

High Lord Sandlight shook his head, “How unfortunate. If you stayed, then we might have been able to find it in another hour. Now, it seems that...”

As High Lord Sandlight spoke to here, his eyes suddenly flashed with a thick killing intent. Demon essence erupted from his body!

“Die!”

He drew out a saber from his spatial ring and slashed down at the leaving High Lord’s back!

A sharp saber light cut through space; wind howled!

This High Lord from Great Ax Tower was not some common martial artist. Although he was slightly worse than High Lord Sandlight, it wasn’t by much. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had kept absolute vigilance of his surroundings, not even relaxing if his so-called squad was guarding him. Towards those cruel individuals that walked the killing road, having someone aim at their back was a completely normal matter!

The Great Ax Tower High Lord’s eyes flashed with an angry light. He suddenly swiveled around, and a sword jumped into his hand as if it were alive, cutting out!

Bang!

Demon essence violently collided. The Great Ax Tower High Lord gave a stuffy cough and drew back. After all, he had to quickly counterattack and his strength was also weaker. With this sword strike, he had suffered a loss. But, it was only a loss – he hadn’t been injured.

As he retreated several dozen feet, the Great Ax Tower High Lord’s eyes were blood red as he said, “Sandlight, do you want to

die!?”

“Hehe...” High Lord Sandlight sneered. Then, he actually put away his saber, as if he didn’t want to continue fighting.

“You...” The Great Ax Tower wasn’t willing to forgive this insult. With anger rising in his heart, he was about to take a step forwards and attack again, when at this moment, he quietly groaned and his body shook. Under everyone’s eyes, his entire body disintegrated into nothing, all of the blood in his body evaporating into a mist even as the rest of him turned into flying ash. All of his blood vitality was turned into a wisp of red light that flowed into a mound on the ground.

This sudden change stunned the youth from the White Stone Tower. A chill crept up his back. However, he didn’t have time to figure out how the Great Ax Tower High Lord had instantly died. All he was thinking was that he was in grave danger. Whether it was the two High Lords from Five Color Tower or this danger zone, everything here was a deathtrap waiting to kill him!

Without saying anything further, the youth from White Stone Tower turned around and fled!

“Where do you think you’re going?”

Beside the youth, the other martial artist from Five Color Tower, High Lord Sky Eye, was already attacking!

A spear thrust forth, straight towards the youth's back!

At the same time, High Lord Sandlight also attacked. His saber cut off the White Stone Tower youth's escape routes!

In terms of strength, this youth from White Stone Tower was only a Heavenly Demon Seven; he simply wasn't a match for any High Lord, much less a pincer attack!

Only able to face one, the White Stone Tower youth blocked High Lord Sky Eye's attack, but the burst of demon essence from High Lord Sandlight swept over him, causing him to vomit blood, severely wounded.

“Hehe, be relieved that you will be honored as my living sacrifice!”

High Lord Sandlight cut down with his saber, combining his attack with High Lord Sky Eye. In an instant, the White Stone Tower youth's bodily true essence protection shattered and an arm was bloodily chopped off.

The White Stone Tower youth miserably shrieked. High Lord Sandlight chuckled, stepped towards the White Stone Tower youth and slammed his palm forwards.

Bang!

The youth was easily struck by High Lord Sandlight, sent flying

into that mound.

Then, without even a moan, all of the youth's blood dried up, turning into a stream of light that submerged into the mound.

“Shit... just missing a bit more!”

High Lord Sandlight shook his head regretfully, but High Lord Sky Eye only laughed and said, “It doesn't matter. Although we're missing some blood essence... some other prey just delivered themselves to our door. Hahaha, this fool, instead of walking the path to heaven he chose to break into hell!”

High Lord Sky Eye turned his head towards a direction in the void and perniciously said, “This friend, you've already been watching for so long, come out so we can see you!”

Without any response from the empty void, High Lord Sky Eye sneered and said, “Don't think I'm just bluffing. I am called High Lord Sky Eye because my eyes can see through the nothingness like the eyes of heaven! In front of me, any illusion of camouflage you try is useless! Be a good boy and come out to die, or I'll attack you all the same!”

As High Lord Sky Eye spoke, he lifted his spear and pointed it towards a direction in the void.

At this moment, space warped, as if it were being torn apart. A blue-clothed youth stepped out. His hands were empty, his eyes

were calm, and he looked as if he were taking a brisk walk in the spring.

This youth was Lin Ming.

In the moment that space twisted, High Lord Sky Eye's complexion changed. It was true that his eyes were special and he could sense fluctuations of life in his surroundings. To say that he had the eyes of heaven was an exaggeration. He could find Lin Ming's hidden position, but he didn't know just how Lin Ming had hidden.

Originally, he had thought that Lin Ming was using some strange stealth symbol or miniature array, but he never guessed that Lin Ming would hide in the distortions of space.

To use space to hide, the method of highest skill was to rip apart space and hide in the space crack, isolating all energy and atmosphere away. But, within the Sky Spill Continent, this was a nearly legendary skill. Even the Eightfall War Emperor might not have the ability to do this.

The method that Lin Ming used was to warp the space around him, making the light curve around his body, smoothly passing over him thus hiding himself. This was an extremely skillful stealth technique. It also required a very high comprehension into the Concept of Space.

High Lord Sky Eye immediately realized that he might have run into a troublesome fellow.



But, when Lin Ming stepped out of the distorted space and High Lord Sky Eye saw just who he was, his complexion completely changed. “You are... Lin Ming!?”

High Lord Sandlight was also greatly shocked, “Lin Ming, you are still alive!?”

When the squads had all gathered at the meeting area 1500 miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, news had already spread that Lin Ming had gone missing. No one knew just where he went, but, according to the analysis of the events, the greatest probability was that he had perished!

High Lord Sandlight would never have imagined that he would encounter Lin Ming here!

He had gone missing for a full half month and then, by himself, had crossed thousands of miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss and had finally reached the very edge of the fatal forbidden death zone. How had he done this? What had he experienced during this time?

As High Lord Sandlight was thinking about all this, he was suddenly bewildered, “You... you broke through to the Revolving Core realm!”

High Lord Sandlight had just noticed Lin Ming’s cultivation. He was at the early Revolving Core realm!

Before entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had only been at a half-step Revolving Core. According to all common sense, he would need at least another half year to make a breakthrough. But, Lin Ming had actually only used a single month to make his breakthrough, and in the Eternal Demon Abyss of all places!

Combined with the news that Lin Ming had gone missing, there was only one possibility. That was... Lin Ming had stumbled across a lucky chance, and it was also a massive lucky chance!

# Chapter 640 – 10,000 Year Corpse Grass

---

“Damn, why is this fellow so lucky!” High Lord Sandlight was writhing with envy.

He wasn’t sure what this lucky chance was – whether it was completely used up, or whether there was still some remaining. It was impossible to find any of this out unless he killed Lin Ming.

Thinking of this, High Lord Sandlight’s heart surged with a thick killing intent. If he killed Lin Ming, not only would he be able to seize his lucky chance but he would also complete all the live sacrifices he needed. This was killing two birds with one stone!

However... High Lord Sandlight suppressed his murderous thoughts.

Although he had heard rumors of Lin Ming’s strength, how strong he was had yet to be confirmed. But, Lin Ming had still managed to come here all alone by himself, so that meant he inevitably must be capable in some manner. Not just that, but he also broke through to Revolving Core...

As High Lord Sandlight glanced over at High Lord Sky Eye, he saw that Sky Eye was wincing with fear. The two of them were among the top ranked High Lords of Five Color Tower, so there was no need to mention their strength. They were also two against one, so their advantage was even greater.

Even so, High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye didn’t have

absolute faith they could kill Lin Ming. If Lin Ming managed to escape after, then he would surely take revenge against them in the future.

They did not believe that their talent surpassed Lin Ming's.

Although High Lord Sandlight's killing intent had only been there for a fleeting second, it was still detected by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, "Is that how it is? You want to kill me to complete your little ceremony?"

High Lord Sandlight stiffened. He then laughed, smiling as he said, "Brother Lin, don't make such a joke. River water does not mix with well water, how about we each mind our own business and take our separate roads?"

"Take our separate roads?" Lin Ming's lips curved in a caustic smile, "If I was weak, then I fear I would already have been killed by you for a sacrifice!"

Hearing Lin Ming's obviously antagonistic words, High Lord Sandlight frowned and said, "It's true that we don't want to fight you, but that doesn't mean we fear you! You can't defeat us and we can't stop you from leaving! If you want to fight then we'll join you, as long as you aren't scared of attracting evil spirits here. Otherwise, if you don't want to fight, then I kindly ask you to immediately leave!"

“Leave?” Lin Ming coldly smiled. “If I’m not wrong, then that mound behind you is the grave of a 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, and you want to take it away!”

As soon as High Lord Sandlight heard the name of corpse grass, his complexion suddenly changed. He had journeyed into the Eternal Demon Abyss four times in a row now, and he naturally had a great deal of experiences and understanding as to what heavenly treasures there were here. But this was obviously Lin Ming’s first time here, how could he know so much?

“10,000 Year Corpse Grass is similar to the caterpillar fungus that mortals breed. It is a seed that parasitizes the skeleton of an Emperor level powerhouse, using that skeleton as its nourishment. When it grows, it will have to constantly devour the blood vitality of other martial artists. The reason that you killed all those people was in order to feed this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass until it was full. Then, it would be easier to capture. Am I right?”

Lin Ming’s understandings of the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass naturally came from the jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master gave him. With every word he spoke, High Lord Sandlight’s complexion became uglier and uglier. At the end, he looked extremely miserable and haggard. High Lord Sandlight’s body flashed with a thick killing intent as he said, “Lin Ming, are you saying that you want to divide the spoils?”

“Divide...?” Lin Ming shook his head. “If I must venture a guess, this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass still isn’t full yet. I’m a bit scared of this corpse grass too, but... if I feed both of you to it, then that should be enough!”

“You want to die!?” High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye flew into a volcanic rage. The two of them no longer spoke any nonsense; they attacked Lin Ming from both sides!

Lin Ming’s expression was calm. His right hand traced his spatial ring and the Purple Comet Spear came howling out!

Concept of Thunder!

Chi-la!

The vision of the High Lords were all obscured by the blinding light of thunder. Lin Ming thrust his spear out, arcs of purple lightning wrapping around it like thick pythons.

“What!?”

High Lord Sky Eye paled as he saw the arcs of lightning atop Lin Ming’s spear! All of the demon essence he sent out had been instantly swallowed up by that blinding light without a trace remaining!

In that split second, High Lord Sky Eye wasn’t even able to think about what had just happened. Atop Lin Ming’s spear, the purple thunder that contained the power of a battle spirit burst forth!

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, strengthening its

power greatly; this included even a Thunder Soul!

A battle spirit infused coiling dragon steel needle howled forth, flying straight towards the space between High Lord Sandlight's eyes!

“Ahh!”

In that moment, High Lord Sandlight's pupils shrank. With a panicked cry, he cut down on the coiling dragon steel needle!

With a deafening sound, the coiling dragon steel needle broke under High Lord Sandlight's attack. However, a wisp of battle spirit-infused lightning snuck into High Lord Sandlight's body, instantly paralyzing all of the demon essence within him.

In an exchange between masters, the briefest moment of paralysis was enough to determine life and death!

Puff!

High Lord Sandlight felt a cold feeling in his chest as an icy long spear stabbed at him, ripping apart his true essence and thrusting straight through his body!

As the long spear entered his body, true essence erupted. High Lord Sandlight's body shook and blood shot into the wind!

“Don’t –”

High Lord Sandlight’s words were abruptly cut off mid-sentence. The violent and tyrannical true essence that Lin Ming poured into High Lord Sandlight’s body rushed out from his orifices and head, directly smashing his organs and brain apart!

As High Lord Sky Eye saw this, he was terrified. An inexplicable chill rose up his back, as if his spirit was escaping into the heavens.

He never thought that this would happen. Two against one, in just two breaths of time, High Lord Sandlight had been instantly killed.

Without any further words, High Lord Sky Eye turned around and fled!

Lin Ming sneered. He stepped forwards, and the space between his feet seemed to shrink. In a single step, Lin Ming crossed several hundred feet and appeared right in front of High Lord Sky Eye.

“Lin Ming, don’t force me! Ahhhh!”

High Lord Sky Eye loudly shouted, his entire body turning a deep dark red, as if all of his blood was seeping out from him. Obviously, he wanted to use a secret technique of his race, but as this was only halfway completed, Lin Ming’s spear had already pierced towards him.



In that instant, time around High Lord Sky Eye seemed to slow down.

Puff!

A spear easily stabbed through High Lord Sky Eye's chest. With a twist, High Lord Sky Eye instantly died!

After taking High Lord Sky Eye and High Lord Sandlight's spatial rings, the phantoms of infernal energy were scattered by Lin Ming into pure infernal energy and absorbed by him.

On his arm, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo solidified even more. The wings became increasingly full, and the feathers became more and more detailed and clear...

Lin Ming glanced down. His Heavenly Demon Tattoo had finally reached the late ten-winged stage!

From when he entered the Eternal Demon Abyss until now, Lin Ming had killed a total of six High Lords. Even so, their infernal energy had only allowed his Heavenly Demon Tattoo to grow to the late ten-winged stage. If he wanted to reach the peak of 10 wings, as well as go from 10 wings to twelve, then every step would be increasingly difficult! The hardship of becoming a twelve-winged High Lord could be imagined.

Picking up High Lord Sky Eye and High Lord Sandlight's corpses, he tossed them over to the mound. As the two corpses flew close to

the mound, they seemed to evaporate, their bodies rapidly aging, their bones melting, and all of their blood vitality turning into two thin red wisps that sank into the ground without a trace.

After swallowing these two wisps of red light, the mound trembled a few times and then slowly subsided. Even the surrounding energy field weakened.

Lin Ming stood aside, quietly watching the changes of the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass.

Ten thousand years. To a wild and ancient type of grass like this, in truth, that only meant it was at a young, growing stage.

A young corpse grass like this was already terrifying. Although its striking power was weak, it actually had a very special ability. This was that it could compress the energy left behind by the dead Emperor level powerhouse into a predator force field, using this force field to kill its prey.

This sort of force field was absolutely terrifying; it had at least 10% of the dead Emperor level powerhouse's strength. If a High Lord level martial artist were to step inside, they would be instantly killed!

However, the use of this predator force field had severe limits. It took a thousand years for the corpse grass to concentrate enough energy to form this force field, and this force field could only be used several times before being exhausted of its energies. Afterwards, once the corpse grass had finished eating, it would fall

into a state of deep sleep.

This was the so-called blood sacrifice that High Lord Sandlight had mentioned. He had wanted to use other martial artists to rapidly exhaust the corpse grass' force field of its energy, forcing it into a deep sleep where he would then be able to capture it.

Lin Ming also had this plan.

At this time, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass had already eaten its fill and was beginning to fall into a deep sleep. Now, it would begin to further its growth as well as gather energy for its next predator force field.

Of course, this was something that would only happen a thousand years from now.

“What do you plan on doing with this corpse grass?” Demonshine asked.

“I’ll raise it.”

Lin Ming casually responded.

Besides all this, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass had another function, and that was to raise it, feeding it blood essence and Blood Demon Crystals. This corpse grass would gather this energy and purify it, condensing into a powerful energy field in its surroundings. If one were to practice in this energy field, the

energy they could absorb would be much more pure and rich. Naturally, the effects of practice were superior to using Blood Demon Crystals.

Lin Ming patiently waited until the force field around the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass dissipated until only 10% of its energy was left. Then, he linked his hands together and began shooting off several dozen true essence seals towards the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, creating an array that isolated it from the surrounding energy.

Then, Lin Ming took out his Purple Comet Spear, preparing to break apart the mound.

At this time, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass suddenly rose in alert.

“Ohh!”

A piercing scream came out from the mound, spreading to the ears. This cry was like the sad and mournful groans of ghosts. It was hard to imagine that this was a sound made by a plant.

Lin Ming thought little of this. His spear thrust towards that mound of earth!

After using up the force field energy that it had accumulated for a thousand years, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass was no longer terrifying. Even High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye had dared to capture it, much less someone like Lin Ming.

Within the mound, there was a blood red plant. Amidst this plant's roots was a distorted face, and under this face was a fist-sized ball that looked as if it were made of meat. This ball rapidly beat as if it were a heart!

For a plant to grow into this sort of appearance, it was truly ghastly.

After its nest was torn apart by Lin Ming, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass let out increasingly discordant cries. Its entire body shaking as if it wanted to dig deep into the earth, but, how could Lin Ming let it go so easily? With just a few seals of his hand, he completely blocked off the surrounding space!

With a jab of his spear, the 10,000 Year Old Corpse Grass was plucked out by Lin Ming!

# Chapter 641 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts Again

---

After being pricked by Lin Ming's spear, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass fiercely struggled, sending out ear-piercing screams as it shook.

As Lin Ming saw the true appearance of this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, his eyebrows twisted together. This little thing was truly unsightly, in fact, it was extremely ugly.

Demonshine chortled, "Hehe, this thing is a heavenly treasure to a corpse sect. A corpse sect martial artist would definitely pay an exorbitantly high price to buy this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass!"

Corpse sect... Lin Ming was aware that there were some martial artists that would collect the bodies of powerhouses and use them to refine weapons, create puppets, or even seize their bodies. For instance, the Seven Profound Valley's Mugu Buyu could have been classified as a type of corpse sect martial artist.

Lin Ming wrapped this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass in layers of seals before stashing it away into a jade box.

"Lin Ming, where do we go now?" Demonshine asked. The two of them had already reached the 1200 mile radius zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss. If they went much closer, they would approach the 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone.

This 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone was an area where even birds couldn't cross. Entry into it meant absolute death!

As for those places near this 1000 mile radius forbidden zone, those were also extremely dangerous.

Lin Ming asked, "Did the Demon Emperor enter the 1000 mile radius forbidden zone in the past?"

"Of course." Demonshine scoffed as if this were something that simply didn't need to be asked. "The 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone is only a relative name given to it. If your cultivation is high enough, then although you might not be able to freely come and go as you please, you don't need to fear it too much. In the past, when the Demon Emperor stayed here for twenty some years, most of that time was in the 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone!"

"I see."

Lin Ming wasn't crazy enough to think he had the qualifications to enter such a place. His plan was to come to the edge of this 1000 mile radius forbidden zone; it would be his best opportunity for finding lucky chances. But, if he couldn't find anything, he had still broken through to the Revolving Core realm. Now he had the ability to return to the South Horizon Region.

Towards someone like Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming definitely wasn't his match. But, when it came to those first stage Life Destruction Elders of the South Horizon Region, Lin Ming believed that he

could kill them.

.....

In a flash, several days passed. Lin Ming had been wandering around the 1100 to 1000 mile radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss. His days here were actually quite peaceful.

Until this moment, when Demonshine’s voice suddenly sounded out in his mind, “Lin Ming, in the front to the right, 10 miles away, there are people there!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming was startled, “How many?”

“I’m not sure, they are too far away right now. I only felt a fluctuation of energy, but this fluctuation should be from a martial artist, not an evil spirit.”

Lin Ming pondered for a moment, “Ok, let’s go look for them!”

There were many advantages to being together with other martial artists. Lin Ming quickly displayed his movement technique and rushed towards the direction that Demonshine had indicated.

However, just as he took a single step he felt the ground beneath him start to suddenly shake. Far away, he could see the ground splitting apart, a plume of black energy gushing out of the earth and shooting towards the skies!



“Mm?”

Lin Ming was shocked. What was happening?

“Something’s wrong!” Demonshine’s voice changed. “The infernal energy has begun to frantically move, and those several people I discovered are now running towards here!”

As Demonshine finished speaking, Lin Ming could see several moving figures within the endless fog. They were all running towards the Eternal Demon Abyss as if their lives depended on it!

Just as this thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, his complexion immediately changed. He could see that behind these people were massive black clouds, chasing them down like a massive tsunami!

And these black clouds contained a terrifying energy!

“Damn!”

Lin Ming cursed in his mind. He swiveled on the balls of his feet and ran away.

He could no longer afford the time to think about what this was. The jade slip left behind by the Polaris Tower Master had never mentioned something like this.

Lin Ming was fast, but the people behind him weren't slow either. Because of that slight delay, they had already rushed up to just several hundred feet from Lin Ming.

In the instant that Lin Ming turned around, he could clearly make one of the people.

It was Duanmu Qun!

There was no longer time to ask what was going on. Lin Ming's feet stepped upon Golden Rock Shattering the Void and he shot forwards at the limits of his speed.

The massive tsunami of dark clouds was like an ancient great beast, swallowing everything that it passed by. As the black clouds surged forth, they rose nearly 1000 feet high into the sky. The energy inherent within them caused anyone to lack any courage to face it.

But, wanting to dodge these demonic clouds of infernal energy by flying was impossible; this was because flying was impossible within the Eternal Demon Abyss. In terms of speed, the demonic clouds were even several times faster than a normal martial artist! As everyone ran with all their might, they could still see that the black tsunami behind them was closing in!

“Ahh!”

A vague scream broke out. Lin Ming didn't need to look back to know that a martial artist had been swallowed up by those dark clouds. His fate could be imagined!

As the infernal energy around him twisted into stormy currents, Lin Ming used the Concept of Space, shrinking the space beneath his feet and displaying the limit of his speed. He was faster than everyone else behind him, but he still wasn't as fast as that tsunami of demonic clouds!

But at this moment, a sharp light flashed in his eyes. In front of him, at the very edge of the thick fog, he could make out a black mountain peak!

Looking at the height of that mountain, it had to be several thousand feet high.

Lin Ming was overjoyed. Without words, he immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void and rushed straight to the top of that mountain peak!

Although seeing a mountain didn't mean it was close, because of the fog that obscured his vision, when Lin Ming saw the mountain peak it was already not too far away.

With his extreme speed, he reached the base of the mountain in just several dozen breaths of time!

Using his max speed, Lin Ming rushed to the peak in a single go.

As he turned around, he could see at the bottom the mountain there were several other martial artists who had set foot on the black mountain and were racing to the top.

Now, the tsunami of demonic black clouds was near. As it surged forwards, even the ground beneath him trembled. Looking at how terrifying this cloud was, Lin Ming feared that even this mountain would break under its impact.

“Just what was that?” Lin Ming asked, frightened.

“Hehe, you’re quite lucky. Those black clouds are an eruption from the Eternal Demon Abyss. Normally, after the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, it will enter into a stable period and not erupt for decades or centuries. But, I don’t know what happened this time, so I said that you’re lucky...” Demonshine’s facetious voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind. When the Demon Emperor had stayed in the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had also faced these eruptions.

“This is an eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Lin Ming was shocked. The Eternal Demon Abyss only erupted every several decades or even centuries. When it did erupt, it would spit out a massive amount of infernal energy as well as Demon God Bones and the terrifying evil beings from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

After the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the energy here would all be in chaos, with layers upon layers of danger zones appearing everywhere. This was the time when the chance of dying in the Eternal Demon Abyss was the highest, but, this also

meant that this was the time for the luckiest chances. Thus, when the Eternal Demon Abyss had just had an eruption was also the time when the highest amount of martial artists would enter.

At this moment, Lin Ming couldn't bother with these details. All he heard was a loud banging noise as the massive tsunami of black clouds smashed into the mountain, creating turbulent flows of energy thousands of feet high. The black mountain peak trembled. It seemed as if it couldn't withstand this massive impact force and could collapse at any moment!

A great chunk of the mountain was directly ripped away by the tsunami of demonic clouds. A martial artist that hadn't climbed fast enough cried out miserably as he was directly sucked up by the black clouds, disappearing without a trace.

But at the front of the group, Duanmu Qun and the rest had already rushed to the peak, luckily avoiding the impact of the black clouds.

Lin Ming looked down. Not too far away, he could see that the always refined and calm Duanmu Qun was panting, his forehead dripping with sweat and his face flushed red. In that horrifying encounter just now, he had obviously consumed a great deal of energy.

Behind Duanmu Qun, there were also two Fey Heavenly Demon Seven Star martial artists as well as three Giant Demon martial artists.

Those two Fey martial artists were Feng Shen and Lan Xin.

As for the Giant Demon martial artists, Lin Ming only knew one of them; Great Ax Tower's Blackstone.

Blackstone was also a descendant of a Holy Land. As someone that came from a Giant Demon Holy Land, his talent was no less than Feng Shen's.

“Lin Ming!?”

When Duanmu Qun first saw Lin Ming, he was incomparably shocked. Before this, he had heard from Lan Xin's own mouth about Lin Ming's fate. He thought that Lin Ming had already perished here, but he never would have imagined he would see him right now, in these circumstances.

As the others noticed Lin Ming, Feng Shen also saw him. He was a bit stunned, but then soon felt relieved. He hadn't believed that someone like Lin Ming would die here, and his faith now seemed rewarded.

The one who was the most surprised was Lan Xin. She had personally experienced that demon bone danger zone and knew how terrifying it was. She had seen him walk back to that danger zone and not return after an hour. Although she said that Lin Ming was missing, her heart had already determined that Lin Ming had died there. But, she never expected that she would see Lin Ming in front of her right now.

Did he break out of that danger zone by himself and travel the thousands of miles across the Eternal Demon Abyss until finally reaching the central region?

How had he done this?

It wasn't just Lan Xin that thought this unbelievable, but also others. Travelling by oneself was much, much more dangerous than forming a team, and Lin Ming didn't even have a guide!

But at this moment, Feng Shen's heart stirred. Stunned, he looked at Lin Ming and said, "You broke through to Revolving Core?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled at Feng Shen, "Brother Feng Shen, I'm glad to meet you here. I just happened to stumble across a relatively safe place in the Eternal Demon Abyss and made a lucky breakthrough."

Lin Ming's casual few words left everyone flabbergasted.

There are safe zones in the Eternal Demon Abyss? Breaking through to Revolving Core here? Aren't you just wanting to die?

Moreover, Lin Ming's cultivation had only just reached the half-step Revolving Core realm previously. According to a reasonable rate of progression, it should have taken him at least half a year. How had he managed to achieve this so quickly?

Did he find some lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss?

This was the only explanation!

“Brother Lin has really good luck, hm!” Blackstone sourly said. Lin Ming’s breakthrough in this journey to the Eternal Demon Abyss had surpassed the totality of his harvests so far.

Good luck?

Lan Xin wasn’t sure, but in the instant she discovered that Lin Ming had made a breakthrough, she already knew deep within herself just where Lin Ming had found his lucky chance.

Initially, back when they were in that danger zone, Lin Ming had casually made an excuse to go back because he had lost a spatial ring. But, the truth was that he had discovered some lucky chance there, thus he went back to look for it!

But... there was a powerful and fearful evil being lurking within that danger zone, so strong that it only needed a second to kill a High Lord level powerhouse! In that sort of situation, how could Lin Ming have discovered a lucky chance and how could he have taken that lucky chance from the keeping of that evil being?

How had any of this been done?

Lan Xing subconsciously covered her mouth.



Currently, she only felt that this Lin Ming in front of her was increasingly mysterious.

# Chapter 642 – Straying Into the Forbidden Zone

---

“Lan Xin, what’s wrong?”

Duanmu Qun noticed Lan Xin’s change in expression and asked her with a true essence sound transmission. Lan Xin responded with her guess, and Duanmu Qun was dazed for a moment, his eyelids jumping.

Indeed, finding a lost spatial ring was a weak excuse to return to a danger zone. Duanmu Qun hadn’t thought too much of it, but now that he carefully remembered these details, there were a number of questionable points.

First, Lin Ming was meticulous and cautious as well as strong. Could such a character really lose their spatial ring and not know about it? Second, according to Lan Xin, Lin Ming had led the squad to rush out of the deathtrap and had even changed directions midway. Was that really just a coincidence?

Lin Ming wasn’t a fool. Since he had the confidence to go back, he had the confidence to deal with the evil being in that danger zone. Then, it wasn’t surprising for him to seek treasures in a danger zone either!

At the thought of this, Duanmu Qun felt daunted. His group had also encountered several danger zones, and he had even witnessed one of his teammates die a tragic death. He was fully aware just how terrifying the Eternal Demon Abyss was! Here, there were

lucky chances everywhere, but that didn't mean one could obtain them just by sheer luck. One needed to be strong enough or at least have the ability to take it, otherwise, all they would do is lose their life.

Lin Ming, what was his secret? Not only did he break through the countless dangers of the Eternal Demon Abyss but he even closed up here and broke through to Revolving Core!

His strengths were truly hidden!

Duanmu Qun felt more and more awed by Lin Ming. To him, Lin Ming only felt unfathomable. But on the side, Blackstone was unaware of all these factors. He said, "If I had Brother Lin's luck, then I might have been able to become a four-star Demon King..."

A so-called four-star Demon King was the same as the human Life Destruction realm. Blackstone wasn't 30 years old yet. If he could really become a four-star Demon King now, then even the Eightfall War Emperor's talent would be inferior to his.

Towards such an obviously daggered compliment filled with jealousy, Lin Ming only faintly smiled, not explaining anything.

"Hehe, luck is also a kind of talent." A martial artist said. He was a Goliath High Lord from Great Ax Tower.

As he was in the middle of speaking, the mountain suddenly shook. At the foot of the mountain, a massive shelf suddenly

collapsed, washed away by the immense black currents at the base. A crack spread up at a shocking rate, splitting the peak of the mountain in half. The black torrents of energy surged and burst through the crack and shot into the sky!

The Goliath martial artist that was just speaking was actually flushed away by this mighty flood of energy!

“Ahh!”

Screams filled the air. The current of energy was like a highly corrosive acid. Half of the Goliath martial artist's body had melted away, leaving nothing but bones!

This scene took place in front of everyone, leaving them all shocked. They all hurriedly retreated backwards.

The Goliath martial artist only had half a face left; the other side was a bloody mess. As his face distorted in pain, he reached out his hand, begging for the others to help him. But who would help him at this time? As they all witnessed the pitiful Goliath martial artist, everyone took several more steps back, their complexions paling.

Kacha!

The Goliath martial artist's foot bones broke. His body collapsed to the ground as if he were made of mud, instantly dead.

As Lin Ming saw this, his palms became wet with sweat and his

heart chilled. A moment ago, he had been secretly on guard about the shaking energy underneath the Goliath martial artist's feet, but he didn't think the consequences would be so serious!

Bang!

The black mountain peak shook again. Everyone was greatly startled, all of them blanching and preparing to retreat at any time!

Who knew when this mountain peak would crack again and another terrifying current of energy would erupt.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Great tracts of the mountain burst apart, collapsing into the ground, falling into the raging black current and completely disappearing.

Seeing all of this, the martial artists felt a chill creep up their backs. No one moved. If this black mountain collapsed, then no one here could even think about living anymore.

The group continued to completely concentrate on the raging current of energy below. Fortunately, the mountain stopped collapsing. After half an incense stick of time, the turbulent waves of energy beneath the mountain began to die down.

Everything at the foot of the mountain was already washed away,

leaving it all in broken chaos. Fortunately, besides that eruption just now, there wasn't a similar eruption.

Everyone felt as if they had just survived the apocalypse. However, before everyone could catch their breath, a High Lord suddenly grimaced and said with anguish, "We've probably entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone!"

"What!? The 1000 mile forbidden zone?"

"No way!"

These few words caused all of the martial artists present to feel a deep and unsettling fear. They had all escaped in a hurry from that dark tsunami of energy, so how could any of them have worried about what direction they were going? Every other direction had been blocked by that mighty flood, so this was the only direction they could run in.

Fleeing and fleeing, they had actually fled into the 1000 mile forbidden zone!?!?

Lin Ming frowned. Looking ahead, the black flood of energy had passed and the fog had been washed away. All that was left behind was a broken land, as if they had reached the end of the world.

"Demonshine, didn't you just say that the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted just now? If the Eternal Demon Abyss erupts, shouldn't the energy flow come from the center and disperse outwards? How

could the energy flow from outside to inside, trapping us in the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

Demonshine shook his head, “That just now was only a small-scale eruption; it came from one of the Eternal Demon Abyss’ surrounding cracks, refluxing back to the center. If the main center of the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, then that would be a serious problem. The Eternal Demon Abyss is 10,000 miles wide. If the energy burst out from there, then I fear the explosion would be 100,000 feet high or more, directly breaking through the heavens and blotting out the skies. In that sort of outrageous current, even my master would have to retreat lest he accidentally fall in and die, much less someone like you. If you were truly caught up in something that great, do you still think even a little bit of you would be left?”

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. Indeed, if the 10,000 mile wide Eternal Demon Abyss erupted with a massive amount of energy, then that large-scale outpouring of energy would be truly terrifying!”

“What do we do now?” All the martial artists present, even if they were Holy Land descendants, had a tinge of fear in their eyes. The Eternal Demon Abyss was not some general forbidden zone. There had been countless geniuses and powerhouses that had fallen in the 1000 mile forbidden zone. None of these people had been any worse than them!

“I don’t even know what I should be afraid of. I heard that there had once been two Titled Asuras that had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone, and neither of them returned, both of them died

here!”

As the martial artist spoke, he subconsciously glanced over at Lin Ming. Lin Ming was also a Titled Asura, but, in this sort of situation, any sort of Asura was useless. Let alone an outstanding young elite, hadn't there even been a great number of Emperor level powerhouses that had died here?

“Everyone calm down! No one panic!” A Fey High Lord from White Stone Tower said. Although there was a great number of talents within the Fey race, there weren't many that were willing to stay as High Lords. The reason was rooted in the innate characteristics of their race. The Fey were naturally arrogant, lofty, and had a deep sense of pride. Many of them simply weren't willing to serve others.

“This is just the very edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone; we haven't yet fully entered deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss. For these last tens of thousands of years, all those Emperor level powerhouses that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss have died at the center. We are only at the very edge. If our luck is good, we can still leave!”

The Fey High Lord's words were obviously to placate the martial artists. But at this time, many of them were willing to be consoled in such manner. Another martial artist echoed this sentiment and said, “What the High Lord isn't wrong. Let's descend the mountain now and begin to walk back. As long as we put in the effort, we can do anything, and that means we can also leave here!”

Everyone had a herd mentality at this time. Now that there were



people willing to take the lead, everyone was relieved. Just as everyone was about to leave, Lin Ming said, “Wait a minute!”

“Mm? Is there something wrong?” Duanmu Qun looked over at Lin Ming. Right now, he placed Lin Ming’s opinion in very high regard; he even suspected that Lin Ming had been to the Eternal Demon Abyss before.

“How can we wait right now? We are in the most dangerous area of the Eternal Demon Abyss! The longer we delay, the more danger we’ll be in!” A High Lord said, exasperated.

Lin Ming said, “The black torrent just passed. There is still a great amount of this black energy in the ground. These energies can easily take your life. If you accidentally fall into a swamp or hole, then you won’t have any feet left.

There were places in the Eternal Demon Abyss where the soil was soft. If this black energy flowed inside, it would mix with the soil and form a muddy swamp. If anyone were to fall in this, the consequences could be imagined.

Lin Ming’s reasoning was rational and succinct. The High Lord’s lips twitched, but he didn’t oppose this.

Everyone decided to wait for several hours. During this time, everyone sat in meditation, trying their best to restore themselves to their peak condition.

All of them were readying to travel the road of hell.

Lin Ming also entered into the ethereal martial intent as he mediated, constantly consolidating his cultivation.

After several hours passed, there weren't any additional dangers. Around the black mountain peak, the residual black energy began to dissipate into a black mist, fading into a fog as it turned from black to gray. As everyone saw this, they finally realized just where the pervasive fog of the Eternal Demon Abyss came from. This fog was actually formed from the violent energy flows that erupted from the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“We can go now.”

Duanmu proposed as he glanced over at Lin Ming.

“Mm, we can.”

Lin Ming stood up. This was the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone. He never thought that he would stumble his way into here.

As the group of people descended the mountain, they judged their position from the stars and began to cautiously make their way outwards to the edge. According to the estimation of a High Lord who had been to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were no more than a hundred miles into the 1000 mile forbidden zone. There was still 900 miles until they reached the true center of the

Eternal Demon Abyss, so the chances of them making it out of here were still very high.

As Lin Ming walked, he raised his vigilance to the limit. If this area was called a 1000 mile absolute death forbidden zone, then there were naturally reasons why it was so terrifying. If he wanted to safely leave this land, he feared that it wouldn't be so easy.

“Demonshine, you followed the Demon Emperor and stayed here for 20 some years. Do you know what dangers there are here and why so many geniuses died here?”

Demonshine shook his head, “The Demon Emperor's strength back then far surpassed your current self. The things that weren't dangerous to him are fatal traps for you. For instance, that small scale eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The Demon Emperor also encountered that twice before. To him, there wasn't even the slightest bit of danger, but for you a lot, there were actually two of you that died. If you want me to analyze dangers, then how would I analyze them? Ask me again if you bump into something!”

## Chapter 643 – Are We Out?

---

After this eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the group together with Lin Ming had a total of 10 people.

Of these, there were four Heavenly Demon Seven Stars: Feng Shen, Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and Blackstone. All of them were Holy Land descendants. The other six were all High Lords, including Lin Ming.

The 10 individuals here were all top masters, and there was even Duanmu Qun, whose strength approached that of a Tower Master.

The group was on alert the entire time as they walked to the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, their speed very slow; it was even slower than when they first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. The 10 of them all sent out their perception to the limit in order to avoid any evil spirit ambushing them.

However, as they walked, nothing happened.

50 miles, 80 miles, 100 miles, 120 miles...

These martial artists were fairly aware of just how far they walked. As they crossed 100 miles, by all reasoning they should have already left the 1000 mile forbidden zone, or at least approached the edge.

As the martial artists realized this, they all became incomparably

excited. Had they really made it out?

The closer they approached the edge of the forbidden zone, the more vigilant everyone became. The 1000 mile radius forbidden zone was known as the road of no return. One entered, there was no coming out. Not even birds were an exception. This rumor had been passed down through the countless years, so who knew what sort of danger they would encounter once they finally reached that critical threshold!

Like this, the group walked another 20 to 30 miles with jitters. In total, they had probably walked 150 miles, but nothing had happened yet!

Had they really made it out!?!?

All of them martial artists felt as if they were in a dream. They had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone and not encountered any danger at all. As a group, they had calmly entered and then calmly left...

“This 1000 mile forbidden zone isn’t as terrifying as the legends say it is. Didn’t we just safely go in and out?” Blackstone said with a sigh of relief. There was a bit of disappointment in his tone. This so-called 1000 mile forbidden zone had truly been exaggerated.

“Perhaps there were originally many people that died in the 1000 mile forbidden zone, thus there were rumors made about it where no one ever returned. The truth is that there is just a great deal of danger here, but our luck is good and we didn’t meet any and just

walked out like that.” A High Lord agreed.

“Haha, for me to have entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone in my life and not die, I truly haven’t lived my life in vain... but, what a pity, we didn’t find any lucky chances. If we could dig up one or two earth-step Demon God Bones in the 1000 mile forbidden zone then we would be rich!” A High Lord from Heavenly Cloud Tower said with some regret. Just now they had all been carefully watching out for evil spirits, so who was of the mind to search for Demon God Bones? Now that he thought about it, this was truly unfortunate. These frightening rumors proved just how powerful baseless gossip could be, even causing so much trouble now.

“Hehe, if you want to go and search then you’re fine to go back, no one’s blocking you. If you go back, you might be able to find an earth-step Demon God Bone.” Another High Lord said jokingly.

As the previously-speaking Heavenly Cloud Tower High Lord heard this, he suddenly had a troubled look on his face. That intensely terrifying experience just now had left a lingering fear in the back of his mind. He nervously laughed and said, “Haha, I just managed to carefully make it out, so I don’t think I would have the luck to do that again. Besides, if I’m alone, it’s much too dangerous.

These casual words aroused a thought in another High Lord’s mind. “This 1000 mile forbidden zone isn’t as dangerous as we thought. Everyone was being too cautious so we didn’t investigate to see if there were any treasures about. If we return now, then with the strength of us 10, even if we meet some danger we still might be able to deal with it. You all should know that no one has

entered this 1000 mile forbidden zone for the last several thousand years. All of them were scared witless by the rumors, so all of the treasures inside have gone untouched. The potential wealth inside is hard to imagine!”

As this High Lord spoke, some of the martial artists felt their hearts rise with greed. This was true. Ever since the terrifying rumors about this 1000 mile forbidden zone spread out, no one had gone inside for thousands of years. The surrounding grounds were already explored every 10 years so there wasn’t that much outside. But, inside the 1000 mile forbidden zone, there was definitely an abundance of heavenly treasures!

Moreover, the 1000 mile forbidden zone was so close to the Eternal Demon Abyss that there were probably many earth-step Demon God Bones here. There was even a chance that there might be a legendary heaven-step Demon God Bone!

And a heaven-step Demon God Bone was a treasure that not even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had. If they could find just one heaven-step Demon God Bone, then they would never have to worry about resources for the rest of their life. The talent of these martial artists wasn’t poor to begin with, and with a heaven-step Demon God Bone, they would inevitably be able to break through to the Emperor level!

Everyone glanced at each other. In the end, their eyes fell onto two people. One was Duanmu Qun, and the other was the Heavenly Cloud Tower’s High Lord Cloud Demon.

The two of them were recognized by the rest as being the

strongest amongst the group.

There was no need to talk about Duanmu Qun. He came from a super Holy Land, and after entering the Road of Emperor, his strength neared that of a Tower Master.

As for High Lord Cloud Demon, he was ranked amongst the top of Heavenly Cloud Tower's 16 High Lords. It had to be known that the High Lords of Heavenly Cloud Tower were originally known as being the strongest of the 12 Skysplit Towers. High Lord Cloud Demon's ranking was thus actually very valuable. His strength was likely no worse than the weakest Tower Master.

Duanmu Qun hesitated for a moment, undecided. If a martial artist didn't fight for every lucky chance in front of them, they would be resigned to a lifetime of mediocrity. But, this 1000 mile forbidden zone truly wasn't some normal danger zone. For these last thousands of years, countless rumors had originated from here and numerous peerless talents had perished. They had surprisingly walked out without much danger just now. Was that really just luck?

Once they returned and encountered a powerful evil spirit, they might all be annihilated!

Duanmu Qun couldn't help but glance over at High Lord Cloud Demon. High Lord Cloud Demon also didn't know what to do at this time. After another moment of pondering, he suggested a compromise, "Let's return 50 miles. This distance is probably at the threshold limit for the 1000 mile forbidden zone, we can stay in that area for a few hours. If we search there, our lucky chances will



be much better than those we find at the surrounding edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Aside from all that, if we encounter a powerful evil spirit then we are immediately returning!”

High Lord Cloud Demon’s suggestion was neither too reckless nor conservative. Everyone begin to respond.

“Great idea! Brother Cloud Demon’s advice is far too good.”

“Haha, Brother Cloud Demon is smart, great job!”

High Lord Cloud Demon’s suggestion truly was good. At this time, a single wrong step could cause all of them to die here, but this one idea could be called the best route.

All of the martial artists present looked excited, as if they were about to immediately find a heaven-step Demon God Bone themselves.

“Sooner is better than later, let’s go now!” The High Lord who first suggested this said with some impatience.

Duanmu Qun nodded, agreeing to follow the crowd back. But then, his heart suddenly stirred. As he looked over to Lin Ming to see what he thought about this, he saw that Lin Ming was actually standing there with a very solemn expression, his arms crossed against his chest and his head lowered as if he were deep in thought.

Everyone had already taken several steps, but Lin Ming was still meditating there, apparently without any intention of moving.

“Brother Lin, would you like to come with us?”

Duanmu Qun invited. He very much hoped that Lin Ming would go with them. There were simply far too many secrets on Lin Ming’s body. Duanmu Qun believed that if Lin Ming came with them to the 1000 mile forbidden zone, he would be a great help. Perhaps he would turn the tables on danger at a crucial moment or even save all of them.

Lin Ming seemed as if he didn’t hear at all, still standing there deep in thought.

“Brother Lin, shall we go together?” Duanmu Qun asked again.

“Lin Ming, hurry up and go otherwise you’ll be left behind!” High Lord Cloud Demon frowned as he said. Duanmu Qun had asked twice and Lin Ming didn’t even respond. This was very impolite of him.

“Haha, Brother Lin seems like he doesn’t want to go. Let him stay here, let’s go.” Blackstone’s eyes turned as he quickly interjected. As he spoke, he took two steps in fear that Lin Ming would change his mind and catch up.

Blackstone’s thoughts were very simple. Lin Ming hadn’t even gone into the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, yet he could

casually walk along the outer edges and find a lucky chance that allowed him to break through to Revolving Core. This sort of good luck was way too heaven-defying. He felt that his own luck was far inferior to Lin Ming's, and he didn't want to divide any of the spoils with him.

If the 10 of them divided a lucky chance, there wouldn't be much left to each of them to begin with. When that happened, this Lin Ming might squirrel away half of the treasure, leaving almost nothing for the rest of them to divide.

It wasn't just Blackstone who had this idea, but many other High Lords were thinking this. A High Lord said with a true essence sound transmission to his teammates, "Let's go, this Lin boy is probably too timid."

"That's right. If he doesn't come then there's one less share to divide out. Humph, the road to becoming a Peerless Emperor is filled with risks, what martial artists wouldn't dare to take them? Even if he is a peak Emperor level talent, he still needs to put forth as much effort as he can, otherwise he'll just waste all of his talent and end up an average nobody."

In these words, several martial artists also began moving. High Lord Cloud Demon also didn't wait for Lin Ming's decision. Only Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were looking at Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Of the three of them. Feng Shen most understood just how terrifying Lin Ming's strength was. As for Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin, they both knew of Lin Ming's ability. The reason that he could

seek lucky chances within the Eternal Demon Abyss was not because of luck, but because he had some strange secrets about it.

If Lin Ming came, they would definitely have to apportion part of their lucky chances, but this was far better than just throwing their lives away.

“Brother Lin, what are you thinking about?” After his first two questions weren’t answered, Duanmu Qun wasn’t angered in the least. In fact, his tone softened and his expression became gentle as he once more asked Lin Ming a question.

The other High Lords were already impatient from waiting. This time, after remaining silent for several breaths of time, Lin Ming finally opened his mouth and said, “I was thinking that... there’s something wrong about where we are...”

“Something’s wrong? What’s wrong?” Duanmu Qun’s chest tightened. If someone else had said this, he might have said they were far too fearful and suspicious of everything. But if Lin Ming said this, he didn’t dare to be negligent.

“I can’t say... If I could think of it, I wouldn’t have to think so hard.” Lin Ming shook his head. As he walked all this way, he always felt something strange at the back of his mind. When he asked Demonshine, even he wasn’t sure.

“Then you can stay here and slowly think about it, we’ll go first.” A High Lord chuckled. Although his words were fairly polite, the ridicule in them was obvious. To be so suspicious and scared even

after coming out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone, this could only be mental illness or acting.

‘You stay here and think about it, ah, I’m more afraid that you’ll catch up.’ Many martial artists thought at the same time.

# Chapter 644 – Quietly Approaching the Great Maw

---

“Duanmu, let’s go!” High Lord Cloud Demon glanced at Lin Ming with an unbelievable expression. Why was this fellow making such baseless claims to stir things up? They had already left the 1000 mile forbidden zone anyway.

Duanmu Qun still looked at Lin Ming, “Brother Lin, just what is going on?”

Lin Ming looked up from his thoughts, gazing at the dark distant crimson lands. After a long silence, he began to slowly say, “I feel that... we haven’t left the 1000 mile forbidden zone.”

“What!?”

Lin Ming’s words shocked everyone present!

“What kind of joke are you trying to play? Are you saying that all of us somehow became lost?”

“How is that possible? We were clearly walking in the correct direction based on the stars.”

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the stars were forever linked with the sky, static and unchanging. Thus, there was simply never a situation where one became lost. And, they had already walked

150 miles, so they should have walked 30 to 40 miles out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone.

“This fellow is an idiot, just ignore him. Come, let’s go.” A High Lord said. He had tried to be respectful by using a true essence sound transmission to speak to everyone before, but now he didn’t bother to. If everyone heard then they heard.

As Lan Xin heard Lin Ming, she was also a bit skeptical. Even if she thought Lin Ming’s claims weren’t true, there was still some basis in what he was saying and it wasn’t as if he were trying to be ostentatious. She asked, “Lin Ming, what do you think we should do then? Should we continue walking to the edge, returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss to look for lucky chances, or change directions?”

Lin Ming shook his head. He didn’t even really understand what was going on, so how could he even suggest to others what to do?

After listening to Lan Xin speak, another High Lord said, “Lan Xin, why are you asking him what to do? If he says to go in a different direction do you really expect us to listen to him and willingly enter into some deathtrap?”

In these dangerous times, no one was willing to place their lives in the hands of others. This was simply human nature.

Duanmu Qun was also in a dilemma. On one hand, he really did believe Lin Ming, but on the other hand, he couldn’t just stay here forever because of Lin Ming’s suspicious, not to mention that Lin

Ming couldn't even give a suggestion as to what to do right now.

As for Feng Shen, without another word, he sat down next to Lin Ming.

"Feng Shen, what are you doing?" A martial artist asked Feng Shen, unsure as to what he was doing.

"Waiting."

Feng Shen's simple response left everyone befuddled. What was he going to do? Wait here for Lin Ming to come up with some plan?

"Feng Shen, have you also turned into an idiot?" Blackstone was speechless. In his view, Feng Shen was a very solitary and opinionated person. But just because Lin Ming said that he had some vague suspicion, this Feng Shen fellow was actually going to sit down here and wait for him to think of something.

Wasn't this just a joke?

As the people were speaking, Lin Ming actually wasn't paying attention to them, he was communicating to Demonshine in his spiritual sea.

"Demonshine... do you know what's happening here?"

Lin Ming asked. All this way, he hadn't felt anything at the start,



but, slowly, he felt something was wrong, as if something was always aiming at him.

But even though he investigated his surroundings, he didn't find anything strange. Even when Demonshine released his perception, he still didn't find anything.

“You can't stay. But, waiting is useless. If you stay here then you'll inevitably be separated from everyone. When that happens and you stumble into some terrifying evil spirit then you won't even have a shield.”

“What you're saying is to follow them back into the 1000 mile forbidden zone?” Lin Ming frowned. To return without fully understanding what was going on, that seemed a bit too reckless and dangerous.

Demonshine said, “You staying here isn't a plan... in fact... we don't even know where we're going. We followed the stars and walked 150 miles but we still haven't left the 1000 mile forbidden zone; there is definitely something suspicious happening here. How about this, you follow them and place a mark down every 500 feet. Perhaps you might be able to discover something then.”

“Place down a mark... alright.” Lin Ming thought for a moment and agreed. He could only take this one step at a time and slowly discover just what was happening.

Initially, it had been Demonshine's big brother that had followed the Demon Emperor to stay here for 20 some years in the Eternal

Demon Abyss. Although Demonshine had inherited some of his big brother's memories, it was in a very limited capacity – he wasn't omnipotent or omniscient.

“Brother Duanmu, I'll go with you.” Lin Ming suddenly said.

“Oh?” Duanmu Qun was startled, revealing a bit of a puzzled expression. He didn't know just what Lin Ming had found or why he had changed his mind, but in any case, having Lin Ming accompany them was always a welcome idea.

“How come? Didn't you just say that there was something wrong?” A High Lord jeered. This Lin Ming said he wouldn't come but actually wanted to follow on their trail, his methods were quite disdainful.

Lin Ming didn't bother with him. There was nothing to say right now. Being able to leave here was his most important objective. All he could do was continue walking and see whether these people's judgements were correct. Of course... this was simply impossible.

“This fellow!” Seeing Lin Ming come, High Lord Cloud Demon couldn't refuse him. He could only bring the group and go back.

Lan Xin looked at Lin Ming with confusion, her lips moving. But, she didn't say anything in the end.

As for Feng Shen, he silently stood up and followed behind Lin Ming. He maintained absolute belief in Lin Ming's words right

now. If Lin Ming decided to go now, then he definitely had his reasons, it was just that the others didn't know or couldn't understand them.

As the group walked back, everyone remained cautious. Every 500 feet, Lin Ming would place down a symbol mark. The other martial artists naturally noticed this, but to them, this sort of petty action just seemed like a parlor trick.

After walking the return trip for 20 to 30 miles, there wasn't a single danger. Like this, some of the people began to relax.

It seemed... the 1000 mile forbidden zone wasn't as scary as it was made out to be.

“I wonder what we'll be able to find this time.”

“Haha, if we can find a high level earth-step Demon God Bone, then I will be satisfied!”

After not meeting any evil spirits during this long trek, several martial artists couldn't help but begin to jovially speak to each other. They were even thinking that they would be able to dig out a heaven-step Demon God Bone sometime soon.

“Don't be distracted, maintain your vigilance!” Duanmu Qun frowned, admonishing everyone.

“Got it, got it.” A martial artist laughed. Obviously, he didn't

really care. But just as he finished speaking, the smile froze on his face...

He stared blankly into the horizon. There, far away, seemed to be an illusionary black flame rising into the sky, connecting the heavens and earth, scorching the stars!

“That... what is that?” The martial artist gaped.

With his words, everyone noticed the great flame shooting in the sky. Because of that flame, the entire world became filled with black fog, as if the heavens themselves were covered by a great black curtain!

This scene alarmed everyone present. Several martial artists quickly moved forwards and the fog seemed to disperse in front of them. Now, they all saw the complete picture of that horrific fire...

That massive fire seemed to burn 100,000 feet into the sky. Because of the flame, the air around it distorted from the heat. The flame was completely different from a normal flame. It was transparent and blurry, as if it wasn't real at all. With the ethereal black fog covering it, it seemed hazy and unclear.

Underneath this black flame, at the bottom of the earth, there was a vast void, as black as night, darker than ink!

This void gave off a feeling as if the earth and space itself were split apart by a divine being, revealing an entrance to a dark and

horrifying world.

A boundless potent and vigorous energy escaped from this void. As everyone was enveloped in this energy, they felt a suffocating grief, making it hard for them to take a single breath!

Hazy, faintly, there seemed to be a desolate and sorrowful dirge playing near their ears...

“Heavens! That is... that is...!” High Lord Cloud Demon lifted his trembling hand and pointed a finger at the horizon, his voice shaking as he spoke. That endless black void at the ends of the earth, that was clearly... the Eternal Demon Abyss!

This was the true Eternal Demon Abyss!

Back in the annals of history, the number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent entered the Eternal Demon Abyss without returning!

“Impossible, this is impossible!” High Lord Cloud Demon’s face was wan as he shook his head. He was unable to accept this reality.

“We should still be around a thousand miles from the Eternal Demon Abyss... how could we possibly see it!?”

High Lord Cloud Demon’s few words shocked all the martial artists present silly.

“Eternal Demon Abyss!?!?”

“What!? Are you f\*cking joking with me!?”

Every single martial artist paled. Even Duanmu Qun was horrified and alarmed.

That was the Eternal Demon Abyss? Heavens!!!

The surrounding 1000 miles around the Eternal Demon Abyss was known as the absolute death forbidden zone. If they could see the Eternal Demon Abyss, then didn't that mean they were near it?

As everyone thought this, they felt their minds tremble, a bone-biting chill crawling up their backs. Before this, they had entered around 100 miles into the forbidden zone and then they had returned around 150 miles. By all rights, they should have already exited the 1000 mile forbidden zone with a few dozen miles to spare.

Then, they had returned 20 to 30 miles. This should only be the very edge of the 1000 mile forbidden zone!

But now with the Eternal Demon Abyss before them, it seemed they were only a few hundred miles away... how was this possible!?

At this time, Duanmu Qun's mind echoed with Lin Ming's words...

‘I feel that... we haven't left the 1000 mile forbidden zone.’

In essence, they had never left the forbidden zone – they had always walked towards the Eternal Demon Abyss! Whether they went forwards or backwards, they had always been walking towards the Eternal Demon Abyss!!

It wasn't just Duanmu Qun who realized this, but also the other martial artists.

Blackstone looked at Lin Ming, his lips trembling. The other High Lords also looked at Lin Ming, their hearts quaking. They had always been moving straight towards the Eternal Demon Abyss!

The Eternal Demon Abyss was like the maw of a giant beast, a trap that was just waiting for them to step in!

Even the past number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent had perished within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Once they entered, their fates could be imagined!

Thinking of this, High Lord Cloud Demon's expression became incomparably ugly. He turned to look at Lin Ming, his voice trembling as he asked, “Young Hero Lin, just what is happening here?”

Lin Ming let out a heavy breath. The situation was developing in the worst way. He spread his hands out, “I have no idea...”



# Chapter 645 – Closed Energy Field

---

Back when they thought they had left the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Lin Ming had said that something seemed wrong. But as to what it was, he hadn't known.

At that time, many of the martial artists had scoffed at him, derisively snorting at his thoughts. But now, no one dared to view Lin Ming's words with contempt anymore.

Those several martial artists that had suggested turning back and looking for lucky chances were already going green with regret. The great terror of the Eternal Demon Abyss had been widely known for thousands of years now. Everyone that entered must die, and not even birds could cross, how could any of this have been wrong?

There had been Titled Asuras and Tower Masters that didn't believe this rumors and tried to enter the 1000 mile forbidden zone to find their own lucky chances, but they had all died in here, regardless of who they were!

They had thought these rumors might have been exaggerations, but now, it seemed as if they were all true!

Facing such a terrifying Eternal Demon Abyss, they had actually made such a ridiculous and foolhardy decision to return and try to dig up some earth-step Demon God Bones... they must have been too tired of living!

“Young Hero Lin, we were confused, please, you must think of a way...”

The High Lord that suggested to return sounded as if he were crying. He looked helplessly at Lin Ming. Lin Ming had now become his final straw out of here. Although the hope he placed on Lin Ming was tremulous at best, it was still a faint hope.

Blackstone’s voice also shook, his voice bitter as he said, “Brother Lin, you are merciful and generous, please ignore when we were confused and mistaken. Before, you said that we hadn’t yet left the 1000 mile forbidden zone? Is there still hope of leaving here?”

As a descendant of a Holy Land, Blackstone was incomparably arrogant. But now he was so humbly apologizing; this was just a sigh of how messed up his state of mind was and how at a loss he was to all the events surrounding him.

Lin Ming glanced over at Blackstone. Naturally, he didn’t have time to care about such a trivial matter. The most important task at the moment was to figure out how to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss. If he could leave, then he would rather he had been wrong. But unfortunately, matters had taken a turn for the worse.

He shook his head and said, “I don’t have any way right now.”

Hearing Lin Ming say this, all of the martial artists present felt their hearts sink with despair. That’s right, Lin Ming was not an immortal. Although he felt that something was wrong, that didn’t mean that he was able to lead them out of this hell. It was true that

he was a Titled Asura, but since ancient times, there had even been Titled Asuras that had died in this 1000 mile forbidden zone. In terms of strength, Lin Ming might even be weaker than Duanmu Qun and High Lord Cloud Demon.

“What do we do? What can we do?” The martial artists began to wallow in misery.

At this time, Lan Xin suddenly asked, “Young Hero Lin, aren’t we lost? Are the stars in the sky some form of illusion, deliberately misleading us towards the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “No... the guidance of the stars is correct. The problem lies underneath our feet. If I had to guess, then I would say that for every 100 miles we walk away from the Eternal Demon Abyss, we approach the Eternal Demon Abyss by 100 miles. If we were to walk towards the Eternal Demon Abyss for 100 miles, then we would be closer by 200 miles!”

“Before, we walked 150 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss and walked away from the Eternal Demon Abyss by 150 miles. This is a total of 450 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. Disregarding that minor distance now, we should be somewhere around 550 miles far from the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

As Lin Ming spoke, everyone felt chills crawl up their spine.

550 miles!

But now, looking at the position of the Eternal Demon Abyss, it didn't seem that far at all. If they just walked a few hundred more miles anywhere, they would eventually fall into the Eternal Demon Abyss! There would be nothing left of them!

Even the breezy and lofty Duanmu Qun paled at this moment. "Brother Lin, do we have any chance of leaving here?"

Lin Ming's expression was grim. He bowed his head and thought for a moment. Shaking his head, he said, "I don't know. We might be able to leave, or we might be trapped here forever too."

Lin Ming's words were truly demoralizing. But as everyone listened in, it was like they heard the dulcet tones of heaven.

Because Lin Ming had said the words, "We might be able to leave."

At this time, no matter how minor their hope was, something was better than nothing. To them, Lin Ming had become their final straw.

"Young Hero Lin, let's not leave yet. We'll move out once we figure out where we're going."

A martial artist hurriedly said.

The other martial artists began to respond, "Yes, ah, no one bother Young Hero Lin as he figures out a solution!"

“Keep guard; don’t let any evil spirits here affect Young Hero Lin!”

At this time, all of these martial artists tried to be as heroic and valiant as possible, attempting to raise their own value in Lin Ming’s eyes. They were all scared that he might abandon them because they had slighted him just a while ago.

The truth was that they had overthought this. Lin Ming had decided to cross this river together on the same boat. With them, there would be less danger. At least, if a formidable evil spirit popped out from somewhere, they could act as a shield. If he went alone, then his chances of escaping from here were much slimmer.

Lin Ming lowered his head again, thinking some more. After a while, he slowly said again, “Even if we are standing still, we are still slowly approaching the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

“What!?” Everyone’s complexions changed. Walking away was the same as walking towards the Eternal Demon Abyss, and there wasn’t even any need to mention walking towards it, but... even standing still, they were slowly approaching the great void? How could they still have any chance of surviving?

They fell into despair. The only thing that still gave them peace of mind at this moment was the calm expression on Lin Ming’s face. “Don’t panic. Let’s return to our original route first.”

“Huh? We can still return back where we came from?”

The martial artists were overjoyed to hear this.

Lin Ming said, “At most we’ll be able to return a little. I put some marks down on the way.”

Mark?

Right! Marks!

Every 500 feet they walked, Lin Ming would drop a symbol mark on the ground. At the time, many of the martial artists had derided Lin Ming, thinking that he was just trying to trick them and appear mysterious. But now, it seemed as if he was extremely far-sighted and had expected all of this to happen.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming’s image in their minds became increasingly unfathomable. Everyone was excited, growing more and more confident in him.

Lin Ming brought the group to head backwards, following the fluctuation of energy left behind by his mark. Strangely, instead of walking in a straight line, they had to walk in a massive arc. Finally, they reached the seal that he had placed 500 feet back.

However, as Lin Ming saw this mark, he was both happy and worried at the same time. What he was happy about was that he could return to where he was by following these marks. What worried him was that this mark was clearly just placed here and

incense stick of time ago, and logically, it should be able to maintain itself here for several months before dissipating, and yet, currently, this mark was fading, half of the energy already gone!

What was this?

Lin Ming frowned. As he went to look for the next mark he left, the group also had to walk in a great curving arc. There were even stretches that they thought they had walked past already. But this time, no one dared to speak any nonsense. Wherever Lin Ming walked, they followed.

After a while of effort, Lin Ming found the second to last mark he left. Sure enough, the energy from this mark had almost been completely consumed!

Feeling for the energy fluctuations of the third, he found that it had completely vanished!

Lin Ming's forehead began to drip with a cold sweat; the situation was worse than he thought!

He had no idea just what had erased the energy within the marks. Like this, he wouldn't have any idea how to leave this place!

"How is it?"

Duanmu Qun noticed that Lin Ming was beginning to drip sweat, and an uneasy sense of foreboding began to rise in his heart.

Lin Ming lightly sighed. He shook his head and said, “There’s some problem with the marks I left. In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, there is something unknown that has completely erased them.”

“What?”

All of the martial artists felt their hearts sink, a deep sense of despair filling their minds. If these marks failed, did that mean they would be trapped here forever?

The Eternal Demon Abyss only remained open for half a year. After half a year, all the channels to this place would be shut down, only reopening ten years later.

However, of those martial artists that hadn’t made it out in six months, there had never been a single one that had reappeared after 10 years. There were no exceptions!

If they were trapped here, that was the same as a death sentence!

Lin Ming remained silent, but he was actually constantly communicating with Demonshine in his mind.

“Demonshine, what is happening to erase the marks I left? Could it be evil spirits?”



Demonshine said, “It’s not evil spirits... although I haven’t figure out just how to leave this area, I can generally guess just what’s going on in this 1000 mile forbidden zone.”

“Oh?”

“This 1000 mile forbidden zone is known as a land of no return. The reason for this is probably because there is some powerful energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss that has manifested into a specialized force field that affects the surroundings. And, the radius of this force field just happens to be 1000 miles. Once someone enters, it is very difficult for them to leave. The marks you laid down were also erased by this force field’s energy.”

“Mm...” Lin Ming thought for a moment, “As we walked around, I did feel some strange differences in the power of space around here. The space around the Eternal Demon Abyss must be closed in by this force field, but, the closed space has too great a surface area... I didn’t notice it and walked straight in. With my current understanding of the Concept of Space, I wasn’t able to immediately discover it...”

“Space is enclosed by the force field...” After Lin Ming spoke, Demonshine suddenly seemed to remember something. “I remember when I was still roaming the Realm of the Gods, I heard stories about certain stars in distant spaces that would explode, causing all of their weight to collapse together and form a very special type of miniature star. Around this star is a very strong force field that could twist apart space and force a completely encapsulated space. I fear that even a Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods that has glanced at the peak of martial arts might find

themselves trapped forever in this closed space once they entered.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. This was the first time he had heard about such a star before. “Even such a Supreme Elder wouldn’t be able to leave?”

That elusive peak of martial arts was Lin Ming’s life goal. If even an unrivalled powerhouse who had glanced at that peak was powerless before this type of star, then its horrifying power could be imagined.

Demonshine said, “Of course, these are just stories I heard... however, you can rest assured that the force field of the Eternal Demon Abyss is trivial compared to these types of stars. Otherwise, when the Demon Emperor came here, he never would have been able to leave.”

Lin Ming stayed silent. Although his understandings of the Concept of Space could be considered acceptable, facing such a massive energy field here that could warp a vast volume of space into a closed zone, even he felt this extremely difficult to solve. And now, he wasn’t even able to use his marks.

At this moment, he could only take things one step at a time.

Lin Ming stood up and said to the martial artists around him, “Follow me.”

To these martial artists, Lin Ming’s words were infallible

commands. How could anyone dare to ignore him? They tried their hardest to keep up with him lest they fall behind.

# Chapter 646 – The Yellow Springs River

---

If Lin Ming wanted to research and understand the situation about the enclosed space force field, he would have to walk around and slowly find out what the governing rules were.

But, there was a prerequisite. This was that he needed to be able to leave marks along the way!

When Lin Ming had placed down marks before this, they had only lasted for two incense sticks of time before being cleanly erased. That definitely wouldn't work. After thinking for a while, Lin Ming thought of placing a trace of his battle spirit in the marks.

A martial artist's battle spirit was a substantialized manifestation of their will. For martial artists that had strong wills, their will might last tens or even hundreds of thousands of years in perpetuity. When Lin Ming had encountered the will lights in the Road of Emperor, this was the reason they had existed until then. Even within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there might be heavenly treasures or demon bones that contained an Emperor will lasting for tens or hundreds of thousands of years.

“The first array symbol...” Lin Ming walked over to a flat area of ground and flicked his finger, shooting out a golden array symbol and condensing it into a small mark. As the mark formed, Lin Ming left a faint trace of azure energy within; this was a wisp of battle spirit.

After leaving down the mark with the battle spirit, Lin Ming didn't leave. Instead, he sat down near the array symbol and waited to see just how fast the energy would pass from it.

The other martial artists were unclear as to what was happening. Thus, a martial artist couldn't help but ask, "Young Hero Lin, what are you doing?"

"You worthless idiot! What use is there in you asking? You wouldn't even understand Young Hero Lin's explanation." Blackstone suddenly said. The truth was that he also wanted to know what Lin Ming was doing, but he feared that he would disturb Lin Ming's thought process at this time.

Lin Ming kept total silence and quietly watched the energy leave the array symbol.

Time slowly passed, soon, it had been a quarter of an hour. The closed force field had wearing away the energy within the array symbol, but as for that azure wisp that Lin Ming had left within, it dissipated very slowly.

Lin Ming's azure will originally had an endlessly growing quality to it. Added to the fact that his will was firm to begin with, it held together well. After a quarter of an hour passed, the energy hadn't even been reduced by 5%.

Calculating the total time, that mark with a wisp of battle spirit should be able to support itself for around six hours.

Six hours was more than enough time.

“Boy, you’re quite smart! You strengthened that mark with your battle spirit, nice!” Demonshine’s voice echoed in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Alright, let’s continue!”

Lin Ming stood up and the other martial artists began preparing to set out. At this time, Lin Ming was in the lead.

As the group advanced forwards, he would leave behind a mark every 500 feet. The path he took was very strange. Sometime he would go forwards, sometimes he would go to the side, and sometimes he would even go backwards.

However, no matter where he walked, he never seemed to be able to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss. In front of everyone, the Eternal Demon Abyss became increasingly close, and that monstrous flame became more and more clear. It was as if they could already feel the terrible heat waves rolling off of it.

The pitch black Eternal Demon Abyss crossed through the end of the world, endless, limitless, like the maw of an ancient beast, swallowing all!

“Young... Young Hero Lin, is there really no problem?”

A martial artist couldn’t help but ask. He actually wasn’t feeling

reassured at all. As he followed Lin Ming, he noticed that they were actually closing in on the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“If you have the ability then you can lead the way.” Duanmu Qun coldly said, causing the martial artist to shut up.

After walking for another several dozen miles, the Eternal Demon Abyss seemed as if it wasn't even 200 miles away. The group could already clearly see the horrifying fog rising up from the endless gaping maw. What rose was not flames, but a flow of surging black energy. This energy was like a silent fountain, directly impacting hundreds of thousands of feet into the sky.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, then he said, “Let's return to our old route.”

He hadn't been able to discover just what the strange Space Laws were yet, but he was far too close to the Eternal Demon Abyss for comfort. He didn't dare to continue forwards anymore.

Returning to the original route wasn't easy either. On the way here, they only needed to walk one mile forwards to go two miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, in returning, they actually had to curve left and right, taking all sorts of crazy paths just to go back a single mile.

Fortunately, Lin Ming's battle spirit didn't fail him. As they returned several miles back, there were still remnants of his battle spirit – they didn't completely vanish.

As they reached the last several battle spirit marks, the will energy of the battle spirit had nearly depleted itself. This caused Lin Ming to sigh in emotion. Even with his own understandings of the power of space, in addition to Demonshine, and even his battle spirit, all three of these factors together weren't enough to allow him to figure out just how to leave the 1000 mile forbidden zone. If he could not even find a single clue, then the difficulty that other martial artists would have could be imagined. Not to mention a Titled Asura or Tower Master, but even a high level Life Destruction powerhouse that didn't have a good grasp of the Concept of Space might perish here!

“We’re back!”

“We really came back! Young Hero Lin truly knows the way!”

The martial artists could see the Eternal Demon Abyss blur as they walked backwards. Finally, in a single go, Lin Ming proved his skills and led them to return all the way to the 550 mile zone from the Eternal Demon Abyss where they had started.

But at this time, everyone's hearts suddenly chilled. They didn't know when, but the air had filled with an enchanting aroma.

If this was a nice spring day in the forests, then this fragrance would have been refreshing. But, here in the darkness of the Eternal Demon Abyss, this fragrance caused everyone's hairs to stand on end!

As everyone abruptly looked up, they saw that the sky was



raining down flower petals.

These beautiful and vivid flower petals were like angels flying in the heavens. They were completely out of place in this dreary, dark gray world.

As Lin Ming saw this, he felt a chill crawl up his back. “Demonshine, what is this?”

The jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master had given Lin Ming had very few records about what was inside the 1000 mile forbidden zone. Lin Ming had no idea just what was occurring around him.

Demonshine’s complexion suddenly changed, “This is bad! Those are brain devouring tapirs, hurry up and run away!”

A sharp light flashed in Lin Ming’s eye. He didn’t bother asking what a brain devouring tapir was, instead instantly launching his movement technique and drawing backwards, “Retreat! Don’t be touched by those petals!”

As Lin Ming spoke, a flower petal silently fell onto the head of a martial artist. The martial artist’s body shook, and with a cracking noise, blood shot out from his head!

Those weren’t flower petals! Those were thumb-sized blood-red fleshly insects! They had sharp teeth like steel thorns. With a single bite, they directly pierced through the skull!

Woosh!

The red fleshy insect drilled into the martial artist's head like a bolt of lightning!

“Ahhhhh!!!!”

The martial artist clutched his head as he fell to his knees. Blood poured out from his head and eyes. The agonizing pain caused him to smash his head constantly into the ground. Every time he did so, thick liquid blood would gush out of the hole in his skull!

Everyone could even clearly hear the sounds of his brain being chewed upon in his skull.

Seeing this ghoulish scene, the other martial artists didn't hesitate at all. They instantly launched their movement techniques and rushed out with Lin Ming!

At this time, the martial artists discovered that the fragrance they smelled just now had the effect of debilitating their true essence flow. With their true essence circulation hindered, their movements naturally became slower.

“Ahh!”

Another martial artist gave a miserable cry as a brain-devouring

tapir started eating away at him.

The miserable cries that filled the air caused the martial artists to panic with fear. They fiercely bit down on their tongues, using the pain to wake themselves up and desperately flee this area!

Lin Ming no longer had time to lay down marks. In a single breath, he brought everyone out several dozen miles. But, at this time, he suddenly stopped in his steps. Right in front of him was a great river. This river was a dirty yellow-brown color and was over 1000 feet wide.

This wide and smoky river seemed as if it originated from the nothingness of ancient times, flowing towards unknown lands.

In the waters of the river, one could see bones floating. Of these bones, the majority of them weren't human, but rather different races. Some had wings, some had long horns, and others had even more peculiar features.

Just by looking at this river, one could feel an inexplicable sense of bereavement and anguish fill their hearts, causing all of them to be comparably desolate.

“Yellow... the Yellow Springs River!”

At that moment, Lin Ming's heart stopped in his chest. All of his hairs rose, and without any further words, he immediately swiveled around and ran away!

There was no need for Demonshine to tell him what the Yellow Springs River was. When he inherited the memories of the Demon Emperor's soul fragment, it had contained a memory of this Yellow Springs River.

It was probably because the Yellow Springs River was too terrifying, thus it left a deep impression on the Demon Emperor, which was then inherited by Lin Ming.

When the Demon Emperor had come to the bank of the Yellow Springs River, he had almost died, becoming more of the countless bones of the river!

Duanmu Qun, Blackstone, High Lord Cloud Demon and the rest were all following behind Lin Ming. As they saw Lin Ming's sudden frightened expression and hasty retreat, they followed him without a word.

However, because they were slower, the last two martial artists that caught up didn't notice Lin Ming's expression suddenly change. In that instant, a trace of confusion and hesitation filled their faces.

And after this slight confusion, they seemed to lose their souls. Their eyes glazed over, their limbs stiffened, and their steps became heavy.

Like zombies, they took several dazed steps forwards and then changed direction, walking towards the Yellow Springs River...

At this time, Lin Ming had already brought the remaining people several dozen miles away. As for those two martial artists that had started shambling towards the Yellow Springs Rover, they had walked into the river, going deeper and deeper within. The river water flowed over their legs, waist, belly, chest, and finally their heads.

A faint trace of blood leaked out from their bodies, mixing with the river for a moment before immediately being swallowed up. The river remained that same dirty yellow color without the least bit of red.

Under the surface of the water, the two martial artists' bodies had already completely disappeared. There was nothing left of them but bones, as if their bodies had rotted away for endless eons.

After the two martial artists sank into the river, there wasn't even a stir from where they were. Several breaths later, two skeletons floated upwards, adding onto the endless bones of the river and gradually drifting away...

As everyone saw this, they shivered in fear, a cold sweat streaming down their backs. Of these martial artists, which one of them wasn't a brave and peerless heroic youths of their generation? Otherwise, there was no way they would have dared to enter Skysplit Tower. Although they didn't fear death, that didn't mean they couldn't withstand such a creepy way of dying. This truly cracked the courage of even the most daring heroes!

“Brother Lin, just what is that river?” Even Duanmu Qun’s voice was shaking at this moment.

“That was the Yellow Springs River...” Lin Ming sighed. The situation was deteriorating more and more. Now, he didn’t even have full faith he could find out how to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone...

The Yellow Springs River?

The martial artists present were petrified. This river that was depicted in the ancient legends of the Holy Demon Continent... it actually existed?

# Chapter 647 – Ancient Beast

---

“Yellow Springs River... that is... from the legendary hell from the fables of a bygone era... the skeletons within the river are countless, without end...” Duanmu Qun’s voice trailed off as he turned to look at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was silent throughout. Whether this was a random name given by the Demon Emperor, or whether this was truly the legendary Yellow Springs River of the Holy Demon Continent, what was important was that because they frantically ran away just now, they had approached the Eternal Demon Abyss by over 100 miles!

This meant that they were just over 400 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss. They could already clearly see the black energy that gushed out of the ground, spanning the heavens and earth, setting the stars ablaze!

As Lin Ming became increasingly gloomy, and the others also realized this point. In truth, they had ran at most around 20 to 30 miles just now, but they had gone another 100 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. This proved that the closer they were to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the faster they would get sucked into that gaping void!

This was seriously bad news!

Duanmu Qun let out a heavy sigh. At this time, he felt that his chances of making it out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone with his

life intact were becoming increasingly low.

“We only have six people left...” Lan Xin suddenly said.

Of the group of 10, the only ones left over were Lin Ming, Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, High Lord Cloud Demon, and Blackstone.

These six were the strongest of the group. As for the other four, because their strength was lacking, they had already died!

When everyone encountered the same danger, it was usually the weakest who would die.

As Blackstone discovered there were only six people remaining, he felt his heart rapidly beat in his chest, his face paling.

Because, of the six people left, he was the weakest!

There was no need to mention Duanmu Qun or High Lord Cloud Demon, he couldn't even think of catching up to them.

Lin Ming's strength was unknown, but he shouldn't be much worse than Duanmu Qun.

As for Lan Xin and Feng Shen, they were also above him.



This meant that if someone were to die, it would most likely be him!

“Young... Young Hero Lin...”

Blackstone’s forehead began to furiously drip with sweat, but he didn’t know what to say. In the past, when he had formed teams, he had taken others to be his shield because they were weaker than him.

But today, the tables had turned – he was the weakest.

This was an immeasurably bitter and ironic situation.

High Lord Cloud Demon knew what Blackstone was thinking and patted his shoulder in consolation. As he saw the four others die just now, he also felt as if he had stepped into death’s door.

For those two dangers just now, if it wasn’t for Lin Ming promptly alerting them in time, they probably would have all died.

“Young Hero Lin, you must choose a lucky road, ah, we’re all counting on you here...” Blackstone’s voice was a bit hoarse as he spoke, “If I make it through this alive, I’ll leave all my infernal energy and even give everything in my spatial ring to you, I don’t want any of this... hey, if I had known things would be like this earlier then I never would have entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now even if there was an earth-step Demon God Bone given to me, I still wouldn’t want it...”

Blackstone morosely said. Now, any regrets he had were useless. In truth, Blackstone was different from the High Lords of the Skysplit Towers. He was a Holy Land descendant and a high Emperor level talent. Even if he didn't risk his life to search for lucky chance he still would have a very high chance of breaking through the Emperor level bottleneck in the future and becoming a one-star Demon Emperor.

Of course, unless he had some further great lucky chance, he would be stranded there for the rest of his life, forever unable to break through to a two-star Demon Emperor. He would only be the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses.

The reason that Blackstone had come to the Eternal Demon Abyss was this. He came to seek his own lucky chances because he didn't want to resign himself to fate and desired to reach a higher boundary.

But now, he regretted coming to this hellhole. After entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone, his hopes of leaving this place were quickly fading.

He would most likely die here.

Even if Lin Ming could really solve this land and figure out how to leave, that didn't mean he could bring everyone out with him. If there were people Lin Ming had to leave behind, then Blackstone would probably be one of them.

Thinking of this, Blackstone could only let out deep sighs. Becoming the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses was still better than death. An ordinary Emperor level powerhouse could live for 5000 to 6000 years. If he broke through to a two-star Demon Emperor, his lifespan would increase by another 2000 to 3000 years. The difference between the two wasn't astronomically great.

High Lord Cloud Demon also had the same feeling. They had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone by mistake and had encountered repeated life and death experiences. There were just too many existences here that he was unable to stand against. He could envisage that in the future, no matter how assiduous or hardworking he was in his cultivation, the difference between him and these hellish demonic spirits was far too great. All he could do was sigh at his own fate.

As everyone was thinking, suddenly, there was a great and terrifying sound like billowing heavenly thunder that resounded through the entire world! No one could tell just where this sound came from. All they felt was thunder in their ears, their eardrums almost exploding!

Everyone hastily sealed their ears with true essence lest they start bleeding out from their heads.

That horrifying sound intensified, smashing against the world like a natural disaster. The earth shook for 10,000 miles around them, causing them to tremble with fear, their hearts inexplicably filling with fear.

Lin Ming's complexion changed.

What was that sound!?!

Thunder?

No, there was no way that a thunderclap could have so much power behind it. It was like the sound of the world itself quaking in dread!

And at this moment, a scene occurred, searing itself into the six people's eyes so that they would never forget for the rest of their lives.

In the Eternal Demon Abyss, several hundred miles in front of them, the black energy flow suddenly became turbulent, quickly diverging. With it, a massive head, several hundred miles long, quietly appeared!

Ferocious dark red scales, taller than a mountain, a massive horn, it looked like a dragon, but different from the True Dragon depicted in legends.

Seeing this great ancient beast appear, every martial artist, including Lin Ming, was completely shocked!

In that instant, they couldn't even breathe. If just the head was several hundred miles long then the body must be thousands or even tens of thousands of miles long!

Heavens!!!

What in the world was that!?!?

The great ancient beast simply didn't pay attention to the six people standing several hundred miles away. To it, these six people simply weren't qualified for it to care about. Its dark gold pupils were vast and uncaring, regarding every creature under the heavens as mere ants!

As the group inadvertently glanced at these dark gold pupils, it was like they had been physically struck. Blackstone, the weakest amongst them, suddenly shook, a tyrannical energy rushing through his body, causing him to vomit out a mouthful of blood!

Even Feng Shen and Lan Xin were forced back a step, their faces whiter than death.

Those dark gold pupils were several thousand feet high. It was like the infinite void of the universe was hidden behind them, making everyone's minds quake with fear.

Duanmu Qun and High Lord Cloud Demon quickly looked away, no longer daring to gaze upon this being. But Lin Ming was actually staring at this great ancient beast, his eyes blazing with brilliance even as the blood vessels there bulged like they were about to burst.

“Lin Ming! If you continue looking your eyes will explode!” Demonshine’s shout resounded in Lin Ming’s mind.

However, Lin Ming kept his gaze firmly fixed on this great ancient beast until his eyes began to bleed!

Huu...

The blazing black flow of energy was pushed back once again. The head of the great ancient beast rose up 100,000 feet. Then, a pair of wings began to unfurl. As these wings spread out, all of the clouds in the skies were washed away, the black flow of energy was twisted apart, the rocks from all around were turned up in a great storm and even mountains were swept away!

As High Lord Cloud Demon saw this, he was greatly shocked, “Watch out!”

With a great roar, the terrifying storm instantly swept through the 400 miles towards the group, directly impacting into them!

Bang!

The ground was split apart. The six people were swept into the strong winds, no different than straw!

High Lord Cloud Demon was aghast. If they were blown away by these strong winds, while they might not be seriously wounded, they couldn’t afford to lose Lin Ming!

In this hellhole, once they were separated, the chances of finding anyone else again were close to zero! If they didn't have Lin Ming with them then they could forget ever leaving here!

“Come to me!”

Woosh woosh woosh!

Five chains of energy shot out from High Lord Cloud Demon's body, twining around the other five like spirit snakes. The six of them were tossed several thousand feet in the sky before coming crashing down again!

Bang bang bang!

Earth and rock collapsed. Blackstone had a mouth full of dirt.

“Holy f\*ck, what was that thing!!?”

Blackstone spat out a mouthful of dirt and wiped off the blood from his lips. As he turned around to gaze at the Eternal Demon Abyss, the great ancient beast had disappeared into the hazy black fog. It had turned around, its great head submerged into the Eternal demon Abyss, leaving nothing behind but a great tail in the sky like a pillar that held up the heavens.

Just glancing at this great ancient beast had severely wounded

Blackstone and caused him to vomit blood. It had to be said that they were more than 400 miles apart. Just what sort of terrifying existence was this!

“Don’t speak nonsense!” Hearing Blackstone’s curse, High Lord Cloud Demon’s complexion changed. “Blackstone, if you want to be an idiot and die then go ahead, but don’t drag us in. if you dare to offend this glorious divine being then we will all die here!”

High Lord Cloud Demon’s voice was stern but Blackstone only curled his lips, feeling that High Lord Cloud Demon was over exaggerating things. He said, “There’s no need to be careful, I’m just talking. The creature is several hundred miles away so I doubt it can hear us. Then again, even if it could, that doesn’t mean it understands our language.”

“You idiot!” High Lord Cloud Demon’s face sank. “Blackstone, I hope you remember the legend of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Several tens of thousands of years ago, during a period of unprecedented glory and prosperity, there was once a sixth-grade sect that had almost united the entire Holy Demon Continent. They gathered 12 Emperor level powerhouses and wanted to cage all of the infernal energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss in a great array formation so that they could use it all for themselves, guaranteeing that their Holy Land would have a great destiny of 100,000 years. And the end result for this hubris was that those 12 Emperor level powerhouses were all instantly killed by a giant claw that stretched out from the Eternal Demon Abyss, killing even the Hallowed Lord of that Holy Land without even ashes remaining! Afterwards, that sixth-grade Holy Land completely disintegrated, and every single one of their disciples died tragic deaths under the power of a mystical curse. Tell me, do you want to follow in their



footsteps!?”

As High Lord Cloud Demon spoke, Blackstone paled. Indeed, even if that great ancient beast just now wasn't that same fellow from tens of thousands of years ago that destroyed a sixth-grade Holy Land with just a great claw, it wasn't any less of an existence.

With such divine beings, it was best to remain respectful to them. Otherwise, if they were cursed, there was naught remaining for them but death!

Blackstone gulped several times. Scared witless, he kneeled down and prayed in his heart several times, begging for this divine being to pardon his sins.

As Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were talking, Lin Ming had been deep in thought, his eyes still bleeding.

“Lin Ming, you're crazy! You're lucky that big fellow sent everyone flying into the air or else your eyes really would have exploded!” Demonshine admonished Lin Ming from within his mind.

Lin Ming let out a long breath. He silently gazed at the Eternal Demon Abyss for a long time. Then, he slowly and calmly said, “I think I've discovered the way to leave the 1000 mile forbidden zone...”

# Chapter 648 – Corpse Devil

---

“You’ve figured out a way to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Demonshine asked, startled.

“Just a general feel... I don’t know if it’s possible yet...” Lin Ming quietly said. He was continuously playing out scenarios in his mind.

Demonshine was shocked. He was very familiar with Lin Ming’s personality now. If Lin Ming said he could, then he must have around a 70 to 80% assurance that his plan would work.

The 1000 mile forbidden zone was known as a land of no return that not even birds could cross. Even a high stage Life Destruction or weak Emperor level powerhouse might die here.

But, Lin Ming was able to discover the method to leave this land...

When they had captured the demon bone together, that had mostly been relying on Demonshine’s help. But after they entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone, the truth was that Demonshine hadn’t played too great a role. Most of it had been due to Lin Ming’s own hard work and effort!

‘This boy...’

Demonshine sighed with emotion. Perhaps it wouldn’t be too

long before a broken remnant soul like him would no longer be able to help Lin Ming.

After a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming had finished deducing the scenarios in his mind. He stood up and said to the group, "Follow me."

With Lin Ming's words, everyone quickly stood up. Although they had placed all their hopes on Lin Ming, they still didn't have much confidence they would be able to make it out of here.

This entire time, they had always been going deeper and deeper into the Eternal Demon Abyss. The closer they got to the center, the faster they were sucked in. It was like there was some invisible gravitational force that was constantly sucking them in.

Demonshine had said that the Eternal Demon Abyss was like a black hole. The closer one was, the greater the attractive force was and the more distorted space became. Wanting to come back out was extremely difficult.

But, Lin Ming had found that he had been caught in a trap of his own misunderstanding. He had thought that to come out of this twisted space maze, he would have to look for an exit.

However, this space maze was extremely complex with countless twist and turns. There were even some crisscrossing paths that were 100 to 200 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss. If he had to pass through these then he would have to approach to 100 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss, which was

undoubtedly very dangerous.

Moreover, there were innumerable danger zones in this 1000 mile forbidden zone. If they encountered some danger and were forced to run away, then all their efforts would have been for naught.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming felt as if he had walked into a dead end. But then, that great ancient beast had suddenly appeared, giving Lin Ming a groundbreaking inspiration.

When that great ancient beast had let out a deep roar into the skies, the powerful shockwave had surged outwards and destroyed the surrounding space maze!

Then, when the great ancient beast had unfolded its vast wings, the following terrifying storm that swept out had again shattered the space maze, directly blowing them out 1000 feet. This 1000 foot distance was towards the outside of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

In other words, they were blown 1000 feet away from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As this happened, it was like a light lit up in Lin Ming's mind. The distorted space here could change the walking direction of the weak, but it could not change that violent and tyrannical shockwave and energy storm from the great ancient beast. The reason for this was because they were far too strong!

If he could be like the great ancient beast and destroy the surrounding space maze, then leaving this place would be much simpler.

Shattering the space here was a madman's idea. If it were several months ago, Lin Ming wouldn't have believed he could accomplish this. But now that he had broken through to Revolving Core and his battle spirit had also reached the bronze stage, his striking power was incomparable to how it used to be.

A battle spirit had a colossal effect on striking power. In just this aspect alone, Lin Ming had already surpassed a second stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Initially, Xuan Wuji and others had cut open a space channel in a broken world. Now, he too should have this ability. Well, at least he should be able to change the curved space at a weak point of this space maze.

Now, the reason that Lin Ming was walking was to look for this weak point in space.

Blackstone closely followed behind Lin Ming. Uneasily, he asked, "Young Hero Lin, how come you didn't place down an array symbol mark this time?"

Without a mark, how would they return? Blackstone simply didn't have any sense of security here at all.

Duanmu Qun and the others didn't understand either. But what they knew was that Lin Ming had his reasons for doing this. They didn't understand the strange and mysterious principles of this 1000 mile forbidden zone, so there was no reason to ask.

“There's no need to.”

Lin Ming responded simply without explaining. In fact, leaving battle spirit marks meant that he would have to lose some willpower. One mark was not much, but hundreds of them added together would exhaust him. Right now, Lin Ming had to ensure that his striking power and battle spirit would be at their strongest state.

Blackstone noticed Lin Ming's silence and tactfully didn't ask any further. All he could do was follow Lin Ming, his heart anxious the entire time.

After walking for a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming finally found the first weak point in space.

As long as he could destroy this distorted space in front of him, he would be able to leave this level of the space maze and go into the next. It would save him a great amount of time and effort.

Lin Ming closed his eyes.

The Heretical God Force opened.

He revolved the true essence within his body to the limit.

Penetrating Rainbow!

With the battle spirit fused to his Purple Comet Spear, Lin Ming thrust out!

The sudden attack took the other five by surprise. They thought that an enemy had arrived and all began to take out their weapons, preparing themselves for the final showdown. However, as they waited, they discovered that nothing happened. Lin Ming had simply stabbed at empty air just then.

‘Is that fellow too nervous and attacked empty space?’ Blackstone maliciously thought. Before this, he didn’t have any confidence that he would be able to defeat Lin Ming. But, seeing him mess up in public, he couldn’t help but start thinking to himself, ‘So even you’ll have times you’re embarrassed.’

“Let’s go!”

Lin Ming said succinctly and lifted his feet to walk. His thoughts had been correct. With the bronze battle spirit fused into his attack and added to the fact that his cultivation had reached Revolving Core, he really was able to change the distortion in space here!

As everyone saw Lin Ming calmly walk forwards, the rest followed him with no questions.

Following this, a set pattern began to appear. Every now and then, Lin Ming would suddenly attack the empty air.

Everyone was confused; just what was this?

To be honest, attacking empty air looked sort of silly.

If this were another martial artist, they would have assumed that they had a mental sickness. But Lin Ming was different. If Lin Ming did it, then no matter how absurd or ridiculous it looked, there must be some unexplainable mystical function behind it. This could be called the weighty stature of a master.

Attack after attack, everyone was startled at first, but after that they became accustomed to it. No one asked why Lin Ming did what he did – they knew that asking was useless anyways.

Blackstone was disquieted. Were Lin Ming's silly-looking attacks really effective?

Casually, Blackstone turned back to look at the Eternal Demon Abyss. As he saw it, he was immediately startled.

“Everyone, look!”

The rest of the group turned around to see that the far off Eternal Demon Abyss seemed blurrier now. That billowing flow of energy had sunk back into the thick fog, looking ethereal and dreamlike.



From being clear to faint, this proved that they were walking further from the Eternal Demon Abyss! Moreover, they had gone at least several dozen or a hundred miles!

Realizing this, everyone grew excited.

They didn't know how Lin Ming had done this, but now no one dared to disturb his thoughts.

As for Lin Ming, every time that he attacked space, the strike of the Purple Comet Spear would completely sink into the invisible surface of space and be camouflaged by it, so that no one could see just how much energy was behind each of these attacks. Everyone assumed that they were just ordinary attacks, but the truth was that every single strike used 80 to 90% of Lin Ming's strength.

For these short interval and high intensity attacks, even though Lin Ming had the support from the Gate of Healing, he still found it hard to continue.

He had no choice but to take out some pills and restore his strength.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had to constantly make sure he was at this peak state. Otherwise, if a catastrophic danger were to happen, no one would come to his rescue.

“Young Hero Lin, what is so mysterious about your attack? Can

we help out?” As Blackstone saw that Lin Ming had already rested for half an hour, he couldn’t help but ask this question. He was too worried right now. Every second longer that they were in this 1000 mile forbidden zone meant that there was that much more danger.

Lin Ming didn’t even have time to respond before High Lord Cloud Demon coldly coughed and shouted, “Blackstone, sit down!”

Blackstone dejectedly returned to his spot.

“You not bothering Brother Lin is already the greatest help!” Duanmu Qun said. He had also been carefully observing Lin Ming’s attacks. Those seemingly random attacks actually came in at very particular angles and speeds; wanting to replace Lin Ming’s attack with their own was easier said than done.

Three quarters of an hour later, Lin Ming was completely restored. At this moment when Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open, he was immediately shocked. He could see a dim green shadow behind Lan Xin. As he took a closer look, a creepy feeling instantly shot up his back. “Lan Xin, behind you!”

“What!?”

Lan Xin was greatly shocked. She suddenly turned around, a cold sweat already dripping down her back. Behind her, a long green-haired corpse woman was silently floating in the air, her crimson lips open as she continuously sucked wisps of essence energy from Lan Xin’s body into her mouth!

“Ahh!”

Lan Xin cried out in alarm, her beautiful face turning pale!

“It’s sucking in your life force!” Lin Ming said, shocked. This kind of green corpse was called a corpse devil. After a martial artist’s corpse was possessed by an evil spirit, it absorbed the infernal energy from the world and slowly became this sort of ghostly monster.

“Die!”

Duanmu Qun’s face flashed with a merciless light. He took out his long sword and stabbed at the corpse devil. Once a corpse devil absorbed one’s essence energy, it would greatly shorten their life. It was unknown just how much of Lan Xin’s essence energy had been swallowed, but if they didn’t kill this green-haired corpse devil then that essence energy would never return.

Facing Duanmu Qun’s violent sword strike, the corpse devil didn’t even try to dodge. It let that sharp sword cut down on its body.

Deng!

The sound of metal striking metal rang out. Duanmu Qun’s sword cut open the ragged clothes of the corpse devil, but it didn’t even manage to scratch the skin.

What!?

Duanmu Qun's complexion paled. Although that attack just now was rushed and he wasn't able to use his full strength, it was at least 60 to 70% of his peak power. Yet he wasn't even to scratch the skin of this monster! If this was so, then even if he attacked with all of his strength he might only be able to give it a minor wound!

The other martial artists also grimaced. Duanmu Qun's strength ranked amongst the top in their group. If he couldn't even injure the corpse devil then there was no need to mention the others.

Run!

This was the idea that simultaneously appeared in the minds of several people. However, just as they thought this, it was like they were suddenly thrown into an icehouse. In front of them, around 70 to 80 feet away, were three more corpse devils. They had gathered in a formation and had them surrounded!

# Chapter 649 – Two Spears Till Death

---

The three new corpse devils that appeared were tall and fierce-looking. From their appearances, they had been Giant Demons and Goliaths before they died. With the female corpse devil, that was a total of four corpse devils. Just any one of them was stronger than Duanmu Qun; how could they even fight this!?

Blackstone felt his heart sink into chilling despair. Lan Xing and Feng Shen also paled.

“Let’s all rush out in one direction!”

High Lord Cloud Demon took the initiative to launch an attack. He took out a lance from his spatial ring and thrust straight towards a Goliath corpse devil!

He poured all of his demon essence into this strike – there was no holding back!

Ghostly Dragon Emperor Strike!

A lance thrust forth, causing massive waves of black true essence to rise up. All of the surroundings rocks were crushed by the lance’s energy, falling down like a hailstorm!

The corpse devil that this attack was aimed at cunningly smiled. It stretched out a glowing green claw, directly blocking the lance!

A claw of flesh was actually able to resist High Lord Cloud Demon's heaven-step treasure! With a 'kacha' sound, High Lord Cloud Demon's spear was firmly grasped by the corpse devil!

High Lord Cloud Demon was whiter than paper. For this strike, he had used a secret Goliath technique that wounded himself to increase his power. In addition, with his full strength and also his low-grade heaven-step treasure lance, this was enough to crack apart a large hill. But this corpse devil had actually blocked it with a claw.

What sort of strange power was this? What sort of terrifying body strength was this!?

But at this moment, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen all rushed forwards. Their three heaven-step long swords all cut down together!

“Attack the eyes!”

Duanmu Qun fully realized just how terrifying the defensive power of these corpse devils was. A sword cut apart both the eyes of the corpse devil. A savage and brutal rain of sword light came falling down, directly covering the corpse devil in a hail of incomparably keen energy!

Peng peng!

The corpse devil's rotten eyes burst apart. However, to a corpse

devil, the truth was that their eyes had already lost their use long ago. They perceived the world through smells and sensing life force. Besides angering, these attacks hadn't done anything at all.

“Houuu!”

A corpse devil roared. Everyone around felt their ears ache with numbness, their eardrums almost rupturing. Next, a Goliath corpse devil swept out his claw and caught all three heaven-step swords in his grasp.

These three swords were originally soft swords. After being grasped by the Goliath corpse devil, there was a screeching sound as all three swords began to twist and bend under the massive pressure!

Meanwhile, that green-haired devil corpse also shot forwards, striking out a claw at Lan Xin and Feng Shen!

At this time, Lan Xin and Feng Shen had their swords grabbed by the Goliath corpse devil; it was impossible to pull them back out. They could only escape if they abandoned their swords. But, facing these corpse devils without their weapons, their fates could be imagined!

They had never thought that even with a combination of four attacks, they wouldn't even be able to tear open an exit in this encirclement!

These corpse devils were far too terrifying!

“Careful! Their claws are poisonous!”

Duanmu Qun shouted out. As his words were half out, he was suddenly surprised. He found that Lin Ming, who hadn't yet attacked, had actually appeared behind the green-haired corpse devil. Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, his face expressionless. Atop the spearpoint, a cold light sparked!

Death!

A brilliant light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes.

The Heretical God Force was opened to the limit, compressed true essence erupted in surging waves, the power of thunder and fire wove together...

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear shot out. This strike contained the will of a bronze level battle spirit. Combined with the terrifying energy, even the void around the spear trembled!

The female corpse cackled, not bothering to dodge, allowing this spear to stab at her. At that same time, she swiveled around, reaching her claw out at Lin Ming's neck!



“Lin Ming, be careful!”

Lan Xin and Feng Shen’s expressions immediately changed. This female corpse devil had ridiculous defensive powers. She was able to ignore any and all attacks, countering in a terrifying manner. Once those glowing green claws broke through one’s protective true essence, even if it was only a minor wound, the corpse poison would be enough to cause an agonizingly painful death!

If a martial artist were to collide with this female corpse devil, they would absolutely suffer a great loss!

However, facing the attack of this green-haired corpse devil, Lin Ming simply didn’t care. His spear thrust out like before!

Seeing that claw nearing Lin Ming’s neck, Lan Xin and Feng Shen became incomparably pale. But, that green-haired corpse devil was laughing like a macabre maniac!

“Gegegege!”

But at this moment, an unbelievable scene occurred.

The claw of the female corpse devil seemed to suddenly slow down, and the Purple Comet Spear in Lin Ming’s hands suddenly accelerated!

The power of thunder and fire twisted together; the bronze battle spirit erupted! With a ‘chi’ sound, the Purple Comet Spear pierced

through the green-haired corpse devil's throat!

With a twist of the spear, the female corpse devil had half her neck torn off!

But at this time, when the green-haired corpse devil's claw was only half a foot from Lin Ming, he suddenly drew backwards. As he pulled back his long spear, a wisp of purple lightning shined on the tip!

A thrust, a retreat, completely clean!

The sudden turn in events stunned Lan Xin. Even Feng Shen, who kept Lin Ming in the highest esteem, still had his mouth hanging wide open. He nearly forgot that his own sword was grasped in the hand of the Goliath corpse devil.

They had attacked the green-haired corpse devil so they personally knew just how terrifying its defensive power was. It was like refined gold, immune to all attacks!

But now, Lin Ming had actually penetrated it with a spear... just what had happened!?

"Lin Ming..." Lan Xin gulped, not sure what to say.

"What're you acting so shocked about!? Attack!"

Duanmu Qun's few words brought everyone back to reality. As the Goliath corpse devil was distracted, he took advantage of this and kicked it in the face, pulling his sword back out.

“Kill!”

Duanmu Qun had amazingly fast hand and eye reflexes. He sliced at the green-haired female devil corpse's neck, hoping to cut off the other half of its neck.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and High Lord Cloud Demon all seemed to awaken from some hazy dream. Immediately, they all used their ultimate killing strikes to attack the wounded green-haired corpse devil!

With the sound of scraping metal, Duanmu Qun's sword energies ruthlessly rushed onto the green-haired corpse devil, but, he actually wasn't able to break past her defenses. This caused him to panic, horrified.

Just what had Lin Ming done with his strike just then that he was able to penetrate her?

At this time, Lin Ming had already taken out his spear and drawn back several dozen feet. As he was about to launch another attack, he felt his Purple Comet Spear shake.

That strike just now had placed a tremendous burden on the Purple Comet Spear. If it wasn't for the battle spirit attached to it,

then he feared it wouldn't have been able to pierce through her.

It had to be known Feng Shen, Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and High Lord Cloud Demon were all Holy Land descendants or Skysplit Tower High Lords; all of them were unbelievably rich and influential people. The weapons they used were all low-grade heaven-step treasures, around the same quality as that of Xuan Wuji's. As for Lin Ming, the Purple Comet Spear in his hand was only a peak high-grade earth-step treasure. In such a high intensity fight, piercing through the hard corpse devil's neck had been very difficult.

"These corpse devils' bodies are too hard. If I didn't have my battle spirit then even I wouldn't be able to do anything!"

Lin Ming frowned. These corpse devils' bodies, after being tempered with infernal energy over tens of thousands of years, had already reached a degree of hardness at the same level as a low-grade heaven-step treasure. Duanmu Qun's attacks hadn't been able to break through the corpse devil's defense because the difficulty of that was the same as destroying an entire heaven-step treasure.

"Ahh!"

At this time, a miserable scream sounded out. Lin Ming took a closer look and knit his eyebrows together. The one who was injured was Blackstone. Just now, as everyone was collectively attacking the corpse devils, this fellow had hidden in the back. But now the other two corpse devils had attacked him.

Blackstone was also a Holy Land descendant, he was not some common genius of his generation. As the two corpse devils attacked him from both sides, he abruptly twisted his body, thinking he had escaped the attack, but the strike had actually managed to scratch his left arm.

The corpse devil's green claws could break apart even the hardest defenses. The claw directly tore apart Blackstone's protective demon essence and scraped the flesh!

Even though this was a minor wound, Blackstone's expression suddenly changed. He helplessly watched on as the flesh of his left arm began to corrode away at a speed visible to the naked eye. The tendrils of pain that spread out caused his face to twist in agony, drops of cold sweat dripping down his body!

“Cut it off!”

Duanmu Qun's pupils shrank. At that time, he couldn't bother to ask why Blackstone didn't join in the attack just now. His figure flashed and he immediately appeared in front of Blackstone, his sword already falling down!

“No!!!”

Blackstone whimpered and writhed, wanting to stop this strike. But Duanmu Qun's sword was too fast. With a flash of sword light, a bloody light shined in response. A bloody left arm flew out in the air, completely corroded by corpse poison in midair and becoming

nothing but white bones.

What a ghastly corpse poison!

As Lin Ming saw this, he felt his scalp tingle with horror!

“Ahhhhhh!”

Blackstone cried out in anger, pain, and misery. To a martial artist, the value of an arm was obvious!

In this world, there were many top miracle medicines that were able to regrow limbs. But, these medicines could only speed up the growth of a new arm that had never been tempered. This new limb would be weak, with low defense. If one wished to train it to the strength of the other arm then that was impossible.

In other words, Blackstone's left arm would forever be his weakness!

As Duanmu Qun saw this, he could only shake his head. All of this had been brought on by Blackstone himself.

Blackstone was the weakest amongst everyone present. He never thought of joining in with Duanmu Qun and the others in their hopeless battle to begin with. From the very start he had planned on them rushing in and then running away in the chaos. But he didn't think that Lin Ming would appear and reverse the battle situation with a single spear strike. Instead, it was him that had

been attacked from the back by the pincer attacks of two corpse devils.

“Attack together, we’ll finish one off first! Divert their attention and allow Lin Ming to be the main attack!” Duanmu Qun rapidly judged the situation on the battlefield. After these few exchanges of moves, he discovered that although these corpse devils had amazing defense, terrifying striking power, and were also fast, they still had one fatal weakness. That was that their intelligence was low and their responses were slow!

Otherwise, these four corpse devils would have coordinated their attacks, and the ones injured wouldn’t be just Blackstone.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon spoke no further. They flourished the swords and spears in their hands, creating a weave of sharp light that covered the green-haired corpse devil.

But, that green-haired corpse devil had already plunged into a state of rabid craziness. It ignored Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and the rest, desperately rushing towards Lin Ming, a manic and savage light in its eyes as it vowed to rip Lin Ming to shreds!

Lin Ming eyes flashed with a grim light. The battle spirit in his spiritual sea fused onto the Purple Comet Spear. At the same time, he completely opened the Heretical God Force and burned the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

With a burst of spear light, Lin Ming stepped forwards, the

Purple Comet Spear in his hands howling like an azure dragon!

Chi!

The Purple Comet Spear easily thrust through the green-haired corpse devil's neck once more. With a twist of the spear, the spear swept towards the direction opposite last time. With a sound of screeching metal, the other half of the green-haired corpse devil's neck was cut off!

The entire female corpse devil's neck was severed, its head flying high into the sky. Its listless body took a few more steps forwards before plopping onto the ground!

As Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen, and High Lord Cloud Demon saw this, they were all shocked speechless. From start to end, none of them managed to play any significant role; in fact, none of them had even been able to injure the green-haired female corpse demon, and their attempts at distraction had failed.

By himself, Lin Ming had killed off that green-haired corpse devil in two strikes!

This striking power, just how freakishly abnormal was it!?!?



# Chapter 650 – Great Lucky Chance

---

Lin Ming took a deep breath and held the Purple Comet Spear steady, the spearpoint still trembling.

To use the Purple Comet Spear to pierce through the green-haired female corpse devil was the same as using a peak earth-step treasure to ruin a heaven-step treasure; this was entirely due to the added striking power from his battle spirit!

Lin Ming's battle spirit was currently at the bronze level. In the future when it grew, it would become even more terrifying. The battle spirit was well known as the mightiest attack, this reputation was not unearned.

As the other three corpse devils saw this, they let out increasingly savage roars and ignored everyone else, all of them simultaneously rushing towards Lin Ming!

Facing the concurrent attacks of three corpse devils, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a keen light. He flicked his fingers, and a battle spirit-infused Divine Demon Steel Needle howled forth!

The power of thunder was a force that most constrained ghosts and evil spirits. With the added support of the battle spirit, the might of this thunder grew to yet another level!

Chi-la!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle sank into the body of a corpse devil, causing thick arcs of electricity to shoot out. The corpse devil trembled and then fell to the floor. Although it wasn't severely injured, this still allowed Lin Ming to face two instead of three.

With his feet stepping atop Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming suddenly accelerated. Take the first strike and take control of the battle!

His figure seemed to teleport in front of a corpse devil. True essence erupted from his body, revolving to the limit as the spear in his hand came smashing down!

At this moment, Lin Ming had no intention of hiding even the least bit of his strength. Facing three corpse devils at once, he had to maintain the utmost caution and guard. Although his protective true essence and bodily defensive power were strong, he still couldn't allow his skin to be scratched even the slightest bit. Once his skin was broken, that terrifying corpse poison would drill into his body. Lin Ming didn't believe he would be able to resist that at all!

Peng!

The Purple Comet Spear came slashing down like a whip. With the spear shaft's flexibility reinforced by the battle spirit, he directly smashed apart a corpse devil's chest. The corpse devil was like a ragdoll as it was pounded backwards hundreds of feet by Lin Ming's spear!

At the same time, the other corpse devil's claw was reaching towards Lin Ming. But, as that corpse devil's claws approached, its speed suddenly drastically slowed, as if it were mired in mud!

In a situation where Lin Ming had just struck with his spear, he still managed to pull out his spear and strike at the other corpse devil!

In other words, in an instant, Lin Ming had made two spear strikes!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the second corpse devil was smashed backwards, sent flying away by Lin Ming's spear!

With three corpse devils rushing towards Lin Ming at once, one had its body paralyzed by electricity, and the other two were smashed away by Lin Ming's spear one at a time. As the other five people saw this they were all shocked. Was this even human?

If this striking power was used upon a person's body, it would shatter their body and break everything within them into pieces; who could still block this?

“Die!”

Lin Ming turned his spear and pointed towards that corpse devil that was paralyzed by the power of thunder. The power of the Heretical God Force and Eight Inner Hidden Gates erupted together. Lin Ming's true essence seemed to rage around him like a roiling inferno, his long hair recklessly waving in the air.

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear light shot through the void. Fire and thunder intertwine and energy violently exploded. The distorted space maze was split asunder even as Lin Ming's spear pierced through that corpse devil's chest!

Bang!

It was like a meteor had struck the ground. The terrifying blast of energy cracked earth, sending chunks of dirt flying into the skies with abandon. Fog and crushed stone rolled up in a wave hundreds of feet high as it surged outwards. As the other five people saw the terrifying impact of these shockwaves, all of them began summoning their true essence to resist it!

Fog and dirt began falling back to the ground. Where the corpse devil had been, there was now a massive gaping hole in the earth hundreds of feet deep. The corpse devil was completely buried within this earth, its fate unknown.

“How fearful!” Seeing this sight, High Lord Cloud Demon paled. This was far too terrifying of an attack. Just the shockwaves had this much strength behind them!

He thought that after Lin Ming broke through to Revolving Core, he'd have a comprehensive combat strength around that of Duanmu Qun. But now, it seemed that if their strength was placed in front of Lin Ming, any one of them would just be a joke.

What the hell? How could this boy's striking power be so ridiculously powerful?

High Lord Cloud Demon and Duanmu Qun glanced at each other, seeing the deep horror and amazement in the other's eyes; this had already surpassed the scope of their understanding.

Lin Ming gently landed several hundred feet away. As he held the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, his expression was tranquil. The battle spirit truly hadn't disappointed him. Even though the corpse devil's body was as tough as refined gold, Lin Ming's spear had still torn it apart. Even if that corpse devil was still alive somewhere in that pit, it wouldn't be too great of a threat.

As the other two corpse devils saw this, an instinctual fear was born in their hearts. They hesitated, not sure if they should continue fighting. But at this moment, Lin Ming's feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void once more, and his figure faded, seeming as if he were teleporting through the air!

A spear thrust forth, like an azure rainbow shooting through the heavens!

Peng!

The corpse devil fundamentally wasn't able to even react before Lin Ming stabbed into it, sending it flying back and causing its chest to collapse. As the other corpse devil saw this, it growled out and turned around to escape!

The surrounding five people all gulped. These corpse devils had low intelligence and lived mainly based on their instincts. Still, after this brief fight the last remaining one had begun to flee. From this, Lin Ming's terrifying strength could be imagined!

"Lin Ming, chase it!" Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was startled. At this time, chasing that corpse devil was a completely unwise move. In this chaotic space, once he entered into a difference section of the space maze, all of that effort he put into passing through those several dozen miles outwards would be wasted.

"Chase it! That fellow must have some good stuff!" Demonshine urged. Although the corpse devil had a slow reaction time, it wasn't slow by any means. In a short period of time, it had already rushed very far away. If it ran out of sight, it would be basically impossible to catch up in this distorted space energy field.

Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth, grasped the Purple Comet Spear, and gave chase!

As the other five people saw this they were bewildered. What was

Lin Ming doing? Was he actually thinking of chasing that corpse devil?

Damn it!

Ack! At this time, the top priority was obviously to escape from this 1000 mile forbidden zone! What was the point of chasing down this corpse devil and killing it!?

In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, one had to constantly analyze the surroundings while being surrounded by dangers on all sounds. Wasn't chasing this corpse devil the same as committing suicide?

As the other people complained in their hearts, they had no other choice. At this time, Lin Ming was their haven. If he followed, then the others would have to follow without hesitation. Following Lin Ming was the only hope they had to make it out of this dreadful land alive. Without Lin Ming they were over with!

Feng Shen was the first to run forwards. He had absolute belief in Lin Ming. Regardless of what Lin Ming did, he had to have his reasons. There was no need to suspect Lin Ming's methods, because if anyone did, that meant they were wrong!

Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and the rest followed right after. Blackstone frowned, "What is Lin Ming doing? He's just deliberately stirring up trouble!"

Duanmu Qun glared at Blackstone with disgust, not bothering to reason with him. He only coldly said, “If you don’t know then don’t ask. If you have the ability to make it out of here yourself then go ahead and leave!”

“You...” Blackstone’s words died in this throat. He was left speechless. He certainly had to follow Lin Ming, he simply had no other choice. Moreover, what happened just now was his own fault so he didn’t dare say anything more.

The corpse devil madly ran away. Its speed was about the same as Blackstone, Feng Shen, and the rest’s. With Lin Ming’s speed, he just had to shrink the space underneath his feet to catch up, but he purposefully reduced his speed so he could maintain a distance of several hundred feet.

The corpse devil’s mad rush wasn’t in a straight path. Rather, it frequently took corners, curved around, and took sudden lefts and rights. Lin Ming steadfastly followed. No matter where it went, he would follow, with Duanmu Qun and the rest not even daring to go half a step off astray. Everyone was well aware of just how strange this 1000 mile forbidden zone was. Once someone became lost here, then this would also become their burial ground!

The corpse devil brought Lin Ming along for a half hour chase. At this time, a black mountain suddenly appeared in front of them. There seemed to be a strange spatial distortion around this mountain that meant one didn’t see it until they were just 1000 feet away!

As the corpse devil saw this mountain appear, its speed became



faster. It roared and quickly vanished into the mountain.

“Chase it!” Demonshine shouted.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming also rushed in.

Once he stepped into this mountain, Lin Ming felt as if he had entered a completely separate dimension. The corpse devil disappeared, and the endless dreary gray lands that surrounded them also disappeared, replaced by a pitch black space.

“Take the right path and go straight. I left a special mark on that corpse devil earlier, there’s no way that it can escape my palm! And, here is probably... hehe, Lin Ming, we hit the jackpot!”

Jackpot?

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He didn’t ask the details but said, “Let’s wait for the others.”

As his voice fell, Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and the rest also rushed into this dark space.

“Follow me!” Lin Ming simply said. Without further ado, he launched his movement technique and rapidly ran to the right with the five others following him.

With Demonshine’s instructions, Lin Ming ran in seven or eight

circles in the dark. Then, after he stepped through a strangely twisted space barrier, light appeared before him.

At this time, he discovered that he had entered into a cave. Within this cave, there were several sarcophaguses. As for that corpse devil, it crawled into a corner of the cave, sending out intimidating roars towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming calmly took out his Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards the corpse devil. Against a single corpse devil, there simply weren't any problems.

“Lin Ming, this corpse devil is already frightened by you. Although it's trying to intimidate you, the truth is that this is all an act. If you make a channel for it then it will immediately escape.”

“Oh?”

Lin Min moved to the side. In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, he didn't want to fight in any unnecessary battles. It was best if he could retain his maximum strength so that he would have a great chance of living through the next disaster that happened here, not to mention that killing this corpse devil gave him absolutely no advantages at all.

After Lin Ming moved to the side, Feng Shen and the rest also understood as soon as they caught up and hurried to the side. Lin Ming may not fear this corpse devil, but they were different. In this narrow cave, if Lin Ming wasn't here, then it was possible they would become this corpse devil's supper.

Seeing Lin Ming allow it an opening to leave, the corpse devil roared several more times, its rotten eyes shining as it glared at Lin Ming. It cautiously scooted towards this path, and when it felt it was safe enough, suddenly rushed across the cave. Then, as if it had disappeared in space, it simply vanished.

After the corpse devil disappeared, Lin Ming asked, “Demonshine, just what kind of place is this?”

“Haha, Lin Ming! You young boy, we are rich now! I thought that these corpse devils were stronger than they should be. These corpse devils aren’t those higher level monsters that come from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Rather, they are formed within the 1000 mile forbidden zone after High Lords or others die here and then have their corpse possessed by evil spirits. A corpse devil could use infernal energy to temper their corpse and make it unbelievably durable, but not to this degree. Those four corpse devils just now should not have had a defensive power equal to a heaven-step treasure. If those things just relied on the infernal energy in the Eternal Demon Abyss to temper themselves, they wouldn’t be able to accomplish this even in 100,000 years! So, I suspect that they must have some special treasure to temper themselves through body transformation. And, my guess was correct! It is all right here!”

# Chapter 651 – Heaven-step Demon God Bone

---

“Special body transformation treasures? What sort of resources would that be?” Lin Ming’s interest was piqued and he couldn’t help but ask. As someone who was a dual body and law cultivator, he was certainly interested.

“Hehe, just open up those sarcophaguses and take a look inside.” Demonshine excitedly said as he licked his doggy tongue. This old dog was easily roused by things like valuable resources.

There were a total of four sarcophaguses. These sarcophaguses seemed carved from obsidian and there were also strange and simple patterns carved onto them; they appeared to have passed through an immeasurably long time.

Lin Ming stood in front of the sarcophaguses. After not finding any array formations, he asked Demonshine, “Is this something from tens of thousands of years ago?”

“Hey, it might be more than several tens of thousands of years. These sarcophaguses should have been used to bury some important people and this cave was most likely their grave. But, it was just far too long ago, and now that so much time passed, who knows what this place was originally like. In short, this tomb was later captured by those four corpse devils and these sarcophaguses also became their lair.”

“Oh? Those four corpse devils weren’t formed by the bodies left behind here?”

“Ha! How is that possible? Even if it were a top level martial artist like the Eightfall War Emperor, their corpse wouldn’t last for so many tens of thousands of years. Their bones should have decayed or, most likely, condensed into Demon God Bones now. Perhaps the reason that those four corpse devils were attracted to this tomb and decided to settle here was because they were attracted by the energy of those Demon God Bones. Lin Ming, go and open the sarcophaguses.”

“Alright!” Lin Ming agreed. He put away the Purple Comet Spear and bent over, carefully pushing open the first sarcophagus.

With a rumbling sound, an incomparably thick infernal energy spilled out from the sarcophagus. Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin’s eyes lit up. Behind them, Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were also startled, their eyes revealing disbelief and excitement.

At this time, everyone realized that this was a massive treasure trove!

Everyone craned over to see that the sarcophagus was filled with fist-sized black glass balls, over ten in total. They were all high quality Demon God Bones!

Demon God Bones... so many!!!!

Blackstone gulped, nearly drooling as his eyes flashing with greed and desire.

High Lord Cloud Demon licked his lips. It had to be known that an ordinary pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bone was already considered very precious. One as large as a chicken's egg was even rarer. There were very few that were as large as a fist, not to mention that looking at the quality of the energy from these Demon God Bones, they were likely all earth-step Demon God Bones!

More than 10 fist-sized earth-step Demon God Bones, their value could be imagined!

All of the Demon God Bones that High Lord Cloud Demon had ever possessed in his life, even when added together, couldn't compare to even half of a single one of these Demon God Bones!

It was said that the Eternal Demon Abyss was chock full of lucky chances. This was a truly well-deserved reputation! Moreover, this was within the 1000 mile forbidden zone!

“Boy, this is a pretty good sign. Just this first sarcophagus and there are more than 10 low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. I guess there should be around 30 jins total. But the better stuff is still awaiting us!”

“Mm.”

Lin Ming nodded and continued to open the second sarcophagus.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The second sarcophagus was much heavier than the first one. After opening it, a blazing golden light flooded out, illuminating the entire stone cave.

Lin Ming peered into the sarcophagus. Within it, he was surprised to find something that looked like a palm-sized golden plate. He felt that it must be the fruit of some plant; the fragrance was overwhelming.

“This is...”

Lin Ming was stunned. This fruit contained an incomparably extraordinary energy. Just smelling the scent it emitted made him feel relaxed and breezy, as if every cell of his body was being energized.

Behind Lin Ming, everyone else’s eyes had gone perfectly round. Even a fool could see that this golden disc was much more precious than the previous earth-step Demon God Bones.

“Hey! Wow, this is incredible! That’s a profound gold divine fruit! It is a top quality heavenly treasure that is useful for tempering the body! This is even this Saint’s first time seeing such a thing! Boy, your luck is ridiculous. This profound gold divine fruit is a very mystical type of plant. It’s similar to the mushroom from the mortal world. Those mushrooms can grow on dead wood, but this profound gold divine fruit specifically grows on a Demon God Bone. In other words, it is the mushroom formed from a

Demon God Bone. It needs 10,000 years to germinate, 10,000 years to flower, and 10,000 years to produce a fruit. Once the fruit is born, all of the essence within the plant is condensed into that single fruit, becoming the profound gold divine fruit. After picking it, it won't spoil for even 10,000 years afterwards!"

"It's a mushroom that grows from a Demon God Bone?" Lin Ming was shocked. This world was truly vast, all sorts of strange things were possible. As it was said, dead wood could not be carved, but the essence of dead wood could be used to breed ginseng, black tiger palm mushrooms, spiritual bamboo, and all sorts of other precious materials and herbs. If there was a lucky set of coincidences, then dead wood could even breed 1000 year old lingzhi, an amazing medicinal material.

Then... what if that dead wood was replaced with a Demon God Bone?

Compared to dead wood, the essence of a Demon God Bone was trillions upon trillions of times superior in both quality and quantity. If this was used to breed a heavenly treasure, the value of this treasure could be imagined!

Demonshine said, "This profound gold divine fruit cannot be bred from just an ordinary Demon God Bone. It would require at least a high-grade earth-step Demon God Bone, and only with divine providence would the profound gold divine fruit tree be born. The tree would only be a foot high and would need to absorb all of the Demon God Bone's essence in order to germinate. Then, it would have to absorb other Demon God Bones as nutrition, growing for another 30,000 years before its fruit would be born.



You can imagine just how difficult this is! Compared to this profound gold divine fruit, even the Nirvana Dragon Root can't be considered much..."

Hearing Demonshine give such a high evaluation, Lin Ming took a deep breath. But then, he thought of something. He asked, a bit puzzled, "If this profound gold divine fruit is so precious, then how come those four corpse devils didn't swallow it yet?"

"They probably wished to, but as they say, extremes give birth to extremes. This profound gold divine fruit is bred within a very thick yin aura of the infernal energy and death energy here, and the Demon God Bone is also an extreme yin treasure, however... the profound gold divine fruit is actually an extreme yang and extreme light attributed body transformation treasure. With the cultivation of these four corpse devils, they would probably explode from within if they tried to eat this fruit. If they wanted to eat it, they would still need several tens of thousands of years of further cultivation before they could think of attempting it. Still, just by defending the profound gold divine fruit and absorbing the essence energy that it releases, their harvests would still be tremendous! If I'm correct, then the root of this profound gold divine fruit has already been eaten by those four corpse devils, otherwise, how could they have bodies with durability comparable to a heaven-step treasure?"

"I see! So that's how it is..." Lin Ming suddenly realized. After the profound gold divine fruit was born, the energy within the roots would naturally be much weaker. If the corpse devils ate the root instead, that was still at the level where they could withstand it.

“What a pity!”

Lin Ming regretfully shook his head. For such a miraculous body transformation medicine like this, even the root was a priceless treasure. Yet, it was eaten up by those four corpse devils.

His thoughts flashed and he asked, “If I had those corpse devils’ bodies, could I refine the medicine efficacy of the profound gold divine fruit’s root from them?”

Lin Ming was only thoughtlessly asking but Demonshine had a scandalized expression after hearing it, “Boy, you’re quite the funny one. The medicinal efficacy has already fused into those corpse devils’ bodies, so even if you refine them there won’t be much left over. Not just that, but it would take a high level alchemist to do so. Do you really think that all those piddling losers of the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent have the ability to do this?!”

“Mm...” Lin Ming nodded, bit embarrassed. He was only casually asking anyways, if it didn’t work then that was fine too. He let out a deep breath and then moved towards the third sarcophagus.

As the other five people saw this they couldn’t help but gulp. Today, all the sights they had seen were just too impactful on them.

Even if it were a Holy Land descendant like Feng Shen and Lan Xin, the total amount of resources they had used from birth until now only added up to a single Demon God Bone from the first

sarcophagus!

The third sarcophagus' cover rumbled opened and a thick burst of infernal energy burst out, no less than that of the second sarcophagus. As for Duanmu Qun and the rest who were standing behind Lin Ming, even though they could feel this extremely potent energy, they were too numbed to be fazed by any of this. Even if some monster jumped out they still wouldn't be surprised.

However, after the third sarcophagus fully opened, all of their eyes still went as wide as full moons. In the massive third sarcophagus, there was only a pigeon egg-sized green glass bead. Although it was small, the energy inherent within it was more than all of the Demon God Bones of the first sarcophagus added up together!

At this time, Duanmu Qun and the rest, who had never seen this object before, could already deduce what it was.

This was... a heaven-step Demon God Bone!

This was a legendary treasure! According to rumors, not even a generation ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had ever obtained a heaven-step Demon God Bone!

“Boy, I have to say your luck is just too good! This is a low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone!”

“Of this low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone and the

profound gold divine fruit, which one is more valuable?” Lin Ming asked.

“The profound gold divine fruit. As long as you are strong enough, you will be able to find a low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone here if you put in the time and effort. In fact, you can even find many of them But as for a profound gold divine fruit, that is a treasure born from the stars aligning just right. Without a great lucky chance you would never be able to find something like this.”

Lin Ming nodded. Although the profound gold divine fruit was more precious, to the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent, they would probably value the heaven-step Demon God Bone more. The legends said that a heaven-step Demon Cloud Bone was an absolute stepping stone to entering the Emperor boundary, and the truth was probably not far off. Especially to someone like High Lord Cloud Demon whose future talent hovered at the precipice of becoming an Emperor level powerhouse. If he could obtain a heaven-step Demon God Bone, the chances of him becoming an Emperor level powerhouse would rise astronomically.

As Lin Ming thought this, he glanced over at High Lord Cloud Demon. And, indeed, he saw naked greed and thirst clouding his eyes!

With his lucky chance to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse right in front of him, how could he not be tempted! If he missed out on this then he would probably never become an Emperor level powerhouse!

Lin Ming didn't bother with High Lord Cloud Demon, he continued moving onto the fourth sarcophagus!

"I wonder just what is in this fourth sarcophagus..." Lin Ming thought out loud.

"Haha, maybe there's a medium-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone inside!" Demonshine happily teased. He was in very high spirits right now. Although these were mostly body transformation and essence gathering system treasures that he couldn't use, it would still allow Lin Ming to increase his own strength. If Lin Ming became stronger, then his chances of helping Demonshine restore his divine soul were that much higher.

Lin Ming bent over and pushed hard against the cover of the fourth sarcophagus, opening it.

With a rumbling sound the fourth sarcophagus opened. However, as he looked inside, he was completely stunned.

# Chapter 652 – Goddess

---

It wasn't just Lin Ming who was completely stunned – even the five others behind him were petrified.

Before this, they had seen the previous sarcophaguses that had low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones, a priceless treasure that was the profound gold divine fruit, and then the heaven-step Demon God Bone that not even the rulers of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had ever obtained.

It was fair to say that no matter what was in the fourth sarcophagus, they would already be numbed to it. But they absolutely never thought that it would be what it was.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and completely shoved open the sarcophagus' lid. Looking inside, he was left speechless for a long time.

Lin Ming had imagined what could be in the fourth sarcophagus. If it were a trove of medium-grade or high-grade heaven-step Demon God Bones, or even if it were empty, he wouldn't be too surprised.

But he never imagined that in this fourth sarcophagus, there would actually be a woman lying down!

A peerless woman!

Her black hair fell down like a waterfall of night, her crystal clear skin seemed to be crystallized from the purest essence of the stars and moon, and her unrivalled features seemed carved from the finest jade.

She didn't even seem like a woman that could be born within the world, rather, she was like an ultimate sense of aesthetics formed from the energy of heaven and earth.

The woman lay down in the sarcophagus as if she had fallen asleep. One even suspected that her long and tender eyelashes would tremble, and then she would open them, revealing brilliant eyes like liquid moonlight!

‘Just what is this... heavens, could she be a young woman from tens of thousands ago? Or perhaps a Supreme Elder of ancient times?’

Lin Ming found all of this incredible. The young woman in front of him seemed to be in her twenties at the most, not much older than he was. Moreover, beside this young woman, she had also been buried with her weapon and it was even a spear!

However, this spear had broken off and all that was left over was less than half, and even this small portion seemed immeasurably damaged. Once a treasure was damaged, it would be hard for it to resist the erosion that accompanied the passing of time. After tens or even hundreds of thousands of years, this half of a spear already appeared far too rusted.

It could be imagined that she once used this spear on the great battlefield, and, after a fierce battle, her weapon was damaged and even her life slowly faded away...

It turned out that she used the spear...

Lin Ming found this astonishing. In his experience so far, young women tended to use weapons like soft swords; it was rare to see one using such a mighty long spear!

Subconsciously, he wanted to touch that spear that had rusted to the point where it seemed as if it could break apart at any moment. But at this time, Demonshine's frantic voice sounded out in his mind, "Don't move!"

Lin Ming drew back his hands like lightning, taking deep breaths. Yes, his actions just now had been crude and reckless. In this incomparably mysterious Eternal Demon Abyss, any reckless action could invite a disaster upon everyone here.

Demonshine hesitated for a moment before saying, "This girl is clearly dead, but her body seems to be overflowing with life force. In my knowledge, this is really... I, I have no idea..."

Demonshine shook his head. When he followed the Demon Emperor within the Realm of the Gods, he could still have been considered quite a character there. But the Realm of the Gods was far too vast. Compared to those true hidden powerhouses within the Realm of the Gods, the Demon Emperor wasn't even worthy of being an ant. It had to be known that when the Demon Emperor



joined the siege of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands so many years ago, there had been 10,000 characters that were all at the same rank – if not higher – than the Demon Emperor.

The Demon Emperor was in no way a pinnacle existence within the Realm of the Gods. As his familiar, Demonshine's knowledge was even more limited.

“This corpse has probably laid here for at least several tens of thousands of years. For all this time, she hasn't decayed at all. Instead, her body is full of exuberant vitality and she seems to have fallen asleep. This phenomenon has already gone beyond my scope of understanding...” Demonshine shook his head. It was very rare to see the usually boastful and proud Demonshine sigh in such a depressed manner.

Lin Ming looked at this young woman's corpse. Although he didn't know why she lay here for so many tens of thousands of years, what Lin Ming was absolutely certain of was that this woman was a terrifying character before her death. She had been at least at the same level as the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Land, if not higher!

Perhaps after one's strength reached a certain boundary, their body could still exist like an immortal idol for hundreds of thousands of years after death. Who knew?

“Brother Lin, just... just what is this?” Duanmu Qun stared at the young woman in the sarcophagus. He had to admit that this woman was the most perfect being that he had ever laid his eyes on. Even knowing that she had died, her unrivalled beauty still

stirred his heart.

The Fey were born with a natural desire to pursue beauty and beautiful things. As Lan Xin stepped forwards, she also sighed as she saw this young woman. How could such a perfect woman die like this?

“I have no idea. She should have been one of the original masters of this tomb. Her corpse hasn’t decayed for 100,000 years... the boundary that she has reached has surpassed any of our imaginations.”

Lin Ming looked deeply at the woman one last time and then decisively closed the sarcophagus.

“Mm? What do you plan on...” Duanmu Qun said, a bit startled.

“Forget it. Let her rest in peace.” Lin Ming shook his head.

“You plan on giving up this woman’s corpse?” Demonshine asked, a bit surprised. Not mentioning just what use this woman’s corpse would have in the future, just any object on her body would be a colossal fortune, yet Lin Ming hadn’t even searched her, instead directly giving up on the body. This required a very strong will. The reason that Demonshine had prevented Lin Ming from touching that broken spear was because he wanted him to study it first without rashly acting out. He hadn’t intended for Lin Ming to completely abandon this sarcophagus.

Lin Ming said, “Since Senior died she has soundly slept here. Opening her sarcophagus is already disturbing her peace. If I were to search her body for treasure then that would make me no different from a grave robber desecrating the graves of the dead and blaspheming their lives. I don’t want to draw the grievances and punishments of heaven upon me. Moreover, she was likely a remarkable and powerful ancient king. In her life she had limitless glory, and if in her death her grave were to be desecrated, then that would be far too sad.

“Also, the Eternal Demon Abyss is an extremely strange place and there is a powerful force here. If I do something so wicked that offends the heavens, then I might suffer the curse. Those four corpse devils stayed in this ancient tomb for so long, at least thousands of years, and yet none of them dared to even touch this sarcophagus. There must be something that made them fear this grave and stop, allowing her to sleep peacefully here.....”

As Lin Ming spoke, he arranged several array symbols around the sarcophagus and sealed it away.

Demonshine nodded. Indeed, those corpse devils loved to eat things that were full of life force. Yet that young woman in the sarcophagus and had lain there, her clothes neatly ordered and her hair smooth and undisturbed. Obviously, after she was buried, there had never been anyone or anything that had dared to move her. There must be many reasons for this. Or perhaps, those corpse devils were scared by the aura of someone that had once been a peerless powerhouse...

When the array symbols fell onto the sarcophagus, they

completely sealed it away. As Blackstone saw this, he opened his mouth but ended up not saying anything. He was reluctant to give up on whatever treasures might be in that coffin, but he didn't have the qualifications right now to openly refute Lin Ming's decisions.

“Alright!”

After Lin Ming completely sealed the sarcophagus, he turned towards the other martial artists and casually said, “So about the distribution of treasure...”

As these words were spoken, Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon's hearts rose into their throats. The distribution of this lucky chance!

That was the most important matter!

Of these three sarcophagus, casually taking out something from any of them would be a priceless treasure. Especially that golden disc-shaped fruit and that heaven-step Demon God Bone. Those were treasures that even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would go crazy over!

“In total, there is one heaven-step Demon God Bone, a golden fruit, and 16 low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. I want the heaven-step Demon God Bone, the golden fruit, and half of the low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. You may divide the rest amongst yourselves.”

Lin Ming's casual words seemed to rip Blackstone's heart out. F\*ck! This fellow was far too sadistic!

In other words, that meant there were only eight low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones to divide among five of them. As for him, he was the weakest of the group. It would already be excellent if he could be apportioned even one!

Entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone, experienced countless life or death dangers, and yet all he got for this was just a single earth-step Demon God Bone? Blackstone couldn't accept this!

High Lord Cloud Demon also grimaced. With his strength, he could be given two earth-step Demon God Bones. But, a low-grade earth-step Demon God Bone was mainly used for four-star Demon Kings to break into the quasi Emperor realm. If he truly wished to break through that Emperor level bottleneck, then the use of a low-grade earth-step Demon God Bone was limited. Even one or two low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones wouldn't guarantee that he could break through to the Emperor realm.

High Lord Cloud Demon grit his teeth. He stared at the heaven-step Demon God Bone in the third sarcophagus, his eyes flashing with pure avarice and unwillingness.

This Demon God Bone was just too important to him! With this lucky chance in front of him, if he missed out on it then he would never have any hope for his future!

“Lin Ming... your portion is a bit too much...” High Lord Cloud

Demon was dissatisfied, but he tried to ease his tone down as respectfully as he could. At this time, he didn't dare to cause trouble with Lin Ming.

He felt that Lin Ming had suggested this distribution because he was willing to bargain a little. If High Lord Cloud Demon didn't fight for it, then it would settle like this. But if he did try to struggle a bit, then there might be some hope for him.

This heaven-step Demon God Bone could only be found through serendipity. At this time, now that he saw one, how could he give up so easily?

“Yes, ahem, Lin Ming, you are just too callous right now. You can eat the meat, but you should at least leave the soup for us. I'm not suggesting that the six of us equally divide the treasure. As long as I can have 10% of the treasure then I will be content. I entered into this 1000 mile forbidden zone, risked my life, lost my arm, paid such a great price, I should at least have a little bit of harvest.”

Blackstone echoed. Him mentioning 10% was only a high point he set so he could bargain with it. In truth, he only expected around 5% of the treasure. Now that he had lost an arm, he would no longer enjoy the status and treatment that he previously received in his Holy Land. In addition to his strength sharply dropping, his chances of breaking through to the Emperor level became even more dubious. If he could grasp this lucky chance in front of him, then his chances of breaking through to the Emperor level in the future would be much higher.

Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin didn't have much of an

expression. Although it was true that they too desired the heaven-step Demon God Bone and that golden fruit, they were well aware that without Lin Ming, they wouldn't even have their lives, much less treasure to divide. In truth, if Lin Ming wanted to take the entirety of the treasure for himself, there wasn't any way they could object to that either.

Moreover, for them, if there weren't any surprises, they would be able to fully step foot into the Emperor level in the future. Because of this, their desire for the heaven-step Demon God Bone was not as intense as Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon's.

After listening to Blackstone's words, Lin Ming's lips curved in a caustic smile. Towards this sort of greedy clown, he simply didn't want to bother with him. If Blackstone had quietly accepted matters as they were then Lin Ming wouldn't mind bequeathing something onto him. But, now that he had to chirp up with his stupid suggestions, Lin Ming directly changed his mind.

Lin Ming coldly said, "Blackstone, I seem to remember that you once said that if I could take you out of here safely, you would give me everything within your spatial ring and you wouldn't keep anything at all. I think I remembered that correctly, right?"

With this light rebuttal, Blackstone was left speechless.

## Chapter 653 – Murder

---

When Blackstone had been wallowing in despair, he had indeed said that if he could make it out of this land alive, he would give all of his wealth to Lin Ming. But at that time, Blackstone had been desperate to survive, so it wasn't strange that he would make such a promise in that situation.

Now he saw just how powerful Lin Ming really was. Not only had Lin Ming managed to find the method to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone but his strength was indomitable. By himself, he had defeated the four corpse devils, making it seem that their chances of leaving here were much higher.

Under the constantly hanging threat of death, when a person was doing everything they could to survive, as long as they were tossed a rope they would be willing to give up all their wealth. But when that threat was gone, their heart would change and their greed would return. This was the debased nature of man. Moreover, with such a lucky chance in front of him, something so precious that could only be found through a stroke of fate, how could Blackstone not be moved?

After being rebutted by Lin Ming's words, Blackstone's bleak expression became even uglier. "Lin Ming... it's true that I said those words, it's just that... we entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone together and I risked my life this entire time. Although I wasn't the one to kill the enemies, I still managed to serve as a shield for you. At least, consider that I lost my arm..."

Blackstone hadn't even finished speaking when he was



interrupted by Lin Ming. “You risked your life for me? Was I the one that pushed you into the 1000 mile forbidden zone? Was I the one who forced you to ‘bring up the rear’ and have your arm cut off?”

This series of rhetorical questions left Blackstone dumbfounded. Initially, the reason he had lost an arm was because he was too scared to rush towards the corpse devil.

At this time High Lord Cloud Demon butted in, “Young Hero Lin... I know that without you, none of us would be alive right now, let alone have a chance to obtain resources. It’s just that... someone as majestic as you will inevitably become a Peerless Emperor in the future and have countless more resources. In fact, aren’t all these resources not too effective for you? I don’t think you’d be able to use everything. If this fist sized earth-step Demon God Bone would have a base value of one, then that heaven-step Demon God Bone would probably have a value of 40 to 50. I don’t know what the golden fruit is, but it shouldn’t be any worse than the heaven-step Demon God Bone, making it also worth 40 to 50. In addition with the 16 earth-step Demon God Bones, that is around a total of 100. You only gave the five of us eight earth-step Demon God Bones, so that is only 8% divided amongst the rest of us...”

“The truth is that I don’t need that much. As long as I can have  $\frac{1}{3}$ ... no,  $\frac{1}{2}$  of the heaven-step Demon God Bone then that will be enough for me to break through the Emperor level bottleneck. I can make an oath right here that as long as I become an Emperor level powerhouse, I will remember this kindness for my entire life. When that time comes, if Young Hero Lin has any needs, I will work like a horse for you!”

High Lord Cloud Demon solemnly vowed, making swearing gestures with his hands.

Lin Ming was simply unmoved by this nonsense. His face was expressionless as he said, "It's true that I have a great number of lucky chances, and I could even say that this heaven-step Demon God Bone isn't too tempting to me. But, I have friends and family who also need to use them. The decisions I make, I will not change. Me willing to save you isn't because you are special or anything. Me leading you to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone is already me being benevolent to you. As for lucky chances, why should I divide any of them with you?"

The reason that he helped rescue everyone was mainly because of Feng Shen and partly because of Lan Xin. Lin Ming regarded Feng Shen as a friend, and Lan Xin had also been a teammate of his, both of them having risked their lives in a squad. When Lin Ming had gone back to capture the demon bone, Lan Xin had sincerely advised him not to go for his own safety, showing true consideration for Lin Ming's welfare.

Although this was only a very light and simple friendship, Lin Ming placed a great deal of importance and emphasis in these relationships he had, no matter how faint they were. Before, the reason he had been willing to stop and wait for these people and even dividing them less than 10% of these resources, was all because he appreciated Feng Shen and Lan Xin and was willing to give them some face.

As for Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon, he was already

being merciful by not instantly killing them. And they still wanted to take part of his lucky chance? Dream on!

In fact, if it wasn't for the fact that Lin Ming was planning on returning to the South Horizon Region right after this tour of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would have already killed Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon right here and right now. Whether it was the profound gold divine fruit or the heaven-step Demon God Bone, both of these treasures were enough to make him a target of powerful forces once the news spread out.

“Young Hero Lin...” High Lord Cloud Demon wanted to say something, but as he saw Lin Ming's icy cold eyes glaring at him, he could only shut up and remain silent. He felt that once Lin Ming made a decision, he would not easily change it. He simply didn't have the power to bargain at all. He could only choose to accept this or have nothing at all.

As the weaker man, there was nothing he could do. He didn't doubt that if Lin Ming wanted to, he could kill all five of them.

High Lord Cloud Demon finally relinquished his desire towards the heaven-step Demon God Bone, and was planning on getting two earth-step Demon God Bones for himself before going back. At least something was better than nothing.

But, at this moment, a voice suddenly resounded in his mind.

“Don't you want to obtain a heaven-step Demon God Bone? Don't you want to break through the Emperor level bottleneck?”

Who?

The sudden voice startled High Lord Cloud Demon. This voice appeared in his mind, and after hearing it, it didn't sound like it came from any of the other five people here.

Could this be...

High Lord Cloud Demon's eyes turned over to the fourth sarcophagus, his face paling. It couldn't be her!

As this idea grew in his heart, a chill rose from the soles of his feet and traveled up his spine, shooting straight into the skies. He did want a heaven-step Demon God Bone, but he absolutely didn't want to come into contact with this kind of ghostly being.

At this time, High Lord Cloud Demon also noticed Blackstone's situation. Before, Blackstone had a very ugly complexion, but now he looked confused, his pupils losing focus as if he were in a trance.

"He also heard the voice?" High Lord Cloud Demon was shocked. Also, it appeared that Blackstone had already fallen into this trap!

At this moment, High Lord Cloud Demon suddenly discovered that it wasn't just Blackstone that heard this voice, but also Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Duanmu Qun. All of their complexions had changed. Among them, Duanmu Qun and Feng Shen still appeared lucid, but a trace of turmoil had appeared in Lan Xin's eyes!

‘This is bad!’ High Lord Cloud Demon’s heart surged with a strong sense of unease. At this time, he remembered Lin Ming and quickly turned to look at him, but then, his field of vision suddenly turned into an endless white field. In the dim light, he could see a peerless powerhouse wearing armor, holding a divine weapon as he looked upon the world with contempt!

And this powerhouse’s appearance was exactly the same as High Lord Cloud Demon’s!

This was his appearance several hundred years from now after he became a Peerless Emperor!

“Peerless Emperor? My Peerless Emperor!?” This thought reverberated in High Lord Cloud Demon’s mind. Then, he lost himself in illusion, forgetting what was happening now.

Many martial artists had a mental weakness. Once they suffered a soul attack or tried to make a breakthrough, this weakness would become their heart demon, struggling to swallow their spiritual sea.

High Lord Cloud Demon’s heart demon was his obsessive desire to become an Emperor level powerhouse!

At this time, besides Lin Ming, the only one able to maintain their sanity was Duanmu Qun. But, his forehead was seeping with sweat and he had an extremely grim expression.

Feng Shen was second to Duanmu Qun. Although his strength was weaker, his heart was firm and he was able to maintain his consciousness. As for Lan Xin, High Lord Cloud Demon, and Blackstone, all three of them were completely entranced.

“Who is this?” Lin Ming’s mind went cold. He grasped the Purple Comet Spear and maintained full alert. He own will was as firm as iron and he also had the battle spirit and Samsara martial intent; he was able to completely ignore this sort of soul attack.

He didn’t even blink to destroy that illusion in his soul.

There weren’t any signs of evil spirits around... could it be...

Lin Ming suddenly turned to look at the fourth sarcophagus!

Was it her!?

If it truly was her, then the consequences would be calamitous!

She had been an unbelievable existence. Even if she had died 100,000 years ago, her residual will was not something that Lin Ming could contend with.

But at this moment, Demonshine’s voice sounded in his mind, “Lin Ming, do not panic. It is not that woman, no, it is the heaven-step Demon God Bone! I was negligent! A heaven-step Demon God

Bone must have a mind of its own. How could it willingly be caught and eaten up by others?”

Demonshine’s voice suddenly woke up Lin Ming! Demonshine had once said that a heaven-step Demon God Bone must have a consciousness and would be much more difficult to capture. In fact, even a top earth-step Demon God Bone would be intelligent. For instance when Lin Ming had caught the Blood Demon Bone from before, that demon bone was intelligent, and could tempt martial artists close to absorb their blood vitality.

So this was it!

Lin Ming let out a deep breath. If it was just the heaven-step Demon God Bone, then there wasn’t a reason to dread it at all.

He took a step forwards, wanting to seal up the heaven-step Demon God Bone that was causing all this trouble. But at this moment, Blackstone let out a bellowing roar as he rushed towards Lin Ming!

The heavy sword in his hand swept out straight towards Lin Ming’s neck!

Blackstone had been thoroughly controlled.

It was apparent that the heaven-step Demon God Bone feared Lin Ming so it had controlled Blackstone and made him attack.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming coldly snorted, “Since it’s like this, don’t blame me!”

Towards someone like Blackstone, Lin Ming wouldn’t stay his hand for fear of harming him, or do something so stupid as withstanding Blackstone’s attacks while trying to suppress the heaven-step Demon God Bone.

If he was controlled because his mind was weak, who was to blame?

Grasping the Purple Comet Spear, the Heretical God Force opened. Lin Ming’s spear swept out!

Bang!

The heavy sword was struck away. Blackstone’s arm shook and his palm ruptured

In terms of striking power, he was no different from a baby in front of Lin Ming.

However, after the heavy sword was sent flying away, Blackstone still rushed towards Lin Ming, wanting to strangle him. His eyes were already a deep blood red.

Seeing this, Lin Ming sneered. His attack just now had contained his battle spirit. A battle spirit was invisible and intangible. It could crush all, including the divine soul, negative emotions, life



force, heart demons, and everything else that was insubstantial.

Lin Ming had wanted to help Blackstone by destroying the heart demon that had invaded his spiritual sea, but his spear strike simply had no effect, Blackstone was still desperately trying to kill him at all cost. So, it seemed Blackstone really did hate him from the depths of his soul. This heart demon had galvanized the hatred in his heart and made him desperate to kill Lin Ming.

“You are hopeless!”

Lin Ming was expressionless as he thrust out the Purple Comet Spear!

This spear strike was infused with his battle spirit as well as the full power of the Heretical God Force.

Puff!

With the added sharpness from the battle spirit, Blackstone’s protective demon essence and neck were both torn apart by Lin Ming’s spear like paper, blood shooting out!

## Chapter 654 – Peak of Ten Wings

---

After Lin Ming killed Blackstone with a spear, Duanmu Qun's complexion changed. Out of everyone here besides Lin Ming, he was the most clear minded!

Even though Blackstone was a Holy Land descendant, Lin Ming had killed him with absolutely no qualms. His actions were ruthless and decisive!

Seeing that Lan Xin was also controlled, Duanmu Qun fell into a panic. What should he do? She might also be killed by Lin Ming!

Taking back the long spear, a stream of blood shot out and Blackstone's body shook and he took several steps back. His eyes were still blood red, his hands covering this neck as he stared at Lin Ming with utter hatred burning in his gaze.

“What a mess.”

Lin Ming coldly looked at Blackstone. This type of person was nothing but a vicious black-hearted wolf. He had been showing kindness and good intentions in saving him from this hellhole, and not only was he not grateful but he actually held a grudge because he wasn't given more resources, wanting to kill Lin Ming in the future just for this. This type of person, even if he hadn't been controlled, Lin Ming would still have killed him. He didn't want to waste any effort in saving a potential enemy. This was the profound lesson that Ouyang Boyan had taught him. Even if he didn't have any family or friends or anyone else in the Holy Demon

Continent, he still wouldn't let such a snake lay hidden here.

“Die!”

Kacha!

Lin Ming's palm cut across Blackstone's neck, directly severing his throat!

Blackstone was like mud as he softly slumped to the floor...

Like this, a great Holy Land descendent had died here drowning in his hatred.

“Next is...” Lin Ming turned to the heaven-step Demon God Bone. As he withstood its will attack, he stepped closer and closer to the Demon God Bone. The Demon God Bone trembled panicked and began to tremble, issuing out whining howling sounds. It started to desperately activate its inherent Emperor Will to attack Lin Ming, but there simply wasn't any effect at all.

Like this, it had no choice but to give up, using its will attacks on the others present.

As a result, Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon lost the last sliver of sanity in their eyes. They rushed towards Lin Ming, coming in from both sides!

“Tsk!” Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a thick killing intent.

“Brother Lin! Please, show mercy!” As Duanmu Qun saw this, he was dismayed. But, because of the will attack from the heaven-step Demon God Bone, he was rooted in place. Even just this shout almost caused him to lose his mind because he had diverted a bit of his attention!

Towards Duanmu Qun’s pleas, Lin Ming simply turned a deaf ear. He flicked the Purple Comet Spear in his hand, and in the next moment, a brilliant spear light shot through the sky!

Around Lin Ming, the flow of time seemed to instantly slow down. As Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon rushed towards Lin Ming, he immediately thrust out twice!

One spear towards High Lord Cloud Demon’s heart and the other between Lan Xin’s eyes!

Seeing this, Duanmu Qun’s pupils contracted, overcome with a hysterical horror!

“No...”

Puff!

A bloody light shot out!

For those controlled by the heaven-step Demon God Bone, although the energy within their body would momentarily increase, because they lost their rationality and thinking, they were completely unable to break through Lin Ming's strange Concept of Space and Time attack.

Lin Min's attack could penetrate the most durable of defenses; how could High Lord Cloud Demon defend against it?

A spear easily thrust through High Lord Cloud Demon's heart. With a twist, a tyrannical true essence erupted, directly crushing High Lord Cloud Demon's heart!

At the same time, another spear light flashed, piercing between Lan Xin's eyes!

Seeing that cold spearpoint and the keen energy it released, Duanmu Qun felt his heart sinking into despair!

As for Lan Xin, her expression was still vacant even as she kept stumbling towards this attack!

The Purple Comet Spear was like a bolt of lightning as it thrust between Lan Xin's eyebrows before quickly returning, blood blooming!

Lan Xin's body stiffened. She immediately slumped to the floor as if she had lost every bone in her body.

“Lan Xin!”

Duanmu Qun’s heart stopped beating for a second as his world fell apart around him!

Because of the interests and entanglement of their sects, him and Lan Xin couldn’t develop a budding relationship as a man and a woman. But, after knowing each other for so many years, their friendship was still very deep.

“She’s fine.” Lin Ming calmly said as he looked at Lan Xin. “I’ve cut away her heart demon. The wound between her eyebrows isn’t even a quarter of an inch deep, she’ll be fine.”

In that attack just now, Lin Ming had used his battle spirit to invade Lan Xin’s spiritual sea and destroy the heart demon residing there.

Although a battle spirit was powerful, it wasn’t omnipotent. If Lan Xin really did hold hatred for Lin Ming in her heart, then that heart demon within her would have been be strong. She would have been just like Blackstone, rushing to kill Lin Ming even if she was wounded.

If that had happened, then Lin Ming wouldn’t have been soft-hearted. No matter how beautiful Lan Xin was, he would have used a heavy hand to destroy the flower!

‘Cut apart her heart demon? Could Lin Ming have...’

Duanmu Qun paused. As someone who came from a super Holy Land that neared a sixth-grade sect, his experiences and knowledge far surpassed the ordinary man's. Towards the understanding of battle spirits and will, his knowledge wasn't much worse than Lin Ming's!

Only the battle spirit, known as that power that could cut through all, could enter into a martial artist's spiritual sea and cut apart their heart demon!

Lin Ming, he... he comprehended his own battle spirit?

How... this... how was this possible?

Duanmu Qun was simply unable to believe this!

Initially, when he stepped into the Road of Emperor, he also had the intention of tempering his will and forming his own battle spirit. Finally, he tarried at road of will lights for over 10 days before he spent a great deal of effort and energy and finally passed the first quasi Emperor will light. When he reached the second quasi Emperor will light, he wasn't able to bear it anymore. If he was having so much trouble with a quasi Emperor will light, there was no need to mention what a true Emperor level will light would do to him.

Within his generation, Duanmu Qun had an extraordinary will. In addition to his terrifying background, his amazing talent, his uncanny perception, and his top cultivation method, he could be

called a favored son of the heavens. He had also felt that he towered above others. But, when he tried to condense his own battle spirit he suffered a brutal blow; the disparity was just too great.

When he entered the Road of Emperor, he had been a one-star Demon King, equal to a human middle to late Revolving master. Even so, he had still failed! As a last resort, Duanmu Qun had chosen the road of stone tablets.

As for Lin Ming, his cultivation at that time had been an entire realm lower – he was only at the extreme Xiantian realm. With just his extreme Xiantian cultivation he had been able to form his own battle spirit?

Unprecedented since ancient times was putting it lightly!

Thinking about it, when Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, he had stayed within for over half a year. After coming out, his cultivation had only increased by half a small boundary. This was truly incomprehensible. At the time, Duanmu Qun had also felt that something was wrong. Knowing what he knew now, Lin Ming had most likely chosen to stay on the road of will lights and had gone as far as being able to form his own battle spirit!

The road of will lights was only useful in tempering the will, it was extremely limited in raising one's cultivation. This would explain why Lin Ming's cultivation had only increased by such a small amount.



Heavens!

What kind of talent was this!? Compared to this, something like some silly Titled Asura was just garbage!

For the first time, Duanmu Qun felt fear and awe towards Lin Ming. He no longer took Lin Ming as a rival, but rather as a future earth-shaking and heaven-conquering legend!

Perhaps... even being the number one master of the Holy Demon Continent wouldn't be enough to satisfy Lin Ming. In the future, it was very likely that he would break through the martial void and step into the Realm of the Gods, even becoming an overlord of a territory there!

As Duanmu Qun's thoughts were racing, Feng Shen began to lose himself.

Before Feng Shen completely lose his self-control, Lin Ming took a step forwards and raised his spear, stabbing it between Feng Shen's eyes!

Ca!

Feng Shen trembled and a bit of blood splashed out from between his eyes. He didn't slump down to the floor like Lan Xin did, but instead directly woke up. "What happened to me?"

"I'll tell you later." Lin Ming turned to Duanmu Qun.

Duanmu Qun was suddenly frightened. His will was being invaded, and he had no strength to resist Lin Ming at the moment.

He saw that Lin Ming's attacks were able to cut apart heart demons, but High Lord Cloud Demon had not received this treatment. Lin Ming's spear had directly pierced through his heart. This was a simple and pure killing move. Lin Ming had intended to kill High Lord Cloud Demon from the very start!

Perhaps it was because Lin Ming saw the hatred hiding within High Lord Cloud Demon, or perhaps it was because he was disgusted by High Lord Cloud Demon's greedy character, but, in short, he had decisively killed High Lord Cloud Demon without an ounce of mercy.

Realizing this, Duanmu Qun gulped. With some difficulty, he said, "I... I'm alright..."

"...Okay..."

Lin Ming nodded and then turned around towards the Demon God Bone. Duanmu Qun was still sweating from a cold fear because, just now, he had discovered something else. After Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were killed by Lin Ming, the infernal energy had left their bodies, and half of it surged towards Lin Ming before being swallowed up by his Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

At this time, Duanmu Qun had seen that the ten-winged

Heavenly Demon Tattoo on Lin Ming's arm had actually reached the peak of the late ten-wings stage.

High Lord Cloud Demon had come from the strongest Skysplit Tower within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, Heavenly Cloud Tower. Even there, he had been one of the top ranked High Lords. The infernal energy within him was much richer, and after this energy was absorbed by Lin Ming, he immediately broke through the late ten-wing stage bottleneck and entered into the early peak of ten-wings!

He was just a single step away from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

“Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo is actually... at the peak of 10 wings?”

After Duanmu Qun realized this, his heart chilled. If this continued, then it was possible Lin Ming could become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

He wanted to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon?

As a Holy Land descendant, Duanmu Qun was well aware of what a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was to the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

It was a completely taboo existence!

Even the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler was not allowed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon without permission!

Moreover, in order to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, one had to find and kill a massive amount of powerful High Lords. Even if one was allowed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, it wasn't something that an ordinary person could ever accomplish.

Lin Ming had unexpectedly and silently become a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon. Along the way, how many high Lords had he killed?

That ridiculous Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon had thought something so dumb as trying to discuss dividing lucky chances with Lin Ming. They probably thought that Lin Ming was just a little amateur boy, but he was actually a tiger wearing a sheep's skin. They had both brought about their own deaths!

In any case, no matter what, he could not be enemies with Lin Ming.

This was the only thought in Duanmu Qun's mind at the time. He didn't know how old Lin Ming was, but at most he was 22 or 23. To be so young and have such a cultivation, strength, and to even form his own battle spirit in the Xiantian realm... with his firm and decisive character, his ruthless actions, Lin Ming nearly had no weaknesses!

Once offended, such a person would return hundreds or even a thousand years later. At that time, even destroying a super Holy Land might be as simple as turning a hand..

It was exactly because he had all these thoughts at once that Duanmu Qun's back was cold with sweat.

As he was lost in his thoughts, Lin Ming had already arrived in front of the heaven-step Demon God Bone.

This was another Demon God Bone that held the residual Emperor Will of an ancient powerhouse. The sort of will attack that this God Demon Bone was capable of was exactly what Lin Ming was least afraid of. Its attack, towards him who had fully formed his bronze battle spirit and had also broken through to Revolving Core, could at most scratch his boot.

As the Demon God Bone saw Lin Ming closing in, it began to issue out ear-piercing cries, as if it were an actual living creature.

Lin Ming simply didn't care. He thrust out one hand.

“Seal!”

# Chapter 655 – Black Hole Revolving Core

---

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the bronze battle spirit that lived there howled. With the array symbols that he formed infused with his battle spirit, they immediately enveloped the Demon God Bone.

A battle spirit could be attached to any attack or weapon. Of course, this included even the energy of an array symbol!

After fusing with a wisp of battle spirit, the golden array symbols became much sharper.

Seeing this rain of golden light fall over it, the Demon God Bone screamed in horror. This sharp sound really made one's scalp tingle with dread.

The Demon God Bone used every last bit of its strength to launch a will attack against Lin Ming, but all of its actions were useless.

Not too far away, Duanmu Qun was alarmed. Among everyone present, besides Lin Ming, he understood the most about will and battle spirits. He was also clear as to what attack method this Demon God bone used.

Ever since Lin Ming began sealing away the Demon God Bone, all of the pressure on Duanmu Qun's body suddenly vanished. The Demon God Bone had given up its attacks on everyone else and was using its complete strength to resist Lin Ming. Even so, Lin Ming didn't even blink; it was like he didn't even notice it.

Was his willpower that strong?

After an incense stick of time, the screeching howls of the heaven-step Demon God Bone began to weaken before completely vanishing. Duanmu Qun took several steps forwards and found that the heaven-step Demon God Bone within the sarcophagus was already wrapped up in a thick cocoon.

The cocoon was formed by layers upon layers of array symbols as well as a purple power of thunder. The power of thunder had an absolute advantage against evil ghosts and spirits, using it to suppress this Demon God Bone was undoubtedly the best method.

“Alright, we’re finished here.”

Lin Ming placed the heaven-step Demon God Bone in his spatial ring as well as the profound gold divine fruit and half of the earth-step Demon God Bones. As for the remaining eight earth-step Demon God Bones, those were naturally left over for Duanmu Qun and the rest.

“This is... we actually don’t need to be given any of the treasure. During this adventure into the 1000 mile forbidden zone, everything has been thanks to Brother Lin. Making it out of here alive is the only lucky chance that we’ll need.”

Duanmu Qun ruefully smiled as he looked at the eight Demon God Bones left over in the sarcophagus.

In truth, even if it were just the most ordinary, longan sized low-grade human-step Demon God Bone, it still wouldn't be some cabbage if placed in a Holy Land. From the time he was born until now, the total amount of resources that Duanmu Qun had used up couldn't amount to a single one of these fist sized earth-step Demon God Bones.

It was impossible to say that Duanmu Qun wasn't interested in these earth-step Demon God Bones, but because of the fear he felt from Lin Ming's ruthless and decisive character, he decided that these Demon God Bones simply weren't worth it.

On the contrary, if he could form good relations with Lin Ming, then the advantages he could obtain in the future might be worth even more.

Lin Ming said, "Eight earth-step Demon God Bones are enough for me. The rest is for you, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin. This is fair."

At the very start when he was dividing up the resources, he had already calculated what he needed. Him, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan would each take two earth-step Demon God Bones for a total of six. And, if Lin Ming's little sister Lin Xiaoge also had the aptitude to practice martial arts, then that would be another two for a grand total of eight.

"This is... or, how about this. The three of us will take one each and Brother Lin can take the other five. A single earth-step Demon God Bone is already plenty for us." Duanmu Qun refused once



more as he glanced over at Feng Shen. Feng Shen didn't have any expression at all, apparently he agreed with this decision.

Lin Ming didn't decline. He immediately took five more of the Demon God Bones. In truth, thinking about it more, besides Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and his little sister, there was also Mu Bingyun, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Fengxian – he needed to give them appropriate consideration too. Because of the kindness they had once shown him in the past, he should give them one or two each. With that, another three to five was just right.

As Duanmu Qun saw Lin Ming take five of the remaining Demon God Bones, he relaxed. This could be described as a great result for everyone here.

“Brother Lin, shall we go now?”

“No need to hurry.” Lin Ming thought about the time and shook his head. The Eternal Demon Abyss would be open for half a year, it had only been around two months since they had entered.

In these two months, Lin Ming had made repeated breakthroughs in his strength and also fought in a great number of battles. Although the energy within him was potent, it was restless and unsteady. This was the result of accumulating so much strength in such a short period of time.

Lin Ming expected that they would inevitably encounter some new danger in the next several months. A dull knife wouldn't be able to cut wood. It was best to take advantage of their current

situation and use this safe zone to stabilize his strength.

“Let’s recover here for a month and return to our peak condition before leaving again.”

Lin Ming’s words were no different from a command; no one dared to question him. Duanmu Qun immediately nodded and said, “That’s also good.”

The truth was that in these past days, Duanmu Qun had been in a constant state of high stress and tension, he really did need to rest and recuperate. Him, Feng Shen, and the just awoken and still groggy Lan Xin, went to a corner of the tomb and sat down, beginning to meditate there.

As for Lin Ming, he went to another corner.

Lin Ming took out a few top-grade Blood Demon Crystals and quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state...

With Demonshine guarding him, Lin Ming didn’t worry that there was anything that would sneak up on him. After breaking through to the Revolving Core realm, his ethereal martial intent state was much more smooth. With just a reminder from Demonshine, he would be able to immediately wake up.

Like this, time passed slowly. Lin Ming’s cultivation didn’t increase, but his foundation slowly stabilized.

Lin Ming hadn't used an earth-step Demon God Bone. This sort of heavenly treasure was equivalent to a tyrannical and oppressive medicine. Currently, the energy within his body was already restless and disorderly. If he swallowed an earth-step Demon God Bone like this, then it would only make his foundation unstable, affecting his future cultivation growth.

Consolidating one's foundation was an extremely laborious and burdensome process. Currently, within Lin Ming's dantian, besides the spinning crystal core there, there was also a great number of scattered true essence crystals floating about. They slowly revolved in the gaseous energy around the crystal core.

All of these were signs of disordered energy.

What Lin Ming had to do was completely absorb these crystalline true essence shards into the surface of his Revolving Core; this was the so-called process of consolidating his foundation.

This was a very long and time-consuming process. Moreover, it didn't even increase the total amount of true essence there was.

Other martial artists would also try to solidify their foundation like this. They would often go into closed-door seclusion for a year or longer to accomplish this.

However, no matter how much time they spent, they would reach a point where their foundation could no longer be consolidated. This was their limit.

When those scattered true essence crystals gathered onto the Revolving Core, they would also break off some of the other true essence crystals on the Revolving Core's surface because of the agitation of energy. Because of this, this energy would return to the dantian where it would become new crystallized shards of true essence.

When these two reached a balance, that was when a martial artist reached the limit of their consolidation. No matter how much longer they spent, it wouldn't be useful.

So, a normal Revolving Core martial artist would spend a year or so on the wearisome work of consolidating their foundation. Afterwards, once they reached their limit and established a balance in their Revolving Core, they would no longer be diligent in steadying their foundation.

This balance could be reached at any time; it all depended on how solid the martial artist's foundation was before they entered Revolving Core.

For example, take Lin Ming. Before he broke through to Revolving Core, his foundation was solid to the extreme. From the very start, the Revolving Core he formed had been several times larger than an ordinary martial artist's.

Afterwards, his Revolving Core had collapsed and became the same size as an ordinary martial artist's Revolving Core, except that its color was darker and it spun several times faster, meaning that the energy within it was several times greater than usual.

Such a Revolving Core already had a much greater attractive force, so it would absorb true essence crystals much more easily.

Because of this, Lin Ming's process of consolidating his foundation was much easier than an ordinary martial artist's. With just a thought, the true essence crystals freely floating in his dantian fell onto his Revolving Core like a gently drizzling rain. With just a few days of work, half of the true essence crystals had been sucked up into his Revolving Core.

However, following that, the speed was much slower. There were less free floating true essence crystals so consolidating his foundation was that much harder.

“Lin Ming, when your Revolving Core foundation reaches the extreme, that is when every true essence crystal and all the remaining energies have concentrated into your Revolving Core without a single bit escaping, forming the perfect crystal core orb. Such a Revolving Core is extremely rare. In the Realm of the Gods, they call this a ‘Black Hole Revolving Core’, because at that time, your Revolving Core is similar to a black hole. The true essence crystals can only enter and the attractive force is that much greater. This is your goal. Reach Black Hole Revolving Core before breaking through to the middle Revolving Core realm, because if your foundation ever becomes unstable, you will have to pay several times the effort in the future and you still might not be able to recover from it.”

“I understand.” Lin Ming nodded and continued consolidating his foundation.

Lin Ming had already made up his mind. Black Hole Revolving Core was the realm he needed to reach. Until the day he reached this realm, he would not make a breakthrough in his cultivation.

.....

Time passed unknowingly. One month later, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open from his meditation. In that instant, it was like two bright arcs of lightning lit up the room. An invisible aura was sent out, making Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and Feng Shen feel like something cold crawled up their backs. In that moment they could feel the true essence within their bodies restlessly moving, spontaneously resisting this pressure.

As Lan Xin looked at Lin Ming, she was a bit shocked, "Lin Ming... you..."

Ho—!

The aura suddenly vanished and the bright electric light in Lin Ming's eyes also disappeared, as if everything just now was an illusion.

Lin Ming stood up. Compared to a month ago, the energy around him was calmer and his aura was more collected, without a trace leaking out. The total amount of true essence in his body hadn't increased, but his strength had actually risen once again. Originally he had just entered the Revolving Core realm, but not he could be considered as having stably entered early Revolving

Core.

Duanmu Qun looked over to Lin Ming. He felt as if an Azure Dragon was hidden within Lin Ming's being. Once his energy erupted, the clouds and seas would tremble, shaking the heavens and earth.

Such a Lin Ming was awe-inspiring!

Thinking of this, Duanmu Qun's eyes subconsciously fell onto the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on Lin Ming's arm. A peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo was just a step shy from achieving 12 wings. Duanmu Qun didn't believe that Lin Ming would give up on reaching this goal.

If this were true, then Lin Ming would inevitably become the enemy of the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!

From the peak of 10 wings to 12 wings, he would have to kill at least three or four high ranking High Lords like High Lord Cloud Demon.

Just who would he kill?

Thinking of this, Duanmu Qun's eyebrows shot up. Although Lin Ming appeared to be a pleasant and polite youth, the truth was that when it came to killing, there was nearly no one as decisive as he was.

“Let’s leave the forbidden zone!”

Lin Ming said. In his current state, it wouldn’t take long to make it out of this 1000 mile forbidden zone.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had come to understand some things. This was that it was time to return to the South Horizon Region. From the time he left the Demon God Imperial Palace, in just a flash, it had already been two and a half years since he stepped foot within the South Horizon Region. For this entire time, the worry within Lin Ming’s mind had increased with every passing day.



## Chapter 656 – Opening the Goddess’ Sarcophagus Once More

---

Lin Ming led Duanmu Qun and the others to leave the tomb, arriving back at the pitch-black space where they couldn’t even see their own fingers in front of them. There were very minor distortions in the power of space here. If it wasn’t for Lin Ming leading the way, it would have been very difficult for Duanmu Qun and the others to leave.

As Lin Ming was about to step out of the mountain, he suddenly felt his body shake. In that moment, he seemed to hear an incomparably beautiful woman’s voice, like the sounds of heaven, illusive and filled with a weeping grief.

The voice seemed to form some strange ancient syllables. Even Lin Ming, who was familiar with the language from the Realm of the Gods as well as the Ancient Giant Demons’, still couldn’t completely understand the meaning behind it.

He slowed his steps and glanced over at Duanmu Qun and the others. He wanted to see whether or not they heard this voice, but their expressions were calm; obviously they hadn’t heard anything at all.

“Is something wrong, Brother Lin?” Duanmu Qun asked, not sure why Lin Ming stopped.

“No.” Lin Ming shook his head. Since no one heard this voice then it was useless if he mentioned it. It would be better if he

didn't speak about it at all.

“Oh.” Duanmu Qun saw that Lin Ming didn't want to speak further and intelligently didn't press the issue.

Lin Ming slowed his pace, listening to the woman's voice as he walked. If he was correct, then this voice was left behind by that goddess within the sarcophagus. Lin Ming had investigated her body but hadn't found any signs of life. Obviously, she had been dead for a very, very long time. Then, these sounds must have either come from an array formation that she had left behind, or perhaps it was from the battle spirit of her remaining will. Her strength was likely to have been no less than that of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' Saintess, a top character even within the Realm of the Gods. It wouldn't be strange if she could leave behind a battle spirit that still existed after tens of thousands of years.

As Lin Ming walked, he listened to this voice this entire time. Although he wasn't able to completely understand it, he still carefully memorized these words in his heart. The more he listened, the more unnerved he became. He, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin had all entered the tomb together, but he was the only one able to hear this voice. Just what was this voice trying to tell him?

“Let's go back!”

Lin Ming suddenly said as he stopped.

“Ah” Lan Xin and Duanmu Qun were shocked. They didn't think

that Lin Ming would have a thought like this even after they left the mountain.

Duanmu Qun's intuition was that this sudden decision had something to do with his sudden pause a moment ago. But, he tactfully didn't ask further.

Lin Ming brought the group to return, passing through that pitch black space until they returned in front of that peerless woman's sarcophagus.

Lin Ming stood in front of the sarcophagus for a long time. Then, he deeply bowed in respect and said, "Senior, I apologize for disturbing your rest."

With this, he undid all the countless seals he had left behind and shoved open the sarcophagus' cover.

With a rumbling sound, the sarcophagus completely opened.

As a result, that utterly perfect woman appeared in front of everyone once more.

"Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?" Lan Xin couldn't help but ask. In heart, she thought that Lin Ming shouldn't be robbing a grave... right?

Duanmu Qun flashed an eye at Lan Xin, and she attentively didn't say anymore.

Lin Ming was completely silent, only staring at the beautiful woman as she lay there. She was calm, like she had simply fallen asleep.

Lin Ming recalled the voice of the woman from a while ago, and after a long time, he had a faint guess, “Senior, I have a reason, and it isn’t because junior is being disrespectful. If I offend you, then please forgive me.”

With that, Lin Ming bent over and put his hand on the woman’s body, trying to find something.

Of course he wasn’t just randomly groping around, he had a clear purpose in mind.

Before he touched her, he had used his perception to investigate the goddess’ body. He discovered that there were two areas where the fluctuation of energy was obviously different. One was at the woman’s waist and the other was at her neck.

These were the two areas that Lin Ming was searching. At the woman’s waist, he first fished out a jade pendant.

This jade pendant was a deep azure color and incomparably cold to the touch. There was an ancient mystical design carved into the center, looking like some sort of bird-shaped totem.

Whatever this was, it was unlikely to be some sort of magical

treasure. Although it exuded a very pure energy, it obviously didn't have any striking power. It seemed to be more like a keepsake of some sort.

“Senior... were you wronged?”

Lin Ming's guess was that after dying, her will hadn't yet dissipated after these tens of thousands of years. Now, she was trying to express to him some message. Was she wronged? Did she have some grudge? Or perhaps this was an absolutely irreconcilable hatred?

After such a long time had passed, would her enemies, or those that had wronged her, still be in this world?

Lin Ming's mind was full of questions.

He hesitated for a moment and said, “Senior, whether you have a grievance or grudge, this junior will take this item. When junior soars into the Realm of the Gods in the future, perhaps I might have a slim chance of helping senior solve this mystery and completing this cycle of hatred.”

Although Lin Ming didn't know who this goddess was or what she had done, he had still obtained a number of lucky chances from her tomb. In essence, this could be considered a kindness that she had bestowed upon him. In this situation, if he could help her to the full extent of his power and maybe fulfill her last wish, then that would be completing the cycle of karma between them.

However, there had always been something that Lin Ming didn't understand. Whether it was the woman in this tomb, or those abnormal existences within the Eternal Demon Abyss, like the massive ancient beast that was thousands of miles long, these were all beings that should belong within the Realm of the Gods.

Just why would they be here at the Holy Demon Continent?

According to Demonshine, the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent shared the same planet together. As for the three thousand boundless worlds, that was three thousands multiplied with each other, for a total of one billion!

A billion worlds! And the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent combined was just a single one. In fact, this planet could be called insignificant, a negligible drop in the endless ocean!

How could a powerhouse from the Realm of the Gods be entombed in the abyss of the Holy Demon Continent?

Actually, just what was the Eternal Demon Abyss? How was it created? How many tens of thousands of years had it been here for? Where did those evil spirits and unimaginably powerful existences originate from? And, what were the 12 Skysplit Towers? Who had constructed them? Why would there be the Road of Emperor?

Lin Ming's mind was filled with all these unanswerable questions.

The 12 Skysplit Towers had already existed for countless years, surviving through the endless wind and rain of time. With so many complex ancient arrays, the existence that was able to construct the 12 Skysplit Towers was absolutely on the same level as the woman in this tomb!

Such a character, even if placed with the Realm of the Gods. Would still be the master of the highest level of Holy Land! Just why would they come to the Holy Demon Continent?

Lin Ming really couldn't figure any of this out. He shook his head and began to trace the woman's neck. Before, he had discovered that the energy here was also different. As he touched upon something cold, Lin Ming was just about to pull it out, when at this moment he suddenly pulled back his hand as if he had been bitten by a viper!

"This... how is this possible!?" Lin Ming's complexion paled.

As Duanmu Qun and the others saw Lin Ming's fierce reaction, they also went on high alert. "Brother Lin, is something wrong?"

Lin Ming's face was filled with surprise and uncertainty. Hesitantly, he reached out his hand again and traced the woman's neck once more. This time, his hand specifically moved closer to the woman's left chest. Touching upon there, he could feel soft and smooth skin. Lin Ming was able to confirm that what he felt was not an illusion.

This woman... had a heartbeat!

Before, he had investigated her and clearly didn't feel the slightest fluctuations of life. So, how could there be a heartbeat?

If there was a heartbeat, how come he didn't detect it?

Lin Ming found this impossible to imagine. He wavered for a long time, and then silently said, "Senior, I apologize for offending you..."

Lin Ming let out a wisp of his perception and investigated the woman's left chest. In fact, the perception of a martial artist was ubiquitous. Naturally, penetrating through clothes was a simple action. But to use his perception to pass through this goddess' clothing was truly a boorish and disrespectful gesture. But in order to confirm some things, Lin Ming didn't have a better method. He could only make sure that his mind was as clear as a mirror and that he absolutely had no thoughts of desecrating or blaspheming her in any way, shape, or form.

Passing his perception into the goddess's left chest, Lin Ming felt his mind tremble. Then, he instantly disappeared from the real world and came to a completely different world of will!

This was a vast starry sky!

"A will world comparable to the endless starry skies?" Lin Ming panicked.



At this moment, he heard a series of cracking sounds, as if crystal glasses were being broken. Looking up, he could see space cracking apart, quickly blowing up in front of him at an ever-growing pace!

Then, a vast, infinite ocean of energy and life force gushed out!

Bang!

Lin Ming was sent flying away. In front of such terrifying energy, he was no different from a leaf in a storm, unable to resist at all!

If this energy had even a tiniest bit killing intent towards Lin Ming, then he would be directly smushed into a bloody fog!

“What a powerful energy, just what is this!?”

Lin Ming finally stabilized himself with great effort and wiped off the blood that leaked out from the corners of his mouth. He looked up to see that in the endless starry skies, in that area where space had broken apart, there was actually a great vibrant red heart, powerfully beating!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

With every heartbeat, the void trembled. With every beat, Lin Ming could feel all of the blood vitality of his body being pulled away, all of the blood vessels within him wanting to explode and rush out of him!

“This... this is...!” Lin Ming’s eyes went perfectly wide as he stared on at the beating heart in the starry skies. This bright and vivid deep red heart seemed as if it were carved from pure blood crystal. After passing through several tens of thousands of years, the life force within had never dimmed by a single touch!

A bright crimson divine light emitted from this heart, accompanied by a vast, inexhaustible energy of life. This heart could likely beat on in perpetuity for another 100,000 years!

This was the heart of a true Emperor! Moreover, an Emperor of the Realm of the Gods! The master of this heart must have been a top powerhouse, looking down on every other existence!

Was this the heart of the goddess?

This thought instantly cut through Lin Ming’s mind before he rejected it...

It was not.

On the goddess’ body, Lin Ming had felt a serene aura, uncaring of all world problems, as profound as the limitless sea. In her presence, everyone’s hearts would be filled with awe, no one daring to blaspheme her.

And from this heart... from this heart, Lin Ming could feel an overwhelmingly domineering aura, an existence unmatched by all

that lived within this universe!

This master of this heart, when living, must have shaken the foundations of the Realm of the Gods, an unrivalled Emperor that looked down with disdain at all of creation!

These were two completely different atmospheres. This proved that this heart did not belong to this goddess... yet, what confused Lin Ming was that when he had touched the goddess' chest, he had clearly felt a heartbeat...

If he wasn't wrong, then this heart existed within the goddess. Thus, Lin Ming was able to feel it beat within her. But, because the goddess had died, he couldn't sense any fluctuations of life from her!

A goddess that had died had the heart of a Great Emperor sealed within her that had been beating for tens of thousands of years!

The final analysis of these facts left Lin Ming inexplicably horrified!

What sort of Great Emperor was this!? He had pulled out his heart and yet it still beat for all these tens of thousands of years!?!?

Such a Great Emperor... who had killed him, and who had sealed his heart within this goddess' body?

# Chapter 657 – Leaving the Forbidden Zone

---

Ho — !

Lin Ming retreated from the world of will, a cold sweat already streaming down his back. He had been completely suppressed by the aura of that heart. Fortunately, that heart did not care one bit about him, otherwise he would have already been crushed into nothing.

“Brother Lin... are you okay?” Duanmu Qun noticed Lin Ming’s strange behavior and asked him, “Is something wrong?”

Although Duanmu Qun had only known Lin Ming for a short time, he had still been able to get a relatively good grasp on what sort of character he had. Lin Ming wasn’t the type to play evil tricks or do something dirty; he must have discovered something just now.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before recounting what just happened to Duanmu Qun with a true essence sound transmission. With another person, there would be another viewpoint on matters and another opinion; perhaps they would be able to understand some more things.

“You said that there is the heart of a great Emperor sealed within this goddess that has been beating for the last several tens of thousands of years!?”

After hearing this, Duanmu Qun was inexplicably shocked! He

too wanted to feel the heartbeat of this goddess, but after a moment of hesitation, he didn't dare to put out his hand. According to Lin Ming's account of events, he had been sucked into that world of will. Luckily, Lin Ming's battle spirit had already formed. Even so, he had been suppressed to the point of sweating all over. If Duanmu Qun himself were to be drawn into that world of will, then he feared he would be ground into a pile of meat.

Lin Ming said, "The Great Emperor that I mentioned now isn't a Great Emperor of the Holy Demon Continent, but one from the Realm of the Gods. Compared to such an existence, even the Eightfall War Emperor is nothing more than a little baby. I really have no idea... just who killed this person, and why would their heart appear within the Eternal Demon Abyss?"

Lin Ming couldn't imagine just how strong a true Great Emperor from the Realm of the Gods would be. Not to mention other aspects, but in terms of lifespan, if a Great Emperor of the mortal world didn't make a miraculous breakthrough, they could live at most for 10,000 years. But, a Great Emperor of the Realm of the Gods, even after death, their heart would still be able to beat on for tens of thousands of years. These were two completely different levels!

Duanmu Qun came from a super Holy Land, so he certainly knew the rumors about the Realm of the Gods. After a moment of thought he suddenly said, "Are you sure that this Great Emperor was killed?"

"Mm?" Lin Ming paused, "His heart is here, so can he still be alive?"

“I can’t say!” Duanmu Qun shook his head, “In the ancient books of my Holy Land, I’ve also read some records about the Supreme Elders within the Realm of the Gods. I’ve read that there are some martial artists who have reaching an extremely high boundary and can regrow their limbs even after they are cut off. And above that, there are those that can be reborn from a single drop of blood. Even if they lost their entire body, as long as there is still a single piece left over, they could slowly regenerate into a complete body. To a Great Emperor of the Realm of the Gods, perhaps even losing a heart doesn’t mean they would die!”

As Duanmu Qun spoke, Lin Ming did recall some memories about this. There were some powerhouses within the Realm of the Gods, who, after reaching a very high level, could reform themselves even after being cut apart.

As for being reborn through a single drop of blood, Duanmu Qun’s words weren’t too far off from the truth. By relying on just a little piece of their body, one really could be reborn with a complete form. However, the cost of that was that the new body would only have that tiny sliver of the original body. Basically, this meant that their entire life’s martial arts would be wasted!

For a top martial artist to lose that much of their body, it meant they would lose that much of their energy.

“You’re right, this Great Emperor might not have died.” Lin Ming nodded. Before, he had fallen into a different way of thinking.

Duanmu Qun also said, “This goddess died several tens of thousands of years ago and yet her body hasn’t decayed. She still lies here, sleeping in beauty. This completely defies common sense. No matter how powerful this goddess was before death, after she died, her energies should have faded away a bit after such a long time. At least, her skin should have lost some of its gorgeous luster. But, since that isn’t the case, I think there might be a different possibility... and that is that this Great Emperor from the Realm of the Gods gouged out his own heart to place within her body, in order to preserve the life force of her body for 100,000 years!”

Duanmu Qun even seemed amazed by his own words. As Lin Ming listened to him, he was shocked. Although this reasoning sounded strange, it might have been true!

A divine Emperor had gouged out his own heart in order to preserve the vitality of this goddess!

To a martial artist, their heart, dantian, and spiritual sea were there three most important points, and these were also the areas that contained the most energy. If one cut out their own heart, they would lose at least 10% of their strength. If that Great Emperor felt this was worth it, then undoubtedly this goddess was extremely important to him!

If this were the case then this Realm of the Gods Great Emperor should have entombed her in a crystal sarcophagus to ensure she was well protected; why would he abandon her within the Eternal Demon Abyss?

Such a simple tomb... it was hard to imagine that there would be such a powerful being from the Realm of the Gods buried here!

There were too many things that Lin Ming was confused about, so he simply didn't think about it. He leaned forwards and continued to search around the goddess' neck. Before, when he felt the goddess's heartbeat, he had drawn back his hand so he failed to take the keepsake out.

Gingerly reaching into her dress, Lin Ming pulled out a necklace.

This necklace was very strange, it was absolutely not something that a woman would normally use. The necklace itself was as thick as a little finger. Rather than a necklace, it seemed more like a chain. On the end of this necklace was a palm-sized metal plate, a full inch thick. In the center of this metal plate was a hole that seemed as if it had held some gem, but now that gem was lost.

“What a strange keepsake.”

Lin Ming shook his head. He put the jade pendant and necklace in his spatial ring. As for the riddle of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would have to wait until he was stronger before he could begin to unravel it.

And for now, Lin Ming was far from reaching this realm. In the future, when he was strong enough, he would personally enter the Eternal Demon Abyss to see just what was inside.



Peering deep into the woman’s sarcophagus, he branded her image in his mind and then slowly pushed the cover back over.

Lifting his hand, he formed some array symbols and sealed away the sarcophagus. Lin Ming only casually sealed it. With that heart from a divine Emperor protecting her, there were no evil spirits that would ever be able to do anything to the goddess. Luckily, he didn’t have any malicious or dark intentions from the start, otherwise when he was sucked into that world of will, just the slightest bit of killing intent from that divine Emperor’s heart would have killed him countless times over!

The reason that those corpse devils didn’t dare to touch the sarcophagus of this goddess was most likely because they feared the heart of that divine Emperor.

“Senior, junior must bid you farewell.”

Lin Ming cupped his fists together. As he left the tomb, he had a faint feeling that in the future, his fate would one day cross with this woman again, and perhaps even the divine Emperor who had left that heart...

“Let’s go! We’re getting out of here!”

Lin Ming suppressed all the questions in his heart and brought Duanmu Qun and the rest to leave the tomb...

.....

Eternal Demon Abyss, 1100 mile zone.

The land was completely silent. Under a sky that had remained gray for tens of thousands of years, a dark fog rolled through. In this crimson land, one could occasionally see several broken stone tablets on the earth, engraved with ancient and mysterious symbols.

On this day, there were several blood crows circling up above, creepily screeching. These blood crows lived by eating corpses. It was said that they had a very special ability to sense and smell the energy of a dying person. Thus, when there were people dying, they would always be gathered at that spot in advance.

“You bunch of beasts also came to join in on the fun, eh!”

From the fog, a Giant Demon martial artist suddenly leapt out. As he saw this group of blood crows flying in the air, he began to simmer with a burning rage. “You want to wait for this father to die? Then this father will kill you first! Go die!”

Spear light flashed and several blood crows were pierced through. The others gave several screeches before flying away. In truth, these blood crows had no striking power. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were the weakest and most ordinary of species. They lived on by burying their eggs deep underground to avoid the eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss and would breed once every 10 years.

“Third Brother, this can’t go on. We’ve already been trapped here for an entire month! Damn this unholy place!” The one who spoke was an Imp martial artist. As he saw the Giant Demon martial artist attack a blood crow, he could only shake his head and sigh.

The Giant Demon martial artist put away his spear and cursed, “F\*ck it all, this year’s Eternal Demon Abyss is too strange. In the past, it was never so dangerous after an eruption. I fear that over half of those that came to the Eternal Demon Abyss have already died!”

“No kidding! Che, I thought that I would be able to obtain some lucky chances here, but if I can’t even get out, then any lucky chance is useless.” The last one to speak up was a young Fey girl. She was the only woman in the group of three.

Their squad originally has six people. Now, there were only three left over and they were also stuck in this danger zone with no way to leave, often having to face the attacks of evil spirits.

As the three were speaking, they heard a mournful scream, the fog around them suddenly stirring up like a pot of boiling porridge.

“This is bad!”

The three of them paled and immediately drew out their weapons. At this time, with the fog in front of them blown away, they could see that five 10 foot tall humanoid monsters had appeared in front of them.

These five monsters were incomparably disgusting, absolutely nauseating to look at. Their faces were covered with pus-filled sores and the top of their heads looked like crowns of oozing meat. Their fangs looked like steel needles, and as they walked upright, their claws looked like sharp and cruel blades.

“Just when will these damned monsters stop chasing us!?”

An Imp martial artist felt his heart sink into despair. The reason they had mistakenly entered into this space maze was because they had been chased down by this group of demonic beasts. Afterwards, they had been stuck here in this danger zone for an entire month without any way to leave. Now, he never thought that this group of disgusting monsters would use some unknown method to find them, and had actually chased them all the way here.

As they saw these large monsters in front of them, the martial artists realized that none of them would be leaving here alive.

“F\*ck! If I’m going to die trapped here, then I would rather die fighting with these monsters! If you want to kill this father then this father won’t let you off either!”

A Giant Demon martial artist gave a loud shout and thrust his spear forwards, a sharp spear light slicing through the void. This Giant Demon martial artist certainly wasn’t an average martial artist, otherwise there was no way he would have lived until this point.

However, he returned even faster than he went. That repulsive humanoid monster only slapped out its hand and sent the Giant Demon martial artist flying. Three bloody wounds appeared in the Giant Demon martial artist's chest, blood gushing out!

The difference was too great!

In their first encounter, they hadn't been able to resist either. These humanoid monsters were not only ridiculously strong, but nearly invulnerable to weapons. None in their group had been able to fight back, thus the reason they fled into the wild and stumbled into a danger zone by mistake.

As the Imp and Fey martial artists saw this, their eyes filled with anguish. At this moment, all of them would die!

The five large monsters gave two loud roars and stretched out their cruel claws to grasp at the three martial artists. The imp martial artist's eyes flashed with a decisive color, and he was prepared to fight till his death with these monsters. But, at this moment, twin beams of radiant light appeared out of thin air, piercing through the eyes of two monsters as if they were made of paper. Those two monsters weren't even able to cry out before their bodies shook and they tumbled to the ground, blood bubbling out of them.

The Imp martial artist was completely stunned.

# Chapter 658 – Killing the Monsters

---

Those humanoid monsters, which they had thought were invincible... two of them had instantly died!?

It wasn't just the Imp martial artist that was astonished, but the Giant Demon martial artist and young Fey girl were also shocked. Before this, all of them tried attacking these humanoid monsters, but no matter what martial skill they used, even with their full strength, none of them had been able to break past these creatures' fur!

They were on completely different levels!

But just now, two beams of light had pierced through two of the humanoid monsters, instantly killing them without the least bit of resistance.

Just who had done this?

Watching the two shaking monster corpses on the ground, the three martial artists were overjoyed to be alive. Subconsciously they took several steps backwards. A gaping red hole had appeared in these two monster's head, and their blood and brains were spilling out, flowing along the ground.

As the three remaining monsters saw their companions die, all of them flew into a rage. They roared, twisting around to see just who had dared to ambush them.

But at this time, within the fog the figures of several people began to slowly come into view.

As the three monsters saw these people's figures, they rushed towards them!

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Three more beams of light shot out, piercing through the fog and directly passing through those three monsters' foreheads!

The three monsters' bodies shook. After their heads were pierced by this light they all fell to the floor. But the center one, because of inertia, stumbled towards the figures of the several people.

And then, a scene that the three martial artists would never forget suddenly occurred. A flaming azure light shot up into the sky, passing straight through that large monster and splitting in half!

Blood fell like rain!

Peng! Peng!

The corpse fell apart as its body was cut vertically in half. As for that figure that was revealed between the halves, they were protected by a flow of energy and not a single drop of blood stained

them.

As the three martial artists saw this, all of them began to celebrate surviving this catastrophe. At the same time, they all began to feel uneasy – they could see that the several figures approaching were humans and Fey.

This trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss was reaching its end. Their first worry was that they didn't have a guide, and their second worry was that any martial artist that managed to survive up until this point would often have a considerable amount of resources with them.

Thus... the killing between squads had becoming increasingly frequent. The act of killing someone and stealing their wealth had occurred multiple times!

Currently, those four approaching martial artists could chop up the three of them as if they were melons. As long as any of them harbored any evil intentions, all three of them would die here.

"I truly thank the Tower Masters for the grace of saving our lives..." The Imp martial artist who led the three of them quickly rushed forwards to thank their saviors. In his view, only a Tower Master had such strength. He could only hope that these Tower Masters didn't take a fancy towards weaklings like them, otherwise they were done for.

After giving his thanks, the Imp martial artist looked up. But now, he froze once more. As the four martial artists stepped out of



the fog, he could finally clearly make out who they were.

They were actually Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen, and... Lin Ming!?!?

When they first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had been the focus of everyone, so of course he could recognize him. But afterwards, he heard that Lin Ming had died somewhere. How could he suddenly show up in this 1100 mile zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss?

The three martial artists' minds were in chaos. Then the Imp martial artist suddenly realized something. Based on their positions, those several rays of light must have come from Lin Ming!

How was this possible!?!?

The Imp martial artist had to admit that he was only an average ranked High Lord from the Skysplit Towers. He hadn't been able to break through the defense of those monsters, but now they had actually been instantly killed by Lin Ming. Did this mean that Lin Ming had strength close to that of a Tower Master?

Thinking of this, the Imp martial artist was flabbergasted. Just what was going on?

"So it's Little Sister Blue Lotus and High Lord Sandstone..." Duanmu Qun smiled as he spoke. He was acquainted with the

young Fey girl in the center of the three. As for that Imp High Lord, he only knew of his name.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Duanmu, thank you for saving us...” The young Fey girl called Blue Lotus said in a soft voice. She wasn’t blushing because of shyness, but because the rapid series of events and her near death had made her blood flow quicken.

“Haha, it’s not me who rescued you, I just don’t have this ability. If you must thank someone, then thank Brother Lin here.” Duanmu Qun laughed. From when they had strayed into the 1000 mile forbidden zone, and in addition to the month they had practiced in the tomb, it had been a full month and a half. With Lin Ming’s leadership, they had finally made it out alive. After having survived such a disastrous event, Duanmu Qun was in an excellent mood.

As the Imp High Lord Sandstone saw that Duanmu Qun wasn’t planning on killing them, and that he also knew Blue Lotus, he was ecstatic. It seemed that they had managed to escape a calamity!

“I am Five Color Tower’s High Lord Sandstone. I thank Young Hero Lin for saving us.”

There was no time now to wonder why Lin Ming was so strong. The Imp High Lord cupped his fists together and bowed once more. Unconsciously, he had started to speak with a respectful tone.

“It’s no problem. I just have a question to ask you...” Lin Ming

said, impassively.

“Young Hero Lin, please ask. I will try to answer to the best of my knowledge.”

“Mm. I want to know, how many months have you been in the Eternal Demon Abyss for?”

As Lin Ming asked this question, High Lord Sandstone was confused.

Duanmu Qun and the others also looked at each other, puzzled. Did this still need to be asked? The three of them had been with Lin Ming, and in total, three and a half months should have passed since they entered the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Although High Lord Sandstone was perplexed, he respectfully replied, “Reporting to Young Hero Lin, it’s been just shy of five months since I entered the Eternal Demon Abyss...”

“Five months...” Lin Ming thought for a moment, no surprise on his face. But Duanmu Qun and the others were completely shocked. How could it be five months? It had obviously been three and a half!

They looked towards Lin Ming and immediately understood as they saw that he had an expression as if he had expected this. Perhaps within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, there was something odd about the flow of time.

The truth was that time and space often existed as one existence. If a powerful force field could twist space, then it would likely change the flow of time. It wasn't strange for both time and space to always be affected simultaneously. Thus, Lin Ming had guessed that the time they spent within the 1000 mile forbidden zone was different from outside of it. Now, from High Lord Sandstone's answer, it seemed that the time within was slower.

"Mm, we're alright." Lin Ming waved his hand, thinking of something else.

Back when he was in the King's Cage, he had also entered a cage of space and time, understanding the essence of time there. Time was simply the illusion of change between all living beings. As long as he could remove the heart demon that existed within this illusion, he could guarantee that his mind wouldn't be chaotic and he wouldn't lose himself in the distortion of time.

But now, it seemed as if this wasn't necessarily true!

Even if he held onto his heart and mind, he could still be caught up in a whirlpool of time and space without being aware of it.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming could only sigh.

Time was simply far more illusory and baffling than space. Now, he realized just how much he didn't understand about time, and just how little of its source he had touched upon. His past understanding of time had its place and use, but now put among a

wider use of the Law, it was no longer feasible.

“Let’s go, we’re leaving here.” Lin Ming no longer thought about the chaotic time within the Eternal Demon Abyss’s 1000 mile forbidden zone. This was a level that he was far from being able to understand.

“Where are we going?” Duanmu Qun asked.

“We’re leaving the Eternal Demon Abyss!” Lin Ming decisively said.

The Eternal Demon Abyss would only be open for six months. Now that five months had passed, it was around the time they should leave.

As the Imp martial artist heard Lin Ming’s words, his eyes widened, “Young Hero Lin, could, could you take us with you?”

The Imp martial artists idea was very simple. Now, there were only three of them left, and it was doubtful they would be able to find any more lucky chances in the last remaining month. They could already count their blessings that the three of them were able to make it out of here safely. Naturally, if they followed Lin Ming, it would be much less dangerous for them.

“Sure!”

Lin Ming answered without hesitation, nodding. Forming a team

was a mutually beneficial relationship to begin with.

Thus, the group of them stepped onto the road to return.

Coming here, there was a guide to lead the way. But leaving here, all of that depended on one's own ability. In this nearly half year adventure, the surviving martial artists had accumulated a great deal of experience within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now, with Lin Ming leading the way, they encountered several minor dangers but all of these were easily resolved. Besides the young Fey girl called Blue Lotus receiving a minor wound, no one else was harmed.

15 days later, the group reached the northern entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

At this time, there were already many people gathered at the entrance. Although there was still half a month until the channel into the Eternal Demon Abyss closed, there were always some matters where arriving earlier was better than coming later. If one were to try arriving just on time and then stumble into some accident or danger and ended up trapped within the Eternal Demon Abyss, dying like that would truly be an injustice.

Seeing Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all appear together, this immediately aroused a great uproar!

These four were all characters with unbelievable origins. Without accident, all of them would become Peerless Emperors in the future!

“Lin Ming, that boy! He hasn’t died!?”

Rumors of Lin Ming’s death had long since spread to everyone’s ears. Everyone knew that Lin Ming had returned to a danger zone and disappeared afterwards, most likely having died for his stupidity. But now that they saw Lin Ming safe and sound, and also in the company of Duanmu Qun and the others, all of them were shocked speechless.

“How come Lin Ming is with Duanmu Qun?”

“Didn’t they say that he fell into some danger zone? Was he rescued? Did Duanmu Qun rescue him?”

“Maybe... or they might have run into each other later...”

The martial artists all began to speak. Lin Ming was a focus of attention, but Duanmu Qun was too. Although it was acknowledged that Duanmu Qun’s talent was slightly inferior to Lin Ming’s, in terms of strength, everyone assumed he was actually the stronger of the two. With both of them appearing together, this naturally attracted everyone’s attention.

Lin Ming simply didn’t care to bother with anyone, ignoring them all. He went and sat down next to a boulder, entering into meditation to adjust his condition.

As for Duanmu Qun and the rest, they also followed Lin Ming. There were many people present that Duanmu Qun knew of.

According to Duanmu Qun's character in the past, he was always happy to speak with heroic elites of the world, so he definitely would have gone over to speak to them. But now, he was actually disinclined to do so. After entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone and experiencing so many horrible and wonderful things, Duanmu Qun felt as if his vision of the world had suddenly grown. Now, all of these people could no longer enter into his eyes.

“How interesting!” Not too far away, a black-clothed youth smirked. He was Five Color Tower's Zhuan Yu, who was also a Holy Land descendant. His reputation was only a bit below Duanmu Qun's, and much higher than Lan Xin's.

During this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, Zhuan Yu was extremely fortuitous and had obtained a very great lucky chance, causing his strength to rapidly soar!

Because of this, Zhuan Yu's already confident and arrogant nature had become extremely overinflated. He now believed that he had the capital to be equal rivals with Duanmu Qun!

With a slight hesitation, he walked over to Duanmu Qun.



# Chapter 659 – The Return of the Polaris Tower Master

---

At the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the frigid wind was quietly rustling through. As Duanmu Qun was meditating, he saw a black-clothed Goliath youth walking towards him.

“Zhuan Yu?” Duanmu Qun’s eyebrows twisted together.

Duanmu Qun was a Fey and Zhuan Yu was a Goliath. The two of them had already been competitors, and their relationship was antagonistic.

“Duanmu Qun!” Zhuan Yu’s eyes narrowed.

“I’m glad to see that you and Lin Ming both made it through this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss alive. Wonderful. Truly, I am glad; otherwise I would have been lonely all my life.”

Zhuan Yu’s words purposefully left out Feng Shen and Lan Xin. He didn’t even glance in their direction. Obviously, he felt that those two didn’t have the qualifications to compare to him.

Feng Shen didn’t really care at all about this, but Lan Xin grew angry. This damned Zhuan Yu was not much stronger than she was yet he actually dared to look down on her with such disdain; how could she possibly endure this insult.

“Zhuan Yu, who the hell do you think you are?” Lan Xin said, sharply.

Lan Xin’s fighting words immediately attracted everyone’s eyes. Whether it was Lan Xin, Zhuan Yu, Duanmu Qun, or Lin Ming, they were all outstanding heroic youths that stood at the pinnacle of the 12 Skysplit Towers. If these people were arguing, then naturally there was much fun to see.

Seeing so many people turn towards them consciously or unconsciously, Zhuan Yu smiled. His tone was flippant as he asked, “Little girl Lan, I wonder what sort of lucky chance you managed to obtain within the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

As Lan Xin heard Zhuan Yu speak to her with such disrespect, she became angry. But, as she heard Zhuan Yu mention lucky chances, she actually became somewhat breathless. During this trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss, her harvest was only a few pieces of Demon God Bones, the most precious of those being the earth-step Demon God Bone that she had obtained in the 1000 mile forbidden zone. Although her harvest could be considered good, if this Zhuan Yu dared to be so arrogant like this, then it was likely he found a much greater lucky chance than she did. If she really were to compare, then she would mostly lose.

Not just that, but as she sensed his aura, Lan Xin felt something strength from Zhuan Yu’s body. There was a mysterious fluctuation of energy that startled her!

‘This is...’ Lan Xin’s heart jumped. Zhuan Yu hadn’t make a breakthrough, but the impression he left on others was even

scarier.

Lan Xin's intuition told her that Zhuan Yu really must have obtained some extraordinary lucky chance here, causing his strength to soar to a new level. Currently, it was true that she couldn't compare to Zhuan Yu!

At this time, Duanmu Qun's eyes flashed with a trace of blue light. Taking a wide view of the strange energy within Zhuan Yu's body, he thought for a moment before slowly saying, "I see... so you've managed to obtain a contract beast! No wonder you're making such a ruckus here."

Although Duanmu Qun appeared calm, he was actually somewhat startled. The contract beast within Zhuan Yu's body was likely a top breed even within the entire Holy Demon Continent! This sort of contract beast could only be found through a stroke of fate. Once found and carefully raised, this sort of being could greatly increase a martial artist's strength.

And listening to Zhuan Yu's meaning, he feared that this contract beast was still young, and yet it was already capable of greatly increasing his strength!

"Good sight! Yes! This is a contract beast! It is also my greatest harvest during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss. I have finally obtained a powerful contract beast. Duanmu Qun, I challenge you. After this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, once we've both left the Blood Slaughter Steppes... I want a final showdown to see just who is the best!"

Zhuan Yu was incomparably confident in himself. When he first obtained the contract beast, he was already awed by how strong it was. Once it grew into its adult form in the future, its combat strength could be imagined!

Zhuan Yu now firmly believed he had the capital to stand on equal ground with Duanmu Qun, whether it was today or in the future. Even if they started fighting now, he expected that he had at least a 60% chance of victory!

“I’ll follow you to the end!”

Duanmu Qun didn’t decline. Having matches between talents was very normal. Duanmu Qun feared no one. In fact, in his 20 some years of life, countless outstanding heroic youths had been defeated under his blade.

“Good courage! Great!” Zhuan Yu laughed. Then, he turned to Lin Ming, “You there, Lin Ming, I will wait one year for you. With your talent, you should have the qualifications to fight me then! I hope those stories of you weren’t exaggerated, otherwise I would truly be disappointed!”

The news that Lin Ming had become a Titled Asura had long spread throughout the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes. Zhuan Yu believed that in one year, Lin Ming would make considerable progress. But, at the same time, his contract beast would also become that much more terrifying.

He was really looking forward to this battle!

As Zhuan Yu spoke to him, Lin Ming simply sat there in meditation as if he hadn't heard Zhuan Yu at all. As for Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and even the stoic Feng Shen, all three of them were briefly startled before a comical expression lit their faces.

Zhuan Yu wanted to wait a year before he fought Lin Ming?

Lan Xin wanted to laugh but she managed to hold it back. She wasn't interested in alerting Zhuan Yu to anything. In fact, she wanted him to eat his own shit. But what a pity, from Lin Ming's attitude, it seemed that he simply didn't care about fighting someone like Zhuan Yu; this caused Lan Xin to be a bit disappointed.

Seeing Lin Ming completely unaffected by his challenge, Zhuan Yu grew a bit angry. If he was publicly looked down by a human, how could he ever raise his head in the future? "Lin Ming, I just spoke to you, didn't you hear me?"

As Zhuan Yu spoke again, Lin Ming really did open his eyes.

Zhuan Yu coldly snorted, wanting to spit out a few spicy insults. But, at this moment, he discovered that Lin Ming wasn't looking at him, but rather at a far off distance place.

Zhuan Yu became completely incensed, He was about to storm off in a fit of rage, when at this time, he felt his mind grow cold. He

could feel at this moment that a powerful energy was quickly approaching. He suddenly turned and saw that several hundred feet away, there was a black-clothed middle-aged man slowly walking out of the fog.

This middle-aged man was extremely tall and his body was wrapped in a thick black cloak. His eyes were as deep and profound as the night stars, and from his appearance, he seemed to be a hybrid of a Giant Demon and Goliath.

This person was... the Polaris Tower Master!

It wasn't just the Polaris Tower Master that had arrived, but behind him was also a Goliath martial artist carrying a great axe. This Goliath martial artist was actually a Tower Master too... the Great Ax Tower Master!

With the sudden appearance of two Tower Masters, all the martial artists present immediately turned silent!

Even Zhuan Yu, who had just obtained a massive lucky chance in the Eternal Demon Abyss and also received a massive boost to his ego, found his heart growing cold, no longer daring to be as brash as he was. In front of a super powerhouse like these Tower Masters, he simply didn't have the ability to resist.

Behind the Polaris Tower Master and the Great Ax Tower Master, there were also four or five other martial artists. Among them was White Stone Tower's High Lord Three Eyes, a well-known figure who was no weaker than High Lord Cloud Demon.

In addition, there were also several other martial artists that Lin Ming recognized. One of them was Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Black Ash, a fellow that had been part of Lin Ming's squad when they first entered into the Eternal Demon Abyss. When Lin Ming entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, this High Lord Black Ash was already testing him, unable to hide the killing intent in his eyes; he even attempted to probe Lin Ming's strength. Finally, High Lord Cloud Demon had to stop at the time, and afterwards, he joined the same squad as Lin Ming. He didn't have any good intentions in doing so, but during the trip he didn't have a chance to do anything either.

Another person that Lin Ming recognized was the top ranked High Lord Bloodfire of Polaris Tower. He was the same as Lin Ming, someone who had a slave seal from the Polaris Tower Master planted within them, except that he truly was being controlled. Lin Ming thought that during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, High Lord Bloodfire would be used as mere cannon fodder, but he didn't expect that this fellow would actually manage to survive.

After High Lord Black Ash and High Lord Bloodfire saw Lin Ming, they were shocked. Especially High Lord Black Ash – he had seen with his own eyes Lin Ming returning to that damned danger zone. He thought that Lin Ming would undoubtedly die there, but this boy was still alive?

Not just that but... he broke through to Revolving Core!?

What was going on here?

High Lord Black Ash was jealous to the point of hate. Without a doubt, Lin Ming had obtained a great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss!

‘F\*ck! How come this boy kept having such good luck!’

High Lord Black Ash’s jealousy had turned to bitterness. His eyes moved and he said to the Polaris Tower Master, “Congratulations Sir Polaris, your Polaris Tower now has another powerful High Lord. This Lin Ming definitely obtained some great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss and broke through to Revolving Core, this is a matter for celebration.”

High Lord Black Ash obviously spoke these words loudly because he hated Lin Ming. In particular, he spoke towards the Polaris Tower Master because he wanted to deliberately arouse the other man’s desire to rob.

Lin Ming obviously knew what High Lord Black Ash was trying to do. As he looked towards him, his eyes flashed with a trace of naked killing intent.

The Polaris Tower Master faintly smiled, his guess was also similar to High Lord Black Ash’s. But, what sort of lucky chance had Lin Ming obtained? He beckoned Lin Ming and said, “Lin Ming, come forwards.”

Lin Ming sneered in his heart, his hand tracing his spatial ring as he walked towards the Polaris Tower Master.



“Lin Ming, you’ve done well. I’m pleased that you’ve safely returned. Now, what sort of lucky chances did you obtain this time?”

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke, he had a kind and happy smile on his face, as if he really were a general that was grateful their soldier returned alive. As for those last few words, they were said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Some Demon God Bones, and a fruit.” Lin Ming answered with a smile. His words were very simple, but there was a subtle flavor of ridicule hiding behind them.

“Oh? A fruit?” The Polaris Tower Master was stunned and then immediately interested. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, nearly all plants had become extinct. If there was a fruit, then it must have been something extraordinary. “Good, very good. Then, show me this fruit!”

As Lin Ming listened to the Polaris Tower Master’s words, he remained completely unmoved. Instead, the sarcasm on his face only became increasingly obvious. It was at this time that the Polaris Tower Master realized that something was wrong.

The Polaris Tower Master grimaced, “Lin Ming, you actually dare to defy my orders?”

“Your orders?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a sneer, “Why would I listen to your orders?”

These words were no longer said with a true essence sound transmission; all of the martial artists present could hear them. Suddenly, everyone was stunned!

What was happening? Why did Lin Ming say such things to the Polaris Tower Master?

“What did you say?” The Polaris Tower Master’s complexion changed. He suddenly linked his mind to the slave seal within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea and discovered that it was still there, perfectly intact. So just what was going on here?

Something was wrong!

If the slave seal was intact, how could Lin Ming escape his control?

Could it be that Lin Ming knew some way to isolate the slave seal? Could it be that from the very beginning, Lin Ming had never been controlled, and all of this was an act?

Thinking of this, the Polaris Tower Master’s expression became increasingly ugly!

“Tsk, are you inspecting the slave seal? Rest assured, it is still in my spiritual sea!” Again, Lin Ming’s words weren’t spoken with a true essence sound transmission. As he clearly enunciated each word, everyone was shocked!

Slave seal!?!?

# Chapter 660 – Invincible Aura

---

Slave Seal!?

The martial artists present weren't idiots, they knew just what a slave seal was. They replayed the words that Lin Ming had just spoken, "Are you inspecting the slave seal? Rest assured, it is still in my spiritual sea!"

With everything linked together, the martial artists present had a faint guess as to what Lin Ming meant. That was, the Polaris Tower Master had planted a slave seal within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, but he wasn't able to control Lin Ming?

Just what was going on?

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes flashed with a blazing killing intent. He stared at Lin Ming like a wild beast, "What garbage nonsense are you spouting off about?"

"Haha! Whether I am talking nonsense or not, it is clearest in your heart. Don't you find it strange that your slave seal isn't working on me?"

Lin Ming's words were aggressive, making the Polaris Tower Master feel as if his heart was dripping blood!

A Tower Master was controlling the talented High Lords of Skysplit Tower with slave seals! If these sorts of rumors spread

out, then the ensuing chaos could be imagined!

Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin all had changed expressions. They absolutely believed everything that Lin Ming said. Now, they were all glad that they weren't subjected to such treatment. To have a slave seal planted within them... it was a fate worse than death!

But what method had Lin Ming used to cause the Polaris Tower Master's slave seal to fail?

“Lin Ming, if you dare to slander me one more time, I will kill you!”

The Polaris Tower Master was worked into an extreme rage. He absolutely didn't expect that Lin Ming had some method to circumvent his slave seal and lead him around in circles!

This boy was so young and yet he had such shrewd methods, he absolutely could not be allowed to live!

“Hahahahaha!” Lin Ming wantonly laughed, not even caring for the Polaris Tower Master's threat. “Me, slander you? You planted a slave seal in my spiritual sea and just now used a true essence sound transmission to order me to give you everything I obtained within the Eternal Demon Abyss. How about it, are you not going to admit this?”

“That's right... there's also High Lord Bloodfire who has been

controlled by you. Now, he's nothing more than a useless zombie. Have someone investigate his situation and you'll immediately understand. Which High Lord would like to investigate him?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he looked towards High Lord Bloodfire. High Lord Bloodfire's complexion immediately changed and he shouted, "Lin Ming, what nonsense are you speaking!?"

High Lord Bloodfire was completely controlled by the Polaris Tower Master; it was simply the Polaris Tower Master speaking through him.

"Bloodfire, you are truly a tragedy!" Lin Ming shook his head, no longer bothering with Bloodfire.

High Lord Bloodfire was also controlled?

Facing this super bomb that Lin Ming threw out again, all of those that were doubtful from the start now had their suspicions confirmed!

It was impossible for Lin Ming to speak so irresponsibly like this. A simple probe of High Lord Bloodfire would immediately reveal his secret.

And now, it was impossible for the Polaris Tower master to unravel the slave seal in High Lord Bloodfire's spiritual sea. Once it was undone, High Lord Bloodfire would immediately obtain his freedom. After being a zombie-like servant for so many years, he

would immediately turn on his ex-master!

No matter what, the charges against the Polaris Tower Master were now all proven!

For Polaris Tower to use slave seals to control the talents there, once this news spread out, it would inevitably lead to anger from several of the major Holy Lands. They would join forces to exert pressure on the Blood Slaughter Steppes, forcing them to punish the Polaris Tower Master!

After all, all of them had descendants who had gone to the Blood Slaughter Steppes to gain experience. How could they remain calm with such a Tower Master controlling a Skysplit Tower. Not to mention, the Polaris Tower Master was also the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler. Once he inherited his father's position in the future, the consequences would be disastrous!

This time Lin Ming had truly pierced through the sky!

All of the martial artists realized just how major the consequences of this would be, all of their complexions changed.

“This Lin Ming doesn't care for his life, he actually dares to confront the Polaris Tower Master like this.”

“Even if this is true, the Polaris Tower Master is bound to kill Lin Ming out of anger!”

“Lin Ming is insane! Now he has even offended the ruler of the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!”

At this time, Zhuan Yu was standing near Lin Ming. Seeing the Polaris Tower Master reveal a pure killing intent, he subconsciously gulped and retreated several steps back. Although he was arrogant, it was impossible for him to be as arrogant as Lin Ming and openly expose the fact that the Polaris Tower Master planted slave seals in others. This was the same as suicide! Lin Ming must have encountered some hopeless situation within the Eternal Demon Abyss that made him go crazy! As Zhuan Yu thought this, he retreated at an even faster pace.

Not too far away, High Lord Black Ash also stepped back, eagerly awaiting the show. In his opinion, Lin Ming had bitten off more than he could chew. Since he dared to challenge the authority of the Polaris Tower Master, he would die here without a grave!

The Polaris Tower Master began move forwards, one step at a time, as the field of energy around him became increasingly strong, forcing all the other martial artists to retreat. “To dare slander a Tower Master, to dare slander the reputation of my Blood Slaughter Steppes, Lin Ming, you have committed a crime worthy of death!”

“Oh? Crime worthy of death? Hahaha!” Lin Ming laughed as he extracted the Purple Comet Spear, “In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, strength is king! Any crime here will not be adjudicated by you!”

“Good! Very good! After so many years of me not taking action, it



seems that everyone has already forgotten my strength, and also the absolute disparity between a Tower Master and a High Lord! Now, I will give you one last chance to fall to your knees and admit your mistakes. I will cut off your arms and let you live, or I will rip you apart!”

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke, his aura suddenly erupted like a great volcano!

All of the surrounding martial artists were swept up by this strength. The weaker ones were forced to step back, their faces paling.

It had to be known that all of these martial artists were either High Lords or top Heavenly Demon Seven Stars! If they were forced back and shaken by just the Polaris Tower Master’s aura, then his true strength could be imagined!

As for Lin Ming, he bore the brunt of this aura and directly withstood it. However, his expression was still as calm as before, as if this awesome aura from the Polaris Tower Master was nothing more than a gentle spring breeze!

“This boy!”

The Polaris Tower Master’s eyes flashed with a severe light. He had wanted to erupt his complete aura and force Lin Ming to kneel before him, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would withstand it so easily!

“You want to use your aura to force me to my knees, creating the false pretense that I was admitting fault and then kill me afterwards? How unfortunate, but your aura is just too pitifully weak!”

Lin Ming sneered and took a sudden step forward.

The Heavenly Demon martial intent's Asura force field erupted!

Bang!

Since breaking through to Revolving Core, this was the first time that Lin Ming had completely released his Asura force field. A terrifying surge of energy seemed to break through the void, shattering the earth underneath Lin Ming's feet and causing a web of cracks to snake outwards!

The Polaris Tower Master's aura was directly crushed to nothing by this force field! If the Polaris Tower Master's aura was like a flood of water, then Lin Ming's Asura force field was like a mighty flood of steel, washing away all with overwhelming force, crushing the Polaris Tower Master's aura and directly suppressing him!

The Polaris Tower Master's body shook and the ground underneath him cracked part!

As his body visibly trembled, he was nearly forced a step back.

“What!?”

Seeing this scene, all of the martial artists present were stunned. Lin Ming had actually turned the tables and almost forced the Polaris Tower Master to retreat?

How could Lin Ming have such an amazingly strong aura?

Although one's aura didn't represent their full strength, it could represent a great deal of it.

As the Asura force field became increasingly strong, all of the surrounding martial artists felt a massive pressure envelop them. From their body to their organs to their bones to their soul, from head to toe, this pressure came crashing down upon them!

Because of this pressure, all of them felt as if they couldn't breathe, their heartbeats heavy.

What was going on? The martial artists present were alarmed, forced to retreat even further.

200 feet away, Zhuan Yu didn't think he would need to retreat again. But, facing Lin Ming's terrifying aura, he felt his blood slowing down in his body. His blood slowing down was manageable, but the crux of this was that he could see from the aura of the two that this fight that was about to break out would be earth-shattering. He was afraid that he wouldn't be able to resist it!

Thus, Zhuan Yu had no choice but to draw back even further. At

this time, his complexion had become extremely ugly. He found it difficult to imagine that the one who sent out this terrifying aura was that Lin Ming!

“Hey, Zhuan Yu! How does it feel? I remember that you said you would give Lin Ming a year before challenging him, right?”

An amused woman’s voice suddenly sounded in his ears. Turning around, he could see that the one speaking was Lan Xin.

She had already retreated 300 feet away and was now looking at Zhuan Yu with her lips forming a bright smile, a sly and elated expression on her face.

Zhuan Yu immediately turned the color of a liver. He now knew why Lin Ming hadn’t even bothered acknowledging his challenge in the beginning. This was because the gap in their strength was just far too great, so he hadn’t even cared for him!

Realizing this, Zhuan Yu felt his heart beat with panic, especially after seeing Lan Xin’s taunting smile.

He wanted to spit out some ruthless curses about her entire family, but he didn’t have the courage to do so...

Without a doubt, as time passed, the difference between him and Lin Ming would only grow. A contract beast would be nothing against someone like Lin Ming!

As Lan Xin saw Zhuan Yu's face like a bitter gourd and his bewildered expression, her heart was incomparably free.

‘Little boy, if you want to be so rampant in front of this aunt just because you got a little pet, then you deserve what you get!’

.....

“Good! Good young fellow! You truly have hidden so many secrets!” The Polaris Tower Master's eyes flashed with a cold light. He never imagined that Lin Ming's aura would actually surpass his own!

He could tell that this aura that Lin Ming emitted was actually a force field, but, he didn't have a force field of his own. To try to compare with just his own aura, this had caused him to suffer a major loss.

‘What sort of force field is this? Even with my cultivation, being covered by this force field has caused my strength to weaken by a great deal. Just where did Lin Ming obtain this force field from?’

The killing intent in the Polaris Tower Master's heart became increasingly thick. He could no longer compete with just his aura; it was time to fight!

‘This boy absolutely cannot be allowed to live, otherwise he will become the greatest threat the Blood Slaughter Steppes has ever seen! One Eightfall War Emperor is already more than enough. If

another one were to appear, then the consequences would be inconceivable!’

The Polaris Tower Master’s mind flashed with this thought. Then, demon essence erupted from his entire body. With a shout, he rushed forwards like a savage tiger, his fist smashing out at Lin Ming!

A fist?

Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed. He knew that the Polaris Tower Master’s favored weapon was the great sword.

Without moving, Lin Ming faced the Polaris Tower Master.

With a thought, the Heretical God Force completely opened, and 90% of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates’ strength was brought forth.

Lin Ming’s fist came pounding out!

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

‘Fist to fist? What an utter idiot!’

The Polaris Tower Master grinned maliciously. Although the weapon he habitually used was the great sword, he also excelled at fisticuffs.

‘Little punk, since you want to die so badly, watch my fist break apart your arm first!’

Thinking of this, the Polaris Tower Master’s strength rose even more!

Bang!

In the instant that the two fists collided, a terrifying airwave broke out. Space trembled, the earth cracked, and several martial artists felt as if they lost hearing in their ears.

Peng peng peng!

The sound of heavy footsteps rang out. After this one exchange of moves, the Polaris Tower Master was actually forced back again and again. With each step he took back, the earth underneath his feet would explode, rupturing apart. Only after taking 10 steps back did he manage to steady himself, a look of horror dawning on his face.

How could his fist be so hard!?!?

# Chapter 661 – Glory of the Battle Spirit

---

The Polaris Tower Master was forced back?

In that collision between Lin Ming and the Polaris Tower Master, it was the Polaris Tower Master who was actually forced back!

All of the martial artists present were stunned. It was true that Lin Ming's aura was no weaker than the Polaris Tower Master's, but aura didn't represent a martial artist's complete strength, and there was also something strange and tricky about Lin Ming's aura. Moreover, the Polaris Tower Master's accumulated fame and strength were too great; it was hard for anyone to imagine that a heroic youth could be stronger than him.

But now, in a single exchange of blows, Lin Ming had only been a little shaken, but the Polaris Tower Master was actually forced back 10 whole steps. Although the Polaris Tower Master wasn't injured, his blood still tumbled and he had eaten no small loss.

At this point, the Polaris Tower Master's complexion was extremely ugly. He thought that Lin Ming was only using some sort of special force field to suppress his aura, but his strength wasn't too special.

He didn't use his sword for his first attack because with his status as a Tower Master, having to go all out to deal with a junior was a bit shameful. Even if he won in the end, people would still criticize him.



In fact, although the Polaris Tower Master's weapon of choice was a great sword, his fist skills were still extremely powerful. The reason he fought with his fist was because he wanted to use Lin Ming to demonstrate his power and authority. But he never that that if he didn't use his sword, Lin Ming also wouldn't use his spear and would fight with fists instead!

Fist against fist, the Polaris Tower Master was confident that he could break Lin Ming's arm. But, after their fists collided, the Polaris Tower Master discovered that what he hit clearly wasn't a fist but an iron hammer instead! Not only was Lin Ming's fist terrifyingly adamantine, but there was also a strange power of vibration within it, nearly causing his own arm to be broken.

This boy, was he really human?

Although he guessed that Lin Ming must have practiced some sort of body transformation technique, it was impossible for the human body to be tempered to this degree. This was a durability that was comparable to a treasure! Not even the Giant Demons or Goliaths, races well known for their formidable bodies, would be able to hold a candle to him!

Just where had this abnormally monstrous freak come from!?

The Polaris Tower Master was enraged. He suddenly pulled out a heavy sword from his spatial ring and pointed it straight at Lin Ming!

Huuu –

A blazing black flame ignited atop the Polaris Tower Master's great sword, the aura overwhelming!

“Medium-grade heaven-step treasure!?”

All of the surrounding martial artists cried out in alarm. For heaven-step treasures, there were enormous differences between every rank. Within Skysplit Tower, because the High Lords overflowed with far too much wealth, it was common to see them with heaven-step treasures. But, these were mostly the lowest of heaven-step treasures. As for medium-grade heaven-step treasures, only very few people had seen them before.

“No, that's not a medium-grade heaven-step treasure but a peak low-grade heaven-step treasure; it's only a step away from becoming a medium-grade heaven-step treasure.”

Everyone looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming thought for a moment, and then took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring.

The Purple Comet Spear was originally crafted from top materials. But, those were considered top materials only relative to a fourth-grade sect like Divine Phoenix Island. Moreover, the one who forged the Purple Comet Spear was Ancestor Chi Yan who was only a middle Revolving Core powerhouse.

Thus, the Purple Comet Spear within Lin Ming's hand was only a peak high-grade earth-step treasure.

“Lin Ming’s spear is only a high-grade earth-step treasure?”

As everyone saw Lin Ming’s spear, they were surprised before shaking their heads in disappointment.

In fact, as an early Revolving Core powerhouse, it was already excellent that he had a high-grade earth-step treasure weapon. But, placed within the Blood Slaughter Steppes where resources were immeasurably plentiful, and also placed within this group of High Lords and Holy Land descendants, this high-grade earth-step treasure appeared rather shabby instead.

When compared to the Polaris Tower Master’s great sword, it especially paled. There was a difference of a large boundary between the two. With a mere high-grade earth-step treasure to resist a medium-grade heaven-step treasure, how could he even defend against it?

“The difference is too great! Even if Lin Ming is strong, he will suffer too much because of the difference in their treasures. There is no way he’ll be able to fight!”

The use of a treasure did not lie mainly in its ability to increase a martial artist’s combat strength, but rather the degree of its own hardness!

If an inferior treasure were to hit a top ranked treasure, it was possible for the lesser one to break in half!

Even Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were feeling nervous for Lin Ming.

“Haha! Lin Ming, you want to use that trash spear to face my Heaven Opening Sword, you are really asking to die!” The Polaris Tower Master wickedly grinned as he looked at the Purple Comet Spear in Lin Ming’s hand, his voice filled with contempt and ridicule.

At the start, the Polaris Tower master had wanted to win in a beautiful and awesome manner so that he could establish his authority in front of everyone. But now, after that brief period of fighting, he had changed his mind. Lin Ming’s power had already exceeded his every expectation. As long as he could win then he would be satisfied!

“Who lives and who dies, we will know after this battle!” After speaking, Lin Ming’s aura began to rise. Underneath his feet, the land began to rupture from his increasingly sharp aura.

“Humph! Your end is imminent and yet you remain such a flippant piece of garbage. Lin Ming, you dared to slander me, you dared to slander the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and for this, I shall take your dog life now!”

The Polaris Tower Master gave a loud shot and stepped forwards, the land breaking beneath his feet!

His body turned into a stream of light that shot towards Lin

Ming, the great sword in his hand cutting down like the peak of a mountain!

This sword was actually aimed towards Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear! He wanted to cut apart Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear. As long as he succeeded, it was the same as chopping off a tiger's fangs. Lin Ming's combat strength would drop to the floor!

As the surrounding martial artists saw this, they all thought in their heart that the Polaris Tower Master's methods weren't honorable. But, in a struggle of life and death, the winner was king and the loser was the villain. As for what method was used, none of that was important.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. The Heretical God Force opened to the extreme, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates erupted, and the complete battle spirit was fused into the Purple Comet Spear.

A battle spirit was invisible and intangible, but it could be attached to any treasure, turning it into an incomparably sharp killing weapon. A trivial withered leaf with a battle spirit attached to it could cut apart a treasure!

Lin Ming poured his battle spirit into the Purple Comet Spear, and thus, the originally insufficient quality Purple Comet Spear began to shine with a shimmering greenish yellow light; this was the glory of a bronze battle spirit!

Clang!

The Polaris Tower Master's heavy sword smashed into the Purple Comet Spear, pressing down on it like a great mountain. The earth underneath Lin Ming's feet exploded and the Purple Comet Spear fiercely bent, but this strike was actually abruptly kept off by Lin Ming!

“What!?”

The Polaris Tower Master was shocked. He never thought that his all-out strike, combined with a peak low-grade heaven-step Heaven Opening Sword would actually not be able to break apart a high-grade earth-step treasure spear!

The Polaris Tower Master was naturally a greatly experienced genius of his generation. An idea suddenly rose in his heart... could this greenish gray light be... a battle spirit?

Impossible! This was impossible!

Not only was the Polaris Tower Master shocked, but all the surrounding martial artists were dumbfounded as they saw that the Purple Comet Spear didn't break. However, in that split-second, no one had time to think about what just happened.

There was only a whistling sound, and then because of the heavy pressure, the curved Purple Comet Spear suddenly snapped back like a whip, shooting straight towards the cheek of the Polaris Tower Master.

The Polaris Tower Master could no longer afford to think about just what that greenish gray light was on the spear. He pulled back his Heaven Opening Sword and quickly drew away. But even so, the power of thunder still snuck into his body like the strike of a viper

Chi chi chi!

The Polaris Tower Master felt half of his body instantly paralyzed. That power of thunder also had Lin Ming's battle spirit attached to it!

Just that tiny wisp of battle spirit caused the originally insufficiently ranked Thunder Soul to become incomparably dangerous!

The Polaris Tower Master wretchedly coughed. But at this moment, Lin Ming had already taken a step forwards. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the void and all space seemed to lose meaning underneath his steps. It was as if Lin Ming had directly teleported in front of the Polaris Tower Master, the spear in his hand already thrusting down!

“Ahhh!”

The Polaris Tower Master fiercely bit down on his tongue, forcefully awakening himself with pain. He raised the Heaven Opening Sword in his hand and slashed towards Lin Ming.

He was trying to use a purely offensive strike to force Lin Ming to retreat.

But in this moment, the flow of time seemed to slow down around the Polaris Tower Master. His sword seemed stuck in a bog even as Lin Ming's spear shot out like a blazing meteor, its speed reaching the extreme!

Concept of Time!?

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes turned bloodshot. Under the threat of death, he erupted with 120% of his potential, emitting a terrifying energy and using it to directly burst out of the time cage. At the moment that Lin Ming's spear thrust down, he moved completely contrary to the laws of physics, forcing that spear that would have struck his heart to stab into his left shoulder instead!

With the infusion of battle spirit, Lin Ming's spear cut through the Polaris Tower Master's protective demon essence like it was tofu, stabbing his shoulder and penetrating straight through!

Blood shot out; Lin Ming's spear had broken the Polaris Tower Master's clavicle!

“Ah!”

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes flashed with the light of insanity. He used his muscles to firmly clamp down on the Purple Comet Spear and then slashed his sword towards Lin Ming's neck!



He wanted to use this opportunity with the Purple Comet Spear stuck in his body to cut off Lin Ming's head!

Lin Ming only coldly sneered. True essence erupted from the Purple Comet Spear. Each wisp of true essence had a touch of battle spirit fused with it, shooting out like a pack of steel needles. The Polaris Tower Master's meridians and muscles in his left shoulder had become a twisted mess!

As a result, the strength of the muscles imprisoning his spear no longer existed.

Lin Ming's figure dodged backwards, easily escaping the Polaris Tower Master's sword and leaving a massive gaping wound in the Polaris Tower Master's left shoulder!

Blood flowed like a river, the meat there ground into a blur.

This was the terror of a battle spirit. Its name as the strongest attack wasn't just from its unmatched sharpness, but also its terrifying destructive power!

The Polaris Tower Master fell down, staggering backwards several steps as he used his great sword to support himself, only then being able to come to a standstill.

As the martial artists present saw this, all of them were shocked speechless. They had thought that Lin Ming's strength might be above that of the Polaris Tower Master, but the quality of his

treasure weapon was simply too inferior. Overall, he was at a disadvantage. They never imagined that after several exchanges of moves, the Polaris Tower Master would be the one who was severely wounded!

Lin Ming had simply used an overwhelming strength to completely suppress the Polaris Tower Master without giving him the chance to resist.

At this time, Zhuan Yu's lips were shivering. He realized now that the difference between him and Lin Ming was a great boundary, like a Xiantian martial artist compared to a Revolving Core martial artist, or a Revolving Core martial artist compared to a Life Destruction master.

How ridiculous that he had challenged Lin Ming to a battle a year from now; he really didn't know what it meant to die!

“Great Ax, help me!”

The Polaris Tower Master clutched his shoulder and pleaded to the Great Ax Tower Master for help.

The Great Ax Tower Master gulped, his heart bitter. He certainly knew the true identity of the Polaris Tower Master. If he watched on helplessly as the Polaris Tower Master died in front of him, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would never forgive him.

## Chapter 662 – Sentence You To Death

---

At this time, the Great Ax Tower Master had fallen into a dilemma. Even if he joined together with the Polaris Tower Master to deal with Lin Ming, that didn't mean they would necessarily be able to win. But, if he didn't save him from death, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would shift the blame for his child's death onto him. At that time, him being killed wouldn't be strange.

As the Great Ax Tower Master hesitated, how could Lin Ming give the Polaris Tower Master a chance to catch his breath? Lin Ming stepped forwards and once again seemed to teleport in front of the Polaris Tower Master, his spear thrusting towards his heart!

Bang!

The Polaris Tower Master drew back, injured once more. Before, he didn't understand Lin Ming's Concept of Time, but now he was finally prepared for it, so the loss he suffered was less. But, he was still injured. If this continued, he would be defeated sooner or later.

“Lin Ming, I am the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler! If you kill me now then that's the same as dying with me!”

The Polaris Tower Master frantically shouted like a madman. After being beaten up so miserably by Lin Ming, he had no choice but to reveal his identity!

“What? The son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ ruler?”

Most of the martial artists present didn’t know the identity of the Polaris Tower Master. Hearing him suddenly say this left everyone shocked. The ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes was the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon in the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes. It was said that his cultivation had already broken through to the Emperor level!

The Polaris Tower Master was actually the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ ruler?

This news was inexplicably shocking to everyone. But, Lin Ming didn’t seem to care about this. Who cared if he was the son of the Steppes Master? He would still die the same!

Spear after spear stabbed towards the Polaris Tower Master’s fatal points. Lin Ming was determined to kill the Polaris Tower Master!

“Ahh!” Facing Lin Ming’s storm of attacks, the Polaris Tower Master had no choice but to use his clan’s secret technique!

“Lin Ming, you’re the one who forced me! I will bet a hundred years of my cultivation to die with you!”

The Polaris Tower Master bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of brilliant blood. On top of the Heaven Opening Sword, a blazing red flame ignited!

Heaven Shattering Strike!

A sword cut out. The blood vessels on the Polaris Tower Master's arms ruptured, the void trembled, and the earth began to tear open, creating ten foot wide fissures everywhere!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Above the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire wove together.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

In a fierce collision, all of the energy within a few hundred feet of the two was blown away into a raging vacuum.

The Polaris Tower Master was sent flying backwards and Lin Ming was also swept backwards by the aftermath of the attack. As he was forced back, a strange energy snuck into his right arm like a serpent!

The Purple Comet Spear was still a treasure that was an entire boundary of quality lower than the Heaven Opening Sword. Since Lin Ming had to separate a portion of his battle spirit to protect the Purple Comet Spear, he wasn't able to display its greatest striking power.

Chi!

The clothes on Lin Ming's arm suddenly burst apart. His body flew backwards, the blood within him tumbling.

As for the Polaris Tower Master, he was in an even more miserable state. He crashed into the earth, collapsing the ground beneath him and causing dust and smoke to fly up everywhere.

Feeling the Purple Comet Spear tremble in his hands, Lin Ming frowned. With such an intense impact, it was truly somewhat difficult for the Purple Comet Spear to withstand it.

And just at this time, Lin Ming could only hear a sword wind rushing at his side. He turned around and saw that 100 feet away, High Lord Bloodfire had grasped a thick broadsword and was rushing towards him.

Seeing this, Lin Ming shook his head. High Lord Bloodfire was controlled by the Polaris Tower Master's slave seal, he was beyond all medicine or hope. The only chance he had was if the Polaris Tower Master died. However, High Lord Bloodfire was his most loyal servant, so how could he allow something like that to happen?

Lin Ming's spear potential revolved, true essence erupted!

The battle spirit fused into the Purple Comet Spear. Brilliant flames twisted on the spear shaft as thick arcs of purple electricity

sizzled atop it, blinding all of the martial artists present!

“Chasing Thunder!”

Lin Ming had poured his battle spirit into this spear as well as fusing the Concept of Space and Time within it. Lin Ming believed that even if High Lord Bloodfire didn't die, he would still be grievously wounded.

However, he didn't expect that High Lord Bloodfire would continue rushing directly towards Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear with no intention of dodging!

Puff!

The Purple Comet Spear easily penetrated through High Lord Bloodfire.

But at this time, a demented light flashed on High Lord Bloodfire's face. He actually rushed towards Lin Ming even as the long spear passed through his body, stretching out his arms to claw towards Lin Ming!

Both of High Lord Bloodfire's arms held onto Lin Ming's shoulders, his eyes a bright blood red, “Die with me!” High Lord Bloodfire erupted with all of his strength; he wanted to hold down Lin Ming so that the Polaris Tower Master could strike through both of them!

“You are truly hopeless!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a killing intent. Raising his arms, the strength within his body rocketed into the sky! With a ‘peng peng peng’ sound, a bloody fog erupted from High Lord Bloodfire’s body.

“Well done, Bloodfire!”

The Polaris Tower Master gave a loud shout and slashed out with his sword. From his posture, it was apparent he wanted to cut apart Lin Ming along with High Lord Bloodfire!

“What a wretched slave.”

With Lin Ming held down by High Lord Bloodfire, he wasn’t able to move for a short period of time. Seeing the Polaris Tower Master’s sword cut down at him, Lin Ming’s expression didn’t change at all. His feet stepped atop Golden Roc Shattering the Void and the space around him suddenly distorted.

When he was in the King’s Cage, Lin Ming had been able to break through the space cage using the Concept of Space, much less something like High Lord Bloodfire’s hands.

Space distorted, and High Lord Bloodfire suddenly found himself grasping onto nothing at all. But at this time, the Polaris Tower Master’s sword was already cutting downwards!



Puff!

A sword cut through him from head to toe. High Lord Bloodfire was directly split in half!

Blood showered down like a heavy rain!

As for Lin Ming, he came floating down 200 feet away, not even a single hair on his head harmed.

All of the martial artists were shocked. They had only seen the light around Lin Ming twist a bit, and then he had used some unknown method to break out of High Lord Bloodfire's hold, instantly flickering 200 feet away!

“What a magnificent display of the Concept of Space!”

Duanmu Qun sighed with emotion. He also had many understandings into the Concept of Space, but it was impossible for him to achieve Lin Ming's degree.

“Damn!”

After mistakenly killing his own slave, the Polaris Tower Master was in an extremely poor mood. He began to become increasingly aware that he might really die here today!

But at this moment, from High Lord Bloodfire's corpse, a pure

infernal energy began to leak out. Half of this infernal energy dissipated, and the other half split in half again, one part flying to Lin Ming and the other part flying to the Polaris Tower Master.

High Lord Bloodfire had died under the hands of both Lin Ming and the Polaris Tower Master, thus the infernal energy had gone to the both of them. Lin Ming had attacked first, so he absorbed more infernal energy.

The two blobs of infernal energy separately flew to the two. With a loud roar, the phantom of a ten-winged Heavenly Demon appeared behind them, directly swallowing the infernal energy.

Seeing this, all of the martial artists present were shocked. The phantom of the ten-winged Heavenly Demon that appeared behind Lin Ming was in no way smaller than the Polaris Tower Master's!

The tens wings were completely clear, and the sixth pair of wings was also in the process of forming...

This was actually... the peak of ten wings!

Heavens!

When did Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo achieve the peak of 10 wings?

All of the martial artists present were shaken to their core as an inexplicable chill crawled up their spines. A twelve-winged

Heavenly Demon was the ultimate taboo existence of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Lin Ming was already at the peak of ten wings. Could he be planning on becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon? Did he want to take the entirety of the Blood Slaughter Steppes as his enemy?

How audacious! How bold!

Zhuan Yu and High Lord Black Ash had gone completely pale. They finally knew just how crazy Lin Ming was. Compared to this madman, they were simply little children monkeying around.

Even Great Ax's expression changed. If Lin Ming killed the Polaris Tower Master, would that be enough for him to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon? If that happened, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would inevitably vent all of his rage onto him!

At this moment, there was a sound of distant wind and rustling clothes. Everyone turned around to look, seeing a black-robed old man walk in with the wind.

This old man was the host of this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“Elder Xiao, save me!” As the Polaris Tower Master saw this black-robed Elder appear, his face lit up with joy. In his darkest moment, he had found a final straw to grasp, fervently calling out for help.

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up... this old man!

He remembered that this old fellow was a supervisory envoy of Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. He was solely responsible for the opening of the Eternal Demon Abyss. He had once said that if anyone's Heavenly Demon Tattoo had gone beyond the middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon stage, then he would personally disperse some of their infernal energy.

Another enemy had appeared!

Lin Ming gently stroked his spear, his expression calm even as his eyes shined with a blazing killing intent.

“Lin Ming!” As the black-robed Elder caught up, he arrived just in time to see the ten-winged Heavenly Demon phantom disappear back into Lin Ming's body.

“You've secretly condensed your Heavenly Demon Tattoo to the peak of 10 wings; how many High Lords have you killed during this trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss? Now you have even attacked your superior and committed the crime of killing a High Lord! Could it be that you want to plunder the infernal energy of the Polaris Tower Master and become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, becoming mortal enemies with the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!?”

“You've simultaneously committed the crimes of fomenting rebellion, murdering a High Lord, and reckless killing! With these three crimes side by side, I hereby sentence you to death!”

As the black-robed Elder spoke, he extracted a lance from his spatial ring and pointed it straight at Lin Ming.

“Sentence me to death? Hahaha...” Lin Ming chuckled, “If you want to kill me, then why spout so much crap. What the Polaris Tower Master has done to me, everyone here is well aware! Good! Since you want to play so badly then you’re welcome to join in on the fun! My Heavenly Demon Tattoo just reached the peak of 10 wings. Even if I kill the Polaris Tower Master, it won’t be enough for me to reach 12 wings. But, with your pathetic old bones added to the mix, it might just be enough!”

“What a brave young fellow! You’ve already reached the end of the line yet you remain so blithely arrogant! Great Ax!” The black-robed old man suddenly called out to the Great Ax Tower Master.

The Great Ax Tower Master looked extremely distressed. He had originally been waiting for the Polaris Tower Master to be killed by Lin Ming, and then he had planning on fleeing the Blood Slaughter Steppes to avoid the wrath of the Steppes Master.

But he never thought that at this critical moment, Elder Xiao would suddenly arrive. Now it was impossible for him to hide any further.

But then again, if the three of them joined forces, killing Lin Ming might not be too difficult. On the other hand, if he didn’t help and Lin Ming killed the other two and still couldn’t condense his twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, then Lin Ming might

even turn his spear onto him.

Thinking of this, Great Ax stepped forwards and stood beside the black-robed old man, extracting a double-headed ax from his spatial ring.

Three great masters simultaneously faced Lin Ming.

The martial artists present felt their throats twitch. Two Tower Masters and a supervisor of the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. Any one of them was a remarkable and mind-blowing character within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Now, all three of them had joined forces to deal with a mere junior.

“Three against one?” Lin Ming looked at the black-robed Elder and his lips curved up in a taunting smile. “I thought you were quite powerful and would be able to handle me alone. But it appears that you’re actually... mediocre.”

“Humph, you don’t have to try stirring me up. From ancient times the winner has always been the hero and the loser becomes the villain. There is no shame in using your complete strength. Now, Lin Ming, prepare to die!” The black-robed Elder remained unmoved. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss it was impossible for them to reach the outside world. They could only depend on the manpower available here to kill Lin Ming. By attacking together, their chances of killing him were that much higher.

# Chapter 663 – Heaven-step White Spear

---

“This damn old fox!”

Lin Ming knit his eyebrows together. With his current strength, having to simultaneously deal with Elder Xiao, the Great Ax Tower Master, and the severely wounded Polaris Tower Master would be somewhat difficult.

The strength of these two new challengers might be no less than that of the Polaris Tower Master!

When Lin Ming had faced the Polaris Tower Master, he had continuously attacked him several times in a row. Although he had managed to beat him into the ground, he still hadn't been able to kill him. Now, with three of them together and mutually supporting each other, wanting to kill any one of them would be much more difficult.

Moreover, this Elder Xiao seemed to be very cautious. If Lin Ming wanted to defeat him, he would have to expend himself.

“Great Ax! We'll attack him from both sides!”

Elder Xiao said with a true essence sound transmission. Great Ax didn't want to be sucked into this mess, but now there was no turning back for him.

Together, they both rushed towards Lin Ming in a pincer

position!

Holding a double-headed ax, the Great Ax Tower Master's attack seemed truly epic. As for Elder Xiao, with the lance in his hands, his strike appeared incomparably sharp. The weapons in both of their hands were equally heaven-step treasures!

But, the Purple Comet Spear within Lin Ming's hands was only an earth-step treasure. Facing the violent impact about to occur, it would be far too difficult to use his high-grade earth-step Purple Comet Spear to block both attacks!

A great portion of his battle spirit needed to be branched out in order to stabilize the Purple Comet Spear, so the part he could use for attacking was naturally lessened. This caused Lin Ming to not dare to recklessly face these two in a melee clash, otherwise he would inevitably be injured!

At this critical moment, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void as space twisted beneath him. In the next moment he had actually dashed through the gap between Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master's attacks, directly rushing towards the Polaris Tower Master!

To wound 10 enemies was far inferior to killing off one!

Lin Ming's first focus of attack was the Polaris Tower Master!

"Lin Ming, do you want to die!?" The Polaris Tower Master was



furious. But at this time, he truly had overspent himself. He began to rapidly combust his blood essence as he cut down at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming completely ignored this attack, his spear still thrusting towards the Polaris Tower Master's heart. Even if he had to receive a small wound in exchange, he would still desire to kill this man.

As Lin Ming was about to kill the Polaris Tower with his spear, he suddenly heard a loud whistling of wind behind him. Elder Xiao was chasing after him with his lance in front!

Lin Ming instantly determined that if he killed the Polaris Tower Master, he was bound to be stuck for a moment. At that time, he would definitely be struck hard by Elder Xiao.

This damn old man!

Lin Ming wildly grit his teeth and slammed his feet into the ground, his body suddenly jumping up from the recoil as he abruptly recovered his spear potential while dodging the Polaris Tower Master's sword!

Hu-!

After taking back his spear potential, Lin Ming could feel the blood within his body tumbling madly about, his face flushing red.

To a martial artist, having to forcefully withdraw an attack they sent out was similar to a wildly dashing horse suddenly stopping.

The energy backlash would impact the blood vitality within their body and might even cause damage to their meridians.

Even though Lin Ming's meridians and body were astoundingly formidable, this impact of energy made him feel queasy.

“Boy, your end is here!”

Elder Xiao thrust out his lance once again, the lance point chasing after Lin Ming's vital points! Even if Lin Ming could dodge using Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Elder Xiao had still made an immediate judgement to strike at him again!

Although this old fellow wasn't any stronger than the Polaris Tower Master, his combat experience was far richer!

“Haha, Lin Ming, you will die here today!”

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes shined as if victory was already within his reach. With his sword cutting down at Lin Ming, and in addition to the Great Ax Tower Master joining in on the assault, the attacks of these three individuals were unblockable with Lin Ming's trivial earth-step Purple Comet Spear! He simply didn't have the qualifications to meet all three attacks at once!

Blocking one attack was possible, but the other two attacks would also fall on him. At that time, three heaven-step treasures would cut down on a single earth-step treasure. If that happened, he feared that no matter how heaven-defying a battle spirit was, it

still wouldn't be able to withstand this!

The Purple Comet Spear would break!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

The power of space underneath Lin Ming's feet twisted again. By virtue of his understanding of the Concept of Space, Lin Ming once again dodged the combined attacks of the three. But, even though he had successfully dodged the attacks, the currents of demon essence still scraped by him. Although he wasn't injured, this scraping still tore apart the cloth of his lower robe.

This sounded alarm bells in Lin Ming's mind. With the Concept of Space fused into it, Golden Roc Shattering the Void was indeed an incomparably wonderful movement technique. But, to dodge the attacks of three people in a limited space was still extremely difficult.

Lin Ming could decide not to fight and escape deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss instead. If this happened, then there wasn't anyone here that could stop him. But the Eternal Demon Abyss would be sealed off in another half month and the only exit was here. There was another exit on the other side of the Eternal Demon Abyss, but that was over 10,000 miles away. Although it was only 10,000 miles away, the truth was that it was impossible to cross through the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss; the truth distance to the other side was 20,000 to 30,000 miles. There were also a massive number of unknown dangers that existed between here and there. Wanting to cross this distance in a mere half month was simply impossible.

“Lin Ming, your Concept of Space is indeed exquisite, but...” Elder Xiao suddenly sneered, thrusting his lance through the void!

Lin Ming didn't know what Elder Xiao was trying to do, but after he understood, he sucked in a breath of cold air.

Every time Elder Xiao thrust out with his lance, a black energy would fuse into space.

Elder Xiao only had a minor understanding into the Concept of Space. To have him shrink the space between his feet and keep up with Lin Ming's strange movement techniques was naturally impossible. But, he was actually able to fuse a portion of his striking energy into space, making it so that the power of space here became increasingly chaotic.

In this situation, although Lin Ming was still able to use the power of space to display his elusive and fleeting movement technique, it would become much more difficult. And having to dodge the combined attacks of the three also became that much harder. If Lin Ming's speed were to slow down and he were to make even the tiniest mistake, he would be injured!

If he was injured at this time, then his fate could be imagined!

“This damned old man!”

Lin Ming's eyes blazed with a brilliant killing intent. The elderly

were truly tricky. Although this Elder Xiao wasn't any stronger than the Polaris Tower master, ever since he joined this fight, Lin Ming had been constantly suppressed from multiple angles.

The power of space became increasingly chaotic. And, because the Purple Comet Spear's quality was limited, Lin Ming couldn't engage in a melee with these three. If this continued on, then he would reach a point where he wouldn't be able to withstand this any longer and then he would have to escape into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

With Demonshine beside him, Lin Ming was confident he would be able to stay within the Eternal Demon Abyss for 10 years until the next time it opened. But, even if he could survive down here for 10 years, he was still far too worried about the events happening in the Sky Spill Continent. 10 years from now, who knew what would change?

Perhaps the South Sea War would have already ended!

He had to leave now! But to leave, he had to defeat these three!

Lin Ming frowned. He had been caught in a dead end!

.....

As Lin Ming was fiercely battling against three others, he didn't know that in a distant corner of the battlefield, two martial artists were secretly talking to each other with a true essence sound

transmission.

“High Lord Whitedemon, a fist sized earth-step Demon God Bone is already enough to exchange for several heaven-step treasures. I will trade you two. Although that heaven-step spear in your hands is good, it absolutely isn’t worthy of an earth-step Demon God Bone.

The one speaking was Duanmu Qun. He had long noticed that Lin Ming was being suppressed because of the quality of his weapon. Now, he wanted give Lin Ming a new one.

Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen all used swords; they didn’t have a heaven-step treasure spear in their spatial rings. Thus, Duanmu Qun thought of purchasing one from another High Lord!

To trade two fist-sized earth-step Demon God Bones for a low-grade heaven-step treasure spear was the same as having a massive amount of money drop down from the heavens. By all reasoning, no one would ever reject this offer.

However, High Lord Whitedemon seemed a bit pained with embarrassment, “Brother Duanmu, I know what you’re trying to say, but even if Lin Ming received my spear he still might not be able to win. If he loses, then those two great Tower Masters and supervisor will be furious at me. How would I still continue living?”

Duanmu Qun was very understanding of High Lord

Whitedemon's thoughts. He said, "I will deliver the spear, the risk to you is not too large. In addition, as long as you leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes, I guarantee you will receive sanctuary under my Divine Wood Holy Land! High Lord Whitedemon, without taking risk, you will never break through to the Emperor level. Where has there ever been such a good deal in this world? Okay, how about this. Three earth-step Demon God Bones, all of them the size of a fist. That is our final offer, because of the three of us, that is the totality of the resources we obtained in the Eternal Demon Abyss!"

The reason that Duanmu Qun had offered two Demon God Bones at the start was so that he could have some bargaining room with High Lord Whitedemon. It was try to take advantage of others urgent needs, no matter how tempting the conditions were from the start. So, rather than first putting out the best offer, it was better to slowly toss in the chips until they couldn't be refused.

And sure enough, High Lord Whitedemon was shaken. Three earth-step Demon God Bones could greatly shorten the time it took from him to break through from a four-star Demon King to a quasi Emperor. If he could continue like that, then he really would one day reach the Emperor level!

Truly, there were no riches in this world without danger. If a massive meat pie fell down from the sky and he didn't eat it because he feared it was poisonous, then that was the same as him giving up on ever becoming a true Emperor.

Gritting his teeth, High Lord Whitedemon calmly handed over a spatial ring to Duanmu Qun. "The spear is inside. I've already

erased my soul mark. Do with it as you will!”

“Great!” Duanmu Qun didn’t waste time and directly passed a spatial ring containing the three earth-step Demon God Bones to High Lord Whitedemon.

At the same time, his figure flashed and he appeared at the edge of the battlefield, extracting a white spear from the spatial ring!

This was also partly the reason why High Lord Whitedemon was originally unwilling to hand over this spear. This spear was far too blatantly garish and easily recognizable.

“Brother Lin, take this spear!”

Woosh!

Duanmu Qun threw out the spear!

At this time, Lin Ming was facing the dual attacks of the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao – he was indeed facing a crisis. The power of space around him was becoming increasingly chaotic, and it was becoming much more difficult to use the Concept of Space effectively.

But at this moment, as Lin Ming saw a long spear shooting towards him, his eyes lit up!



“Not good!”

As Lin Ming saw this white long spear, the Great Ax Tower Master, Elder Xiao, and the Polaris Tower Master also saw this spear. The Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao were attacking so they were unable to intercept this spear. Only the Polaris Master was able to rush towards this white spear.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming erupted with true essence. The Heretical God Force revolved to its limits, forcefully distorting the chaotic power of space. Once again, he shrunk the space under his feet and avoided the attacks of the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao, seeming as if he teleported in front of the white long spear!

## Chapter 664 – The Tide Turns

---

“Lin Ming, go and die!” As the Polaris Tower Master saw Lin Ming rushing towards that heaven-step white spear, he knew that it was impossible to catch up to him with his speed. So, wielding his great sword, he slashed out at Lin Ming, wanting to force him back instead!

However, Lin Ming completely ignored the Polaris Tower Master’s attack. His eyes flashed with a thick killing intent as he grabbed onto the spear shaft with a heavy clapping sound.

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master’s attack was less than 10 feet away from Lin Ming!

“The one who will die is you.”

The energy within Lin Ming’s body erupted like a colossal volcano. Holding onto that white spear, he suddenly turned around and thrust it out!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

A keen spear light tore apart the Polaris Tower Master’s sword light as if it were made of paper. At this time, Lin Ming no longer needed to use the power of his battle spirit to reinforce his spear. The strength of his battle spirit was completely freed from its

shackles!

Along the shaft of the spear, the power of thunder and fire twisted together. With the complete increased strength from a bronze level battle spirit, the prestige of Lin Ming's spear had reached the pinnacle! Before, Lin Ming could only block the Polaris Tower Master's attacks, but now, he completely overwhelmed and swept away those same attacks!

A rainbow of light howled out, the void trembled!

“Ahh!”

The Polaris Tower Master gave out a pitiful cry as his body was swept up by that spear light. He was sent flying back like broken sack, spewing out a mouthful of blood in midair!

“Young Master!”

Elder Xiao was enraged. He didn't attack Lin Ming, but instead his figure disappeared as he rushed towards the Polaris Tower Master to catch him!

Rapidly stuffing a life-saving pill into the Polaris Tower Master's mouth, Elder Xiao suddenly looked up, his eyes like those of a rabid wolf.

“Lin Ming!” Elder Xiao heatedly glared at Lin Ming before his eyes shifted to Duanmu Qun, “And you too, Duanmu Qun! You are

asking to die!”

Duanmu Qun’s expression was calm. He coldly said, “Me? Asking to die? Haha! The Polaris Tower Master has been planting slave seals into top talents and controlling them as his own slaves. After so many years, who knows just how many outstanding young elites have died because of him. This matter is something the Holy Land Alliance will absolutely investigate! When that time comes, who dies, who lives, none of that is certain! It might be true that the Polaris Tower Master is the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ ruler, but as far as I know, the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes probably has over a dozen children! For just a single son, will he be willing to oppose the Holy Land Alliance?”

The Steppes Master was an Emperor level powerhouse who had lived for over 5000 years. After so many years, it wasn’t strange for him to have several dozen children. Even if the Polaris Tower Master was the most outstanding and talented of all his children, he still wasn’t worth such a massive sacrifice.

“Duanmu Qun, do you think I won’t kill you just because you have the Divine Wood Holy Land behind you?”

Elder Xiao’s eyes flashed with a fanatical killing intent. At this time, a crazed idea began to take form in his mind. That was to kill every outsider and silence all witnesses!

As for the others, he would force them into a soul contract so that this secret was kept forever. Outwardly, he would claim that the Eternal Demon Abyss had erupted again, causing all the outstanding heroic youths here to die.

Without a shadow of a doubt, this would cause an enormous pressure to fall onto the Blood Slaughter Steppes. But, if he were to allow this people to leave, then the consequences of that would be extremely bad. Moreover, he and the Polaris Tower Master might become chess pieces that the Steppes Master would give up!

Thinking of this, Elder Xiao's heart burned with an even fiercer killing intent!

“What? Do you want to fight?” Duanmu Qun was extremely intelligent. He could vaguely guess what Elder Xiao was thinking and drew out his sword without hesitation.

He was well aware that he was not a match for this old man, but he also believed that Lin Ming wouldn't just sit there and watch him die.

As Duanmu Qun glanced over at Lin Ming, he saw Lin Ming's lips really did move, passing on a true essence sound transmission to him, “Thank you Brother Duanmu! I, Lin Ming, will carve this kindness in my heart. I will never forget this for the rest of my life!”

Lin Ming was a person who believed in the commitments he made. If he made a promise or a pledge, he would inevitably accomplish it.

He was aware that Duanmu Qun's actions were all in order to repay him for saving his life earlier. For such a peerless and proud

son of heaven like Duanmu Qun, what someone like him would find most reluctant was owing favors to others. Only when he returned the kindness would his thoughts be able to flow smoothly.

Of course, Duanmu Qun also did this because he wished to form a better relationship with Lin Ming. To befriend a top master in the prime of their youth and also temper that friendship through the fires of life and death, this sort of friendship would be extremely strong and reliable in the future.

Going out, making friends and comrades, knowing masters, all of this would be of great help in the future. Even for someone like Lin Ming who tended towards being a loner, he still liked to make friends. For instance, gaining access to materials, news, and so forth, all of this would be much easier in the future with a friend to help him.

But, what Duanmu Qun didn't expect was that at this time, Elder Xiao's face would flash with a ferocious light as he loudly shouted out, "Every High Lord of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, obey my orders! Kill Duanmu Qun! If you can kill Duanmu Qun, you will receive five jins of low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones and three jins of medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bones!"

As Duanmu Qun heard Elder Xiao issue out this comment, his complexion changed. This old man was so insane that he wanted to openly kill him here!?

Did he not fear offending his Divine Wood Holy Land at all!?

Woosh! Woosh!

Behind him, Lan Xin and Feng Shen moved to cover his sides, both of them extracting their long swords. Their attitude and meaning was clear.

As friends, they would live together or die together!

At this time, they also guessed what Elder Xiao was doing. If he was willing to kill Duanmu Qun to silence all the witnesses here, then how could they be let off?

It was true that the Holy Land Alliance was powerful, but they were only able to indirectly exert pressure onto the Blood Slaughter Steppes; it was impossible for them to directly attack the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

That strange and mystical power within the Blood Slaughter Steppes could kill any powerhouse that was at Life Destruction or above. The higher one's cultivation, the higher the chances of dying from that curse. Even an Emperor level powerhouse might die if they stepped into the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

Within the entire Holy Demon Continent, there were only a handful of Emperor level powerhouses that had the qualifications to safely reenter the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Of these people, besides the Eightfall War Emperor, most of them had gone into seclusion in who knew what heaven-forsaken lands and were nearly impossible to find.

Hearing such generous rewards, the High Lords present immediately felt their hearts stir with temptation. It had to be known that of these High Lords, the majority of them didn't have the ability to enter into the Emperor level in the future. But, if they had that much Demon God Bone, that wouldn't necessarily be true.

Some of them were already tracing their spatial rings!

Duanmu Qun smiled, his face immeasurably cold and decisive, "Truly humans die for wealth and birds die for food. So what if you obtain so many Demon God Bones? Is it worth it if you aren't alive to enjoy it? If you kill us, do you not fear the combined retaliation of our three Holy Lands, all of them willing to hunt you down? That is, unless you plan on never leaving the Blood Slaughter Steppes in the future!"

As the High Lords present heard Duanmu Qun's words, many of them began to waver with hesitation. All of them would have to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes after they reached a boundary equivalent to the Life Destruction realm. If they had to simultaneously face the combined forces of three Holy Lands chasing them down, then there really wasn't any way they could survive that.

As Elder Xiao saw these High Lords waffle around, he laughed and said, "Duanmu Qun, you really are skilled at fooling the hearts of others. Do you think you are that important? Outside of here, we will say that you died because the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted! Even if your Divine Wood Holy Land tries to pressure my



Blood Slaughter Steppes, all we will have to do is pay some compensation for their losses! You said that the Steppes Ruler has many sons, but your Divine Wood Holy Land has even more talents. You are the most outstanding junior of the last 100 years, but that is only 100 years! To the Divine Wood Holy Land that has existed for 10,000 years, what do you think 100 years is to them? There have been many 100 year peerless talents that have died the same within the Blood Slaughter Steppes! As long as there is enough interest in both parties, any conflict can be resolved! Do you really think that for a mere you, your Divine Wood Holy Land would actually completely break off from the Blood Slaughter Steppes? Do not forget, this land is the best trial by fire for raising the new generation of geniuses!”

Not only was Elder Xiao rich in combat experience, but he was an eloquent individual who was skilled at speaking. With just a few superficial moves, the winds were behind him and all the High Lords believed he was right.

And right he was. The Blood Slaughter Steppes had to fear and give face to the Divine Wood Holy Land, but the Divine Wood Holy Land also had to do the same in return. Otherwise, they would never be able to send their outstanding heroic youths there again.

For these two forces, as long as the issue wasn't too great, it could be resolved in secret with appropriate compensation. If they both fought, then it would simply be a lose-lose situation.

Finally, over 20 High Lords began to move. High Lord Black Ash was also amongst these 20 some High Lords. He malevolently smiled as he said, “Sorry, Brother Duanmu. Even if I don't kill you,

others will. Why give advantages to others when I can take them myself? Please understand... hehehe..."

Seeing the situation deteriorate in front of him, it wasn't just Duanmu Qun who was grimacing. Even Zhuan Yu, who wasn't involved in any of this, began to nervously sweat. He too was a Holy Land descendant. Although he wasn't a Fey, it was still possible they would kill him in order to eliminate another potential witnesses!

"What do we do?" Lan Xin was a bit panicked. Although she was a Holy Land descendant, she had never been in this sort of situation before. Facing this sort of crucial moment, she was at a bit of a loss.

There were only three of them. Against the many High Lords in front of them, there was simply no path to survival!

"Kill!"

High Lord Black Ash shouted out. He was about to rush at Lan Xin, when at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly moved!

He raised the white spear in his hands and stabbed it towards the Polaris Tower Master!

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master had basically lost all of his combat strength, hanging onto life simply because of the pills that were sustaining him. Now, it was impossible for him to block Lin

Ming's attack!

Elder Xiao's eyes glinted with a cold light, "You dare!?"

He placed his lance horizontally, protecting the Polaris Tower Master. But at this moment, Lin Ming sneered. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and his figure instantly vanished!

In the next instant, he appeared several hundred feet away. The location he had appeared at was actually within those 20 some High Lords, right behind High Lord Black Ash!

Without a further word, Lin Ming thrust out his spear!

In terms of his elusive ability to appear anywhere like a fading ghost, no one could rival Lin Ming!

Puff!

"Ugh..."

High Lord Black Ash only felt his chest go cold. Looking down, he froze as he saw a white, bloodstained spear stretching out from his chest...

The spear lifted up. High Lord Black Ash's originally diminutive body was lifted up on the shaft. As he was stuck on the spear, he

looked no different from a frog on a skewer.

“I...” High Lord Black Ash’s face flashed with a thick and pure unwilling despair. He grabbed the spear shaft, wanting to turn around. However, as an Imp martial artist, his neck was too short so he couldn’t turn much.

“Go die!”

The power of a battle spirit erupted. High Lord Black Ash suddenly shook as all his organs were twisted into goo!

Lin Ming withdrew his white spear, the front wet with blood. His entire body blazed with an overwhelming killing intent!

At this time, he stood within the many High Lords. All of the High Lords felt a chill crawl up their backs as their courage began fading away!

A wisp of pure infernal energy left High Lord Black Ash’s body and was sucked up into Lin Ming’s. As Elder Xiao saw this, he immediately paled.

This was disastrous! He realized that Lin Ming wanted to use these ordinary High Lords as his blood sacrifice, becoming a true twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

## Chapter 665 – Achieving 12 Wings

---

After becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, a person would obtain Heavenly Demon martial intent and become the ultimate taboo existence within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The Blood Slaughter Steppes' true fear was not the Holy Land Alliance, but an Emperor level powerhouse like the Eightfall War Emperor who had also managed to obtain a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

There didn't need to be many of such individuals. As long as three or four such existences simultaneously attacked the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the Steppes Master would suffer defeat!

“All High Lords heed my order! Everyone attack Lin Ming together! Although he is strong, he cannot stand a barrage of your martial skills!”

Elder Xiao crazily shouted. It was true that Lin Ming was strong, but this had mainly manifested in his striking power. In just the aspect of striking power, Lin Ming even surpassed an ordinary second stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Any defense would be pierced and pulverized!

But in terms of defensive power, no matter how fierce Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to stand there and take attacks from a High Lord powerhouse, much less a barrage of them!

All of the surrounding High Lords began to move, taking out their weapons and attacking Lin Ming.

But, how could they possibly compare to Lin Ming in speed?

Cha cha cha!

The heaven-step treasure spear was like a pure white dragon swimming through the vast sea. Wherever it went, blood would follow!

Lin Ming indeed couldn't block a volley of attacks from the High Lords. Even if just five or six martial artists attacked him at the same time, he probably wouldn't be able to block that either. But, by depending on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his movement skill that allowed him to weave through the battlefield like ghosts and gods, how could anyone think of successfully hitting him?

As he flitted between the 20 some High Lords, Lin Ming's attacks were like vorpal death sentences!

The white spear was fused with billowing flames and arcs of electricity. Each and every attack had the power of a bronze level battle spirit poured into it!

“Ahhh!”

Seeing Lin Ming rush towards him, a High Lord swung his heavy sword at Lin Ming, wanting to fend off this attack. But Lin Ming completely ignored his attack and continued thrusting his spear.

In that instant, Lin Ming's spear passed through the High Lord's sword light and then struck the heavy sword with a metallic ring. Then, an inconceivable scene occurred that made everyone tremble. The great sword, which was also a heaven-step treasure, actually had its thick blade pierced through by Lin Ming's spear!

The long spear penetrated through the heavy sword and stabbed into the High Lord's throat, taking his life with a single spear strike!

Such a sharp spear light caused all of the martial artists present to pale, sweat dripping down their backs. Everyone knew that the white spear was a low-grade heaven-step treasure. But, in Lin Ming's hand, this spear had reached a degree of sharpness that no one could block!

Facing this sort of demon, just who would dare to fight him?

The dozen some remaining High Lords were pale as they turned around to run. However, Lin Ming did not intend to let a single one of them escape. The space underneath his feet suddenly shrank as he seemed to teleport directly behind a High Lord's back, his spear thrusting into his body!

"Don't kill me! I surrender! I'll leave—"

The High Lord frantically shouted. However, his voice died in his throat. The white spear penetrated through his back and straight out of his front, a bloody light shooting out!

Leave?

Lin Ming's lips curved in a devilish grin. At the moment that they decided to kill Duanmu Qun, everyone had already forfeited their lives in this gamble!

Seeing that they couldn't kill the one in front of them, but then seeing that they themselves would die and even wanting to retreat; just where in the world would you find such a good deal?

“Damnit!”

Seeing six or seven ordinary High Lords cut down by Lin Ming as if they were vegetables, Elder Xiao's eyes turned red, “This old man will kill you!”

Pouring true essence into his lance, Elder Xiao struck out at Lin Ming.

“Humph! You really think that I'm afraid to fight you?”

Lin Ming's eyes sparked with a cold light. He grasped his spear, thrusting it up. He would welcome anyone anytime!

Before, he hadn't dared to directly fight because Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master were attacking him together, and the treasure in Lin Ming's hand was lacking. But now, seeing Elder Xiao rushed towards him alone, this was what Lin Ming had wished for. A spear thrust out, fires burning to the heavens!



A vast Concept of Fire burnt Elder Xiao's cloud of demon essence to cinders. Spear and lance collided!

Bang!

Elder Xiao's body shook. After receiving such a heavy blow, he was blown backwards like a broken kite, blood leaking out from his mouth.

After Lin Ming had switched to a heaven-step treasure spear, he had been able to completely free the power of his battle spirit. Now, his striking power was not something that Elder Xiao could hope to compare with. For this old man to think of meeting him in a head-on attack with, he had simply been seeking death!

“Great Ax! What the hell are you doing? Do you think he will let you go!?”

Elder Xiao crazily shouted, his voice full thick with anger and killing intent.

Great Ax grit his teeth and stepped forwards. At this time he had truly stepped onto the road of no return. His only path of redemption was to kill Lin Ming!

Elder Xiao forcefully revolved his demon essence and suppressed in internal injuries, swallowing down the blood that was filling his mouth.

One on the left, one on the right, both of them attacked Lin Ming!

Facing these two simultaneous attacks, although Lin Ming was confident in himself, he didn't lower his guard. Suffering even a minor injury here would be disastrous.

However, he had never intended to meet both of their attacks.

Seeing billowing clouds of demonic energy roiling towards him, Lin Ming's lips curved in a cruel smile.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Hoo-!

Lin Ming's figure instantly vanished again. In the next moment, he had already moved several hundred feet away, appearing right in front of the Polaris Tower Master!

At the same time that Great Ax and Elder Xiao attacked him, he had decide to kill the Polaris Tower Master!

“Ahh!”

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes widened as he saw Lin Ming suddenly flicker in front of him, scared so badly that his soul

nearly left his body. In his life, he had killed countless lives, and now this was the first time that he had truly faced death.

The fear of dying gripped his mind. His eyes widened, his heartbeat stopping!

He didn't want to die! He was the son of the Steppes Master! He enjoyed countless resources, countless beauties, limitless fame! In the future, he would become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and inevitably step into the Emperor level realm!

He would live for six or seven thousand years, with endless wealth and an exalted status. He would have peerless authority, wielding the fates of a trillion lives in his hands with absolute power! He would have a harem with countless proud and heavenly women of every race...

And now, all of this, all of his dreams, would disappear with this single spear strike!

“Lin Ming, don't-!!!”

“Young Master!!” Several hundred feet away, Elder Xiao also shouted out. However, no one was able to stop Lin Ming.

Without a hint of hesitation, his spear came plummeting down, directly passing through the Polaris Tower Master's throat like a bolt of lightning!

Puff!

Blood sputtered out. The Polaris Tower Master opened his mouth as if he were trying to say something, but his vocal cords had already been torn to pieces so he was unable to utter a single word.

Lin Ming was inscrutable as he pulled his hand back and received his spear. As he drew back the spear, blood gushed out, spraying into the air. In this final strike that killed the Polaris Tower Master, he hadn't even infused his spear with his battle spirit, ending his life no differently than he would butcher a chicken or pig.

A powerful and ambition genius of his era, who had planted slave seals in the spiritual seas of several generations of proud sons of heavens, who had become the Polaris Tower Master that had controlled Polaris Tower for dozens of years, had died today, killed no differently than the lowest of beasts!

“Young Master!”

Elder Xiao's eyes were blood red. His heart raged with an inferno of hatred, a thick burning intent sizzling in his mind. In the end, all he could do was look on helplessly as the Polaris Tower Master died right in front of him!

This wasn't because of any mistake Elder Xiao had made. In that situation just now, he could no longer stop Lin Ming. If he didn't attack Lin Ming, then that was no different from freely allowing him to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Yet, if he

wanted to attack Lin Ming, he would need to join forces with Great Ax. And now, the result of this was... he had given Lin Ming the chance to directly slaughter the Polaris Tower Master.

His movement speed was inferior and his striking power was inferior. From the point that Lin Ming obtained the white spear, the initiative had gone to Lin Ming's hand, remaining there forever!

As the Polaris Tower master died, an incomparably rich infernal energy leaked out from him. This mass of infernal energy was several times purer and richer than any other mass of infernal energy that Lin Ming had ever seen!

At this moment, the bass growl of a demon filled the air. The fierce Heavenly Demon phantom that hid within Lin Ming's arm tattoo appeared, rushing towards the mass of infernal energy and swallowing it all!

With the additional six or seven High Lords that Lin Ming had killed just before, all of this infernal energy combined together, completely absorbed by the Heavenly Demon phantom!

Roar!!

The Heavenly Demon phantom stretched out its sharp claws and unfolded its towering wings. It faced the heavens and gave off a loud cry. Its five pairs of wings were already extremely clear, and now, under the effects of that rich infernal energy, the final sixth pair was also slowly expanding!

A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

After Lin Ming killed the Polaris Tower Master, he finally became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

With the influx of infernal energy, the Heavenly Demon phantom began to rapidly grow, finally reaching a monumental 40 to 50 feet. It was like an Asura that crawled out from the endless abyss. Thunder and fire raged underneath its feet, and its entire body was wrapped with thick, bulging muscles. As it released its 12 wings, they nearly covered the skies!

All of the surrounding martial artists were dumbfounded.

This was the first time they had witnessed the birth of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

“Mad... he’s a madman...” Zhuan Yu’s lips trembled. At this moment, he didn’t even have the courage to face Lin Ming, let alone fight him.

As for Elder Xiao, a trace of fear flashed in his eyes. He had a deep foreboding feeling that if he couldn’t kill Lin Ming today, then one day, Lin Ming would become the gravedigger for all 12 Skysplit Towers!

He was absolutely a terrifying threat! In fact, he was far more horrible and dreadful than even the Eightfall War Emperor! He

had the personal reasons and also the ability to personally bury the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes under his feet, drowning the land in a sea of blood!

“Hurry and take advantage of this time while he’s concentrating the Heavenly Demon phantom to kill him!”

Elder Xiao leapt forwards. The Great Ax Tower Master also hesitated for a moment before throwing himself forwards too. At this time, there was no way he could retreat unless he turned and ran into the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, this was the only nearby exit from the Eternal Demon Abyss and it would soon close. Running away would be no different from suicide!

One on the left, one on the right, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master attacked together!

At this time, the Heavenly Demon phantom released a deafening, earth-shaking roar. A terrifying force field fell over everyone like the end of times!

In that instant, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master felt a deep fear in their hearts. This was a killing intent directed at their very souls, causing everyone to tremble where they stood!

This was...

The Death God force field of the Heavenly Demon martial intent!

Under the cover of this infernal energy that was so thick it manifested into essence, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master's striking power had instantly and unexpectedly weakened by 30%. At the same time, the Heavenly Demon phantom behind Lin Ming suddenly shrunk, instantly minimizing from 40-50 feet to half a foot, turning into a complete twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo that landed on Lin Ming's arm.

After condensing the complete Heavenly Demon Tattoo, Lin Ming felt his body filled with an explosive power. Facing the attacks of Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master, Lin Ming poured all of this destructive energy into his spear, thrusting it out!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

A terrifying blast wave combusted, appearing like a massive red and purple lotus blooming in the world. All of the space in the area began to twist together. After being struck by such a terrifying strike, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master were flung away like leaves in a storm. The previously injured Elder Xiao spat out another mouthful of blood. As for the Great Ax Tower Master, although he didn't vomit blood, the palm of his hand directly cracked apart!

With a 'ka ka ka' sound, a massive crack had appeared in the double-headed ax in his hand!



# Chapter 666 – Spear Through the Black Robed Man

---

The Mountain Shattering Ax... cracked?

The Great Ax Tower Master stared at the ax in his hands, his eyes wide like full moons.

His double-headed ax could only be considered in the lower-middle reaches of low-grade heaven-step treasure. Although it wasn't some amazingly high rank weapon, the key lay in its weight!

Between grades of a similar rank, an ax was much more expensive than a sword, because over ten times the material was required!

Accordingly, an ax was extremely durable because of its thickness. But now, this low-grade heaven-step ax had actually been cracked apart by Lin Ming's spear!

To just what extent did Lin Ming's striking power reach!?

It wasn't just the Great Ax Tower Master who was horrified, but all of the surrounding martial artists were frightened. In just this single exchange of moves, Lin Ming had single-handedly held off two great masters and even forced them back!

Lin Ming had not only injured Elder Xiao once more, but he also damaged the Great Ax Tower Master's weapon!

As for Lin Ming, he had done all of this with just a low-grade heaven-step spear. How could such an originally ordinary spear be able to display such power within Lin Ming's hands?

"I see... so that's what it was..." Elder Xiao glared at Lin Ming, grinning as he revealed his bloodstained teeth. "So young... just an early Revolving Core boy, and yet you've comprehended your own battle spirit! And looking at its grade, it's probably already at Large Success of the bronze level!"

As Elder Xiao spoke, the Great Ax Tower Master felt his heart go cold.

Battle spirit!?

As a Giant Demon martial artist, a battle spirit was too far out of reach for the Great Ax Tower Master. Because Giant Demons were naturally born lacking in will and perception, there were many Giant Demon martial artists that never managed to comprehend their battle spirit even after becoming an Emperor level powerhouse.

But, the Great Ax Tower Master still had some minor understandings into a battle spirit. It was said that when a martial artist's will reached the pinnacle of its potential, it could condense into a very specialized Concept. This 'battle spirit' could then be attached to any object, killing enemies, cutting away all life and

existence into nothingness!

What cultivation did Lin Ming have? And he had managed to comprehend a battle spirit?

The Great Ax Tower Master began to truly fear Lin Ming from his heart. He started to regret his reckless actions in provoking this dark star. Now, he had already completely offended Lin Ming. Once he became enemies with such a person, the horrible bleakness of his future could be imagined!

200 feet away, Lin Ming held his spear as he stood there. The truth was that the strike he used just now had drawn support from the flash of absolute power that had appeared after completely condensing a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. Under normal circumstances, although Lin Ming would still be able to receive the dual strikes of Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower master, he wouldn't have had the ability to wound both of them.

‘I’ve finally formed my complete twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo.’

Lin Ming took a deep break. Then, the Death God force field spread out, superimposing onto the Asura force field!

However, this was just an ordinary superimposition, not a fusion of the two. Superimposing the two force fields could be considered as adding one and one to get two, but fusing two force fields together would produce a qualitative change instead. At that time, the intensity and power of the force fields would experience a

massive leap upwards.

With Lin Ming's current boundary, he was still far away from being able to fuse these two force fields.

However, this was how things were. Even superimposing the Death God force field and the Asura force field created an extremely terrifying suppressive force!

After being enveloped by this force field, the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao had extremely ugly expressions. The other ordinary High Lords were in an even worse state, all of them frantically retreating because they weren't able to resist this pressure. At this time, they were all constantly lamenting that even though they tried to escape, there was nowhere they could run. They were nothing more than fish on the chopping block, having to stand there under this utterly excruciating suppression.

As the true essence within Lin Ming's body began to revolve, the power of the two different force fields began to rise without end.

The Asura force field completely suppressed a person from their bodies to their souls, a heavy pressure that was immensely difficult to withstand.

As for the Death God force field, that stimulated the deepest and most primal fear within the soul itself, affecting the control that the soul had over the body. In fact, to a weaker martial artist, the Death God force field could directly strip the soul from the body, killing them without any resistance!

The dual force fields suppressed all. The weaker a martial artist was, the greater influence the force fields had over them. Even if it were Elder Xiao or the Great Ax Tower master, their combat strength was reduced to less than 70% of its original state!

“This damn boy!” Elder Xiao grit his teeth. He desperately tried to stimulate the demon essence within himself, but it was all in vain.

“Die!” As Lin Ming’s true essence revolved to the extreme, he took a sudden step forwards. His figure disappeared like ghosts and gods, immediately flash stepping in front of Elder Xiao, his spear thrusting straight into the old man’s stomach!

In this situation, facing Lin Ming’s incomparably sharp spear strike, just how could Elder Xiao withstand it?

Bang!

After a brief confrontation, Elder Xiao retreated backwards. Lin Ming moved forward in hot pursuit!

“What are you all looking at!? Attack him together! Do you think any of you can live here? If you don’t kill him now then he will kill you all after this!!!” Elder Xiao crazily shouted at the ordinary High Lords who were watching on, helplessly.

However, at this time, these ordinary High Lords only glanced at

each other with fear and dread, none of them daring to move a single step to help Elder Xiao.

What a joke. Under the dual suppression of these force fields, even moving a single step was a challenging endeavor. Moreover, their strength was inferior to Elder Xiao's so the suppression they were under was even more intense.

Bang bang bang!

In an instant, four or five moves were exchanged. Lin Ming's spear light swept over Elder Xiao's chest, breaking his ribs, ruining his organs!

Lin Ming's combat strength was far too strong. Even a Tower Master level martial artist could only briefly support themselves under Lin Ming's barrage of attacks. As for those ordinary High Lords, they were nothing but little lambs waiting to be instantly slaughtered.

If none of them resisted, they might have a slim hope of living. But if they dared to confront him, then they would instantly die here!

Spear after spear after spear, Lin Ming forced Elder Xiao back again and again.

If this continued, then Elder Xiao would not be able to support himself for even a few more moves. And at this time, the Great Ax

Tower Master was only idly standing by, watching on passively!

The Great Ax Tower Master was panting with nervousness. He felt that even if he attacked Lin Ming, the chances of defeating him were close to zero!

“Lin Ming! I surrender!”

The Great Ax Tower master suddenly dropped his weapon as he shouted out towards Lin Ming.

“Surrender?” Lin Ming’s lips curved in a funny smile.

Surrendering at this time, was there still any significance to it?

“Lin Ming, if you let me live, I will give you everything within my spatial ring. Also, I can even cover for you so you can leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes!”

The Great Ax Tower Master had tossed out a few tempting offers.

Lin Ming had already formed a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. Now, there was no more meaning to killing the Great Ax Tower Master. And if Lin Ming really did kill all the High Lords here, then he would inevitably come under suspicion once he tried to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Once he provoked the Steppes Master to chase him, he was

finished.

No matter how strong Lin Ming was right now, it was impossible for him to escape from the Steppes Master. The Steppes Master was a true Emperor level powerhouse!

“Great Ax! You dare to betray the Steppes Master!?” Elder Xiao’s eyes widened, turning blood red. At this time, the betrayal of Great Ax was an absolute death sentence.

The Great Ax Tower master sneered as he said, “Betray the Steppes Master? I’m nothing more than a chess piece for him to play around with. I depended on my own effort, giving my everything and fighting through countless life and death battles to become a Tower Master. I have taken care of Great Ax Tower for you lot for so many years, turning over a massive amount of resources! Now I no longer owe you anything! Do you want me to even die for you!?”

“Good! Very good!” Elder Xiao’s face flashed with a ferocious light, “When the Steppes Master finds out about this then you are finished! You will die!”

“Humph! The one to die first will be you!”

Lin Ming stepped in front of Elder Xiao and thrust towards his chest.

Lin Ming’s every spear strike was aimed towards vital points.



“Ahh!”

Elder Xiao cried out miserably. He avoided a fatal strike, but Lin Ming's spear still stabbed into his shoulder. Blood splashed out. With a twist of the spear, it directly tore off the old man's arm.

“I won't let you get away with this even as a ghost!”

Elder Xiao issued a keening howl as he ignored the grievous wound of his severed arm, and with his remaining hand holding his lance, he thrust it towards Lin Ming's stomach.

However, how could Lin Ming allow him to hit? Lin Ming's figure flashed and he directly appeared behind Elder Xiao's back, his spear piercing through his back and heart!

Puff!

The white spear passed through his body, the spearpoint dyed a deep red.

Elder Xiao vomited a mouthful of blood. At this time, his organs were already completely ruined.

“Lin Ming, I'll wait for you in hell!”

Elder Xiao humorlessly grinned as he spoke these words. All of

the vessels in his body instantly bulged up and then blasted apart. Elder Xiao had annihilated his own meridians and reversed the flow of blood essence in his body, using the last dregs of his life to form a blood seal in front of him.

“1000 Year Curse of Limitless Demons! Seal!”

As Elder Xiao spoke these last words, a grisly smile still hung on his face. But, his eyes had already lost all of their light.

“Mm? What is this?”

In that instant, Lin Ming felt a strange energy flow along the white spear and enter his body, expanding throughout all of his limbs!

1000 Year Curse of Limitless Demons?

Lin Ming faintly guessed that the words Elder Xiao spoke before his death had something to do with the strange energy within him!

“Lin Ming! Before that old man died, he used his life to place a curse on you!” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“So I was right... hmm, what does this curse do?” Lin Ming frowned. He didn’t think that the old man would have such an ability.

“It’s not too harmful. This curse is only a mark. Once you’re placed under this curse, others can use it to determine your location. If you don’t dispel this curse, then you’ll be as obvious as a firefly at night!”

“Oh? So in other words, that old man placed this curse on me to help the Steppes Master chase me down and kill me?”

“That sounds about right.”

“Can you dispel this?” Lin Ming grimaced. With this sort of mark on him, things would be dire. In order to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes, he would have to cross through hundreds of thousands of miles. With such a long distance in front of him, he didn’t believe that he could escape the Steppes Master if he was being chased down.

Now he could only depend on Demonshine. Demonshine seemed to have a very deep understanding of these sorts of energy marks; originally, he was the one who had resolved the matter of the Polaris Tower Master’s slave seal.

“Hehe, undoing this is a bit difficult, but just isolating it is quite simple. But, I have a condition... I want to have first picks of the Great Ax Tower Master, Polaris Tower Master, and that old man’s spatial rings!”

Demonshine licked his doggy tongue as he spoke. In fact, this request wasn’t excessive at all – it was quite reasonable in fact.

Within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Demonshine had put in a great deal of effort and was also very helpful the entire time, using up a good deal of his strength. However, after they opened up the ancient tomb, there wasn't anything in there that was useful to Demonshine, so Demonshine had been feeling very depressed ever since.

“Sure!”

Lin Ming readily agreed. From those three's spatial rings, there wasn't anything that he particularly wanted.

At this time, Elder Xiao had thoroughly died, so Lin Ming reached over and conveniently took his spatial ring. At the same time, pure infernal energy flowed out from the corpse and into Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming could clearly feel that this infernal energy no longer had any nourishing effect on him.

# Chapter 667 – Planting the Slave Seal

---

Elder Xiao had died!

Watching the old man still hanging on Lin Ming's spear, the martial artists present all subconsciously, gulped, their throats twitching.

The Lin Ming in front of them right now was a fierce tiger, and they were nothing but little lambs that had no ability to resist!

Lin Ming expressionlessly drew out his spear, and then swiped the front, flicking off the blood.

Then, he turned around to glare at the Great Ax Tower Master.

The Great Ax Tower Master's heart thumped, his face pale and queasy-looking.

“Young... Young Hero Lin, if you let me live, I promise you I can help you leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes from Great Ax Tower. Great Ax Tower is only a mere 2000 miles from the edge of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and it is also a full 10,000 miles away from the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple where the Steppes Master resides. If you come to my Great Ax Tower, that is the best place for you to leave these lands from. Moreover, when you leave, there will be people that can help you, and I can even be your shield. Leaving will be much easier. Otherwise, you might arouse some suspicion...”

As the Great Ax Tower Master spoke, he was carefully paying attention to every minute change in expression on Lin Ming's face. He was afraid that Lin Ming wouldn't agree with him and took off his spatial ring in advance. Even his heaven-step double-headed ax was placed into the spatial ring so that he could give it to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming considered his options for a moment, not speaking. He turned and glanced towards Duanmu Qun, and saw that Duanmu Qun gave him a slight agreeing nod. The Great Ax Tower Master wasn't lying. The Eternal Demon Abyss' northern entrance was connected to six different Skysplit towers. If they left from Great Ax Tower, the position was much more friendly and was a shorter distance to leave from than from Polaris Tower.

Lin Ming's silence caused the dire atmosphere to becoming even more dismal. At this point, the Great Ax Tower Master didn't even dare to breathe too heavily. As someone who had lived above countless others, this was the first time he had experienced such treatment. It was like he was no different from a criminal of the mortal world about to be executed on the stands.

"Hehe, boy, do you really distrust this fellow?" At this time, Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Yes."

Lin Ming was indeed wary of the Great Ax Tower Master. After becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he naturally wouldn't stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes any longer.

While they were in the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were completely isolated from the outside world. But, once they left here, all of these High Lords present might inform the Steppes Master as to what had transpired here. If the Steppes Master found out, then he might not be able to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes safely.

But, if he killed all of them and only four or five people stepped out of the Eternal Demon Abyss, then that was just too brazen. It would naturally attract the suspicions of others.

“Hey, it’s easy! How about we just plant several slave seals in them! This sort of thing is just some low level skill of the demonic path. Even that Polaris Tower Master could do it, so did you think this Saint couldn’t?”

“Oh?”

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. If he could plant this sort of slave seal then it would be fantastic.

“But yes... there is limit to how many slave seals I can use to control others. That Polaris Tower Master was likely able to control three or four people, and in my weakened state, I can still do more, but no more than 10. It’s up to you to choose who.”

“10 is enough.”

Lin Ming only needed to use 10 High Lords to control others so that they weren't able to secretly inform others of what was happening. This should give him enough time to leave.

He looked at the Great Ax Tower Master, his voice icy as he said, "Great Ax, if you desire to live, you have one choice. That is to let go of your spiritual sea and willingly allow me to plant a slave seal within you!"

"Slave seal!?"

The Great Ax Tower Master's complexion changed as he heard these words.

A martial artist that had a slave seal planted within them couldn't even hold onto their former personality. It could be called a fate worse than death!

Although the Great Ax Tower master didn't want to die, he didn't want to continue living on as a useless zombie either. "That's impossible! If you must plant a slave seal within me, I'd rather die fighting!"

"Don't worry so much." The Great Ax Tower Master's response was within Lin Ming's expectations. "I will only place the slave seal within you for three months, which is enough time for me to leave. I'll be frank with you. I do not trust you one bit at all.

"Three months from now, I will naturally release my slave seal



and you will be freed. If you believe me then let go of your spiritual sea. If you do not believe me, then my only choice is to kill you right here and right now.”

As Lin Ming spoke, the Great Ax Tower Master hesitated for a moment. Three months wasn't anything to him, but he feared that three months from now, Lin Ming would decide not to honor his promise and release the slave seal. Then he really would remain as a mindless puppet with no personality for the rest of his live.

“Can I take an oath to my heart of martial arts?”

The Great Ax Tower Master said after fumbling for words.

“Take an oath?” Lin Ming frowned, his voice turning colder, “I think that you've come to misunderstand something. I am not negotiating with you, but am informing you of the decision I have made. It is up to you whether you wish to accept or refuse, because you lack any power to bargain with me!”

Lin Ming's character had always tended towards being strong and forthright. The promises he made he would complete sooner or later; he disliked when others doubted him.

The Great Ax Tower Master heard the killing intent in Lin Ming's voice and his heart jumped. He was wavering at this moment when Lan Xin curled her lips and contemptuously said, “Who the hell do you think you are? Lin Ming will undoubtedly become the number one powerhouse of the entire Holy Demon Continent in the future. I wonder then just how many people would kill you all in order to

serve as Lin Ming's little brother here? Do you think he needs to go through so many tricks just in order to have you work under him? You are not worthy!"

Lan Xin's few words cut towards the Great Ax Tower Master's temper.

The Great Ax Tower Master wryly smiled. This was true. Someone like Lin Ming would inevitably stand at the peak of the entire Holy Demon Continent in the future. Perhaps, step into the stage that was the Realm of the Gods. At that time, a single call of his would have hundreds and thousands of enthusiastic men jumping to his side, each and every one of them willing to be his slave. If he could follow Lin Ming, then that might actually be a great lucky chance that brought him advantages for his entire life.

Thinking of this, the Great Ax Tower Master no longer hesitated. He simply handed over his spatial ring and relinquished control of his spiritual sea.

"Young Hero Lin, please begin."

Lin Ming took the spatial ring, passing through it with his perception. Then, he calmly formed a black seal. This black seal had a wisp of Demonshine's soul force, and with the addition of Lin Ming's energy supporting it, controlling a martial artist at the level of the Great Ax Tower Master was child's play.

After the slave seal entered his spiritual sea, the Great Ax Tower Master shook for a moment. His eyes became dull for a moment,

and then right afterwards they were refreshed with complete clarity.

He faced Lin Ming, bowed towards him with a hand over his chest, and then respectfully stood behind Lin Ming.

A martial artist with a slave seal planted within them didn't usually show any difference. It was only when they were faced with their master did they manifest their absolute obedience and loyalty.

“And you lot too!”

Lin Ming turned to stare at the other High Lords. “I will choose nine of you and also plant a slave seal. The period for this is also three months. You can choose to accept, or you can choose to die!”

Lin Ming's voice was decisive and detached. None of the martial artists present dared to protest. If even the Great Ax Tower Master was willing to accept, then none of them had anything to say.

Lin Ming chose the nine martial artists with the highest cultivation and planted slave seals in them. None of them resisted.

Then, he received the spatial rings of Elder Xiao, the Polaris Tower Master, as well as the six or seven ordinary High Lords he had killed.

He sunk his consciousness within them, probing a bit; there

really were some good things in here.

Those martial artists that were able to survive through this trip in the Eternal Demon Abyss were mostly upper level High Lords. In addition to the harvests they had made during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, their wealth could be imagined.

After investigating, he found that there were eight heaven-step treasure as well as 30 jins of human-step Demon God Bones and 12 egg-sized earth-step Demon God Bones. These earth-step Demon God Bones were all obtained from the three Tower Master level powerhouses.

Worth mentioning among them was an earth-step Demon God Bone with a crimson sheen that emitted a faint blood energy. Lin Ming thought for a moment; this should be a medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bone, and one that was approaching a high-grade one at that.

“F\*cking shit! These broke little bastards! Even those Tower Masters were useless!” Demonshine was uttering profanities within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. “There is a single Blood Form Bone and everything else is garbage! Garbage!”

The so-called Blood Form Bone was that medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bone. It was a Demon God Bone with the concentrated blood essence of an Emperor level powerhouse within it; it would certainly be useful for Demonshine to recover his soul.

As for everything else, with Demonshine's judgement, it was difficult to enter his eyes.

"You don't want it?"

"I want it! Of course I do, who wouldn't... a grasshopper's meat is still meat. This Saint will kindly take this Blood Form Bone. It should just barely be able to restore this Saint's soul a little bit. As for the rest, you can do with it what you want."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He modestly took some useful resources into a spatial ring, including the five jins of human-step Demon God Bones. These would be for his friends and family that needed them. As for the 11 earth-step Demon God Bones that were left over as well as the eight heaven-step treasures, he handed them all to Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin.

"Brother Duanmu, I thank you for your help just now. I, Lin Ming, will remember this kindness."

Lin Ming's tone was understated. Although his voice was calm, Duanmu Qun knew that once someone like Lin Ming made a pledge, they would forever etch it in their hearts.

In other words, Lin Ming had now truly recognized him as a friend.

Duanmu Qun shook his head, "Brother Lin is too humble, please don't see us as strangers. What we did just now was only some

minor efforts. Within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Brother Lin had already rescued us several times. Without Brother Lin, we would already be dead within the forbidden zone, much less having a chance to obtain anything like resources.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “In the face of adversity, that is when true feelings are exposed. In my life, I have made very few friends, but today, I’ve suddenly gained so many!”

At that time, saying that true feelings would be exposed in the face of adversity was no exaggeration. When Lin Ming was facing the simultaneous attack of three people and hadn’t yet become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he had been at a great disadvantage. At that time, Duanmu Qun and the rest had abandoned their own resources, taking a risk that Elder Xiao would kill them all in order to obtain a new spear for Lin Ming. None of this was an easy decision to make.

As Lin Ming traveled along his road of martial artists, all the way until this point, he had seen countless grudges and enmities exposed. He had seen intrigue, danger, hatred, all the worse facets of human nature. But, as for those people that were grateful and remembered the kindnesses that were given to them, he had actually seen very few.

Duanmu Qun originally hadn’t wanted to receive this spatial ring, but after Lin Ming’s repeated insistence, he finally chose not to decline.

“Brother Lin, where do you plan on going after leaving the Eternal Demon Abyss? If you have nowhere to go, then how about

adventuring with us?”

Duanmu Qun really wanted to know just where Lin Ming had come from. It was impossible for such a talent to not have some tremendous background. While winning Lin Ming over to the Divine Wood Holy Land was impossible, having him come to his sect as an honored guest and enhancing their relationship also wasn't bad.

Lin Ming shook his head, “After I leave the Eternal Demon Abyss, I will return to my home.”

“Oh? Where is that?” Duanmu Qun casually asked. After he asked, he felt that he had been a bit indiscreet.

However, he never thought that Lin Ming had no intention of hiding anything to begin with. Lin Ming directly replied with a true essence sound transmission, “It is another continent. It is a land that exists outside of the Holy Demon Continent...”

# Chapter 668 – Returning to the South

## Horizon Region

---

“...What?” Duanmu Qun paused. As someone who originated from a super Holy Land that was nearing a sixth-grade sect, he was considered very well informed. But he had never heard of anyone that had come from beyond the Holy Demon Continent before.

Thinking about it more carefully, there were indeed some extremely ancient texts within his Holy Land that spoke of the Realm of the Gods and also a world outside of the Holy Demon Continent. However, the texts were too old, they were faded and unclear. As for what these places were, what races lived there, and what it was like, Duanmu Qun had absolutely no idea.

“You come from outside the Holy Demon Continent?” Lan Xin’s eyes shined, immediately interested.

She had faintly heard that the world didn’t consist of just the Holy Demon Continent – there were lands far broader and more glorious. Lan Xin had thought these lands were too far away and it would forever be impossible for someone like her to go there. So, hearing that Lin Ming had come from such a land, how could she not be excited?

“Where is this place?”

“It is a world called the Sky Spill Continent. I come from the South Horizon Region over there.” Lin Ming didn’t hide anything. First, he had come to trust these people as his friends, and second,



he was the only one who knew the position of ancient transmission array. Without Lin Ming's knowledge of where it was and how it worked, no one would be able to access it.

“Sky Spill Continent?” Lan Xin's charming eyes began overflowing with light. She really wanted to ask Lin Ming to bring her for a look, but she didn't manage to bring it up.

For a Holy Land descendant to leave their Holy Land, the original reason for this was to go on adventures and gain experience. Walking 10,000 miles would always be superior to reading 10,000 books. If she could broaden her horizons and accumulate more knowledge and experience, this would be of great advantage to her cultivation and future growth.

“Brother Lin, how do you go to your world?” Duanmu Qun was completely interested in the Sky Spill Continent. In the hearts of these outstanding heroic youths, no one wanted to rule a tiny little corner off by themselves. If they didn't experience the vastness that the world had to offer, they would forever be frogs in a well.

“Through a transmission array.” As Lin Ming saw that his friends were very interested in going to the Sky Spill Continent, he continued to say, “The atmosphere of martial artists within the Sky Spill Continent is inferior to the Holy Demon Continent by far. The martial artists there are much weaker on average, and their talent is somewhat worse. Also... there are only humans, no other races.”

Lin Ming gave a basic introduction to the Sky Spill Continent's current situation.

The Holy Demon Continent's races had very complex relations with each other. Every year there would be war and chaos that enveloped the land. Under the pressure of constant fighting and slaughter, it was naturally much easier for a martial artist to grow.

In addition, the Holy Demon Continent's Fey, Giant Demons, and Imps all had natural talents greater than the humans', thus they also had a higher proportion of outstanding heroic youths and also more Emperor level powerhouses.

Relatively speaking, the Sky Spill Continent was much more mundane. There was usually peace in most lands, wars were rare, and there was only the human race.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all glanced at each other. After they confirmed their own thoughts, they asked, "Brother Lin, if it's possible, could we accompany you to the Sky Spill Continent?"

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then happily agreed, "Of course! I'm the only one who knows the method to activate the transmission array, and after I go to the Sky Spill Continent there will be many other matters that I will have to deal with. At the least I'll have to stay for three to five years. During this period of time, I'm afraid that you won't be able to leave."

"Three to five years? No problem!" Duanmu Qun said with no hesitation.

To adventure through another world that was no less vast than the Holy Demon Continent, how could three to five years ever be enough to finish exploring it?

“Great! Ah, yes, that’s right, because this is an ultra-long distance transmission array, during the time through it, you’ll experience space storms. There is a bit of danger involved, but you can grasp this chance to better comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time. This might be helpful to you.”

“Concepts of Space and Time?” Duanmu Qun’s eyes brightened. The Concepts of Space and Time were the most illusory and puzzling Concepts that existed. Even among the Fey, who had a natural affinity towards Laws and Concepts, there were far too many that couldn’t comprehend it, not even being able to trace the threshold. Even Duanmu Qun, who had the support of a super Holy Land behind him, was only able to catch a tiny glimpse of it.

If he could enter into this chaotic space flow and personally experience this space storm, then there was no need to talk about the advantages he would gain.

This increasingly firmed Duanmu Qun and the others’ determination to go to the Sky Spill Continent.

At this time, there was still a dozen or so days until the entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss opened again. At this time, there wasn’t anything left to do. Lin Ming sat on a rock in meditation, slowly consolidating his foundation as he strode towards his goal – the Black Hole Revolving Core.

As for Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen, they all went to their own respective corners and practiced, not saying a single word during this time.

On the 12th day, a ray of light appeared in the dreary sky. Looking up, everyone could see a powerful space channel opening in the air; today was the day that the channel to the Eternal Demon Abyss finally opened.

The 12 channels of the Eternal Demon Abyss went directly to the top level of their Skysplit Towers. When the Skysplit Towers were first discovered, these channels had already existed here.

“Alright, let’s leave!”

Lin Ming stood up. Gently tapping his toes, he floated into the sky.

Flying was prohibited within the Eternal Demon Abyss, but these 12 channels were the exception to this rule. Thus, the martial artists present could use these channels to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 100,000 feet deep into the earth. Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin all followed the Great Ax Tower Master as he flew up. After an incense stick of time, they finally reached the Great Ax Tower.

There were already four or five servants waiting to receive them. All of these people were martial artists of Great Ax Tower.

As everyone saw High Lord Great Ax and Lin Ming appear with everyone else, they looked a bit doubtful. Only the Great Ax Tower Master was left over... did that mean that even Blackstone had died?

Also, behind High Lord Great Ax was Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, and some others. What was going on? These people weren't from Great Ax Tower, so why they had come through Great Ax Tower's transfer channel?

These martial artists began to whisper to themselves in their hearts, but none of them dared to speak outwardly. At this time, the Great Ax Tower Master waved his hand and said, "Leave!"

"Yes!"

Within Skysplit Tower, the Tower Master had an inviolable authority. Once High Lord Great Ax gave this command, all of the martial artists naturally were quiet as they respectfully drew back.

"Master, please come with me."

The Great Ax Tower Master bowed and began to lead the way. The channel to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss was also on the fifth floor of the Great Ax Tower. The Great Ax Tower Master brought Lin Ming through a complicated pathway before they

reached the first floor of the Skysplit Tower. Then, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin all changed their appearances, mixed into the crowd and followed the massive chains down Great Ax Tower.

“Brother Lin, where should we go?” Duanmu Qun asked.

“We’re going to Bewitching Cloud Prairie.” Lin Ming said with a bit of nostalgia. Without him realizing it, two and a half years had already passed from when he first landed at Bewitching Cloud Prairie. This land could be considered the absolute bottom world of the Holy Demon Continent. The martial artists that were born within Bewitching Cloud Prairie were like the common mortal martial artists of the Skysplit Continent. They had no resources, no inheritances or legacies, and their strength was extremely limited.

There was still a very long distance from the Blood Slaughter Steppes to Bewitching Cloud Prairie. Lin Ming planned to go to Red Sun City and buy some mounts before going to Bewitching Cloud Prairie.

Duanmu Qun said, “I’ve heard of Bewitching Cloud Prairie. There is quite a distance from here to there. We can take a relay station to get there faster.”

“Oh? Relay station?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and didn’t speak. By his side, Lan Xin puffed up with pride as she explained, “Brother Lin, the entire

Blood Slaughter Steppes, including the west and south regions of the Holy Demon Continent, are entirely covered with the relay stations of the Fey Holy Land Alliance. These relay stations connect a very stable transmission array network. I and Brother Duanmu have tokens that allow us to freely use these relay stations. Or, we can use mounts too.”

“Oh?”

Lin Ming’s eyes shined. To establish so many relay stations that the network nearly covered half the Holy Demon Continent, this Fey Holy Land Alliance truly had some ability.

If they were able to pass through these relay stations then that would save a massive amount of time and also be safer. They wouldn’t need to worry about the Steppes Master chasing them down.

“Alright, let’s go through the relay stations.”

.....

With the assistance of these relay stations, a mere six days later, Lin Ming rode a blue-scaled Flood Dragon into the skies of Bewitching Cloud Prairie. Soaring atop those endless blue clouds, he could see the vast Bewitching Cloud Prairie below him. The vibrant green grasslands stretched to the ends of the earth, and near the winding rivers there were herders of various races tending to their sheep and cattle. Occasionally there would be tents gathered together like white clouds against the ground; these were

the tribes.

The tribes of Bewitching Cloud Prairie lived a nomadic lifestyle. As for the wealth of these tribes, they were supported by those barren Blood Demon Crystal mines that littered the land.

As Lin Ming gazed upon the Bewitching Cloud Prairie, he remembered the brief and simple time he lived here and also that cute little Qing He who had called him big brother.

Now, Qing He had likely grown into lady. Perhaps, in a few years, she would be married.

The life a mortal, relative to a martial artist, was simply too short.

Although Lin Ming remembered which tribe Qing He lived in, he didn't go to disturb her. Instead, he brought Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen to the great snow-capped mountains where the ancient transmission array was located.

These snow-capped mountains were extremely remote, they was almost at the southernmost tip of the Holy Demon Continent.

The ancient transmission array was located in a deep valley within this mountain range. Here, the temperature was very low. All the water had turned to ice, and only a few rays of light penetrated to the valley floor.



The last time Lin Ming had come out from this transmission array, he hadn't felt anything in particular. But now that he came back to search for it, he found that the space around the canyon entrance was twisted. If one wasn't skilled in the Concept of Space then there simply wouldn't be any way they could discover this canyon.

In addition to the fact that this area was located in such a remote place, no wonder this ancient transmission array had been preserved intact here for tens of thousands of years.

“It's here.”

Lin Ming pointed at the entrance to an open valley nestled within the mountains. The inside of that valley was pitch black, but to Duanmu Qun and the others, this wasn't even a problem.

The ancient transmission array was a 100 by 100 foot square. Arranged above the ground, it seemed simply like a number of mystical lines connected together in a complex manner – it wasn't too remarkable.

As for the symbol password, only Lin Ming, who had inherited the memories of the Demon Emperor, was able to open it.

“You guys, stand in the center of the transmission array and then I'll begin to activate it.”

“Okay.”

Duanmu Qun and the others quickly stepped over to the center of the transmission array. This was the first time that they had seen such a large transmission array themselves. Thinking that they would soon enter the unknown lands of the Sky Spill Continent, they were all filled with eager anticipation.

In order to become a martial artist that stood at the peak, it was impossible to just lord over a tiny kingdom in a corner of the world. In a sense, this would be the first time that they truly faced the outside world.

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out some medium-grade and high-grade true essence stones and arranged them in order around the transmission array. Then, he began to activate the array symbols in order. Right after, a hazy white light began to drift up from the entire transmission array...

Being enveloped in this dim white light, Lin Ming's mind was filled with a wistful emotion.

“Sky Spill Continent, South Horizon Region... I'm finally coming back...”

# Chapter 669B – The State of Divine Phoenix Island

---

The blue-clothed youth was naturally Lin Ming. Two days, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin and Feng Shen had crossed through the ancient transmission array, crossing the many billions of miles all the way to the Skysplit Continent.

The several of them had experienced the space storms together. Compared to Lin Ming's strength two and a half years ago, everyone's strength was naturally much higher. While they passed through these space storms, it could be considered distressing but not overly dangerous.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin had originally all had a slight understanding into the Concept of Space and Time. In addition, as Fey they naturally had a much higher affinity and inborn perception towards Concepts and Laws. After the three people experienced these space and time storms, they benefitted a great deal.

After passing through the day-long travel time of the transmission array, they finally arrived at the broken world where the ancient transmission array was located.

Here was still the same as before, with space cracks everywhere and a great expanse of water flooding the world.

A massive amount of seawater was constantly swallowed up into the dark cracks of this world, it was unknown just where it went...

According to Lin Ming's estimation, this broken world could still support itself for several hundred more years. Afterwards, this world would collapse, and this ancient transmission array would also be destroyed.

After coming out from the ancient transmission array, Lin Ming was anxious to go. After he sealed up the transmission array, he then led Duanmu Qun and the others to fly straight towards Divine Phoenix Island.

However, he soon discovered that the relay station that he remembered had been destroyed!

Originally, within the South Sea Region, Divine Phoenix Island and the South Horizon Region Alliance had established a near-complete network of transmission arrays. This was beneficial for transporting supplies and moving information. However, all of those transmission arrays had been destroyed by human hands.

Obviously... these lands had already fallen. When the Wartime Alliance of the South Horizon Region was retreating, they must have destroyed these transmission arrays before they left.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's heart sank.

When he had still been at the Holy Demon Continent, he had been ardently hoping to return to Divine Phoenix Island. But now that he had truly come back, he started to feel apprehensive and fearful. He feared that when he reached Divine Phoenix Island,

there would be nothing left there but ruins!

As they flew, they were silent the entire time. Lin Ming began to discover that within the South Sea Region, there was a massive number of beasts and monsters that normally weren't seen. Among these creatures it wasn't strange for there to be some at the Houtian realm or even the Xiantian realm.

It had to be known that the South Horizon Region wasn't comparable to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The Blood Slaughter Steppes was a gathering place for the outstanding heroic youths of the entire Holy Demon Continent. There, Xiantian realm martial artists were no different than cannon fodder. But in the South Sea Region, it was already considered very good for an island to have a second-grade sect on it. There were even many smaller islands that weren't any stronger than the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

To them, facing such a crowd of beasts meant total annihilation!

And indeed, the situation that Lin Ming saw was extremely bad. These islands that were originally inhabited by a great number of people had been turned into wreckage, the entire land desolate and uninhabited.

The more Lin Ming saw, the more distressed he became. He wanted to stop and ask some people questions, but it wasn't until he travelled 100,000 miles that he saw the first group of martial artists he had seen yet. This group was being led by that man named Elder Zhao, and they were being chased down by a pack of monstrous beasts. Lin Ming attached his battle spirit to the air and easily massacred those monsters.

The main reason that Lin Ming rescued these people was to inquire about Divine Phoenix Island's situation.

Seeing Lin Ming fly towards them, Elder Zhao and the group of martial artists became able to make out the looks and age of Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Seeing Lin Ming's group, they were immediately shocked. None of the four of them seemed past their twenties. At most, they looked to be 27 or 28 years old. But their strength was actually so formidable to a point that it was horrifying. To kill a late Xiantian level monster with just a look – not even a Revolving Core powerhouse would have such ability!

Thinking of this, Elder Zhao's expression paled. Were these youths floating before him actually some super old monstrous beings that had reached a point in their cultivations where they returned to their youths?

With Elder Zhao's limited comprehension, he couldn't imagine that someone could reach the Revolving Core realm in their twenties, or even a higher boundary beyond that. He could only chalk it up to Lin Ming and his group being ancient monstrous experts.

It was said that the South Sea Demon Region had a witch who was named Xuan Yuqie. She was over 1000 years old but had a million different flavors and temperaments she could adopt, even seeming like a young married lady in her early twenties. These

people currently in front of him might be in this same situation.

Thinking like this, the panic in Elder Zhao's heart began to subside. He tried to appear as respectful as possible as he said, "Reporting to Senior, this junior is surnamed Zhao. I was an outer court Elder of Little Swallow Island. The martial artists behind me are some junior martial artists from my sect as well as some other martial artists that we encountered on the road who faced the same difficulties that we did. We gathered together in order to leave the South Sea."

Senior?

Hearing this word, Lin Ming had a strange look. As for Lan Xin and Feng Shen, they couldn't help but laugh out loud.

Lan Xin giggled, "I'm not any older than you are so how can I be your senior? How interesting!"

Hearing Lan Xin's words, Elder Zhao's mind shook. Did this young lady Lan Xin mean to imply that her age matched with her appearance!?

Elder Zhao gulped, feeling his mind go numb. Where just did these four youths come from? They were so young yet they already had such strength. It was like they were angels from another world!

"You said that you are an outer court Elder of Little Swallow

Island, so did you have to flee the South Sea? Was your sect destroyed? What grade sect are you from?”

There were far too many island scattered throughout the vast South Sea. There were different sizes and influences of powers that occupied the various islands. These powers didn't belong to the South Horizon Region nor were they under the jurisdiction of Divine Phoenix Island. For this Little Swallow Island sect to suddenly pop out of nowhere, it was normal for Lin Ming not to have heard of it before.

As Lin Ming asked about Little Swallow Island, a trace of sadness appeared on Elder Zhao's face. He said, “Reporting to Great Sir, Little Swallow Island was originally a second-grade sect. In recent years, it just barely managed to rise to a third grade sect. In the sect, there weren't even over 10 Xiantian Elders. In the great beast tide of the South Sea half a year ago, most of them perished in the onslaught, and as for the rest, they disappeared without a trace...”

Elder Zhao had finally changed Lin Ming's title from senior to great sir. An existence like Lin Ming had already far surpassed his scope of understanding. Since they weren't even within the same world, knowing the identity of the other was useless.

Perhaps he was some descendant from a Holy Land... as Elder Zhao thought this, he was also wondering... could a Holy Land descendant really be powerful to such an extent?

“South Sea great beast tide? What happened?” Lin Ming's mind stirred. He wasn't unfamiliar with beast tides – he had also experienced one when he was at the Sky Fortune Kingdom. That



great beast tide had been spurred on by the South Sea Demon Region and had swept through the entire Divine Phoenix Province!

At that time, there were countless people that died. If Lin Ming hadn't made it back on time to Green Mulberry City, then all of the city's citizens would have ended up buried in the bellies of those vicious beasts, his Lin Family included.

Seeing that Lin Ming was completely unaware of this beast tide, Elder Zhao wasn't surprised. He said, "Reporting to Great Sir, the deep sea beast tide occurred just half a year ago. There are countless islands in the South Sea Demon Region, and the depth of the sea here doesn't go deeper than 100,000 feet. This is called the inland sea. But outside of the South Sea Demon Region and its main domain, the depth of the sea reaches a degree that cannot be imagined. As for how deep this sea actually is, even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would find it difficult to measure. There are a great variety of powerful deep sea vicious beasts in this area and their numbers alone are immeasurably terrifying. Normally, it wouldn't be easy for them to enter the shallower areas of the sea, but half a year ago, an old devil of the South Sea Demon Region used some unknown method to gather hundreds of thousands of these deep sea vicious beasts to attack the center of the South Sea Wartime Alliance. Combined with the demonic Giant Leviathan, they finally broke through the defenses of the Wartime Alliance in a single fell swoop. From that point on, the Wartime Alliance survived in name only. As for Divine Phoenix Island and the Dire Space Sect which comprised the main forces of the Wartime Alliance, they have already perished in the aftermath..."

Hearing this surname Zhao say such words in a dispirited manner, Lin Ming felt a humming in his mind as if he had been

struck by lightning!

Divine Phoenix Island perished!?

Elder Zhao didn't notice the change in Lin Ming's expression. He continued to say, "After the Wartime Alliance was dissolved, us smaller sects were in an even more miserable state. The entire South Sea Domain was seized by the South Sea Demon Region. In addition, for this past half year, the deep sea vicious beasts haven't yet retreated. A number of the powerful vicious beasts divided into several groups and brought giant floods of monsters to sweep over islands where people gathered, killing most of the mortals there. It could be said that this is an apocalypse for the entire South Sea! Now, nearly all the mortal commoners of the South Sea have died. Fortunately, the martial artists were a bit better off. As soon as they obtained the news, they joined together in large units and fled to the mainland. But, there are also some others such as us, who because of various reasons were stranded within the South Sea Domain. For us to cross several hundred miles is truly harder than ascending to heaven..."

Elder Zhao had deliberately spoken these words because he was hoping that Lin Ming would help him return to the mainland. However, just as he was done speaking in a selfish manner, he noticed that Lin Ming's complexion had already become extremely gloomy, terrible to behold. Between his eyes, there seemed to be a raging flame burning there!

As soon as Elder Zhao saw this, his heart jumped and he immediately stopped talking.

“You said that Divine Phoenix Island has perished?” Lin Ming’s eyes blazed as he looked at Elder Zhao, his vision suffocating him.

“Yes... yes, Divine Phoenix Island has... it has already... become an island of death.” Elder Zhao gulped, stammering out these words. Facing Lin Ming, he felt as if he would die any moment.

“And the people on the island?”

“About this... I... I’m not too sure. I... am just an outer court Elder of Little Swallow Island. I truly have no idea where the main remaining forces of the Wartime Alliance have run too...”

As Elder Zhao spoke, his back was soaked with sweat. Facing Lin Ming, the pressure was simply too great!

“Brother Lin, don’t be so worried!”

At this moment, Duanmu Qun suddenly spoke out. His voice was like a gentle spring breeze, immediately lifting off some of the pressure from Elder Zhao. Elder Zhao began to keel over, gasping for breath in big, deep gulps. Just saying those words now seemed to have overdrawn all his strength.

This was because Lin Ming simultaneously had two different force field type martial intents. Even if his aura were to accidentally leak out because of his strong emotions, it was still able to bring down a great pressure upon low level martial artists.

“Brother Lin, we need to further think and deliberate on this matter. Worrying too much right now is useless. Listening to this man’s words, the people of the Wartime Alliance might not have perished.”

Duanmu Qun had guessed what sort of relationship Lin Ming had with this Divine Phoenix Island. After thinking about it, he found it very strange. He had assumed that a heaven-defying monstrous genius like Lin Ming would have come from some super Holy Land, but as he listened to the exchange of words, it seemed as if this Divine Phoenix Island was just a middle level sect.

Could Lin Ming have originated from Divine Phoenix Island? That should be impossible, right?

“I understand...” Lin Ming closed his eyes. As he opened them once more, that gloom and worry had already been suppressed and hidden away, replaced with a calm and pure killing intent.

“Let’s go!”

# Chapter 670 – Young Girl Incense Burner

---

“Several great sirs... can... could you wait a bit?” Seeing that Lin Ming and his group were about to leave, Elder Zhao nervously blurted out some words.

“Is there something else?”

Lin Ming frowned. At this time, he simply wasn't in the mood to be delayed here.

“Nevermind... it, it's alright.” As soon as Lin Ming's vision fell back onto Elder Zhao, Elder Zhao's breath paused in his chest. He didn't even dare to speak the words that he had planned to say. He had wanted to ask Lin Ming if he could bring their group of injured martial artists out of here. But thinking about their speed and how they were no different to snails in comparison, he didn't have the courage to ask.

Lin Ming didn't pay attention to Elder Zhao, he turned around and soared away.

But, Lan Xin guessed what Elder Zhao was thinking about. She faintly smiled as she took out a little boat from her spatial ring, “This is for you. It should be enough for you to safely leave the range of this South Sea.”

“This is...” Elder Zhao's mind jumped as he saw that little boat. Before he could guess what it was, Lan Xin had already casually tossed it over to him. As it soared in the wind, after several breaths

of time, that small boat turned into a large spirit boat several dozens of feet long!

Feeling the energy emitted from that spirit boat, Elder Zhao was stunned.

A spirit boat was a type of treasure and also had differential grades. The spirit boat currently in front of him, if he wasn't wrong, was a high-grade earth-step treasure!

High-grade earth-step treasure!?

It had to be known that within the Sky Spill Continent, it was already considered extravagant for a Xiantian realm martial artist from a third-grade sect to have a low-grade earth-step treasure. As for a medium-grade earth-step treasure, that was something that only a martial artist at the level of a Highest Elder would be able to have.

As for a high-grade earth-step treasure, that was something only important figures of a fourth-grade sect would have. For instance, Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear was enough to startle everyone at Revered Master Tianguang's banquet dinner.

And this was a high-grade earth-step spirit boat. Would anyone ever just casually give it away?

Elder Zhao was dumbfounded. The value of this spirit boat alone was several times that of his third-grade sect's total wealth!

“Fairy... fairy maiden, you...” Elder Zhao felt his mouth go dry, as if he were living in a dream.

Lan Xin chuckled, “Take this spirit boat and go. As long as you don’t encounter a top Revolving Core vicious beast along the way, there won’t be any danger for you and your group. You should be able to ride this all the way to the mainland. We have some matters to deal with, so we’ll be heading off first.”

Lan Xin said as she launched herself towards the direction Lin Ming went in.

The martial artists that were left behind were in a stupefied daze. In particular, the several young men. As they saw Lan Xin’s rapidly fading figure, their vision began to blur.

These people had appeared like gods from heaven, suddenly saving them from fatal danger. Especially that blue-clothed lady. Not only was she amazingly strong but she was also kind at heart and her looks were near perfection. She was like a fairy maiden descended from the skies, making everyone below her feel the weight of their own inferiority.

.....

“Brother Lin, that South Sea Demon Region you mentioned just now, what rank of power is it? Are we unable to deal with them?” After they travelled several dozen miles, Duanmu Qun suddenly asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming shook his head.

“The South Sea Demon Region is a fifth-grade sect and it also has a third grade Life Destruction master protecting it, as well as a number of second stage and first stage Life Destruction Elders. Our strength is still lacking.”

Lin Ming’s current greatest advantage was his striking power. It was beyond that of an ordinary second stage Life Destruction powerhouse. But, in terms of complete integrated combat strength, he was still worse. With Lin Ming’s current strength, he would be able to kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse. As for Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin, their strength was still weaker than a first stage Life Destruction master. If they wanted to attack the South Sea Demon Region any time soon, then this simply wasn’t a realistic goal.

“Mm, no need to hurry, we can think about it further. Brother Lin, how do you plan on finding those missing people from Divine Phoenix Island?”

As Duanmu Qun asked this, even Lin Ming was a bit stumped. If Divine Phoenix Island had fled then they would have deliberately concealed where they went. It would be difficult for them to find out. The Sky Spill Continent was so large; if he wanted to find Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan within the entire Sky Spill Continent, then that was tantamount to finding a needle in a haystack.

“We’ll go to Divine Phoenix Island first and then make plans



after that.” Lin Ming shook his head, sighing. He could only hope that Mu Qianyu had left some sort of hint or note for him on Divine Phoenix Island.

Back when he first left, he had personally made a pledge that he would return within 10 years. If Mu Qianyu fled Divine Phoenix island, it was impossible that she would have forgotten this. She must have left something there for him. But... what was it? And where would it be?

They traveled the way in silence. Lin Ming and his group traveled day and night. Since they had no transmission arrays, they could only travel via spirit boats and flight.

After several days of time, they finally arrived at Divine Phoenix Island.

From far away, that Divine Phoenix Island that had once been like a clear and beautiful sanctuary of nature was now shrouded in a thick black cloud.

On Divine Phoenix Island, the exquisite pavilions had almost all been destroyed, the great towering trees burnt down. Even the mountain ranges were sundered apart with the earth cracked and ruptured. All of this was evidence revealing the fierce and violent battle that had occurred here.

When Lin Ming was 10 miles away from Divine Phoenix Island, he slowed down, coming to a stop in the air. As he saw this horrific scene before him, his eyes flashed with a dispirited light.

When the war within the South Sea first broke out, Mu Fengxian had thought that the alliance of countless sects together would be able to contend with the South Sea Demon Region. But, only after adventuring through the Demon God Imperial Palace did everyone realize that after thousands of years of slowly recovering their strength, the South Sea Demon Region's strength might have far surpassed anyone's expectations.

But, because Xuan Wuji's goal had always been the Demon God Imperial Palace from the start, he had put on an act during his war in the South Sea, pretending that the entire affair was evenly matched with a possibility of either side winning.

After they had obtained the necessary blood sacrifices to open the Demon God Imperial Palace, Xuan Wuji no longer needed to conceal his strength and quickly leveled the Wartime Alliance!

It was true that Divine Phoenix Island had allies in this war, but so did the South sea Demon Region. Whether it was the Black Flood Dragon Clan or those other strange races within the deep sea, any one of them was stronger than the seven sects of the Five Element Region.

Moreover, during the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had lost a Nirvana Dragon Root because of Lin Ming, but the one to obtain the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast was still Xuan Wuji!

They were originally strong to begin with. Now with the help of the Giant Leviathan, the disparity between Divine Phoenix Island

and the South Sea Demon Region was far too great! It wasn't strange for such a disastrous result to occur.

However... understanding it within his mind was one thing, and seeing it with his own eyes was another. Even if Lin Ming's will was strong, he was also sad and pensive. He was worried about Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's safety.

Qin Xingxuan could be said to be much luckier. With her disguised status as a maid of Divine Phoenix Island, it shouldn't have been hard for her to escape since no one was looking specifically for her.

But Mu Qianyu was different. As a Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, she would definitely be aimed at. Had she been able to escape from this catastrophe?

As Lin Ming remained silent, Duanmu Qun and the others wisely didn't speak up. They had correctly guessed that those missing people of Divine Phoenix Island must be very important to Lin Ming, because this was the first time they had ever seen him reveal such an expression.

At this moment, there was suddenly a high-pitched roar. From far away, one could see several black spots against the sun. These were actually a squad of demon region martial artists. They were riding seven or eight large bats as they flew towards Divine Phoenix Island.

Each of these martial artists held a lance in their hands. On the

back of a few bats there were several young women tied up. From their appearances, they were obviously young girl martial artists from the surrounding South Sea area, captured in order to be used as incense burners for the cultivation purposes of others.

There were two common paths in the demonic realm of martial arts. One was the slaughter path and the other was the sexual path. In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, those demonic realm martial artists had nearly all taken the slaughter path as their foundation. But in the South Sea Demon Region, they were primarily on the sexual path. In the past, because the Netherworld Great Emperor needed a young woman with a special physique in order to further his practice of the devil arts, he had finally abducted an Emperor level powerhouse's daughter. This event had caused a massive reactionary war that finally ended with the Netherworld Great Emperor's death!

As for the South Sea Demon Region, a great reason that they decided to conquer the South Horizon Region was in order to obtain these richer incense burner resources.

As Lan Xin saw these martial artists blatantly capturing young women for obscene purposes, her face was covered with utter hate and loathing. She naturally hated those that captured women like this.

“Lin Ming, are those Giant Demons?”

Duanmu Qun asked with some surprise. He could feel some strange demonic realm energy from their bodies. But, what was strange was that these people cultivated true essence; it was very

chaotic and strange.

Lin Ming shook his head, “Those people are humans. Sky Spill Continent only has the human race within it. But, these people share some of the Ancient Giant Demon race’s bloodline. Although it is very thin, it is still an outstanding bloodline.

The martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region were mostly descendants of the Giant Demon clansman that the Netherworld Great Emperor had brought over, thus they also shared a blood relationship with the Giant Demon race. As for their cultivation method, although it was similar that of the Giant Demons, it was adapted for human use.

“What should we do now?” Duanmu Qun asked.

“Kill them all!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light. Underneath these dreary skies, his eyes were like bolts of lightning.

After comprehending the Death God force field, Lin Ming would inadvertently release a terrifying aura when he was feeling strong negative emotions. Even Duanmu Qun was secretly scared by this.

“Kill them? Aren’t you afraid you’ll alert the enemy?” Duanmu Qun asked. He thought that Lin Ming only wanted to vent his anger. But in his opinion, this Divine Phoenix Island had obviously become a base for the South Sea Demon Region. If they didn’t

know how many people were in this base or how strong they were, it wouldn't be wise for the four of them to act recklessly. Moreover, even if they killed this low level garbage it wouldn't mean much.

However, before Duanmu Qun could speak further, Lin Ming had already rushed out. As Feng Shen saw Lin Ming shoot forwards, he wordlessly followed him. For Feng Shen, who had full faith in Lin Ming, he knew that even if Lin Ming was affected by his turbulent emotions he still wouldn't do anything without a reason. Thus, he followed right after him.

Seeing this scene, Duanmu Qun ruefully smiled. He was too lazy to follow. After sweeping over this group of demon region martial artists, he saw that the highest cultivation amongst them was only at the Xiantian realm. They were probably just scouts sent by the South Sea Demon Region. Even if Duanmu Qun went over, Lin Ming would probably have obliterated every single one of them before he was close enough.

“Haha! After searching all the islands around here there truly was some ‘good food’ that we missed. These four young women are all third-grade and fourth-grade martial arts talents. What is rare is that there are also two virgins among them. One shall be given to Sir Protector and the other shall be taken by me. If I take her virgin energy then my Netherworld Devil Arts will rise yet another level! Hahahaha!”

As the captain of these demon region martial artists wantonly laughed, the several other underlings were also in a great mood. “Boss, you take the meat but make sure you leave us some soup!

Give those two young married ones to us brothers to enjoy!”

“Of course!” The captain of these martial artists said in high spirits.

As the women heard these remarks they began to imagine just how pitiful and bleak their future lives would soon be. One by one, fear and despair began to cover their faces.

# Chapter 671 – You Are Lin Ming?

---

These young women that had been captured for use as incense burners were all from nearby small sects. From the small countries they originated from, a fourth-grade martial arts talent could already be called a proud daughter of heaven.

However, after the eruption of the beast tide and their nations were destroyed, these young girls had no choice but to hide in underground secret passages in order to escape the disaster.

But hiding underground wasn't a long-term plan. Eventually they would have to come out to look for help or look for food. The result of this was that they were captured by the South Sea Demon Region martial artists for their obscene purposes.

The demonic realm sexual path was also divided into two different sorts. One was complementary Yin and Yang, where both man and woman would mutually benefit. The man would profit the woman, and the woman would profit the man. The other was where one person savagely and barbarically pillaged the other, sucking up their vitality. The South Sea Demon Region used this second type. They were of no mind to train them, but would rather suck up their life force and strength, rapidly accelerating their aging.

“Haha, little beauties, after we go back, this big brother will love you well!” The leader of the squad lasciviously smiled as he greedily rubbed one of the girl's bodies. But at this moment, his eyes widened. Just several miles away, there were the shadows of several people flying towards them. From their clothing, it was



obvious that these people weren't from the South Sea Demon Region, but were most likely human martial artists.

The squad captain was greatly startled, "There are actually people that dare come to a branch of the South Sea Demon Region to die? Their brains must have gone sour!"

"There are actually some idiots sending themselves to our door. Sir Protector, it might not be bad if we kill them and say they were spies. We'll also earn some merit for that."

Just as this thought flashed through his mind, he suddenly discovered that the speed at which these people were moving had far surpasses his imagination. The figures of two people actually instantly crossed several miles until they were just a few hundred feet away.

"Uh...?"

The squad captain froze. He could feel the power of space around him suddenly tighten, collapsing upon him and completely locking him inside!

What was going on!?!?

The squad captain inexplicably filled with horror. At this time, the blue-clothed young man had already flown right in front of him, his eyes glittering with a fierce light like a living god of death!

Just by looking in those deep eyes, the squad captain felt as if his soul was being sucked out even as he lost all control of his body!

“Demonshine, search his soul!”

Lin Ming indifferently said. A soul searching technique was an ability from the demonic realm. One needed to have a very deep understanding of the soul as well as a very powerful soul force.

Lin Ming had never studied this technique before so he could only ask Demonshine to do it for him.

A savage energy rushed into the squad captain’s spiritual sea. The squad captain felt his spiritual sea being torn apart as all of the information within was sucked dry by Demonshine!

“Big Brother! Ugh...” The surrounding martial artists called out. But, just before they were able to react, in the next moment they felt their entire world go black as all of them passed out.

In that instant, Lin Ming’s soul force had pierced through all of their spiritual seas!

This time to kill these people he had used a soul attack, something he hadn’t used in a long time. A soul attack and will attack were two completely different things.

A soul, relative to the human body, was one of the most fundamental parts of a human’s life.

But one's will was a battle spirit, an energy field. In essence, it was a special type of energy that could be classified as something similar to true essence or demon essence.

There were many objects, such as the Demon God Bone, that had a wisp of residual battle spirit attached to it. But, a Demon God Bone didn't actually have a soul.

“Demonshine, continue searching their souls for any and all useful information. Do not let anything go, especially news about Divine Phoenix Island!”

Lin Ming's gloomy expression was terrible to behold. The reason he attacked this squad was not to vent his anger and hate, but rather to obtain information.

“Okay!”

With Demonshine's soul force, searching the souls of these low level martial artists was easy.

After several breaths of time he had obtained all the information he needed. With their spiritual seas already completely crushed, these martial artists were nothing more than living corpses. He let them fall into the sea to feed any vicious beasts down there.

Demonshine shook his head, “Lin Ming, I didn't find any information on Mu Qianyu or the others. These martial artists are

only part of a single scout squad – they have a very low status within the South Sea Demon Region. Basically, they didn't participate in the war half a year ago.”

Lin Ming slightly frowned, “Do these martial artists know whether or not there is a South Sea Demon Region master stationed at Divine Phoenix Island to watch over this place?”

“They do know this. On Divine Phoenix Island there is a South Sea Demon Region Elder named Hong Qi who is guarding this area. His cultivation is at the first stage of Life Destruction!”

“Hong Qi? First stage of Life Destruction?” Lin Ming sneered.

When Lin Ming was at the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had killed Elder Xiao as well as the Polaris Tower Master. Both of them had been three-star Demon Kings, a cultivation between the human late Revolving Core realm to Life Destruction realm.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, besides the Steppes Master, all other martial artists had to leave before they reached Life Destruction, otherwise they would be killed by the mystical curse that enveloped the land. Even if one was a Tower Master or supervisory Elder, they still wouldn't be an exception. That is, unless they became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

However, although the Great Ax Tower master and the Polaris Tower Master both had a cultivation inferior to the Life Destruction realm, because of their own cultivation methods, individual talent, and high rank treasures, they had a total

comprehensive combat strength that actually far surpassed a normal first stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Since Lin Ming could easily kill the Polaris Tower Master, killing a first stage Life Destruction Elder would also be easy.

“Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?” Demonshine asked.

“Naturally to call out that Hong Qi fellow and then use the soul searching technique on him. Since these small fry don’t know where Miss Mu is, that Hong Qi should know!”

“Hehe, good suggestion, I like it!” Demonshine cackled, evilly licking his lips.

.....

The main island of Divine Phoenix Island was 10,000 miles long and wide, with six islands surrounding it. In the past glory days of Divine Phoenix Island, the entire island was constantly immersed in mist. From afar, this seemed like an illusory wonderland. Divine Phoenix Mountain especially, with its many magnificent jade palaces and temples, seemed like a fabled paradise where immortals lived.

However, these days, the entire Divine Phoenix Island was covered in a bleak atmosphere with dark clouds covering the sky. On the main island there were countless patrol parties of demon region martial artists milling about. Occasionally one could see a

steady stream of resources being transported towards various buildings, and even young girls being hauled around for use as incense burners.

Within the entire South Sea, Divine Phoenix Island could be called a bountiful land that was second to none. There was a high-grade true essence mine here as well as spirit mountains full of heavenly and miraculous medicinal plants. On these mountains, it was easy to breed rare and precious raw materials for medicines.

All of this had now become the South Sea Demon Region's resources.

"Subordinate greets Sir Elder!" On the medicinal spirit mountain there was a black-robed man slowly walking around. As six black-robed people saw him, they immediately bent to their knees in salute.

"Mm..." The black-robed man nodded. Within the South Sea Demon Region, Life Destruction powerhouses were normally Elders and Revolving Core martial artists were Protectors.

This black-robed old man was the only Elder that the South Sea Demon Region had stationed here to command Divine Phoenix Island. The South Sea Demon Region planned on founding a branch here at Divine Phoenix Island, and this black-robed old man would become this branch's future leader.

"Open the medicine garden." The black-robed old man expressionlessly said. After occupying Divine Phoenix Island, the

black-robed old man had no interest in the true essence stone mine here. Rather, he was only interested in Divine Phoenix Island's medicine garden. For some unknown reason, the land here was extremely rich in spiritual energy; it was a very good location for medicinal plants to grow.

The black-robed old man had transplanted a stalk of his most precious Heart Demon Flower in this medicine garden. Since then, this black-robed old man had been coming to the medicine garden every day to observe the growth of this Demon Heart Flower.

This Demon Heart Flower was an incomparably greedy species of plant. Every day it had to devour a great deal of spiritual energy. As for the other spiritual plants around the Demon Heart Flower, their essence energy was sucked away and they began to slowly wither.

“Good!”

As the black-robed old man saw the plump leaves and fist-sized flower bud of the Demon Heart Flower, he nodded with satisfaction

Those demon region martial artists that were responsible for taking care of the Demon Heart Flower were also filled with anticipation, waiting to see if there were any rewards. But, at this time, in the direction of the entrance, there was actually a loud deafening sound like a thunderclap!

Bang!

A true essence shockwave recklessly shook the air; even the ground began to intensely tremble!

“Mm? What’s going on?” The black-robed old man frowned. Who was so ignorant that they dared to come to the South Sea Demon Region’s branch to cause trouble!

In these past years, and especially the past six months, the South Sea Demon Region had united several deep sea tribes and clans of the South Sea, forming a massive super alliance. After they crushed the Wartime Alliance, the entire South Horizon Region as well as several nearby territories no longer had the ability to outright oppose the South Sea Demon Region.

Although the black-robed old man was surprised, he didn’t immediately rush over. If this other party dared to come crashing into his gate, they must have some ability or backing. Unless they were idiots that is.

If it were really some old monstrous elder coming to take revenge, then he would have to act according to the situation.

He sent out a sound transmission talisman to inquire about the situation. When he found out that the other party only consisted of four people and their cultivations were only at the Revolving Core realm, the black-robed old man was stunned.

Just where had this bunch of idiots come from?



Coldly snorting, the black-robed old man turned into a beam of black light as he rushed towards the medicine garden's entrance!

Several dozen miles only took a brief moment to cross. As the black-robed old man and his many subordinates arrived at the entrance, they saw that the massive black gate had already been blown apart. The plaque that said 'South Sea Demon Region – Divine Phoenix Branch' had been thrown to the ground and shattered into pieces. Surrounding this broken sign were five or six South Sea Demon Region martial artists that were also slumped to the ground. Their entire bodies were covered in blood and not a single one of them was alive.

As the black-robed old man saw this, his heart filled with a raging anger, "Who dares to be so bold to do this! Come here and die!"

After roaring out, the black-robed old man's eyes focused. Just 1000 feet away, there were four figures that were flying over to him.

"It's these people? Humph!" The black-robed Elder swept his eyes over these four people's cultivation. As he realized they were all at the Revolving Core realm, his heart rate stabilized. Just as he was about to kill these four and show them the absolute difference in their strength, he noticed a blue-clothed youth in this group and was immediately stunned.

This blue-clothed youth looked to be a bit over 20 years old. He held onto a long white spear, and his two straight eyebrows slanted

up towards his temples. His handsome looks were outstanding, and his eyes seemed to be as sharp as lightning. From his head to his toes, he exuded an incomparably keen aura that made one's heart shrink with fear.

This youth was...

As the black-robed Elder saw this blue-clothed youth, he was instantly petrified. His eyes went as wide as full moons as they filled with disbelief.

In the past, he too had gone to the Demon God Imperial Palace, and he had an incomparably deep impression of this face. Although his appearance and temperament had changed quite a bit, he still was able to recognize this youth at a glance.

“You are... Lin Ming!? You're still alive!?”

# Chapter 672 – Soul Search

---

After being called out by his name, Lin Ming was startled. As he fixed his eyes on that Life Destruction Elder, he suddenly had a memory of him. This Elder had been part of the South Sea Demon Region party that had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace. Luckily for him, he was also one of the few South Sea Demon Region Elders that had managed to survive.

At the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming had created a false illusion of his own death before he left. Although Xuan Wuji, Abbot Whitebrow and those other old fellows were all monsters that had lived for over a thousand years, all of them had been fooled by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's age and strength were his best cover. No matter how suspicious or cautious Xuan Wuji and the others were, none of them suspected that someone as weak as Lin Ming had bamboozled them. Finally, they decided that there must have been some powerful expert that had come to steal the Nirvana Dragon Root and had perfectly calculated events to outmaneuver them.

But now, Lin Ming was actually alive!

Not only was he alive, but he had also broken through to Revolving Core!

It had to be known that Lin Ming was only 20 years old!

A 20 year old Revolving Core master... this was too shocking!

All sorts of questions began to rise within that Life Destruction Elder's heart like a stormy sea. Just how had Lin Ming left the Demon God Imperial Palace? He had gone missing along with the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Cosmic Melting Furnace; did these two treasure end falling in his hands? In these two and a half years, where had he gone? How could he possibly have broken through to Revolving Core in such a short period of time?

Even through all these puzzles, the black-robed old man was absolutely sure of one thing.

There was absolutely some great secret to Lin Ming!

“Lin Ming, so it seems that the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace really did end up in your hands. Heh, to think that we've spent so much time and effort travelling far and wide looking for you, only to find you here so easily... hand over the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace now and this old man may well allow you to live!”

As the black-robed old man spoke, his hand had already begun to silently trace his spatial ring.

As the other martial artists heard Lin Ming's name, their eyes also lit up with recognition. During the war in the South Sea and when Lin Ming had killed Lei Mubai, there had already been a price placed on his head by the South Sea Demon Region. After the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, the South Sea Demon Region has also launched a wide-scale search of the entire South

Sea in order to find Lin Ming. But in the end, all of their efforts had been in vain.

The martial artists present had all seen Lin Ming's portrait before. It was only because a period of time had passed and there had been some slight changes to Lin Ming's looks and temperament that they didn't immediately realize it was him.

“Surround him!”

This group of martial artists had cultivations at Revolving Core and Xiantian. Every single one of them was well aware of just how strong Lin Ming was. They knew that they weren't his match, so they surrounded him in order to prevent him from escaping.

Lin Ming coldly and indifferently glanced at these people, thoughts of killing flashing through his mind. The first thing he thought of was... to kill everyone here!

After returning to the South Horizon Region, his strength was still inferior to Xuan Wuji's. It would be unwise to expose his own identity so early in order to stop Xuan Wuji from chasing him down.

However, as soon as he thought of this he also changed his mind. If news of his identity was spread out, then perhaps it might reach Mu Qianyu's ears. In this way, he might be able to inform Mu Qianyu that he had returned.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming hesitated, unsure of what to do.

“Carnage Demon Great Array!” The black-robed old man knew just how terrifying Lin Ming was. Reasonably speaking, no matter how strong Lin Ming was, it was impossible for an early Revolving Core boy to defeat a Life Destruction master. But, if he dared to come here so brazenly, then he must have some sort of backup.

A lion would surely kill a rabbit. Using his complete all-out strength and having his men lay down this Carnage Demon Great Array was the right way to go about things.

Cha cha cha!

Over a dozen black flags flew out in the air. All of the black-clothed men grabbed a black flag and began to rapidly move around Lin Ming, stepping in a weird and distorted pace. With every step they took, they would leave behind a faint black mark.

Duanmu Qun and the others were naturally also covered in this array formation. But, towards an array formation of this degree, none of them were worried. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss’ 1000 mile forbidden zone, any danger zone was far more terrifying than this array could ever be.

Lin Ming allowed these people to arrange the array formation as they wished, only casually standing in the center of the array formation as he was lost in his thoughts.

He pondered, should he kill all these people? Or allow some to live so they could spread the news of his return?

After the Carnage Demon Great Array was laid down, the black-robed old man let out a breath of content. Revealing a cunning smile, he took out a thick saber from his spatial ring and cut down!

Carnage Demon Cut!

With the support of the Carnage Demon Great Array, he would be able to raise his strength by over 10%. As for Lin Ming, his strength would drop precipitously within this array formation. In addition to the absolute disparity of their cultivations, he didn't believe he would lose here!

As long as he could kill Lin Ming, even if he didn't obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace of Nirvana Dragon Root he would still be able to learn just what great secrets Lin Ming held and just why Lin Ming had been able to go from the early Xiantian realm to the early Revolving Core realm in just a mere two and a half years.

When that time came, he was prepared to leave the South Sea Demon Region, escaping with all of his wealth. He had no intention of bowing down while handing such a great lucky chance to Xuan Wuji. With all of this in his grasp, perhaps he might even be able to reach the Divine Sea. When that time came, in this great world there would be nowhere he couldn't go!

“Lin Ming, I'll take your life!”

As the black-robed old man shouted out loud, a billowing black energy began to surge from his body. Behind him, an Ancient Giant Demon phantom appeared, holding onto a great halberd. This Giant Demon stood over 10 feet tall, menacing the world as it emanated a terrifying aura!

The black-robed old man didn't underestimate Lin Ming in the least; at the very start he had already used his ultimate finishing ability. And in addition to the increased power from the Carnage Demon Great Array, the power of this strike made all of the demon region martial artists around him pale with awe and horror.

The black-robed old man's attack had finally roused Lin Ming from his thoughts. Lin Ming looked up at this black-robed old man.

Yes, first he would kill this old fellow and search his soul to see if there was any news about Mu Qianyu. If there was, then he would kill everyone else here. If there wasn't then he would consider letting news of his return leak out.

Thinking this, Lin Ming gave a low shout. The true essence within his body began to revolve. Infusing his battle spirit into the white spear, he thrust it out!

Facing the alarming and terrifying attack of this black-robed old man, Lin Ming's spear actually seemed rather plain and simple.

The black-robed old man grinned demonically. His saber cut straight towards Lin Ming's neck; this was a sure-kill strike!



Chi-la!

With the sound of space tearing, the black-robed old man's billowing clouds of demonic energy were like great black curtains as they were torn apart by Lin Ming's spear wind!

The black-robed old man was shocked.

The hell was this strength?

Damn!

The black-robed old man's face twisted. He revolved the energy in his body to the limit, completely pouring everything he had into the saber edge. This strength of this Carnage Demon Cut lay in the blade itself.

Clang!

The thick saber collided with the white spear and the piercing sound of screeching metal filled the air. The black-robed old man felt his palm shake and his muscles tear, blood shooting from his arm. Then, the unbelievable occurred. That old man's saber was actually broken apart by Lin Ming's spear!

The sharp spear point thrust towards the black-robed old man's throat like a viper!

“What!?”

The black-robed old man was greatly shocked. In this split second, without any time to think, he quickly retreated. However, just as he avoided the spearpoint, a roiling gust of air rushed over the black-robed old man, directly piercing towards his throat.

This wave of air had the true essence stream of a battle spirit attached to it!

Puff!

The black-robed old man's bodily true essence protection was penetrated. The flow of true essence continued unabated. It directly cut through half of that black-robed old man's throat, blood bursting out!

“Ahh!”

The black-robed old man was frightened to the point that all of his previous bravado and courage was smashed apart; he simply had no idea what had attacked him.

And his weapon, a top earth-step thick saber, how could it possibly have been broken in half by Lin Ming's spear?

Just what was going on?

The black-robed Elder only felt a cold sweat creep down his back. The sudden developments in this battle had completely surpassed his scope of understanding. Without further delay, the black-robed Elder turned around and ran away!

“You’re staying here!”

Lin Ming stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and the space underneath his feet shrank. He flash stepped behind the black-robed man, his spear thrusting out!

The black-robed Elder was terrified. Quickly turning around, he threw out two flying swords. These flying swords were high-grade earth step treasure. Normally he wouldn’t be using them, but in this situation, he thrown them out like hidden weapons.

Clang! Clang!

With two metal rings, Lin Ming waved his spear and directly knocked away the two flying swords.

As the flying swords spun upside down, Lin Ming stretched out a single hand and poured his battle spirit into the sword blades. The two swords suddenly straightened out in mid-air and shot right back towards the black-robed Elder!

“Ahh!”

The black-robed Elder was dismayed, losing all of his composure.

He twisted his body, trying to dodge both these flying swords, but one of them still managed to pierce through his thigh!

The black-robed Elder miserably shrieked, his speed immediately slowing down. At this point, his face was as white as funeral ash. “Young Hero Lin, please spare my life! As long as you let me live, I will tell you all the plans of the South Sea Demon Region and tell you everything you want to know about Divine Phoenix Island!”

“No thanks.”

Lin Ming’s spear fell down. With his battle spirit infused into the spear, the spear instantly broke through the black-robed Elder’s bodily true essence and stabbed into his heart!

With a twist of true essence, all of the black-robed Elder’s guts turned into a puddle of goo.

“Demonshine, search his soul!”

When a martial artist had just died, their spiritual sea wouldn’t have dispersed yet. This brief period of time was more than enough to use a soul searching technique. The information obtained from a soul searching technique was naturally much more reliable than the black-robed Elder spilling it out.

“Okay!”

Demonshine playfully smiled and a black beam of light shot out

from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, directly piercing into that black-robed Elder's spiritual sea.

Lin Ming didn't sit around either. He flicked out his fingers and a small snake of crimson lightning shot into the black-robed Elder's body.

This red lightning was the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder made a pass around the black-robed Elder, bringing out a thick fog of blood!

Lin Ming put out his hand and this blood fog began to concentrate, turning into a fist-sized ball of blood. This was the black-robed Elder's complete blood essence!

This was the first time that Lin Ming had truly killed a Life Destruction powerhouse. In the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had consecutively killed the Polaris Tower Master and the supervisory Elder, both of whom had strength equal to a Life Destruction master. However, that was still only having strength equal to one; their true cultivation was actually below the Life Destruction realm, otherwise it would have been impossible for them to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

After Revolving Core, Lin Ming guessed that the blood essence of a Life Destruction powerhouse should be enough to open the Magic Cube once again!

However, now was not the time to open the Magic Cube. Lin Ming flicked his fingers and began to form silk threads made of thunder, wrapping the blood essence in layers of this. Soon, all of the blood essence was cocooned in this energy. Then Lin Ming formed a dozen runes and thoroughly sealed the blood essence.

Like this, this glob of blood essence should be able to maintain its vibrant vitality for another month. He could use it anytime during this period to open the Magic Cube.

At this moment, Demonshine's divine sense withdrew from the black-robed Elder's spiritual sea. "Hey boy, I have some good news and bad news. Which do you want to hear first?"

## Chapter 673 – Mu Qianyu’s Message

---

“Hey boy, I have some good news and bad news. Which do you want to hear first?”

“Demonshine, I’m not in the mood to joke with you right now. What’s the news?” Lin Ming frowned. At this time he really didn’t have thoughts of playing around.

“Aiyaya, you’re really boring. For better or worse, this Saint had to consume quite a bit of soul force for this information.” Demonshine muttered with a sulking expression. But as he saw that Lin Ming looked very serious, he no longer joked around and directly said, “The good news is that Mu Qianyu should be safe. Whilst the South Sea Demon Region was focused on finding the key figures of Divine Phoenix Island like Mu Qianyu, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, they still weren’t able to catch them...”

As Lin Ming heard this, he let out a long sigh of relief, as if something heavy was lifted off of his back, “Where have they gone?”

“That I do not know.” Demonshine spread his doggy paws out, “If that black-robed old man knew where Mu Qianyu and them had scampered off to, then they probably would have gone to capture them tomorrow.”

Seeing Lin Ming remain silent, Demonshine said, “I don’t know where they went, but they should have joined in with some other powers that formed the Anti Demon Alliance. But, their days

shouldn't be much better off. They're likely hiding somewhere with appearance changing techniques too."

"Anti Demon Alliance..." Lin Ming thought for a moment. In an organization like that, it should be somewhat safer.

"And the bad news?" Lin Ming glared at Demonshine, his heart still not completely relieved. If Demonshine's so-called 'good news' was that Mu Qianyu had escaped, but the 'bad news' was that Qin Xingxuan had been captured, then he really wouldn't be able to resist his impulse to strangle this damn old dog to death.

Demonshine said, "The bad news is that Xuan Wuji has gone into closed-door seclusion lately. Chances are he should be able to come back out in a few months or even half a year. When that happens, he should have broken through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction."

When a human martial artist went through Life Destruction, they had to break apart the Revolving Core in their body and then reform it. This process absolutely could not be disturbed nor could they interrupt their seclusion.

"I see..." Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. He didn't care too much about Xuan Wuji making a breakthrough or how powerful his enemies were. What he did fear was whether or not his family and friends were in danger.

"Xuan Wuji has probably plundered countless resources these past two years, otherwise that old thing would never attack the



fourth stage of Life Destruction unless he had absolute assurance in his success.” Lin Ming reflected.

Xuan Wuji had great ambitions. He had set his determination to break through to the Divine Sea and have his South Sea Demon Region become a Holy Land. The reason that the South Sea Demon Region had lit the flames of war was all in order to compete for cultivation resources and pave the road for Xuan Wuji to become a Divine Sea master.

“Lin Ming, what will your next step be?” Duanmu Qun walked over beside Lin Ming and asked him.

“First we will cleanse Divine Phoenix Island!” Lin Ming said with a murderous tone. Towards the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region, he didn’t even have a hint of compassion or favorable impression. In his mind, those that followed the path of perversion were far more evil and dangerous than those that followed the path of slaughtering.

“Haha, good idea!” Duanmu Qun flourished his long sword. Under the Life Destruction realm, he could be considered invincible. Now that the Life Destruction Elder was gone, sweeping away everyone else on this island would be an easy task.

“Brother Feng Shen, you take the south, I’ll take the north, and Lan Xin can go west. Brother Lin, the rest can be left to you. How about it?”

Feng Shen nodded. He took out his long sword and immediately

flew towards the south part of the island.

Lin Ming grasped his white spear and flew straight towards the Vermillion Bird Temple. Originally, the Vermillion Bird Temple was the central shrine of the Vermillion Bird Faction. He wanted to search over there to see if there were any clues left behind by Mu Yuhuang or Mu Qianyu.

The remaining demon region martial artists on Divine Phoenix Island were already in a complete mess. They simply couldn't withstand the impact of these four people and gave way at the first encounter. Everyone began scattering in all directions, fleeing off to hide by themselves.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Duanmu Qun were all extraordinarily beautiful individuals, but when it came to killing others, they could slaughter without blinking. After all, they had experienced the frigid battlefield that was called Skysplit Tower.

Feng Shen's sword was like the wind. Every sword would stab between an enemy's eyebrows, taking their life with a single blow. As for Lan Xin, she preferred to slice the throats of others. As she continued to kill she kept finding dying women that were captured for obscene purposes. This caused her to hate those demonic path martial artists even more, killing them all without an ounce of mercy.

At this time, Lin Ming had already rushed into the Vermillion Bird Temple.

The once glorious and majestic Vermillion Bird Temple was now desolate and gloomy. The great protective array here was long since broken and many of the tiles and walls were torn apart. The beautiful carvings and reliefs on the walls and columns were now ruined and decayed.

Because Duanmu Qun and the others were busy killing off the remnant forces and the black-robed Elder had already died, the Vermillion Bird Temple was now deserted.

Lin Ming searched everyone. Besides finding a few pale and sickly girls in ragged clothes, he didn't find any other clues.

With a sigh, Lin Ming took out some clothes from his spatial ring and tossed them to these young girls. Then, he fell into contemplation. If Mu Qianyu had really wanted to leave him a message, just where should she keep it and in what form?

When he had been with Mu Qianyu, she had never shown him any sort of special code or cipher. If this sort of information wasn't hidden well and was discovered by the South Sea Demon Region, then the consequences would be dire.

But, if she were to hide a message, how could she guarantee that others wouldn't be able to find it?

On such a vast Divine Phoenix Island, just where would Mu Qianyu leave a clue?

Lin Ming released all of his perception to cover the entire Vermillion Bird Temple, hoping that he would find even the slightest hint.

As he searched over and over again, Lin Ming found many of the old tools and objects that Mu Qianyu had used when she lived here. Vaguely, he could see that red-clothed woman who lived here every day, who loved playing instruments and practicing martial arts.

Unfortunately, with the passing of time, all things came to an end. Those beautiful and endless days could no longer be sought here.

Lin Ming remembered that Mu Fengxian once said that whenever an Emperor powerhouse was born, they needed a massive amount of destiny and lucky chances falling upon their shoulders. But, the sect that the future Emperor powerhouse started out from wouldn't necessarily be able to benefit from the birth of an Emperor level powerhouse.

This was because the growth of a true Emperor powerhouse would cause the attraction and provocation of many powerful enemies. If a sect lacked strength and destiny and was unable to carry such a genius, then that genius would be the reason that the sect perished. Since ancient times, this sort of matter was very common.

"I hope that Miss Mu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others are safe..." Lin Ming could only pray like this. After finding no clues, he left the Vermillion Bird Temple in a sad and dispirited manner.

Carefully thinking about it some more, even if Mu Qianyu had intended to leave some clues, she might have been helpless to begin with. Mu Fengxian and the others might not have been immediately able to decide where to go. After all, this was a top fourth-grade sect with tens of thousands of people. Moving to a new home that was hidden and had adequate resources... wasn't that easier said than done?

As Lin Ming left the Vermillion Bird Temple he was somewhat dazed.

Looking out towards the distant horizon, he could vaguely see the faint white fog of the world. The bright sunlight fell onto the sea, illuminating it like a golden flame. Atop this golden flame were many sea birds flying over. It seemed to be a very peaceful and serene scene.

The Vermillion Bird Temple was located at the highest point of Divine Phoenix Mountain. One could see the entire view of the South Sea as well as survey all of Divine Phoenix Island.

When Lin Ming was overlooking the view from Divine Phoenix Island, he actually saw a place that was covered with an extremely thick heaven and earth origin energy. His soul was stunned. This was... the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm originated from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. As for what rank power the Ancient Phoenix Clan was, Lin Ming found it hard to say. Four years ago, Lin Ming was

still a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. With his talent, he was permitted to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and there he managed to enter the general level smelting trial. But, he had been far away from reaching the king level smelting trial.

Thus it could be seen from this alone that the Ancient Phoenix Clan must have been a terrifying power. Although they might not have been able to compare to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were absolutely above the Demon God Imperial Palace!

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was also surrounded by an ancient array formation that only Divine Phoenix Island could open. Even if the South Sea Demon Region captured Divine Phoenix Island, they still wouldn't have the ability to open the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

In other words, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was an absolutely safe place.

Was it possible that Mu Qianyu had left him some sort of message within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm?

As Lin Ming thought of this, he no longer hesitated and flew directly towards the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The several dozen miles passed in a fleeting instant.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was located in the depths of the Divine Phoenix Island mountain range. It was surrounded by a formation of mountains and valleys that kept the energy of the land within. The heaven and earth origin energy here was very

rich, especially fire and water origin energy. It was thick to the point of nearly becoming a faint mist.

There was a protective array formation outside of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. In order to enter, one first had to pass through this array formation.

This was an ancient array formation; it wasn't something that the South Sea Demon Region had the ability to break open.

Lin Ming was originally familiar and proficient with ancient array formations. He had also entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, completing the final general level smelting trial and had been recognized by the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm. Even if he didn't learn the method of how to open this array formation from Mu Yuhuang, figuring out how to do it wouldn't be too hard for him either.

After an hour of time, Lin Ming found out the approximate method to open it. Revolving the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' within his body, he reached out his hand and formed flaming golden runes.

The void trembled. With a buzzing sound, the space several dozen feet in front of Lin Ming began to distort, as if it were calmly rippling water. But, these ripples didn't last too long, and soon faded away.

Lin Ming wasn't discouraged. He attempted time and time again to fuse the Concept of Space into these flame array symbols.

Finally, after another quarter of an hour, he opened the barrier.

A barrier of light appeared in thin air. Within the barrier, there was a single gap. From within, he could feel the intense energy of fire and ice colliding with each other, the sound of muffled thunder filling the air.

Lin Ming calmed himself and stepped through the protective array formation to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Light flashed. Lin Ming arrived at the mountain valley where the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was. But in the instant when he entered, Lin Ming saw that near the entrance to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, there were elegant and beautiful letters carved on a 10,000 year old parasol tree.

‘Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, ten years’ time, the appointed meeting!’

At the moment he saw these words, Lin Ming’s heart shook like an earthquake passed through him. Just 10 words and written in such a simple manner, yet they contained the strong will and determination of Mu Qianyu. She didn’t write what would happen if they couldn’t make their appointment, nor did she write that they would die.

Ten words. The writing was graceful and succinct, as if it had fused within it an incomparably firm belief that allowed no room for doubt. No matter what happened during this time period, no matter what difficulties she faced, what trials and tribulations she



would encounter...

Ten years' time, the appointed meeting!

It was as if Lin Ming could see the scene that happened here six months ago. When Mu Qianyu had rushed into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and engraved this message, her hands were fast but firm. In her eyes was a faint trace of hope and faith, a touch of deep love and also sadness...

As for the nameless cave of Thundercrash Mountain... that was the place Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming had stayed when they first met. In that cave, the two of them had spent three days and three nights filled with immeasurable warmth...

# Chapter 674 – The Fifth Opening of the Magic Cube

---

When he had first gone to Thundercrash Mountain, by pure chance, Lin Ming had encountered Mu Qianyu as she was battling the Thunder Flood Dragon. After, when Mu Qianyu had been wounded and was in trouble, Lin Ming had helped her recover within the nameless cave. With his past humble and low status, this was the first time he had ever come into contact with such a proud daughter of heaven. Three days later, Mu Qianyu had left without a word, leaving behind only a message. Finally, Mu Qinghong had visited the Seven Profound Valleys and had taken notice of Lin Ming during the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Then, in the sect training program, Lin Ming had been chosen as the only heaven-step talent...

All of this seemed as if it had happened just yesterday.

During Lin Ming's early period of growth, Mu Qianyu and Divine Phoenix Island had helped Lin Ming many times.

Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, tens years time, the appointed meeting...

Lin Ming traced his hand over these letters and quietly clenched his fists. Ten years was the promise that he had originally made, but now, he had come back over seven years early. Since he had come back, he would no longer allow the situation in the South Sea to continue as it was.

He absolutely would not allow Mu Qianyu and the martial artists of Divine Phoenix Island to drift around like displaced refugees!

“I don’t need to use these ten years. Within three months, I will find you!” Lin Ming secretly made this oath to himself as he gazed at the words on that 10,000 year parasol tree. Then, he sat down next to it.

“Lin Ming, what are you doing?” Demonshine asked.

“Opening the Magic Cube.”

“Are you kidding? You’re going to open it here?”

“Opening the Magic Cube takes less than hour and with the protective array formation of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, this area can be considered safe!” As Lin Ming spoke, he took out the blood essence of the black-robed old man from his spatial ring.

When Lin Ming had first obtained the Magic Cube, he had gone into the space within the Magic Cube when he was sleeping. This was the first time he had opened the Magic Cube.

Afterwards, Lin Ming obtained the flexible armor that the Crown Prince had gifted to him. The flexible armor was marked with the blood essence of a Houtian master. This blood essence was then absorbed by the Magic Cube; this was the second time that the Magic Cube opened.

The third time was when Lin Ming had killed Ouyang Boyan. With Ouyang Boyan's blood essence, he opened the Magic Cube once again.

The fourth time, Lin Ming had used the suppressive laws of the Demon God Imperial Palace and killed a Revolving Core master, using that master's blood essence to open the magic cube yet again.

Now would be the fifth time!

From Houtian to Xiantian to Revolving Core and now Life Destruction!

Lin Ming began to unravel the spells on the cocoon until there was just the red glob of blood left. Lin Ming didn't have the Magic Cube absorb this yet. Rather, he first entered into the ethereal martial intent and adjusted his mindset until he was as calm as a still lake.

Then, Lin Ming took off his clothes, revealing a strange mark on his left chest. This mark was the mysterious ancient symbol rune of the Magic Cube.

With a deep breath, he slowly pressed the black-robed old man's blood essence into his chest.

Right after, Lin Ming felt a burst of burning heat in his chest; this was the blood essence being absorbed by the Magic Cube.

After being silent for several years, the Magic Cube once again welcomed the fresh blood essence of a powerhouse!

Chi chi chi!

As the blood essence was absorbed, it was just like a deadly poison that was scattered on the ground. It seemed to constantly corrode away, producing a slight trace of smoke.

Lin Ming felt within himself, perceiving the energy fluctuations of the Magic Cube within his chest. He could feel that after the Magic Cube had absorbed the blood essence, it seemed to beat in rhythm with his heart.

After 10 breaths of time passed, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shake. In the next moment, all of his consciousness was completely sucked into the Magic Cube. With a dizzying feeling, Lin Ming's mind had arrived once again in that pitch black space within the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming was familiar with this place. In the vast and boundlessly dark sky, countless soul fragments glittered like infinite stars.

These soul fragments floated around in a haze of thick mist. In the center of all these soul fragments, there was a large sphere of light that was one foot in diameter, slowly glowing with a gentle light. Lin Ming suspected that this sphere of light was the previous master of the Magic Cube, that Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

After arriving in the Magic Cube space once again, Lin Ming's mentality was extremely stable. Now he had a battle spirit and his willpower was much more formidable than it was before. He would be able to handle most of these soul fragments, unless that fragment was to contain the remnant consciousness and will of the Supreme Elder it once belonged to. If that were true, then swallowing a soul fragment like that might be a bit dangerous.

Linking his mind to the many soul fragments, because of Lin Ming's stronger soul force, he was now able to clearly sense the energy that emanated from these soul fragments. Some had a gentle, soft energy, some were tyrannical, and some emitted an evil, bloodsoaked energy.

The smaller fragments were directly ignored by Lin Ming. He only looked at those that were at least two inches wide. Then, he began to sense them according to the energy they emitted, looking for a soul fragment that might have a cultivation method or other skill that was useful.

But there were simply too many soul fragments in the space of the Magic Cube. Even after searching through so many, it was difficult for Lin Ming to know just which one would be the most valuable to him.

At this time, Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "Lin Ming, this Saint will help you choose. I can guarantee it will be enormously useful for you."

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. Although Demonshine did like to brag often, he had to acknowledge that this old dog really did have some ability.

“Useful for me? I can’t think of a soul fragment that would be too useful for me right now.”

Lin Ming had no lack of cultivation methods. Moreover, he had already begun to step onto the road of fusing his own martial arts method. He was hoping to look for some cultivation method within the Magic Cube that could provide a foundation for further martial arts fusion skills in the future.

“Hehe, you’ll know why once I tell you. That pale golden palm-sized soul fragment is the one. Let me warn you first, it’s quite possible that there is a remnant soul within that soul fragment...”

A Supreme Elder’s remnant soul... Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. It was hard to guess just what boundary these Realm of the Gods powerhouses had reached before their death. Even if it was just a remnant soul, he still had to treat it with caution.

Carefully stretching out his hand, an energy latched onto that pale gold soul fragment and dragged it over to Lin Ming. Lin Ming completely concentrated his mind onto this soul fragment. During the first several times that Lin Ming had opened the Magic Cube, he had avoided these Supreme Elder soul fragments as if they were poisonous snakes. He would never have tried to absorb it on his own initiative like he was now.

Discreetly feeling the strength of this pale gold soul fragment, Lin Ming felt confident he would be able to withstand it.

“Demonshine, just what’s in here that is so useful to me?”

“Hehe, if you absorb that memory fragment you’ll naturally know. This soul fragment, if I’m not wrong, should be an old acquaintance that the Demon Emperor once knew; I only recognized it because there is a bit of remnant soul left over in the fragment. If you absorb it, you’ll have a great harvest.” Demonshine bragged.

Lin Ming didn’t ask anything further. Demonshine had no reason to lie to him, and even if he did, it wouldn’t matter. He had confidence that he would be able to deal with the remnant soul within this soul fragment. Even if the cultivation methods within were useless, it could still serve as a reference point so that Lin Ming could study the various types of top martial arts and gain insights from them.

Putting out a hand, he gently touched the soul fragment. The soul fragment immediately turned into a white light that shot into Lin Ming’s body and disappearing, vanishing without a trace.

A soul fragment had a natural instinct to swallow all. Under the guidance of its instincts, it would begin to attack Lin Ming’s spiritual sea in order to capture it.

When the soul fragment broke into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit that floated in the skies immediately



began to issue out a keening howl, directly impacting towards that soul fragment.

Kacha!

With a violent collision, the soul fragment was struck by the spear-shaped battle spirit and sent flying away, its light dimming by several degrees.

Meanwhile, the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent appeared within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, surging forwards as it enveloped that soul fragment.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and sat down, immediately entering into the ethereal martial intent. Like this, the Samsara martial intent and battle spirit began a fierce battle with the soul fragment within his spiritual sea!

A battle spirit was known as an existence that could cut away all to nothing. Of course, this included even the soul. With every strike, the soul fragment would fiercely tremble, causing the remnant soul within that fragment to gradually fade away.

After an hour of time, the war of souls finally ended. Although Lin Ming hadn't been in any great danger, he was still left exhausted, his entire body wet with sweat and his complexion pale.

After eliminating that remnant soul, the remaining memory fragment sank into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. In that moment, all

sorts of chaotic and complex images and information began to pour into Lin Ming's mind. These memories numbered many times more than before! Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough, feeling as if his head would explode at any moment.

Pictures began to flash through Lin Ming's mind.

War, battlefields, death, cultivation method, rare books, sect.

All sorts of scenes replayed in his mind. But, many of these were also of raging flames, mystical symbols, as well as medicinal pills that shined with a golden light.

This person had been... an alchemist?

Lin Ming was suddenly startled.

After further exploring these memories, Lin Ming found that this person had not only been an accomplished alchemist but also an inscription master!

Inscription techniques were the first skill that Lin Ming had obtained from the very first soul fragment he absorbed from the Magic Cube. This skill was very powerful within the Realm of the Gods, but unfortunately, the soul fragment that Lin Ming had swallowed then was only the size of a grain of rice, and it was also very faded.

This was a choice he was helpless in making. Originally, Lin Ming

had only been at the very first stage of body transformation. Just absorbing that rice grain-sized soul fragment had nearly cost him his life.

This also led to the inscription techniques Lin Ming had being incomplete, most of them the most basic of their kind.

Inscription techniques were divided into object inscription, medicinal inscription, body inscription, and soul inscription, four different types in total. Although Lin Ming had learned body inscription, that was only useful to him during the body transformation realm. After reaching Revolving Core or Life Destruction, the increased strength from these body inscription symbols would be negligible.

In addition, the reason that Lin Ming had neglected to keep up with his inscription technique was because practicing simply consumed too much time. As Lin Ming's strength constantly grew, because he had neglected to practice his inscription technique, it now wasn't able to keep up with his growth.

With Lin Ming's current skill in medicinal inscription, he could at most enhance medicines like the Heaven Opening Pill or Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. If he wanted to place an inscription on something like the Nirvana Dragon Root or Demon God Bone, then that simply wasn't possible because he wasn't capable of placing an inscription on them that was of adequate rank.

In order to practice inscription techniques to a higher boundary, one needed to invest a massive amount of time and effort into it.

But before this, the inscription techniques that Lin Ming had obtained were greatly incomplete. If he tried to reach a higher boundary, he would find himself besieged with difficulties.

Now that he had obtained this soul fragment, he had unintentionally filled in this gap.

“Demonshine, you want me to pick up inscription techniques again, and not only that but to become an inscription master and then use that as a basis to further become an alchemist?”

“Hehe, inscription techniques are mostly for you to create medicinal inscriptions. I want you to become an alchemist in order to further your cultivation of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The further your boundary goes, the more the rarity and value of the medicine you’ll need for your practice will horrify you. You obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Nameless Divine Pill, but don’t think you’ll always be so lucky. If you don’t study alchemy, are you really hoping for others to just come up and offer all the help you’ll ever need? Your Cosmic Melting Furnace is already the best tool for alchemy to begin with!”

## Chapter 675 – Xuan Yuqie Makes Her Move

---

The Cosmic Melting Furnace was a fire-attribute attack weapon and also an extremely good furnace. It was the greatest treasure that the Demon Emperor had left behind before ascending to the Realm of the Gods.

“What rank treasure is the Cosmic Melting Furnace?” Lin Ming had long thought of this but he hadn’t yet asked Demonshine. Lin Ming hadn’t even seen a medium-grade heaven-step treasure yet, so he simply didn’t know what rank treasure the Cosmic Melting Furnace was.

Demonshine said, “The Cosmic Melting Furnace cannot really be classified under normal treasures, but rather it is a quasi-Saint artifact. Above high-grade heaven-step treasures are Saint artifacts. The Cosmic Melting Furnace doesn’t yet qualify to rank as a Saint artifact, so it can only be considered a quasi-Saint artifact. If you use it for alchemy, then it will multiply your chances of success by several times. Moreover, it can even increase the grade and power of your Flame Essence.”

Saint artifact?

This wasn’t the first time that Lin Ming had heard this before. So it turned out that the Cosmic Melting Furnace was a quasi-Saint artifact... unfortunately, he wasn’t yet able to induce the Cosmic Melting Furnace to strike his enemies. In his current state, it could at most be considered a defensive weapon.

“Boy, the black-robed old man you killed a while ago also had something good... a Demon Heart Flower. It was planted in the medicine garden of Divine Phoenix Island. Let’s go back in a bit and dig it out. Along with the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass and profound gold divine fruit you obtained in the Eternal Demon Abyss, both of those are top quality alchemy materials. With these alchemy materials as well as the memories that you’ve inherited, you will slowly but surely become a top grandmaster of alchemy, forming a solid foundation for your future goal of breaking through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

Demonshine had suggested that Lin Ming become an alchemist. Although this was quite sudden, after some more thought, this truly was the only way for Lin Ming to complete his body transformation cultivation path in the future.

The body transformation legacy, even if placed within the entire Realm of the Gods, was considered an extremely luxurious and excessive cultivation path. Compared to the essence gathering system, it was countless times more expensive.

For Lin Ming to just complete 100% of Tempering Marrow, he had required an entire Nirvana Dragon Root. As for opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he had used the Nameless Divine Pill and a Demon God Bone. Even then it was only under a lucky coincidence that he had made his breakthrough with the support of the suppression of the Heavenly Demon force field.

Next, there were still seven gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Everything was difficult at the beginning. The first few gates after the Gate of Healing couldn't be considered too difficult to open. But afterwards, once he arrived at the fifth, sixth, seventh, or even eighth gate, the difficulty would rise at an astronomical scale.

If he wished to break through these thresholds, then it was impossible unless he had top heavenly materials.

As for normal heavenly treasures, swallowing them directly was of course inferior to refining them into pills, especially if they had a medicinal inscription placed on them.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming fell into a deep reflection. Whether it was alchemical techniques or inscription techniques, both of them were extremely complex and diverse. If he wanted to practice both of these skills to the limit of their boundaries, then he would need to consume a great deal of time even if he inherited the memories of that Supreme Being.

Time meant the potential of life. If he wasted time, then that was the same as wasting his potential...

Demonshine saw Lin Ming hesitate and chuckled, "Young boy, your way of thinking is wrong. Whether it is practicing alchemy or inscription, both of these skills can greatly increase your soul force. After reaching the Xiantian realm, a martial artist's soul force will become increasingly important. You've practiced martial arts all the way until now and yet haven't realized just how great the benefits of having a strong soul force are? If it wasn't for your powerful soul force and Samsara martial intent to support

you, how could you possibly have formed your battle spirit in the Xiantian realm? A battle spirit and will may be completely different from soul force, but the former actually relies on the latter. Haven't you noticed that your battle spirit is kept hidden in your spiritual sea?

“All I just mentioned are just indirect benefits. But there are also direct benefits. These benefits will appear once you become an Emperor level powerhouse. No matter how powerful your body is, if it doesn't have an equally powerful soul to support it then the result you'll be able to achieve will be extremely limited! Just cultivating your dantian means you will sooner or later encounter a bottleneck. This is also the reason why all the powerhouses of the Realm of the Gods choose different auxiliary skills. These aren't just used to assist their cultivation, but also to help temper their soul force!”

After Demonshine said this, Lin Ming was startled. After thinking about it some more, this really was true.

Ever since he had obtained the Magic Cube, Lin Ming had entered into it a total of five times and absorbed the soul fragments of four different Realm of the Gods powerhouses. The third and fourth time, he had absorbed the soul fragments of the Demon Emperor. But, in the other three times, after he absorbed these memories, he realized that these three powerhouses each shared a common characteristic, and that was that all three of them practiced an auxiliary skill.

The first one was an inscription master, the second was an array master, and the last was both an inscriptionist and an alchemist.



As for the Demon Emperor, he himself was a Giant Demon so he didn't excel in the aspect of the soul. This was likely the reason that he didn't choose an auxiliary skill to begin with.

As Demonshine had said, studying these auxiliary skills would never be a waste of time.

Laboring over these things would not be a mistake. Now that Lin Ming had inherited the soul fragments of these Realm of the Gods powerhouses, he was able to practice these auxiliary skills with half the effort and twice the result. To not use such a lucky chance would really be idiotic.

As Lin Ming thought this, he also set firm his determination. After this conflict in the South Sea ended, he would put aside some special time in order to thoroughly practice inscription techniques and alchemy techniques, paving the road for his future success of opening the next seven gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

After sealing up the related rich memories of inscription techniques and alchemy techniques in his mind, Lin Ming began to study the other memories of this Supreme Elder.

Within this soul fragment, there really was too much information. Besides inscription techniques and alchemy techniques, there was also a massive amount of cultivation methods.

Within these cultivation methods, there was one related to

Realm of the Gods alchemists – the ‘Fire God Law’.

After examining the ‘Fire God Law’, Lin Ming ultimately concluded that the complete ‘Fire God Law’ was much more powerful than the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. But, if it were to be compared with the complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, then it would naturally be far inferior.

These two sets of cultivation methods were both of the fire attribute. It seemed redundant to practice both, but Lin Ming was actually very happy to see this situation. In the future, this would give him a great number of inspirations. Once he thoroughly comprehended both, he would be able to combine them together, fusing these two cultivation methods into an even stronger technique.

This Realm of the Gods alchemist had achieved an understanding of the Concept of Fire that could be called the pinnacle. Lin Ming could only helplessly exclaim at this. Something like a Concept could only be understood and not explained. Even if Lin Ming had directly inherited these memories, it was still impossible for his understanding of the Concept of Fire to suddenly shoot to a high degree all of a sudden. But still, this would allow Lin Ming to find his way in the future much more easily.

.....

As Lin Ming entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm’s great protective array and started to absorb the soul fragment, news of his return to the South Horizon Region had already begun to

quietly spread...

There were far too many demon region martial artists staying at Divine Phoenix Island. No matter how many were killed, some would always manage to avoid slaughter and escape. Naturally, these people would pass along news about Lin Ming's return. But all of this was also tacitly allowed by Lin Ming. He did this all for one reason: he wanted to use this method to tell Mu Qianyu that he, Lin Ming, had returned!

The first to obtain this news was the South Sea Demon Region headquarters!

At this time, Xuan Wuji had gone into life or death closed-door seclusion to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

After a human martial artist reached Life Destruction, every breakthrough they made was a trial of life or death. They either succeeded or they perished, there was no other option.

At this time, Xuan Wuji's entire body and Revolving Core were being reorganized. He absolutely could not be disturbed, so no matter how important the message was, he still wouldn't be informed.

The one in charge of the South Sea Demon Region at this time was Xuan Yuqie.

During the South Sea war, Xuan Yuqie had appeared in the public

eye much more often than Xuan Wuji. After so many battles, Xuan Wuji no longer needed to appear; it was enough for Xuan Yuqie to act as leader.

In these two and a half years, Xuan Yuqie's enchanting sex appeal and beautiful appearance had become equally famous. There were many powerhouses of the South Sea that both coveted her and feared her to their bones.

At this time, within the Grand Demon Palace of the South Sea Demon Region, Xuan Yuqie was wearing a luxurious black dress. Her black stone-inlaid collar was spread very low, revealing her plentiful figure and a great portion of her plump milk-white breasts, and the deep crevice that ran between them. Her dress was split nearly to her waist, revealing her now white and perfectly-shaped thighs and accentuating the outline of her bottom. All of this was enough to drown a man in infinite dreams and desire.

On Xuan Yuqie's body, it was impossible to find the scars and traces of time. She simply seemed like a sexy and beautiful young woman in her late twenties.

However, facing such a Xuan Yuqie, the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region did not show even the slightest bit of disrespect. All of them were politely sitting down, and as their eyes occasionally passed over Xuan Yuqie, there was nothing in them but deference.

In these past few years, Xuan Yuqie had relied on her strength alone to accumulate power and influence. Even though the South Sea Demon Region had complex inner workings with multiple factions, not a single person dared to offend her.

“About Lin Ming, you’ve all heard it.” Xuan Yuqie calmly said.

Xuan Yuqie’s terse statement caused all the Elders to start discussing amongst themselves. Before now, they had all obtained this news through their various channels. For Xuan Yuqie to convene the Council of Elders at this time, they had all faintly guessed that it was to discuss Lin Ming.

A first stage Life Destruction Elder stood up and said, “This old man thought that something was wrong. There were just too many questions and mysteries surrounding that boy’s death. Now, it really seems that there is absolutely some secret on his body! The Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace most likely fell into that boy’s hands!”

The Life Destruction Elder’s voice was thick with jealousy and hate. As he thought about how so many resources fell onto such a lucky hairless baby boy, all he felt was uncomfortable.

Xuan Yuqie coughed with disdain. She had no interest in the opinions of a myopic fool like this who spoke in hindsight. If he really thought there was something wrong in the past, then why hadn’t he done anything about it?

Xuan Yuqie said, “According to our information, Lin Ming was able to kill Elder Hong Qi. I estimate that his strength has reached the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction. This completely overturns our previous understanding of Lin Ming. Without a doubt, there is some significant secret on his body. Perhaps it may

be even more valuable than the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace. Now that Elder Xuan Wuji has gone into seclusion to attack the fourth stage of Life Destruction, he cannot be disturbed to manage affairs. I have already decided to send out the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast and I will take personal command of this mission. I will go to Divine Phoenix Island and capture Lin Ming alive. Fellow Elders, who is willing to go with me?”

Xuan Yuqie’s words shocked all the Elders present. Send out the Giant Leviathan, take personal command, and even invite other Elders to come?

Wasn’t this just overdoing it a bit!?

# Chapter 676 – Revolving Core Mu Bingyun

---

“Sovereign Xuan, to deal with just a mere Lin Ming, not only will you yourself go, but you must also send out the Giant Leviathan? Isn’t that just making a big deal out of nothing?”

An Elder couldn’t help but suggest.

The Giant Leviathan was the super weapon of the South Sea Demon Region.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, there was a wide range and variety of Saint Beasts and there was no uniform classification; it was all a fuzzy and jumbled mess. A Flood Dragon, a Vermillion Bird – these creatures could be called Saint Beasts, but all of these Saint Beasts had differing degrees of bloodline purity and richness.

These were divisions formed by limited vision. To the martial artists of the Sky Fortune Kingdom and even the Seven Profound Valleys, to them a Vermillion Bird was an unattainable sacred existence. Thus, being labeled a Saint Beast was undeniable.

However, within the Realm of the Gods, the Vermillion Bird of Divine Phoenix Island was barely passable to be called a Saint Beast at all. As for the God Beasts of the Realm of the Gods, those were existences that could destroy worlds at whim.

The title of a Saint Beast was a bit ambiguous; it wasn’t a completely appropriate term to describe the Giant Leviathan. The Giant Leviathan was in many ways even more powerful than a

high stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Especially when it was used for frontal combat or for capturing a sect, the power it could display was simply terrifying. During these times, it would be like a massive juggernaut battleship, unstoppable and overwhelming.

During these months while Xuan Wuji had gone into closed-door seclusion to bet his life against reaching the fourth stage of Life Destruction, the Giant Leviathan was naturally managed by Xuan Yuqie.

Xuan Yuqie glanced at the Elder who spoke and said, “Even a lion would use its full force to capture a rabbit, much less this boy Lin Ming is not as simple as he seems! During the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, I was also present and yet I still have no idea how he managed to steal the Nirvana Dragon Root. Moreover, Lin Ming’s strength is no longer the same as it was in the past. It’s unimaginable that in just a short two and a half years, his strength has risen to such a horrifying degree!”

The demon region Elder thought otherwise, “Sovereign Xuan, this old man thinks that those rumors of Lin Ming’s strength are simply rumors – they might not necessarily be true. Those scattered minions, in order to avoid responsibility, would naturally exaggerate Lin Ming’s strength and the events that happened...”

“Elder Sun!” Xuan Yuqie’s slender eyebrows rose and she coldly said, “If you underestimate the enemy then the one to suffer will be you! Lin Ming is not easy to handle!”



After she finished speaking she turned to everyone else and continued to say, “I have already issued an order that all information related to Lin Ming will now be restricted; nobody may spread out anything at all. Right now, I can control the Giant Leviathan by myself, but if I want to chase Lin Ming, that will be a bit difficult. I ask for two Elders to come and support me. Who is willing to join me?”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, her eyes swept over each Elder one at a time. In such an important matter like capturing Lin Ming, failure was not allowed.

There could only be success.

“Alright. Count me as one.”

A black-robed Elder stood up. He was someone from the Xuan Clan. His name was Xuan Zhongshan and his cultivation was at the first stage of Life Destruction. If he didn’t worry that he would fail crossing into the second stage of Life Destruction then he would have become a second stage Life Destruction master long ago.

“I will go too.” An Elder said...

.....

At this time in the distant Five Element Region, there was a great mountain peak that was several hundred thousand feet high. Atop

this mountain was a forest of maple trees that seemed like a sea of fire. The name of this mountain was Sunfire Mountain. Looking from afar, this mountain seemed like a picturesque land filled with poetry and wonders. But, very few knew that one of the seven sects of the Five Element Region, the Sunfire Sect, was actually located here.

Although the maple tree forest atop Sunfire Mountain seemed ordinary, it actually contained an exquisite array formation. If one didn't understand the method of entry and wandered in, then it would be easy for them to be trapped inside.

At a great temple at the summit of Sunfire Mountain, the Sunfire Sect Sovereign sat on a grand throne, wearing a long red robe. In front of him was a young and beautiful girl. She was the chief disciple of the Sunfire Sect, the Sunfire Princess.

And standing in front of those two was a blue-clothed old woman. This old woman was elderly, but her temperament was extraordinary. From the fading outlines of her face, one could imagine that she was a remarkable peerless beauty as a youth. She was the Valley Master of one of the Five Element Region's seven great sects, Storm Valley's Zhan Youyun.

Beside this old woman was a handsome youth in his mid-twenties. He was the chief disciple of Storm Valley, Zhan Yunjian.

Four years ago, Zhan Yunjian and the Sunfire Princess had both participated in Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet, shining in the spotlight there. It was only afterwards, because of Lei Mubai and Lin Ming's appearance, that both of their halos were

overshadowed.

At this moment, the sound of footsteps echoed in the great temple as a blue-clothed woman slowly walked in. This woman only looked to be just over twenty years old, but her cultivation was astonishingly at the Revolving Core realm. Not just that, but her appearance was alluring and her figure outstanding. From top to bottom she emitted a chilling energy, as if no one could ever dare to sully her.

If Lin Ming were here, he would immediately recognize her. She was the Divine Phoenix Island Blue Luan Faction's Saintess and also Mu Qianyu's little sister, Mu Bingyun!

"Fairy Maiden Bingyun, it's been awhile since we last saw each other." Sage Sunfire and Storm Valley's old woman rose up in greeting as they saw Mu Bingyun arrive.

It had to be known that although Mu Bingyun was a junior, her cultivation had broken through to the Revolving Core realm and her total comprehensive combat strength was equal to that of an ordinary middle Revolving Core master. In terms of strength, she wasn't that much worse than Sage Sunfire and Storm Valley's Zhou Youyun. Like this, even though they were Elders, they still had to give several points of respect to Mu Bingyun.

"Sage Sunfire, Valley Master Zhan." Mu Bingyun nodded and then walked straight to her seat.

After everyone greeted each other and sat down, Zhan Youyun

glanced at the Sunfire Sect Sovereign and Mu Bingyun, smiling as she said, “Brother Sunfire, Fairy Maiden Bingyun, one of the scouting parties we arranged within the South Sea sent back some very unusual news yesterday.”

“Oh? Unusual news?” Sage Sunfire revealed a faintly interested look, “Since the South Sea Demon Region united all those different deep sea races of the South Sea into an alliance, I have yet to hear any extraordinary news. All I’ve heard was constant defeat on the South Sea battlefield. If this continues, then I fear that our Five Element Region’s seven great sects will also be swallowed up! What is this unusual news? I’m very much interested in hearing about it.”

The Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region were over a million miles apart. If the South Sea Demon Region became a Holy Land, it naturally wouldn’t encroach onto the Five Element Region’s territory. But in this South Sea war, the South Sea Demon Region had gathered many allies together, and now the cake that was the South Sea was naturally not enough to divvy up for everyone.

Now the flames of war had already burnt their way to the edge of the Five Element Region; it was only a matter of time until the entire Five Element Region was occupied. The seven sects of the Five Element Region were already weaker than Divine Phoenix Island. Facing the allied armies of the South Sea, they were nothing but lambs waiting to be slaughtered.

Hearing Sage Sunfire mention his concerns, the old woman sighed. The South Sea Demon Region’s appetite was just too great.

They apparently wanted to gobble up the two great territories that lay at the edge of the South Sea, the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region.

With their strength, it truly was difficult to resist the South Sea Demon Region. Their only chance was if the Great Zen Region were to help. But even after dispatching several messengers, they were still unable to persuade the Great Zen Temple to intervene in the South Sea war. Compared to the Five Element Region and South Horizon Region that were located at the edge, the Great Zen Region was located inland. Thus, they had no reason to help.

“Valley Master Zhou, we can worry over these matters later. First, please speak of the strange news you’ve obtained.”

“Mm, this news is that the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the south Sea Demon Region has been captured. Their means were thorough and even the guardian Elder Hong Qi was killed.” As Zhan Youyun spoke, her eyes swept over Mu Bingyun.

“Oh? Seriously?” Sage Sunfire was bewildered.

As for Mu Bingyun, her eyebrows shot up. Divine Phoenix Island falling to the hands of her enemies had been a pain that forever lived on in her heart. After Divine Phoenix Island was occupied by the scum of the South Sea Demon Region, they had captured and tormented the girls of the island. All of this had made Mu Bingyun’s heart bleed with pain and anguish.

Now that she heard that the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the

South Sea Demon Region had been completely expunged, even someone as indifferent as her showed a completely changed expression.

“Who did this?” A light flashed in Mu Bingyun’s eyes.

It had to be known that Divine Phoenix Island Branch’s managing Elder was Hong Qi, a genuine first stage Life Destruction master. As for Sage Sunfire and Zhan Youyun, both of them were at the late Revolving Core realm. The difference in strength was just too great. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that just the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the South Sea Demon Region was enough to completely sweep away the Sunfire Sect and Storm Valley!

This was not a small force. Yet, no matter how strong they were, they had actually been annihilated? Who had such great ability to do so?

Sage Sunfire thought for a moment, then asked, a bit puzzled, “Since the Wartime Alliance was destroyed, who else could organize such a force?”

Zhan Youyun shook her head, “I’m not too clear about this. The information blockade of the South Sea Demon Region is simply too watertight. Because they have demonic path abilities like the soul searching technique, trying to place a spy in their ranks is far too difficult. There simply isn’t any information about what happened. Ever since the Divine Phoenix Island Branch was attacked, the South Sea Demon Region has blocked all information from leaving. All we know is that there were only four martial artists that attacked the Divine Phoenix Island Branch, and all of

them were around 20 to 30 years old.

“20 to 30 years old? Impossible!” Sage Sunfire couldn’t believe this. Even 29 or 30 was just too young. At such an age, they were already a peak Saint level talent if they could reach the Revolving Core realm. For example, Mu Bingyun. She had reached Revolving Core at 30 years of age.

As for Elder Hong Qi, his cultivation was not at the Revolving Core realm but at Life Destruction!

Generally, if a genius was able to reach Life Destruction before they were 50 years old then there was a slim glimmer of hope that they could become a Peerless Emperor. But, if what Zhan Youyun said was true and those young people weren’t even 30 years old, yet they could kill a Life Destruction Elder, that just seemed too exaggerated!

Mu Bingyun only remained silent. For the South Sea Demon Region’s Divine Phoenix Island Branch to be completely eradicated... this news was just too shocking for her!

And as Zhan Youyun had said, for these martial artists that killed Hong Qi to not even be 30 years old, this had already gone beyond her understanding.

Zhan Youyun spread out her hands and said, “In truth, I also don’t believe the information the scouting party sent over that these young people weren’t over 30 years old.

In fact, the original information on Lin Ming had reported that he was a young man just over 20 years old. But, the scouts that Zhan Youyun sent out simply found this information too outrageous, and instead reported the age as between 20 and 30. Once this news reached Zhan Youyun's ears, and she heard that the young people were between 20 and 30 years old, she naturally assumed they were 28 or 29 years old.

However, even so, this was completely unbelievable.



# Chapter 677 – Fighting the Giant Leviathan

---

“Could this just be a smokescreen released by the South Sea Demon Region?” Behind Sage Sunfire, the Sunfire Princess suddenly spoke up. Normally, in such a small meeting, juniors would rarely speak up in front of their elders.

Zhan Youyun shook her head, “There’s no reason for the South Sea Demon Region to play tricks like this. Do they think that Divine Phoenix Island would return to the South Sea just because they heard this news? This matter is most likely true. Although I have no idea what sort of power did this, if they could completely destroy the Divine Phoenix Island Branch then they are more than capable of destroying any sect within our Five Element Region. Moreover... according to some reliable sources of mine, the Demon Region’s Western Faction Sovereign, Xuan Yuqie, will be personally moving out. She will be presiding over the Giant Leviathan to go towards Divine Phoenix Island.”

“Giant Leviathan?”

Sage Sunfire heard Zhou Youyun’s words, he was unnerved, “The Giant Leviathan is an overwhelming war weapon; its ability to break through any defense or siege is almost unstoppable, but... the other party is not a fool. If Xuan Yuqie is personally taking action then those mysterious strangers must have already evacuated Divine Phoenix Island.

When the Demon Region broke through the defenses of Divine Phoenix Island, they sent out the Giant Leviathan in order to do so. Since ancient times, there had been a multitude of opinions and

thoughts on just how large the Giant Leviathan actually was. Some said it was a thousand miles and some said it was thousands of miles. But, the Giant Leviathan that the South Sea Demon Region commanded was about 90 miles long. As it floated in the sky, it was like a massive airborne island that blocked out the heavens themselves!

Such a terrifying divine war beast had an immeasurable weight. With just a swing of its tail it was able to create massive tsunamis. When it opened its great maw, it could suck in all the heaven and earth origin energy in a radius of hundreds of miles.

When the South Sea Demon Region had faced the great island protective array of Divine Phoenix Island, they had relied upon the Giant Leviathan to shatter this protection with just a single strike!

Such a terrifying vicious war beast was truly fearful.

Zhan Youyun echoed these sentiments, “These strangers must have already fled Divine Phoenix Island. Fighting with guerilla warfare is the wisest method; directly confronting the Giant Leviathan and Xuan Yuqie would be foolish. Well, no matter what happens, the sudden appearance of this mysterious new faction is good news for all of us.

As everyone was guessing the identity of this mysterious force, a flame suddenly sparked in the meeting hall and a message was transmitted into Zhan Youyun’s ears. This was a message from the scouting party that she had sent out.

After Zhan Youyun heard the sound transmission her eyes suddenly jumped open and her face was filled with disbelief.

“Hmm? What is it?”

Sage Sunfire couldn't help but ask. Mu Bingyun also glanced at Zhan Youyun, waiting for her response.

Zhan Youyun was silent for a while before she mumbled with an incredulous tone, “That mysterious force hasn't left yet. They've instead stayed on Divine Phoenix Island; it seems they wish to fight to the death with Xuan Yuqie.”

“What!?”

It wasn't just Sage Sunfire who was astonished, but even Mu Bingyun was greatly shocked.

Fight to the death?

Did these mysterious strangers really have a way of coping with Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast?

.....

South Sea, Divine Phoenix Island –

Lin Ming stood within the square of the Vermillion Bird Palace, at the summit of Divine Phoenix Mountain, silently staring off into the dim and distant skies.

Under Lin Ming's feet, the former square was now in shambles. The tripod for incense was broken, the handles having fallen off, and the blue stone ground was cracked all over; it was a scene of ruins.

Beside Lin Ming stood Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

At this time, the clouds on the horizon were surging. Duanmu Qun squinted his eyes as he looked into the far distance. After a quarter of an hour, within those dark billowing clouds, a vague and massive shadow began to appear, as if a floating island were slowly approaching them.

“Brother Lin, that is the Giant Leviathan you've mentioned!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming looked at the Giant Leviathan, his expression calm. Back in the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had seen an ultimate great beast whose body was several thousand or even tens of thousands of miles long. Its horn alone was greater than this mountain he stood on, and a beat of its wings was enough to shake the world! Even though he had been several hundred miles away, just looking into that creature's dark golden pupils caused the upper Emperor level talent Blackstone to vomit out a mouthful of blood and be seriously injured!

Compared to such a great beast, this Giant Leviathan in front of

him was nothing at all.

“Brother Lin, although this fellow is much smaller than that suspected God Beast we saw in the 1000 mile forbidden zone, this simply isn’t something we are able to deal with. I doubt my sword would even be able to injure one of its hairs.” Duanmu Qun narrowed his eyes. In just a few breaths of time he had determined just how fearful this large beast was.

Not to mention the terrifying energy contained within the Giant Leviathan, just its size was far too great!

No matter how sharp Lin Ming’s attacks were, it was impossible for him to injure it. This was just like an ant trying to bite an elephant to death.

“In a frontal confrontation, you are indeed correct – nothing I do will be able to harm it. Of course, that’s not what will happen. In this battle, I alone am enough. You all do not need to help me.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he slowly walked forwards.

Duanmu Qun glanced at Lan Xin and Feng Shen. As he saw that they seemed a bit confused, he smiled and said, “Brother Lin, please be careful. I really do think that there isn’t much we can do to help you here.”

After spending such a long time together, Lan Xin had joined Feng Shen in having absolute faith and blind trust in Lin Ming’s

strength. Even though it seemed obviously impossible to deal with this Giant Leviathan in front of them, she didn't doubt that Lin Ming had some unknown method to deal with it.

“Brother Lin, be careful.” Feng Shen tersely said as he stepped back.

Lin Ming took out the white spear from his spatial ring. He walked forwards and then began to slowly fly towards the Giant Leviathan. Facing such a titanic beast, his eyes were as tranquil as an immortal lake, without a hint of panic in his eyes.

At this time, in between the Giant Leviathan's eyes was a field of energy with a sealed miniature dimension within it. Here, three black-robed South Sea Demon Region Elders were standing, along with a black-armored Xuan Yuqie.

The Xuan Yuqie of the battlefield carried a black sword that was even longer than herself. Her black armor was tightly wrapped around her and it served as the perfect foil to her sexy body, as if she were a war goddess descended from the heavens.

Xuan Yuqie silently stared at Lin Ming as he approached them.

An Elder laughed as he said, “This Lin Ming really isn't so simple. Not only is he not escaping but he's actually coming here of his own volition. There are very few people that have the courage to walk to their deaths like this, haha!”

“Don’t underestimate him. In this world, there are no fools.” Xuan Yuqie’s eyebrows twisted together. Although she said this, the truth was that she had layers upon layers of doubts and worries in her heart.

This sudden development in events had completely surpassed her expectations. She had thought that Lin Ming would give up Divine Phoenix Island and escape; that would have been the strategy that nearly anyone would have chosen.

The reason that Xuan Yuqie brought the Giant Leviathan was because she had taken this into account. She had planned on combining her perception with the Giant Leviathan’s spiritual sea, using the beast in order to increase her already far-reaching perception to unprecedented levels. Then, she would be able to chase after Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming didn’t even run away. By all reasoning, Lin Ming should have some sort of backup, a great master that would help him. But now, it seemed as if Lin Ming was all alone by himself.

His cultivation was only at the peak of the early Revolving Core realm. Relative to his age, this cultivation could be considered unprecedented since ancient times. Perhaps he was invincible in his level, but in the face of the Giant Leviathan and the combined forces of several great Elders, this was a futile resistance.

This made Xuan Yuqie feel puzzled, confused about just what Lin Ming was doing. Out of all the Elders present, she was the only one who had gone into the Demon God Imperial Palace. Lin Ming’s

acting within the Demon God Imperial Palace was impeccable. He had been a polite and courteous youth was seemed as harmless as a little bunny. However, this non-threatening youth had tricked all those old geezers present. Xuan Yuqie found this the hardest to accept. From then until now, she still hadn't figured out just what method Lin Ming had used to play them.

Just how could the proud Xuan Yuqie admit that she had been conned?

“Cute little boy, no matter what tricks you have up your sleeve, I will catch you alive this time, pry open your little head and see just what secrets you have!”

Xuan Yuqie bit her shining teeth and began to silently revolve the ‘Netherworld Devil Arts’, priming the true essence and soul force within herself to the limit.

Seeing Xuan Yuqie act as if she was heading into her final battle, an Elder laughed and said, “Sovereign Xuan, you are being far too careful. How could we possibly lose?”

“We have four people together and the Giant Leviathan’s perception has already locked onto him. He can’t escape even if he has wings!” Another Elder concurred with contempt in his voice.

Xuan Yuqie didn’t respond. The third Elder said, “The Giant Leviathan’s full strength strike can destroy an entire island. If its attack hits a person then there won’t even be ashes left of them. There are far too many secrets on this boy’s body. Let’s use the



tentacles to catch him!”

The Giant Leviathan had two different methods of attack. The first method was an energy attack. The Giant Leviathan’s head and body were covered with a wide variety of spheres. The Giant Leviathan could open its massive maw and absorb heaven and earth origin energy, compressing this into energy beams that could be used to attack. This was the main mode of attack of the Giant Leviathan.

The second method of attack was for the Giant Leviathan itself to attack. Around the edges of the Giant Leviathan’s maw was a massive quantity of tentacles that surrounded it like a great comb. These tentacles could be used to surround or kill an enemy. This could be considered a supportive attack method. But, even though it was supportive, if faced with a single martial artist, it was actually much more deadly. Although the Giant Leviathan had an incomparable striking power in its great energy beam, the direction of the attack could not be changed. Thus, for it to build up the energy, fire the beam, and for the beam to land, this would take several breaths of time. It was very easy to dodge during this period. If one wanted to use the Giant Leviathan’s energy beam to kill a top master, then that would be quite difficult.

“Let’s go!”

Although her enemy was only a single person and he was also just a baby boy with an early Revolving Core cultivation, Xuan Yuqie was taking this battle with complete sincerity, not underestimating Lin Ming at all. She fused her consciousness into the soul mark of the Giant Leviathan, controlling the beast to

attack Lin Ming.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Several thousand Giant Leviathan tentacles lashed out towards Lin Ming like a hail of black whips, making the air tremble. These Giant Leviathan tentacles all contained a terrifying energy. If a mountain were to be struck by them, it would simply collapse!

“Come on!” Lin Ming looked at those tentacles that seemed to form a giant net in the sky. He faintly smiled. Then, the space underneath his feet twisted –

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

This movement technique depended on the support of both the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Space. As Lin Ming's understandings into the Concept of Space became increasingly sophisticated, his Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique also became more and more profound.

Cha cha cha!

In the dense rain of Giant Leviathan tentacles, Lin Ming was like a slippery little fish that swam upstream, rushing straight towards the Giant Leviathan!

## Chapter 678 – Lin Ming’s Counterattack

---

Every single Giant Leviathan tentacle contained an extremely terrifying energy. As Lin Ming brushed past the tentacles at high speed he could feel his entire body tremble. If he were to be lashed by one then he would absolutely suffer severe injuries!

Although Lin Ming’s movement technique was ghostly and superb, there were just far too many tentacles. Every time they shot past they would cause disorder in the surrounding power of space. If it were a normal martial artist, even one at the Life Destruction realm, they would find it hard withstand this.

“This boy’s got quite the ability.” A South Sea Demon Region Elder said.

“Hehe, no matter how capable he is, he won’t be able to last forever. He will slowly consume his energy, but the energy stored within the Giant Leviathan is unimaginable. Sooner or later we’ll catch him.”

To the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, with the Giant Leviathan’s incomparably massive body, Lin Ming simply didn’t have the ability to wound it. Now, they were in an invincible position; they didn’t even fear if Lin Ming decided to run away. Xuan Yuqie had already fused her mind with the Giant Leviathan and was using its spiritual sea to lock onto Lin Ming. The range of this perception was several hundred miles wide.

Now Lin Ming was nothing more than a turtle in a jar.

As the several great Elders were joking around, Xuan Yuqie was actually silent. She still didn't understand why Lin Ming dared to stay at Divine Phoenix Island, daring to face the four of them and even the Giant Leviathan.

No matter how she looked at it, it was impossible for him to win!

“Hehe, the boy is surrounded; we'll have him captured soon.”

“I wonder what secrets are on him... I'm really looking forward to it.”

The Elders didn't have much hope that the Nirvana Dragon Root was with Lin Ming. After all, it had been a very long time and chances were that the Nirvana Dragon Root was mostly used up. They were thinking that there were some other secrets on Lin Ming's body that could quickly enhance their strength, as well as the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Because the South Sea Demon Region had placed a very high valuation on whatever secrets these were, the four great clans had each sent out an Elder, forming this powerful lineup of masters.

At this time, Lin Ming had truly fallen into a trap underneath the Giant Leviathan. Several thousand tentacles formed a net around him, blocking all directions of escape.

“Lin Ming, at the stomach of the Giant Leviathan, 10 miles ahead,

this is a blind spot in its attacks. You can break out from there!” Demonshine’s voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Got it.” Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a sharp light. By relying on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, he was able to forcefully create a path through the chaotic power of space, his body violating the rules of physics as he moved hundreds of feet at a time, passing through tentacles that had less than half a foot of space between them!

“What!?”

Even the South Sea Demon Region Elders within the miniature dimension were shocked. Lin Ming had been caught in the web of tentacles, but now he had actually managed to pass through them!

“Such a narrow gap, how could he possibly make it through? Is that boy a fish or something?”

This Elder of the South Sea Demon Region was incomparable to the Fey. He simply didn’t have any understandings into the Concept of Space, so he was unable to understand the mystical elusiveness of Lin Ming’s steps.

After several flashes, Lin Ming had already arrived at the so-called ‘blind spot’ that Demonshine mentioned.

This blind spot didn’t mean there were no attacks here, but rather that there were less. But this was more than enough for Lin

Ming.

He rose again and again, higher and higher, crossing several miles as he drew closer to the Giant Leviathan's abdomen!

“1000 feet to the left, that is the entrance to the dimension within the Giant Leviathan!” Demonshine's voice sounded out once again. There were many miniature dimensions within the Giant Leviathan, all of them growing as the Giant Leviathan grew. These miniature dimensions were able to hold foreign life in them, and in the future, when the Giant Leviathan died, these dimensions would also collapse.

Because of this special characteristic, the Giant Leviathan was often used as a very high level transportation vehicle, particularly useful for long distance trips.

Every dimension within the Giant Leviathan had a special method for entry, it was impossible for a stranger to enter. Of course, this wasn't a problem for Lin Ming. Demonshine could be considered as a half-master of the Giant Leviathan – he naturally knew the methods to enter every dimension.

“F\*ck, this silly big fellow is actually making this father work so hard! When I followed the Demon Emperor it was still a stupid fellow. Now, even though it's plenty strong enough, it's still being controlled so easily by others. It can't even recognize its big brother! Humph, this big fellow better wait and see how I'll fix it up.” Demonshine's scolding voice echoed in Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming's figure flashed. With Demonshine's knowledge of the method of entry as well as Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Space, he instantly entered into the dimension within the Giant Leviathan!

This was a light red space. Everyone, the walls seemed to appear juicy and cushy and the ground underneath Lin Ming's feet was soft.

"We're in." Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief.

"This stupid big fellow really makes others worry." Demonshine cockily said as he shook his doggy head.

"What do we do now?" Lin Ming swallowed down some pills and began to meditate. In truth, he hadn't used much energy. But, since he was going to face Xuan Yuqie shortly, he wanted to make sure he was in peak condition.

Demonshine said, "Xuan Wuji should have acted according to the Demon Emperor's letter and left a soul mark within the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea. What we have to do is erase this soul mark. This isn't difficult to do. First, sink your perception into the Giant Leviathan's meridians' channels, and then I will guide you into its spiritual sea."

"Okay." Lin Ming nodded and then began to sink his consciousness into the Giant Leviathan's body.

When he had been at the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had once thought about capturing the Giant Leviathan. But at that time, his strength was simply too lacking, so that was a naturally impossible task.

Now Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the peak of the early Revolving Core realm and he had also comprehended his own battle spirit. With this, subduing the Giant Leviathan would be as easy as turning his hand.

.....

“What’s wrong?”

At this time, in the dimension between the Giant Leviathan's eyebrows, Xuan Yuqie had suddenly lost sight of Lin Ming. This caused her to be greatly shocked.

“I obviously used the Giant Leviathan's soul force to increase my perception range. As long as he isn't more than 1000 miles away, he shouldn't be able to escape my grasp. How could I have possibly lost sight of him!?”

An intense foreboding feeling began to surge within Xuan Yuqie's heart. She had always felt that something was wrong, but even so she still couldn't figure out why Lin Ming was daring to face four Elders of the South Sea Demon Region together as well as the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast.



Now that Lin Ming had suddenly disappeared from her mind, she felt a trace of fear appear in her heart.

The other three Elders looked at each other in panic. One asked, puzzled, “Maybe he died to the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles?”

“How would that even be possible!?” Xuan Yuqie breathlessly shouted as her delicate eyebrows jumped up.

Of the three Elders she brought here today, none of them had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace with Lin Ming.

In the end, rumors were rumors, seeing was believing. Before, none of these Elders had seen Lin Ming, and none of them understood why Xuan Yuqie stressed how strong Lin Ming was. These three Elders disapproved of this notion, thinking otherwise. In their opinion, Lin Ming was just a little baby boy.

Xuan Yuqie now felt that bringing this damn group of fellows was no help at all.

“Something’s strange. Hmm, even if he hid in the gaps of the Giant Leviathan’s scales, we should still be able to detect him. How could he just disappear like that? The only possibility is he entered into another space...”

The speaker may have been casually speaking, but the listener was keen on all thoughts. As an Elder muttered out a random comment, this caused Xuan Yuqie’s beautiful face to completely

pale. Had Lin Ming entered into one of the dimensions within the Giant Leviathan's body!?!?

The barrier of space was able to cut off all perception. If Lin Ming truly had entered into one of these miniature dimensions, then her perception would no longer be able to track Lin Ming.

How could this be possible!? Only Xuan Wuji and herself knew the method to enter the Giant Leviathan's dimensions. Even the South Sea Demon Region Elders didn't know the method!

Xuan Yuqie felt her heart race in panic, nervousness clouding her mind. At this time, she suddenly felt a shock in her spiritual as a web of agonizing pain began spreading out from deep in her mind!

At this moment, the soul mark of the Giant Leviathan that her mind was connected to was being attacked!

Someone was trying to rend apart this soul connection!!!

Xuan Yuqie was inexplicably horrified. Just how had he done this!?

"Sovereign Xuan, what is it?" As the three Elders beside Xuan Yuqie saw her sudden and violent reaction, they understood that an accident had occurred.

Xuan Yuqie's complexion became increasingly ugly. She had already established a soul connection with the Giant Leviathan.

She was on the defensive side. But as for Lin Ming, he wanted to tear apart this soul connection and establish his own. He was on the offensive side.

Being on the defensive, she had an absolute superiority. Not just that, but her cultivation and strength were far higher than Lin Ming's. As long as she was able to discover his sneak attack and prepare against it, every logical outcome would have easily been her defeating Lin Ming's soul consciousness.

However, the reality was that Lin Ming's soul force was incomparably sharp. He kept forcing her own consciousness back, constantly eroding her soul connection with the Giant Leviathan!

“How is this possible?” Xuan Yuqie's milk-white breasts violently fell up and down. Because she was consuming too much soul force, her face was already flushed red. “How could this boy's soul force be strong to such a degree!?”

In fact, it wasn't just Lin Ming's soul force that was powerful. More importantly, he had Demonshine's assistance as well as a battle spirit, a force that was able to cut all into nihility. Naturally, he held the advantage against Xuan Yuqie.

“All of you, pour your soul force into me!” Xuan Yuqie shouted out. The other three Elders began to realize that the situation was indeed dire. Without hesitation, all of them began to deluge Xuan Yuqie with their soul force. Now, these three great Elders combined forces with Xuan Yuqie, the four of them directly resisting Lin Ming together!

“Hehe, the little babies want to go all out. It looks like this Saint is going to have to mess around a bit.” Demonshine said with a hint of haughty roguishness. In his eyes, Xuan Yuqie and other 1000 year old monsters like her were indeed nothing more than little babies.

Lin Ming’s soul force was powerful, but against four enemies together, he indeed fell far short of being able to handle them all. Now with Demonshine pouring his own soul force into Lin Ming, Lin Ming’s own soul energy rose to a completely different level!

Demonshine had been awake for a few years now, and with the heavenly materials he had obtained from Lin Ming that were able to nourish his soul, he had restored quite a bit of his strength.

Bang!

The two soul energies collided. With Lin Ming and Demonshine working together, they directly shattered the soul energy that Xuan Yuqie had released!

The Giant Leviathan’s spiritual sea suddenly trembled. The soul mark that Xuan Wuji left behind was finally loosened. The Giant Leviathan let out a great roar, causing massive choppy waves within this sea below!

At Divine Phoenix Island, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all saw this happen. All of them were dumbfounded; just what had Lin Ming done to this giant beast?

# Chapter 679 – Severely Wounding Xuan Yuqie

---

Against this giant beast that was nearly a hundred miles long, just what had Lin Ming done in order to wound it? Duanmu Qun found this hard to believe. When Lin Ming had used that exquisite movement technique to escape the all-encompassing attack of the Giant Leviathan, he had only been able to sigh in admiration. Then, and even now, he still didn't fully understand what Lin Ming had done.

The Giant Leviathan was still roaring in the air, its sonic voice making the sea tremble as if hundreds of thousands of thunderclaps were exploding together!

Bang!

The Giant Leviathan's tail suddenly pounded the sea surface, directly raising a massive wave ten miles high!

The turbulent waves actually rushed into the sky and washed away the clouds. They callously drove towards Divine Phoenix Island, submerging a massive expanse of the palace ruins!

Seeing this scene, even the normally indifferent Feng Shen was secretly flabbergasted. This was the terror of a super Saint Beast. Just that great body was already an unstoppable weapon!

“This really is a super war machine. Perhaps it isn't too

extraordinary in a one on one battle, but if it were used to seize the headquarters of a sect, any sect below the fifth-grade would be directly rolled over!”

Duanmu Qun said with sincere emotion. If there wasn't a number of third stage Life Destruction and above powerhouses banding together, then it really would be impossible to stop the energy impact of this Giant Leviathan!

At this time, within the Giant Leviathan the battle between Lin Ming, Xuan Yuqie, and the rest had reached its superheating phase.

Xuan Yuqie and the three great Elders were flushed red, their foreheads dripping with sweat.

This was a direct confrontation of soul force with the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea as the battlefield. Even so, Xuan Yuqie and her group were the ones losing.

Now Xuan Yuqie had already retreated to the final destination of the soul mark. She sent out her soul force, shaping it into a phantom that wore black war armor, an almost exact replica of herself.

And then in front of her, holding a white spear, Lin Ming also began to slowly appear.

Seeing Lin Ming, Xuan Yuqie gnashed her white teeth together,

“Lin Ming! You’ve got guts! Do you really want to become mortal enemies with my South Sea Demon Region!?”

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny, he nearly laughed out loud. “Listening to Sovereign Xuan’s words, if I were to give up now, then would I no longer be the sworn enemy of the South Sea Demon Region?”

“You...!” Xuan Yuqie’s voluptuous chest furiously rose up and down, “What a good Lin Ming! Since you want to die so badly, then I will fulfill your wish. Just you wait until Elder Xuan comes out of seclusion. Once he reaches the fourth stage of Life Destruction and emerges, then I’d like to see just how you’ll avoid him!”

“Fourth stage of Life Destruction... I hope he doesn’t fail in his cultivation.” Lin Ming indifferently smiled and then pointed his long spear straight at Xuan Yuqie, thrusting directly at her!

This was a weapon formed from his soul force. A battle spirit could also increase the power of soul force. With the battle spirit’s strength in addition to Demonshine’s support, the might of this spear strike caused Xuan Yuqie’s beautiful face to pale with dread!

She instantly judged that it was impossible for her to block this spear. But, right behind her was the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind. If she didn’t fight and ran away instead, then this soul mark would be destroyed by Lin Ming!

Xuan Wuji was the true ruler of the South Sea Demon Region and the Giant Leviathan was one of his greatest tools to challenge the

world. If she were to lose the Giant Leviathan here, she couldn't imagine just how she would survive Xuan Wuji's anger!

In this brief flash of hesitation, Xuan Yuqie tried to dodge, but it was already too late!

Lin Ming's soul spear had already pierced towards Xuan Yuqie.

“Haa!”

Xuan Yuqie gave a loud shout and completely exhausted all of her soul force, slashing down her sword onto Lin Ming's spear!

However, the difference was too great. Demonshine's soul force was already much stronger than Lin Ming's. Now with both gathered as one, this was not a force that Xuan Yuqie and her three great Elders were able to contend with.

In the exchange of moves, there was only a snapping sound as Xuan Yuqie's sword snapped apart. Without slowing down at all, Lin Ming's long spear pierced through Xuan Yuqie's chest!

Blood bloomed like a crimson lotus. Xuan Yuqie's face instantly paled and she spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Ahhhhh! You little devil, I will remember you!”

Xuan Yuqie's voice was thick with hatred as she spat out these



words. Atop Lin Ming's long spear, her body began to be destroyed, slowly fading away.

After Xuan Yuqie vanished, the soul mark that Xuan Wuji left behind was right in front of him. Now there were no longer any barriers stopping him.

Lin Ming fixed his eyes on this black flame-like mark. It was the size of a palm, and around this black mark, soul force had formed into chains of runic ropes, spreading out like an octopus as it imprisoned the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea.

“Lin Ming, destroy this and then make a brand with your own soul mark. With that, the Giant Leviathan will be yours! This silly big fellow doesn't have much potential for growth, and of course compared to this saint it is like mud to the heavens. Still, the advantage is that it's already grown up; you don't need to bother with raising it. This beast should be enough for you while you're still at the Sky Spill Continent. Once you enter the Realm of the Gods, you will be able to swap it out for a new contract beast.”

“Mm, understood.” Lin Ming faintly smiled as he heard Demonshine's boastful words. With his long spear in hand, he approached Xuan Wuji's soul mark.

.....

At this time, within a dimension of the Giant Leviathan, Xuan Yuqie gave a miserable cough before she slumped to the ground. There was not even a hint of blood left in her face and her lips

were extremely pale, sweat streaming down her entire body.

If one's soul force was damaged, then the body wouldn't be harmed. But, injury to one's soul force was even more troublesome. Without a top heavenly soul nourishing treasure, it was simply an impossible wound to heal.

“Sovereign Xuan, are you alright?”

The other three Elders were alarmed. They had consumed a massive amount of their soul force. As for the damage to their spiritual seas, they were only a bit better off than Xuan Yuqie.

At this moment, they finally began to realize just how serious the situation was!

Lin Ming had used some unknown means to reverse all odds and defeat the four of them combined!

They believed they had paid the price for underestimating their enemy. But the truth was that even if they didn't overestimate Lin Ming, nothing would have changed the result of this battle.

“Sovereign Xuan, what should we do now?” An Elder asked as he grit his teeth.

“Escape, we're running away right now!” Xuan Yuqie dragged herself off the floor and swallowed a red pill.

This was not a soul recovery pill, but rather a blood poison pill that stimulated Jone's potential to the limit. It was similar to the Scarlet Blood Pill Lin Ming had taken before to combust his blood essence. It had enormous side effects on the body!

Xuan Yuqie's soul was already injured. If she were to swallow this blood poison pill too, then the miserable state she would end up in after this could be imagined. It would exacerbate her wounds and damage her life source; it was highly likely that even her cultivation would be damaged.

As the three great Elders saw Xuan Yuqie swallow down this blood poison pill, all of them were greatly shocked. "Sovereign Xuan, what are you doing? If we lost then we just have to escape. You don't need to use a blood poison pill in order to do so. That said, if we were to run away, what would we do with the Giant Leviathan?"

"Giant Leviathan?" Xuan Yuqie mirthlessly laughed. These three Elders didn't know what happened and kept thinking about the damned Giant Leviathan. "The Giant Leviathan is no longer ours. If we run away too late, then we won't be able to escape anymore!"

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, the medicinal efficacy of the blood poison pill had restored the majority of her strength. Because she had to stimulate her blood essence, her face was flushed with an abnormally red color.

Without hesitation, she opened the channel out of this dimension

with a secret skill. Her buxom figure flashed, and she shot towards the distant horizon at full speed!

Her only regret facing Lin Ming just now was that she had hesitated. If she had firmly decided to escape then she wouldn't have had her soul injured and she also wouldn't have to bear the side effects of the blood poison pill.

As the three Elders saw Xuan Yuqie escape, all of them glanced at each other in chagrin. The Giant Leviathan no longer belonged to them? What did that mean?

“We must keep up!” An Elder said as he rushed out of the dimension. Now was no longer the time for thinking about what had happened. No matter what, the situation was absolutely worse than any of them had imagined!

“Elder Zhou...” The two other Elders called out. But, as they saw his figure fading away into a black dot, both of them bitterly sighed and began to chase after him.

The two of them had a cultivation at the first stage of Life Destruction. Although they completely released their energy to rapidly escape, they didn't use the blood poison pill that had so many side effects.

If the Giant Leviathan didn't belong to them... was it being controlled by Lin Ming?

That was... impossible...

The two Elders thought this. When Xuan Wuji had taken control of the Giant Leviathan, he had to spend a massive amount of effort. Not only did he arrange a massive array, but he also used a secret skill to innervate his soul as well as having a great number of masters supporting him together. Only under these conditions was he then able to successfully place a soul mark brand on the Giant Leviathan.

That had been on the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea that hadn't yet had a master. If the Giant Leviathan had a master, then this would be much more difficult!

No matter how powerful Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to so effortlessly and quietly seize control of the Giant Leviathan. At most he would destroy the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind with some sort of secret skill.

Without the soul mark, the Giant Leviathan would fall into a deep slumber. Fortunately, within the Sky Spill Continent, only Xuan Wuji had obtained the Demon Emperor's letter that detailed the method to control it. If the Giant Leviathan could be recovered, then they wouldn't suffer too much of Xuan Wuji's anger for losing the beast.

"I really have no idea just what means Lin Ming used to isolate or destroy Elder Xuan's soul mark!" An Elder said with disbelief.

"Mm, we've underestimated Lin Ming!"

Another Elder echoed. He couldn't understand why Lin Ming had suddenly become strong to such a degree. Just what secrets did he hold on his body?

A young man in his early twenties had been able beat four Great Elders into the ground? Was this possible?

As the two Elders were lost in their thoughts, they suddenly heard a savage roar echoed out from behind them. A terrifying shockwave washed over their body, stunning them, making their veer off from their original flight path. Below them a massive wave crested up, nearly engulfing the two of them!

“What is going on!?”

The two great Elders were shocked. As they looked back, they suddenly felt as if their souls had fled their bodies!

The Giant Levaithan that should have lost all ability to act was actually flying towards them at high speed. As for those several thousand tentacles near its mouth, all of them were dancing in the air like the hands of a demon, rushing to surround them both!

These terrifying tentacles could shatter space and split apart the ocean. They contained a vast energy that made it difficult for one to summon any courage, scattering all thoughts of resistance!

“What is going on!? Without the soul mark the Giant Leviathan

should have fallen into a deep sleep!” An Elder paled as he saw these tentacles drawing closer to him.

“Even if it didn’t sleep, it still shouldn’t be aiming at us!”

Another Elder broke out into a cold sweat. By all logic, compared to this Giant Leviathan, they were nothing but ants to an elephant. An elephant shouldn’t start attacking ants!

As the two people were dazed, the thousands of tentacles finally caught up to them, weaving a terrifying net around them and sealing off every path of escape. The two of them realized that they were now in the exact same situation that Lin Ming was in just a quarter hour ago.

But the difference was that Lin Ming had a way to deal with this. As for these two South Sea Demon Region Elders, they were beginning to drown in despair!

# Chapter 680 – Subdue

---

“Let’s attack together!”

An Elder loudly shouted as he faced the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles, extracting a ruler from his spatial ring at the same time.

The other Elder took out a heavy sword. The two of them began revolving their true essence to the limit, using their ultimate abilities!

Two storms of black true essence erupted. Under the minute control of the two Elders, the two attacks fused as one, heavily smashing into the net of tentacles.

Bang!

Flames exploded. Several shining tentacles that bore the brunt of the attack dimmed down, rapidly shrinking back. However, more and more tentacles rushed forth to take their place, leaving no room for the two Elders to run as before.

“This is bad!”

Seeing the tentacles that were filled with energy rush towards them, the two great Elders’ eyes turned blood red. With their insignificant first stage Life Destruction strength, resisting this net made of the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles was impossible.



“I’ll use up my life!”

The two Elders thought of this idea at the same time. However, something happened that shocked them. As the great tentacles rushed towards them, they actually began to slow down, wrapping around them without even the slightest intent of piercing through their bodies.

Ka ka ka!

The two Elders felt as if their bodies were being constricted by several large pythons. Their organs ached with an agonizing pain, and their bones almost broke.

“This damn beast!”

The two great Elders dripped with sweat from the pain. They had lost any and all strength to resist.

At the same time as their hearts filled with grief and despair, they also realized something. This Giant Leviathan must have been controlled by someone, otherwise it would have killed them and not surrounded them like this.

As for the one who could control the Giant Leviathan, they could only think of one person.

That was... Lin Ming!

The two Elders could scarcely believe this. When Xuan Wuji had laid down his control onto the Giant Leviathan, he had made a massive array formation, used a secret skill to stimulate his soul potential, and had even gathered countless masters to support him. Even then, he had just barely managed to succeed.

But Lin Ming, with just his strength alone, how was he able to simultaneously fend off and counter the attack of four Elders, forcefully wipe off the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind, and then even plant his own soul mark in such a short time?

Thinking of this, the two Elders began to have a deep sense of fear swell from within them. They no longer regarded Lin Ming as a 20 year old youth. To them he was now a monstrous genius, a terrifying and mysterious existence beyond their comprehension.

Woosh!

The two Elders felt their bodies tighten. The Giant Leviathan's tentacles rapidly returned as the beast opened its great maw and swallowed both Elders. The two Elders saw pitch black for a brief moment, and in the next instant they had arrived in a light red dimension.

.....

10 miles away, as Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin saw this, they were all shocked speechless.

After Lin Ming had drilled his way into the Giant Leviathan's body, he had used some unknown method to cause the Giant Leviathan to roar out in pain for an entire quarter of an hour. Then, something surprising happened. All of the South Sea Demon Region Elders began to escape separately. The two in front were fortunately able to escape safely, but the two behind them were far too slow. They had been caught by the Giant Leviathan!

What was going on?

"It's like... this Giant Leviathan has been subdued by Lin Ming?" Feng Shen couldn't believe his own words as they came out of his mouth, but this was the only plausible explanation.

Duanmu Qun also praised, "Incredible. Although this Giant Leviathan is not too great in one-on-one combat, it can display a massive destructive force in a large-scale battlefield. This is a great war beast that even a Holy Land would be jealous of. I have no idea what Lin Ming did; his every action is a riddle to us."

Duanmu Qun sighed. At this time he no longer thought about competing with Lin Ming. As long as he could remain on good terms with Lin Ming, then that would allow the future of his Divine Wood Holy Land to see a broader and higher road.

At this time, in the Giant Leviathan's inner dimension Lin Ming wore black clothes as he stood tall, his hands crossed behind his back. He was calmly staring at the two Elders. Although his gaze was peaceful, there was also a faint edge to it that caused one's

heartbeat to skip a beat.

“Lin Ming...”

An Elder gulped. When a bounty was placed on Lin Ming throughout the entire South Sea, he had seen Lin Ming's portrait. This youth in front of him seemed similar, but there was a very great difference in his temperament. The Lin Ming in the portraits was a handsome and delicate youth, but the Lin Ming in front of them was like a king that commanded life and death!

“You... just who are you?”

An Elder couldn't help but ask. He couldn't imagine that this terrifying existence in front of him was just a 20 year old youth.

When this Elder was young, he too had been a Saint level talent. When he was 20 years old, he had been a late Houtian martial artist. Because of his superb talent, he was just able to fight the worst of Xiantian level masters. This was already a very stunning achievement. But compared to Lin Ming, even describing this difference as cloud and mud wasn't enough to do it justice.

“I am who I am. As for my Lin Ming's name, I think that you already know!” Lin Ming indifferently flourished his white spear and pointed it towards the two Elders. “I will now give you a choice. Surrender to me and allow me to freely plant a slave seal in you for 50 years. After 50 years, I shall free you! Otherwise, your only other choice is death!”

Lin Ming had originally wanted to kill these two Elders, but after deliberating upon it some more, a first stage Life Destruction master did have a very good combat strength. It had to be known that Mu Fengxian herself was also a first stage Life Destruction master.

Waging war against a sect was not a matter of a single person, much less when Lin Ming's own individual strength wasn't actually that strong.

Facing the powerful Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming had to grab as many advantages as he could. Xuan Wuji would soon exit his seclusion. At that time, even if Lin Ming was weaker than Xuan Wuji, he still had to have the qualifications to content with him.

"Humph, I would rather die than have a slave seal planted in me!" An Elder spat out between clenched teeth. To a proud martial artist, a slave seal was simply the highest form of insult. Once a slave seal was planted he would be nothing but a mindless slave; he would never be able to have his own thoughts.

"Then let me help you!" Lin Ming said without hesitation. He lifted his spear, about to kill them, when at this moment the other Elder shouted out, "Wait!"

Lin Ming's hand stopped. He asked, "What else do you have to say?"

The other Elder's mind raced. He grit his teeth and said, "You said that this slave seal will only be for 50 years, why should I

believe you?”

After a slave seal was planted, the slave would have to obey every single order from their master, unable to even commit suicide. If Lin Ming didn't release this slave seal 50 years from now, then that was truly a life worse than death.

Lin Ming sneered, “I can control at most 10 people with my slave seals. Thus, you two simply do not have the qualifications to be my servants for 50 years. Does this explanation satisfy you?”

Lin Ming's words could be described as excessively arrogant and unrestrained. After the Elder heard this, he was greatly uncomfortable in his heart. But even so, he still couldn't help but acknowledge that Lin Ming had the capital to speak his words. 50 years later, Lin Ming would have already become a Peerless Emperor, possibly even standing at the pinnacle of all Emperor level powerhouses. How could he possibly waste two slots of his slave seals to raise up two first stage Life Destruction slaves?

The Elder bit out, “Alright, I agree!”

“Elder Sun, you...” The Elder that said he would rather die than submit saw this other Elder compromise and began to panic. “You would rather throw away your dignity and ruin your heart of martial arts just so you can live on in such dishonor? Do you know that after being controlled, Lin Ming will make us kill our own descendants!”

“Elder Zhou, you're still thinking about that at a time like this?”

Elder Sun gloomily lifted his eyes, listlessly looking at the other old man. “Us demonic path martial artists have always cared about ourselves first and foremost, taking ourselves as the center of all decisions. So who cares if we’re forced to betray and kill those from the South Sea Demon Region? As for my heart of martial arts, who cares? Our cultivations have reached reached the limit that we can attain. In our lives, there is no hope for us to ever reach the second stage of Life Destruction, so why would I care if my heart of martial arts is ruined? If you want to die then I won’t stop you, but I don’t want to die, I haven’t lived my life yet. In the first half of my life I desperately struggled for all lucky chances like a madman, closing up to practice, and now after great difficulty I can finally enjoy the fruits of my labors. I also want to enjoy my next several hundred years of life. I do not want to die here!”

Some martial artists, such as Lin Ming, practiced martial arts to reach the pinnacle of martial arts.

Some martial artists who practiced martial arts did so in order to gain more power, have a higher status, and enjoy all the beauties and mortal sins of the world.

Elder Sun was one of these latter martial artists. He was too nostalgic and reluctant to part with his life, he simply hadn’t enjoyed it enough. If a Life Destruction powerhouse didn’t participate in the wars of a sect and didn’t try to find lucky chances to break through to higher realms, then they could casually go to any smaller land and enjoy life like a living god.

Hearing Elder Sun say this, Elder Zhou also hesitated.

If one could live, who would want to die?

.....

1,000,000 miles away, Profound Province –

The southernmost side of the Sky Spill Continent had a total of ten domains and nine provinces. Among these, a ‘province’ was slightly smaller than a domain. For instance, the surrounding territory of Divine Phoenix Island was considered the Divine Phoenix Province.

The Divine Phoenix Province was subordinate to another greater domain, but there were also some provinces that were independent. For instance, the Profound Province was like this.

The Profound Province was located in between the Five Element Region and the Judge Mountain Province. It was one million miles away from the South Horizon Region.

The number one sect of Profound Province was the Yin Yang Profound Palace, a newly promoted fifth-grade sect.

Yin Yang Profound Palace’s cultivation methods focused particularly on double cultivating as a complementary ability. Here, double cultivation benefited both man and woman. It was different from the violent sucking of energy style that the South Sea Demon Region practiced. Thus, the Yin Yang Profound Palace could be barely considered an orthodox sect.



Because of the special characteristics of this cultivation method, many disciples of the Yin Yang Profound Palace were married couples that cultivated together.

Even the Palace Masters of Yin Yang Profound Palace were a couple. The man was named Xing Ji and the woman was named Xing Can; they were renowned as the double Yin and Yang stars.

The Xing couple's cultivations were both at the extreme second stage Life Destruction. Because of their Yin Yang cultivation method, they were especially well suited to combining their attacks. If the two of them joined forces, they were actually just able to deal with a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

The Xing couple had one son. His name was Xing Yang and he was an Emperor level talent.

As long as an Emperor level talent didn't die, they would have a slim chance of becoming a true Emperor level powerhouse.

The Xing couple had placed very high expectations on Xing Yang. They hoped that he could become an Emperor level powerhouse in the future and lead their Yin Yang Profound Palace to become a true Holy Land.

At this time, within an elegant courtyard at the eastern section of Yin Yang Profound Palace...

A great millennium old tree stretched out its lush leaves and branches, covering the entire courtyard. Underneath this great tree, there was a simple stone table, and on this stone table was a tea set. Sitting around this stone table were three people.

The one in charge at this table was an elderly woman wearing a robe. Her silver hair was nobly coiffed upwards, bound with an exquisite phoenix hairpin.

This person was the Highest Elder of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Fengxian!

## Chapter 681 – Mu Qianyu's Worries

---

After two and a half years, not only did Mu Fengxian's cultivation not rise, but it tended to fall instead. Her appearance was even older, and her eyes were no longer as bright as they were in the past.

This was a sign that one's life was reaching its later days. But, the truth was that with Mu Fengxian's mere 700 to 800 years of life, even if she didn't break through to the second stage of Life Destruction, she should still be able to live for several hundred more years. The reason that she was in such a situation was because she had truly overdrawn her mind and body in the South Sea war, repeatedly taking action, all of this at the cost of wounding her own life source.

On Mu Fengxian's left hand side was the red-dressed Mu Yuhuang. Mu Yuhuang's cultivation had gone even further, and now she had stepped foot into the Life Destruction realm.

When Lin Ming had first completed his 100% Tempering Marrow, he hadn't used up the entire Nirvana Dragon Root; it still had 20% of its essence energy remaining. He had given this greatly weakened Nirvana Dragon Root to Mu Qianyu, and Mu Qianyu had in turn given it to Mu Fengxian. Mu Fengxian didn't use it for herself, but instead gave it to Mu Yuhuang.

Mu Fengxian was well aware that she had reached the limits of her potential. Even if she swallowed the Nirvana Dragon Root, the insufficient essence energy within would be unable to help her cross through the second stage of Life Destruction realm. At most

it would be able to bolster her life vitality, extending her life by another hundred or two years. But, this no longer held any meaning for Mu Fengxian. She would rather leave this Nirvana Dragon Root to Mu Yuhuang so that could one day take the heavy burden of carrying on the future of Divine Phoenix Island.

Mu Yuhuang already had the ability to cross Life Destruction. It was just that she wasn't the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, thus her talent was limited.

According to Mu Yuhuang's talent, she should at most be able to reach the peak of the late Revolving Core realm. That was her limit. Mu Yuhuang had cultivated for so many years but she still lacked that final push to make her cultivation method reach perfection. Thus, without good odds of crossing Life Destruction, she had delayed this for 100 years.

After she swallowed the weakened Nirvana Dragon Root, she was then able to cross through the first stage of Life Destruction with its help.

On Mu Yuhuang's other side was a young and beautiful woman. She wore robes of red silk and her form was full and round. Her legs were slender, her facial features were exquisite, and her clear white teeth were accentuated with crimson lips that gleamed with a crystal luster. This woman not only had an appearance that could bring nations to its knees but she also had a temperament as if she were otherworldly, a presence that no one could defile. Just by casually sitting there, she naturally revealed a quiet and languid serenity.

This woman was Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird Faction Saintess, Mu Qianyu. At this time, Mu Qianyu's eyes were sparkling with worry.

After Divine Phoenix Island's defenses were broken, Mu Yuhuang and the rest had used the ancient transmission array within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and had crossed several hundred thousand miles, escaping through day and night until they finally reached the Profound Province.

Although the most important personnel of Divine Phoenix Island were safe, the disciples that had died in battle and the palaces that were left in ruin had constantly been a pain in Mu Fengxian, Mu Yuhuang, and everyone else's hearts. Divine Phoenix Island, a once glorious land with 3000 years of inheritance, had actually been destroyed. With this, even if they died they wouldn't have the face to see the ancestors of Divine Phoenix Island.

Moreover, living their days under others wasn't much better.

There were nearly a thousand survivors of Divine Phoenix Island. If they wished to find a spiritual mountain or island that was rich with origin energy, that was easier said than done. Moreover, the South Sea Demon Region was well aware of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's existence. Because of this, they wanted to capture Mu Fengxian and the rest of them alive to search their souls for the method to open it. How could they allow Mu Fengxian and the others to rebuild their sect somewhere else?

Thus, with no other choice and in desperation, Divine Phoenix Island had to seek asylum.

Out of the several nearby domains, there were only two different powers that had some friendship with Divine Phoenix Island and could also contend with the South Sea Demon Region to an extent. One was Yin Yang Profound Palace and the other was Great Zen Temple.

After the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, Great Zen Temple no longer intervened in the South Sea Demon Region's war. Even though the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island had sent out several messengers asking for help, they had been ignored every time. It was as if Great Zen Temple was also facing their own troubles and simply had no time to bother with Divine Phoenix Island.

Not just that, but Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation methods ran completely counter to those of Great Zen Temple. Great Zen Temple also had no interest in the resources that Divine Phoenix Island could offer. Thus, Divine Phoenix Island could only choose Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Yin Yang Profound Palace certainly wouldn't protect Divine Phoenix Island for free. Sooner or later, this matter would be discovered by the South Sea Demon Region, and that was the same as offending them. Although Yin Yang Profound Palace didn't fear the South Sea Demon Region, they wouldn't provoke them for the sake of a mere Divine Phoenix Island.

In order for them to take in Divine Phoenix Island, there had to be sufficient terms. Since this was such a prime time to take advantage of Divine Phoenix Island while they had nowhere to go,

Yin Yang Profound Palace naturally wouldn't miss such a great opportunity to swallow up all the benefits they could.

At the start, Yin Yang Profound Palace's Xing couple had wanted Divine Phoenix Island to merge with their sect, becoming a faction.

Regarding this, Mu Fengxian naturally disagreed.

After facing the unyielding Mu Fengxian, the Xing couple drew back a step, instead taking in a massive amount of resources from Divine Phoenix Island, even including two Vermillion Birds.

These two Vermillion Birds were Mu Yuhuang's contracted Vermillion Bird, Fireshine, as well as Mu Qianyu's contracted Vermillion Bird, Little Flame.

After having their life's Vermillion Bird snatched from them, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Qianyu's mood could be imagined. It really felt painful to the point that their hearts bled. Within Divine Phoenix Island, a life's Vermillion Bird was not only a contract beast, but a friend and lifetime companion.

In fact, Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation methods were truly similar to those of Divine Phoenix Island. In Yin Yang Profound Palace, Yin was water and Yang was fire. And in Divine Phoenix Island, the Blue Luan was ice and the Vermillion Bird was fire. Both of these cultivation methods were extremely similar, thus they were interested in not just the Vermillion Birds but also their blood essence.

In this way, the Xing couple made an oath on their heart demons and they would allow Divine Phoenix Island to recover within Yin Yang Profound Palace for 100 years. In these 100 years, Yin Yang Profound Palace would protect Divine Phoenix Island, and 100 years later, they would also assist Divine Phoenix Island in re-establishing their sect.

After living under others for less than half a year, Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang quickly discovered something was amiss. Because most of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were women, the disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace actually had the idea to double cultivate with them. They wanted to marry the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island and practice together as husband and wife.

If this were just a single isolate incident, then Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang wouldn't intervene. But, this phenomenon kept repeating itself, making them unable to remain calm. This was a way of subtly and quietly assimilating Divine Phoenix Island. If this continued for several dozen more years, then the majority of Divine Phoenix Island's disciples would have married with the disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace. After their disciples became the women of others, would it still be possible for Divine Phoenix Island to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace and re-establish their sect?

Although they knew that seeking asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace was the same as walking into a tiger's den, Mu Fengxian and the others had no choice. If they didn't have Yin Yang Profound Palace, they wouldn't have any chance of survival. Sooner or later, the South Sea Demon Region would find them and kill them!



As three women were sitting around the stone table, their faces were filled with worry.

Mu Yuhuang rose up to fill a cup of tea. After she passed it to Mu Fengxian, she began to slowly say, “Bingyun has sent some news. It came from Storm Valley, and is quite good...”

“Oh? What news?” After Mu Fengxian heard Mu Yuhuang’s words, her aged eyelids slightly trembled. In these past few years, good news was truly strange.

Mu Yuhuang said, “According to information obtained by Storm Valley, a few days ago, the South Sea Demon Region’s Divine Phoenix Island Branch was eradicated. And the leader of the force that did this was less than 30 years old.”

“30 years old?” Mu Fengxian was startled. “Hm, heroes really do come from the young. I wonder what sort of power this is, why would they move against the South Sea Demon Region?”

“Storm Valley hasn’t been able to find out the status of this mysterious party either. They only know that there are just a few of them, maybe four of them, and all of them are extraordinarily strong heroic youths. Afterwards, Xuan Yuqie personally took action and even sent out the Giant Leviathan...”

“Giant Leviathan?” Mu Fengxian frowned. Regardless of what goal this mysterious party had, an enemy of her enemy was her friend – she naturally worried for them. “To think they would actually use the Giant Leviathan. It seems that Xuan Yuqie is really

taking this situation seriously. Are they personal mortal enemies of the South Sea Demon Region?”

As Mu Fengxian thought this was strange, Mu Qianyu actually seemed to remember something. She slowly became lost in her thoughts.

An extraordinary heroic youth, less than 30 years old...

When Lin Ming left, he had said he would return in 10 years' time. At that time, Lin Ming should also be nearing 30 years of age. When he returned, just how strong would he be? He should also be able to rely on just his own strength to strangle a branch of the South Sea Demon Region.

By that time, Lin Ming could support the skies for her, sheltering her from rain and wind...

Thinking of this, a trace of longing shined in her eyes. In the end, she was still human. After facing so many changes in these past years, even she was tired.

And this 10 year meeting was truly too far away.

Mu Qianyu had left behind a message within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's array formation. Although her wishes were firm, living in this precarious and dangerous South Sea for 10 years... it was quite hard.

‘10 years later, Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, can we really meet again?’

Worry appeared on Mu Qianyu’s face. She was worried about Lin Ming. Lin Ming had gone through that ancient array formation all by himself. Where had he gone? What dangers had he encountered? Would he be able to safely return in 10 years?

The road of martial artists was filled with fatal dangers. Those outstanding heroic youths looked glamorous and glorious, but in truth, every day was a furious struggle against the heavens. One wrong step and anyone could fall beyond redemption!

Although Mu Qianyu believed in Lin Ming, she was still incomparably worried about him.

As Mu Fengxian saw Mu Qianyu’s expression, she knew what this young woman was thinking in her heart. She sighed, but ended up not saying any comforting words. Instead, she asked Mu Yuhuang, “Since Xuan Yuqie has personally taken command of the Giant Leviathan, has this mysterious force been made to retreat?”

Mu Yuhuang shook her head, “They have not. They chose to fight!”

“Fight!?” Mu Fengxian was shocked. Even if Xuan Wuji wasn’t there, just having Xuan Yuqie control the Giant Leviathan was terrifying. If this mysterious force dared to fight, then that proved that their strength far exceeded their imaginations!

“You said that there were four of these heroic youths?”

“This... perhaps they might have some might expert secretly helping them...” Mu Yuhuang shook her head. She couldn’t believe that four youths that were younger than 30 years of age had the ability to face Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan.

“This news was sent a few days ago. By now, they might have already fought the Giant Leviathan; I have no idea who won and who lost. If they could defeat the South Sea Demon Region, even if they didn’t injure the Giant Leviathan they could bring down the arrogance of the South Sea Demon Region by several points. At least, they wouldn’t be like us, unable to raise even the slightest bit of resistance.”

# Chapter 682 – Counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region

---

The Giant Leviathan's strength lay in its massive size. Because of its size, normal attacks weren't even able to scratch it. The total energy contained within its attacks was also extremely terrifying; even a sect's great protective array wouldn't be able to resist it.

Mu Yuhuang never thought that anyone could kill the Giant Leviathan. Unless, this person was a fifth or sixth stage Life Destruction master, or even an Emperor level powerhouse.

But in the entire Sky Spill Continent, there were only several widely known Emperor powerhouses. With those that remained hidden all around the world, the total number amounted to around 100. But, most of these people were centered in the central regions of the mainland, so it was impossible for them to have some conflict with the South Sea Demon Region.

Mu Fengxian said, "It seems that there is some strong expert behind these outstanding heroic youths. If they are a fourth stage of even fifth stage Life Destruction master, then there would be a turning point in the South Sea war! Even if nothing happens to the Giant Leviathan, it's good enough for that Xuan Yuqie to take a loss."

Mu Fengxian didn't believe that there was an under 30 year old youth out there capable of dealing with Xuan Yuqie; there had to be some powerful expert assisting them from behind.

Mu Yuhuang said, “Talking about this further is useless. Let us wait for this battle to end before we make further plans. Now, it’s better if we consider the future reconstruction of Divine Phoenix Island. Yin Yang Profound Palace has the heart of a wolf. Without a doubt, they want to subvert our Divine Phoenix Island. I fear that they even covet the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and the ‘Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code’!”

As Mu Yuhuang spoke of Yin Yang Profound Palace, her voice became somewhat chilly. The truth was that when she decided to seek refuge within Yin Yang Profound Palace, she had already expected that the situation would turn out like this. However, at the time, she really had no other choice.

If things continued at this pace, then it would be impossible for Divine Phoenix Island to separate itself from Yin Yang Profound Palace in 100 years.

Mu Yuhuang certainly wouldn’t idly sit by and wait for this to occur. She had a secret card in her hand, the greatest X factor that she had placed her every bet on. That was... Lin Ming!

Mu Yuhuang had pinned her every hope on Lin Ming. Lin Ming was a dragon in a pool. 10 years from now, as long as he was able to safely return, then he should have strength near the Life Destruction realm or even above that. A few more years after that, if his strength could reach the third stage of Life Destruction, then he could be the pillar that shouldered the heavens for Divine Phoenix Island!

At that time, it would no longer be difficult for Divine Phoenix

Island to reconstruct itself. It was exactly because of this reason that Mu Yuhuang had dared to seek asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace.

At the same time that Yin Yang Profound Palace was secretly trying to swallow up Divine Phoenix Island, Divine Phoenix Island was also using Yin Yang Profound Palace.

“Everything will depend on Lin Ming. If he can return safely after those 10 years and have the strength to challenge the Life Destruction realm, then we can be considered as having reached the calm after the storm. Otherwise...”

As Mu Yuhuang spoke to here, Mu Qianyu felt her heart ache.

‘Otherwise’. This word was truly terrifying.

She silently prayed in her heart for Lin Ming’s safety and that nothing tragic would befall him. 10 years from now, even if Lin Ming had exhausted all of his potential and wasn’t able to live up to Mu Yuhuang’s expectations, everything would be fine as long as he was safe...

Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and Mu Qianyu all had various concerns and doubts weighing down on their minds. After a day of restlessness, a stunning piece of news suddenly arrived to them in the evening.

Xuan Yuqie had gathered three great Elders, using the Giant

Leviathan to attack that mysterious party led by the enigmatic youth. But in the end, they had actually been the ones to be defeated!

Moreover, the most shocking news was that control of the Giant Leviathan had been stolen away. In a stunning reverse, the great beast had instead attacked the four great Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, killing two Elders from the Sun Clan and Zhou Clan!

As Mu Yuhuang obtained this news, she stood there stunned for a long period of time before she was able to shake herself out of her daze. Although she already expected that this mysterious force had some backing since they dared to face Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan, she never imagined that they would also have a method to erase the soul mark left behind by Xuan Wuji and take control of the Giant Leviathan!

It had to be known that the Giant Leviathan was controlled by Xuan Yuqie and three other great Elders. If the four of them noticed this happening, they absolutely would have launched a counterattack.

However, that mysterious force had not only forcefully broke through their counterattack, but also successfully captured the Giant Leviathan!

What sort of terrifying ability was this? What level of master could this be?



Fourth stage Life Destruction? Perhaps even fifth stage Life Destruction?

Mu Yuhuang was extremely shocked. This mysterious youth that was less than 30 years old, as well as that mysterious power behind him, both began to become increasingly wrapped in an aura of secrecy.

She thought about this for a long time, and then mumbled, “I really have no idea where this force came from and why they would attack the South Sea Demon Region...”

“Perhaps it might be the mortal enemies of the South Sea Demon Region, or even Silent Demon Emperor City...” Mu Yuhuang slowly said, her old eyes shining. “No matter what sort of situation this is, it is a favorable turn of events for us. However, don’t be too optimistic. Even if the South Sea Demon Region has lost the Giant Leviathan, they still have Xuan Wuji. That Xuan Wuji is strangely terrifying! During the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming ruined his calculated plans. But afterwards, he was still able to obtain the Giant Leviathan. After leaving the Demon God Imperial Palace, he found reinforcements from those clans of the deep sea, and then launched a total attack on the entire South Sea. Now, he has collected enough resources to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction. Once he leaves his seclusion, that is when the true battle will begin...”

.....

As Mu Yuhuang obtained news that this mysterious force had completely routed Xuan Yuqie, this news also spread through the

entire South Sea. Mu Bingyun had returned three days earlier to Yin Yang Profound Palace. As for the seven great sects of the Five Element Region, they had now gathered together and were deliberating on how to jointly deal with the South Sea Demon Region and other relevant matters.

Although the current South Sea Demon Region had united the various deep sea clans and still held a position of absolute superiority, this good news at least allowed everyone to see a glimmer of hope. It wasn't like before where the others simply didn't have the courage to even think of resisting.

It had to be known that the Giant Leviathan wasn't too extraordinary in one on one combat. But, when facing an entire sect, its massive energy beam was able to destroy even a sect's great protective array. Even Divine Phoenix Island, with its 3000 year legacy, was no exception to this.

Then, if even they fell, who else dared to fight with the South Sea Demon Region directly?

In the joint meeting hall of the Five Element Region's seven great sects, the Sunfire Princess Huo Ruyan was fanatically saying, "This mysterious youth is just too cute. I have no idea what Holy Land this genius came out from for adventuring, but if I see him then I really, really have to thank him."

As Zhan Yunjian saw Huo Ruyan's crazed expression, he laughed and said, "Ruyan, please don't tell me that you've fallen in love with him. Then again, your age is a good match; you're also in your mid twenties!"

Hearing Zhan Yunjian's teasing words, Huo Ruyan blushed as she said, "Really, such a filthy mouth can't speak any good words. I haven't even seen him. Then again, he is most likely a Holy Land descendant, so how would he even look at me..."

As Huo Ruyan spoke to here, there was a tinge of exasperation in her voice. She was only at the Xiantian realm, but this mysterious youth was already at the Revolving Core realm. Not just that, but an exceptional Revolving Core master who was said to have strength comparable to a Life Destruction master's combat strength. How could anyone not be bothered hearing this?

But, there was nothing she could do about it. This was the difference of background and talent. She only came from a tiny fourth-grade sect, so how could she compare with a Holy Land?

"Haha, I was just messing around with you. But it really seems that you have this intent, hmm? You know, us martial artists don't care too much about appearance. If this fellow's character isn't too bad, then I'll ask him for you!"

Zhan Yunjian teased. This meeting was basically all juniors participating. As Zhan Yunjian joked with Huo Ruyan, this immediately elicited laughs from everyone, making Huo Ruyan's face even redder. Ever since the South Sea Demon Region destroyed the South Sea Wartime Alliance and the flames of war had burned all the way to the Five Element Region, it was rare for everyone to laugh as they did now.

“Alright, let’s not tease little sister Ruyan anymore. If this mysterious force really is from a Holy Land, then the South Sea Demon Region really will be in trouble. We should have someone speak with that mysterious youth to see what plans he has.” Arctic Ice Palace’s Bai Aoxuan said. These sect talents had gradually grown up. Although most of their cultivations were at the middle Xiantian realm, because of their amazing talent they had a combat strength equal to a half-step Revolving Core master. In addition, with their growing mentality and maturity, they were now able to take on some responsibilities.

“Yes, yes, that’s right! We should approach him. I really have no idea how the South Sea Demon Region managed to offend such a great power, but no matter what, this is a great help to us!” Thundercrest Sect’s Zhou Lie echoed. “Brother Zhan, your Storm Valley has scouts near Divine Phoenix Island. Let’s leave the matter of contacting this mysterious youth to Brother Zhan. The earlier the better, it’s best not delay this matter further.”

“Mm, Brother Zhou is right. I’ll hurry and send the orders now. If this mysterious party can directly help us then that would be wonderful!” As Zhan Yunjian spoke he immediately took out a long distance sound transmitting talisman. This sound transmitting talisman would pass through several relay stations; it would be able to reach the scouts that Storm Valley had stationed in the South Sea in less than an hour.

Storm Valley had four scouts in the South Sea, all of them with an extreme Xiantian cultivation. They were proficient in wind attribute concealment techniques and also had supportive secret skills that used the Concept of Wind to hear distance voices. They were very well suited for being scouts.

The four scouts immediately set out and carefully headed towards Divine Phoenix Island. However, just as they reached the border of Divine Phoenix Island and were preparing to make contact with that mysterious force, they happened to see that massive floating Giant Leviathan suddenly shoot into the sky!

The 90 mile long Giant Leviathan rushed into the skies, causing monstrous waves and turbulent gales in the entire area, and making all the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding several hundred miles restlessly move. Being close to this tremendous pressure made one feel as if they were nothing more than a leaf in a storm.

“Mm? They’re flying away!”

“This direction is... the south!?”

Two scouts helplessly gazed on as they watched the Giant Leviathan fly towards the south. The Giant Leviathan was extremely large, and thus its acceleration was very slow. But, given enough time to reach its maximum speed, its speed would be no worse than that of a Life Destruction powerhouse!

When such a massive Giant Leviathan flew in the sky at high speed, it would causing a terrifying wind pressure that would sound out like a moving thunderstorm, forcefully ripping apart the sea beneath and forming a massive canyon in the water. After this ‘canyon’ was formed, it would fall back down like two great waterfalls, creating a massive splash of water that sprayed several

miles into the sky.

“What are they doing?” As a scout saw the Giant Leviathan’s speed increase, he couldn’t help but ask this question out loud.

“South... south of Divine Phoenix Island is the South Sea Demon Region! They shouldn’t be... are they... are they attacking the South Sea Demon Region!? Heavens!”

Another scout sucked in a breath of cold air. In these past few years, the South Sea Demon Region had acquired too great a reputation. Now, they were the same as an Asura hell in everyone’s eyes. That mysterious force actually wanted to rush into the lair of the South Sea Demon Region? Did they not care about their lives?

“No, think about it some more... Xuan Wuji is in seclusion and Xuan Yuqie has been severely wounded. Now even the Giant Leviathan has been wrested away by that mysterious youth. This would be... the best time to attack the South Sea Demon Region!” As a scout suddenly realized this, everyone began to look at each other in shock.

This was too crazy!

# Chapter 683 – 10,000 Mile Raid

---

Above the South sea, the massive Giant Leviathan shot forth at a terrifying pace. Even the clouds and sea were blown away by the sonic speed of the Giant Leviathan.

The four scouts from Storm Valley looked on with fear and trepidation in their eyes, their hearts gripped and their blood bubbling with excitement.

This was a counterattack on the South Sea Demon Region!

Ever since war broke out in the South Sea, this was the first time that anyone from Divine Phoenix Island or the Five Element Region saw someone fighting back against the South Sea Demon Region!

“Hurry up and transmit the news!” A scout said in hysterical elation.

“Mm, let’s pass the news!”

The four of them all pulled out sound transmitting talismans at once and sent out a message. After passing through several secret relay points of the South Horizon Region, the news took less than an hour to reach the Five Element Region. And at this time, important figures from the Five Element Region were gathered at the seven sect meeting hall.

After Zhan Yunjian heard the message from the sound transmitting talisman, he was utterly shocked.

After the fire flickered and disappeared, Zhan Yunjian didn't speak for a long period of time. Huo Ruyan couldn't help but say, "Zhan Yunjian, what message did you receive?! You're giving me a heart attack here!"

Zhan Yunjian took a deep breath and said, "This is incredible news. Even I couldn't believe it when I received it – it was just too crazy to take in."

"Zhan Yunjian, at this time are you still going to keep us guessing?" Huo Ruyan angrily beeped out, her entire body huffing and puffing with anger.

"I'm not trying to keep you guessing, I just find this hard to accept; I needed some time to digest this news." Zhan Yunjian slowly stood up, glanced at everyone present, and then solemnly said, "The message from the sound transmitting talisman just now is... that mysterious youth has already controlled the Giant Leviathan to plunge directly into the South Sea Demon Region. They want to wage war against the South Sea Demon Region..."

"What!?"

With these words, everyone was struck dumb with amazement!

"Isn't that just too reckless!?" Deep Earth Sect's Shi Yun couldn't



help but say.

“Yeah! To penetrate alone into enemy territory, that is the ultimate taboo of any military plan! Moreover, there are countless masters within the South Sea Demon Region; it could be said to be a fatal danger zone. That mysterious youth may be fierce, but this is just far too dangerous!” Zhou Lie echoed. However, even as he finished, he seemed to have missed something...

After thinking about it further, the current South Sea Demon Region’s situation was... Xuan Wuji was still in seclusion and Xuan Yuqie was severely wounded. The Giant Leviathan was also captured, and now they were greatly weakened because of this... this was the most opportune time to make a counterattack!

None of the heroic youths present were slow of mind. As they all realized this, all of them couldn’t help but look at each other with blank shock on their faces.

For a time, a deep silence fell over the entire meeting hall.

Ever since the South Sea Demon Region had spread out news that Xuan Wuji had gone into seclusion to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, the entire South Horizon Region had been devastated. They all had a premonition that once Xuan Wuji made his breakthrough and left his seclusion, that was the day when the South Sea Demon Region would bring a great apocalypse upon all of them.

Their days after knowing the time of their death had were no

better!

For this half year, regardless of whether it was the Five Element Region's seven great sects, Divine Phoenix Island, Dire Space Sect, or Supreme Mystery Temple, all of them were thinking of ways of how they could survive this upcoming catastrophe. But, none of them had ever thought of counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region.

This idea was far too crazy!

If that mysterious youth could actually cause great losses to the South Sea Demon Region, then he would become a living legend!

This was a less than 30 year old youth that was able to reverse the entire war of the South Sea with just his own strength! Looking through the last 10,000 year history of the Sky Spill Continent, just who was able to forge such a mythic legend!?

“Crazy, too crazy...”

Shi Yun mumbled to himself. Just who was this strange youth? Someone that was able to have some achievements was definitely not unknown!

Perhaps in the future, this person might even stand at the highest peak of the Sky Spill Continent, showing disdain for all rivals!

“No kidding, this sort of existence has already surpassed our

understanding. To counterattack the South Sea Demon Region... what a powerful and bold great lord!" A direct disciple from Golden Bell Mountain said with a sigh.

"Mm... although we know that the South Sea Demon Region is in its weakest state right now, analyzing this is one thing, and deciding to counterattack the South Sea Demon Region after living under the pall of their shadow is another! If it was me, there was no way I would have the courage to do this simply because I would never think of it." Bai Aoxuan sighed. Compared to this mysterious youth, whether it was strength, courage, or foresight, she was far too inferior. These past years, because of the absolute superiority shown by the South Sea Demon Region, all of them had already subconsciously formed a line of thinking that none of them were able to resist the South Sea Demon Region.

One couldn't blame the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region. Even when all of their sects were combined together, they didn't even have enough Life Destruction Elders to count on more than a single hand. As for the South Sea Demon Region, they had once been a Holy Land after all. After recovering over thousands of years, their strength had now exceeded everyone's expectations.

At this time, Huo Ruyan's cheeks were red. Her dark black eyes had widened and it was unknown what she was thinking. She muttered, "What Holy Land has this mysterious youth come from? Because of him, the entire South Sea war is now in upheaval..."

"Little Sister Huo, you really didn't fall in love with him, right?" As Bai Aoxuan saw Huo Ruyan's appearance, she was slightly

surprised for a moment before she laughed.

“I’m fine, stop making fun of me!” Huo Ruyan said, a bit embarrassed. “We should consider whether or not we should send out some masters to assist this mysterious youth.”

Since ancient times, beautiful women had always loved heroes. This was especially true in the world of martial artists. To contend with the entire South Sea Demon Region with just his strength, reversing the disastrous war and saving them from the descending dangers, this sort of extraordinarily brave and strong hero was easily able to touch the heart of a girl. Let alone Huo Ruyan, even Bai Aoxuan couldn’t help but feel her heart tremble. But, they were well aware that the difference in their status was far too great.

“It would be too late for us to send out masters. The distance from the Five Element Region to the South Sea Demon Region is too great. Then again, even if we could send people, their strength simply wouldn’t be of help.” Zhan Yunjian said as he sighed, a bit frustrated. The seven great sects of the Five Element Region were only ordinary fourth-grade sects. Most of them didn’t even have Life Destruction powerhouses, so how could they possibly help?

“It’s fine. We shouldn’t worry over him. We only need to wait for the results. This mysterious youth’s ability has far surpassed our imaginations, he should be from one of the Divine Kingdoms from the central mainland. I have no idea why he decided to fight the South Sea Demon Region, but this time we’ve really hit the jackpot.” Zhan Yunjian said.

The South Horizon Region was located at the very south of the

Sky Spill Continent. The sea here bordered the mainland; it was a relatively remote area. Here, ordinary fifth-grade sects like Great Zen Temple and the South Sea Demon Region were considered supreme powers.

But in the central region of the mainland, there were four Divine Kingdoms. These Divine Kingdoms each occupied an area that was five or six times larger than the Great Zen Region. As for the several Holy Lands of the Sky Spill Continent, most of them were located there. And when it came to fifth-grade sects, there were even more of those within the borders of these four Divine Kingdoms.

This was why Zhan Yunjian believed that this mysterious youth originated from these four Divine Kingdoms. If he was one of those legendary Crown Princes of a Divine Kingdom, then he would just barely be able to accept this...

.....

At this time, one million miles away, at the South Sea –

Lin Ming was within a miniature dimension of the Giant Leviathan. In front of him, there were two black-clothed old man respectfully standing there. These two were the South Sea Demon Region Elders that had submitted to Lin Ming – Elder Sun and Elder Zhou.

For convenience, Lin Ming called them Demon One and Demon Two.

“Demon One, how many Life Destruction masters are there altogether in the South Sea Demon Region?” Lin Ming asked.

“Reporting to Master, in these past 3000 years, the South Sea Demon Region has been recuperating and accumulating its strength, developing its forces. Especially several hundred years ago, Xuan Wuji discovered an ancient ruin within the South Sea and obtained the ‘Ancient Devil Tome’ as well as many resources. With this, the South Sea Demon Region was able to develop many masters.”

Lin Ming slightly nodded. He also knew of that ancient ruin that the Demon Emperor had left behind. Xuan Wuji had obtained the ‘Ancient Devil Tome’ as well as the Demon Emperor’s letter from there. From the Demon Emperor’s letter, he had obtained the location of the Demon God Imperial Palace as well as the method to open it.

Xuan Wuji had prepared for that trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace for many, many years. He didn’t even hesitate to launch a war in the South Sea for this very reason. As long as he was able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Giant Leviathan, then he really would have a chance to break through to the Divine Sea realm given enough time, becoming the ultimate ruler of the Sky Spill Continent’s southernmost tip.

All of his schemes were perfect. But, there had been a single unknown factor – the appearance of Lin Ming.

Xuan Wuji had never imagined that a mere youth that hadn't even broken through to the Xiantian realm would ruin his plans of so many years, flushing it all down the drain!

Demon One said, "In these last several hundreds of years, because of those resources and relics found from the ancient ruins, the South Sea Demon Region has been able to cultivate eight Life Destruction masters. In addition to original number, that is a total of 16. Afterwards, because they kept dying off, not counting us, there are only seven left. Of these seven, two are at the second stage of Life Destruction and Xuan Wuji is nearing the fourth stage of Life Destruction. The other four remaining are all at the first stage of Life Destruction.

"Mm... I see." Lin Ming nodded. This strength wasn't enough to make him feel any fear at all.

"What about the South Sea Demon Region's allies? How strong are those clans from the deep sea?"

"Reporting to Master, this servant is not too clear about this. The deep sea clans are very mysterious; normally only Xuan Wuji has contact with them. This time, they only sent out a single Elder to help us start a deep sea beast tide." After having a slave seal planted within him, Demon One could be described as unwaveringly loyal with absolute devotion.

"Mm, I got it." Lin Ming responded.

Then, as he passed his perception outside of this dimension, he

saw that the Giant Leviathan was nearing the center of the South Sea Demon Region.

The South Sea Demon Region was located on three islands deep within the South Sea. This was a point where the shallow waters met with the deeper water. The heaven and earth origin energy here was very thick.

As the Giant Leviathan arrived, its massive form caused monstrous waves to rise through the entire sea, forming surging tsunamis that rolled towards these islands.

In the Netherworld Demon Mountain's main temple, Xuan Yuqie was sitting within a hidden chamber. In front of her were a number of precious soul recovery medicines. After she had fled in panic and distress, her soul had been injured and she also swallowed down a blood poison pill. Her origin energy had been extremely damaged. Without closing up for several months, there was no way she would be able to restore herself.

She had already gone into seclusion to heal herself, when she suddenly heard a great rumbling sound outside. At this time, all of the heaven and earth origin energy around the Netherworld Demon Mountain began to be stirred up in intense agitation.

“Mm? What’s going on?”

Xuan Yuqie was shocked. A faint foreboding feeling began to grow in her heart. She was about to step outside to take a look, when at this time, a black-clothed martial artist crashed into her



hidden chamber, his face pale as he panted from exhaustion.

“Sov... Sovereign Xuan, something disastrous has happened. Lin Ming has brought the Giant Leviathan to our sect’s entrance. The Giant Leviathan is now storing energy, preparing to break through the great protective array!”

## Chapter 684 – What Is There To Discuss?

---

Xuan Yuqie's complexion immediately changed. She paled, "What did you just say!?"

"I... I said that Lin Ming is now controlling the Giant Leviathan and he has already flown it to the entrance of the sect. Now he is storing energy, possibly to attack us!"

The black-clothed martial artist slowly and carefully repeated himself.

Xuan Yuqie suddenly felt dizzy, almost falling down where she stood. Her soul was already injured, and now after hearing this news, she almost lost her last breath.

She never imagined that Lin Ming would actually take the Giant Leviathan and step into their South Sea Demon Region!

It had to be known that after Xuan Yuqie and the other Elder fled back in distress, neither of them had publicly released the news that the Giant Leviathan of their sect had been stolen away.

This was because this was far too great a loss of face. Once this news spread out, she would never be able to recover from the effect this would have on her esteem as Sovereign. After all, she had gone out with three great Elders, and finally ended up with the Giant Leviathan being taken away. This really couldn't be justified.

Also, this was to maintain the stability and morale of their troops. Now that Xuan Wuji was still in closed-door seclusion, it was unknown just how many more months he would need before he exited. Although this South Sea Demon Region seemed very powerful at this moment, in truth there were many unnerving factors. If the subordinates were to suddenly find out that the Giant Leviathan was stolen away and two great Elders had died, this would surely lead to serious repercussions.

At this moment, the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region were also in the dark. Thus, they had no idea that Lin Ming was the one who brought the Giant Leviathan knocking on their door!

Could there be a worse situation than this?

Also, as Xuan Yuqie's mind raced with different scenarios, she still couldn't think of anyone present in the South Sea Demon Region that could stop the bombardment of the Giant Leviathan.

How could Xuan Yuqie not panic at this time!?

She could no longer care about her injuries. She swept up all the bottles of soul recovery pills in the hidden chamber into her spatial ring, and then breathlessly rushed outside.

.....

“Hey... look at that, the Giant Leviathan came back. It seems that

it used up too much energy because Sovereign Xuan brought it out too many times. Does it need to rest in the deep sea for a few months?”

Somewhere in the South Sea Demon Region, a middle Revolving Core Protector began talking as he saw that massive shadow of the Giant Leviathan’s head loom over him.

“I have no idea. There might be a change in the situation. Perhaps the Great Elder has left his seclusion ahead of schedule.”

Another Protector thought that Xuan Wuji might be leaving seclusion early, “Let’s go and take a look.”

“Mm, alright.”

The two Protectors soared upwards.

At this moment, a black-clothed man and woman rushed into the skies at high speed. The woman was Xuan Yuqie, and the man was an Elder with a silver mask covering his face. He was the other present second stage Life Destruction master of the South Sea Demon Region, and also the Sovereign of the Demon Region Eastern Faction. Of the Demon Region’s four great clans, he was the head of the Zhou Clan.

“Everyone! Hurry up and escape far away!” Xuan Yuqie shouted out loud. At this time, her mind and heart were already a mess. With her status as the Demon Region Western Faction Sovereign,

she had gathered three other great Elders of the different clans and with four people in total had chased after Lin Ming, with even the Giant Leviathan supporting them. Such a powerful lineup of Elders actually lost to Lin Ming. Not only that, but the Giant Leviathan was taken away from them, and now it was being used by others to break through their entrance. Just where did she have face to see anyone anymore?

But now was not the time to consider these matters. Several tens of thousands of feet high in the air, the Giant Leviathan was storing energy. Soon, it would launch a devastating blow against the South Sea Demon Region!

No one was more aware than Xuan Yuqie of just how terrifying the Giant Leviathan's strength was. Its process of gathering strength was very slow, but once it was able to finish, even the great protective array formation of the South Sea Demon Region wouldn't be able to withstand a few attacks!

That was a natural inborn war monster!

“What? We need to escape far away?” Xuan Yuqie's voice spread through the entire sect. These demonic path martial artists weren't idiots, they soon realized that something was wrong. As they looked up into the skies, they could see that the heaven and earth origin energy within a range of several hundred miles was being stirred up by the Giant Leviathan, forming a cataclysmic vortex of origin energy as it swallowed it all!

Could this be...

The South Sea Demon Region martial artists all paled at once. At this time, the shout from the Demon Region Easter Faction Sovereign confirmed their suspicious...

“Young Hero, do not start! Let us discuss this first!”

What?

All of the demon region martial artists were stunned, and then slowly began to react. The Giant Leviathan had been taken away, and now it was actually being used to attack their South Sea Demon Region!

Everyone turned to look at Xuan Yuqie. Just several days ago, Xuan Yuqie had taken the Giant Leviathan on a punitive expedition, bringing with her a powerful lineup of Elders towards Divine Phoenix Island. Later, she and another Elder had returned, and then she had declared to everyone that the Giant Leviathan had gone to rest in the deep sea in order to recover its energy. As for the two other Elders, they had gone to accompany and take care of the Giant Leviathan.

Now it appeared that there had been an accident. Several days ago, Xuan Yuqie must have suffered a crushing defeat; she even lost control of the Giant Leviathan!

Just who had such a great ability to do this?

The Demon Region martial artists all had increasingly confused expressions appear on their faces. Within the entire South Sea Demon Region, besides Xuan Wuji, she was the number one master. Just who was this other party?

Feeling the puzzled eyes of thousands of people on her, their stares filled with confusion and disbelief, Xuan Yuqie grinded her shining white teeth together and clenched her fists. In her entire life, she had never received such humiliation!

This damned Lin Ming!

Xuan Yuqie's hate caused her to gnash her teeth together. If Lin Ming was in front of her, she would undoubtedly try to tear him apart with her teeth. But Lin Ming was currently within the Giant Leviathan. With the protection of the Giant Leviathan, there wasn't anything she was able to do to him!

Beside Xuan Yuqie, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign could see the energy stored within the Giant Leviathan becoming increasingly potent and violent. His face turned as white as paper. For him to stop the attack of the Giant Leviathan was simply unrealistic. If the sect's great protective array were to be ripped apart then the consequences would be unimaginable!

"Young Hero, don't be rash! Let us discuss this..."

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was also feeling anxious enough that he felt sick in his stomach. He was hoping to reach a settlement with Lin Ming in exchange for resources. At

least, he should first try to stabilize this situation with Lin Ming first.

However, just as he spoke, there was suddenly a massive explosion in the skies!

It was like 10,000 thunderbolts gathering together, making the entire world lose color. All of the heaven and earth origin energy with a range of several hundred miles was completely gathered up by the Giant Leviathan, forming a massive golden beam as thick as a giant tree. It was like an unrivalled vorpal sword, cutting directly down onto the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array!

“Damn!”

“Hurry and dodge!”

“Help me!”

All of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists were aware of how terrifying the Giant Leviathan was. Before this, Divine Phoenix Island, the Wartime Alliance, and afterwards also the Dire Space Sect and Supreme Mystery Temple, none of them had an array formation that was capable of dealing with the Giant Leviathan's barrage of attacks!

The entire South Sea Demon Region was thrust into absolute chaos!



Bang bang bang!

A sound filled the world as if the earth itself was breaking apart. In the skies, a thick red barrier suddenly appeared, stiffly resisting the Giant Leviathan's great golden sword!

A massive and violent explosion set off great surging tsunamis. At the Demon Temples, the island began to collapse all around them. Large tracts of land sunk into the sea, immediately causing all the islands to shrink a size!

Great waves of rock and water thousands of feet high smashed into the great protective array, generating explosive sounds of thunder. It was like the apocalypse was occurring at this moment!

Underneath that brutal golden beam of light, the red barrier fiercely twisted. With a deafening crackling sound, as if space itself was breaking apart, a shocking crack appeared in the barrier.

The great protective array was beginning to collapse!

“How can this be!?!?”

Xuan Yuqie's beautiful face immediately changed. Although she had guessed that the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array formation was basically unable to stop the barrage of the Giant Leviathan, it should be able to withstand two attacks at least. After all, the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array formation was several times more powerful than Divine Phoenix

Island's!

But now, with just a single attack it had begun to collapse!

This great protective array had not weakened. Then, there was only one other possibility. That was... underneath Lin Ming's control, the Giant Leviathan had become that much stronger!

As Xuan Yuqie realized this, her lips began to tremble. How? How could it be like this!?

Even if it were Xuan Wuji personally controlling the Giant Leviathan, he still wouldn't be able to achieve such devastating power!

Who was Lin Ming? Was he really only a mere 20 year old youth?

Why had he been able to erase Xuan Wuji's soul mark? Why, in just a short two and a half years, was he able to jump from the Xiantian realm to the Revolving Core realm? Why was he able to stimulate the potential of the Great Leviathan to such a degree?

In this moment, a deep sense of fear and helplessness emerged within Xuan Yuqie's heart. When she had first obtained the news that Lin Ming had returned, she had been secretly pleased with this sudden discovery. She had thought that she would finally be able to capture Lin Ming and torture all of the secrets out of his body. But now that she thought back on this, she realized just how laughable an idea this was.

Lin Ming was simply a vicious demon from hell. She didn't even try to evade him, but rather took the initiative to walk straight up to his doorstep.

“Sovereign Xuan, what is going on here? You must give me an explanation about how you lost the Giant Leviathan!” The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign breathlessly shouted at Xuan Yuqie. The Giant Leviathan was originally a beast that belonged to the Xuan Clan, so when they lost it, he had nothing he could say about it. But now the Giant Leviathan had actually ended up in Lin Ming's hands instead, and it was returning to the South Sea Demon Region as a fatal catastrophe. Naturally, she had to pay the price for this.

Xuan Yuqie grit her teeth and coldly said. “I will naturally be responsible for all of the consequences from this!”

“Responsible? Humph, just how will you be responsible?” The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's voice was cold. Because he was wearing a silver mask it was impossible to see his expression.

“Then what do you want? At this time do you want to fight with me?”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, she unconsciously released her aura. Her strength was above this masked Elder, so she simply didn't fear him at all.

At this time, the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array could no longer withstand this immense barrage. With a final cracking sound, the barrier completely disintegrated!

The massive space barrier turned into fragments in the skies. The leftover energy of the golden light beam fell onto the Netherworld Demon Mountain, crashing through the mountainside. The majestic palaces that were several hundreds of feet tall suddenly toppled to the ground, instantly turning into ruins!

“Hurry and run!”

It was unknown who shouted this out, but all of the Demon Region martial artists began to react at once. Everyone began fleeing in all directions!

What a joke. If even the great protective array shattered, just how could they resist the Giant Leviathan's attacks?

“Don't go off alone! Everyone listen to my command!” Xuan Yuqie shouted out in midair. However, these martial artists didn't even bother listening to her. Instead, they ran away at an even faster pace! The Demon Region martial artists always took themselves as the center of their every action. At this time, who could bother caring for others?

“Damnit!”

Xuan Yuqie cried out in consternation. If she was able to organize

everyone, then even if it was impossible to defeat the Giant Leviathan, everyone would still be able to retreat in a systematic order, thus preserving the greatest amount of strength for the entire South Sea Demon Region. But now, with everything and everyone in chaos, it would be easy to be chased down and killed!

And sure enough, Xuan Yuqie saw the Giant Leviathan rush forwards, already caught up to the rear of the escaping martial artists. Several thousand tentacles wantonly flew through the air, like countless massive snakes!

The massacre had begun!

# Chapter 685 – Today My Only Goal Is To Kill

---

As Xuan Yuqie saw this, her beautiful face paled. However, it was beyond her power to change anything.

The Giant Leviathan's one on one combat efficiency couldn't be considered too great. Its speed, both in attacks and movement, couldn't be considered too fast. Its attack methods were also too uniform and predictable. As long as one was prepared, then a high level powerhouse simply didn't need to fear the Giant Leviathan.

But, for killing martial artists below the Life Destruction realm, it was far too powerful. Especially in a massive group war!

To a second or third stage Life Destruction powerhouse, killing one or two late Revolving Core realm martial artists was no different than chopping vegetables. But, for them to kill a few hundred Revolving Core martial artists was impossible. Their opponents could simply flee in separate directions, and if they concentrated all of their efforts into a massive barrage of attacks, it was also possible to wound a Life Destruction master.

But for the Giant Leviathan, killing one or two late Revolving Core martial artists – or even killing several hundred late Revolving Core martial artists – was not difficult at all.

A Revolving Core martial artist couldn't be considered too rare within the South Sea Demon Region, but they also weren't some random cabbage. They were considered the backbone of the South Sea Demon Region.

As Xuan Yuqie saw Lin Ming drive the Giant Leviathan into the great fleeing groups of South Sea Demon Region martial artists, how could she not be anxious!

However, there was nothing she could do to the Giant Leviathan – it was simply too large! Its naturally tough skin was several hundred feet thick. Even if it lay there motionlessly and allowed Xuan Yuqie to hit it as she wished, she would still need an entire hour of effort to even scratch it!

This was the advantage of size. If the Giant Leviathan was scaled down to just 100 feet it still might be able to defeat a first stage Life Destruction Elder. But it was actually 90 miles long!

Woosh woosh woosh!

With the sound of air being sliced apart, several thousand tentacles lashed out like whips, enveloping all of the Demon Region martial artists that were escaping this calamity!

“Ahh!”

With a shrill scream, the first martial artist had his back pierced through with a tentacle. All of his organs were completely smashed apart as he instantly died on the spot!

That martial artist was only at the early Revolving Core. In front of the Giant Leviathan, he simply didn't have the ability to resist.

This martial artist was only the beginning. Follow this, countless screams of anguish and pain filled the air. Tentacles repeatedly pierced through the fleeing martial artists' bodies en masse, their blood filling the skies with crimson rain!

Even Life Destruction Elders like Xuan Yuqie were not ignored. Instead, they became the focus of Lin Ming's attention.

Bang!!

Several dozen tentacles rushed towards Xuan Yuqie before being sent flying away by her sword. At this time, her hair was a mess and her face was pale, "Lin Ming! I know you can hear me! Stop this immediately! Otherwise, I will have you regret everything!"

Xuan Yuqie angrily shouted. But after Lin Ming heard this, he actually smirked, smiling as if he had heard the funniest joke of all.

"Regret? On what basis will you have me regret anything? On what basis do I have to negotiate anything? When you used the Giant Leviathan to exterminate the Wartime Alliance and crush Divine Phoenix Island, did you give them a chance to negotiate?"

"Don't bother trying to delay for time so that your disciples and subordinates can escape; I am not so naïve. Today my goal here is clear, and that is to kill! If I see one then I will kill one, if I see two then I will kill two! All men and all women here today will die and not even dogs or chickens will be left alive! I want you to taste just what it feels like to have everything you've known be annihilated



by the Giant Leviathan! I will show you what retribution is, I will show you what an eye for an eye truly means! With the blood of your South Sea Demon Region's martial artists, I will soothe the souls of all the heroes that perished in the South Sea war!"

As Lin Ming spoke, killing intent erupted from his entire body. Within his spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit began to shake. His soul force divided into several thousand strands as it completely sunk into the Giant Leviathan's tentacles.

He launched a maddening all-out attack on the South Sea Demon Region martial artists!

Now he no longer aimed at the Life Destruction Elders and Xuan Yuqie. Dealing with a Life Destruction Elder would require hundreds or thousands of the tentacles, and even if he tried wholeheartedly, he still might not be able to kill Xuan Yuqie and that masked man. If those two second stage Life Destruction masters flew away at full speed, they might not be any slower than the Giant Leviathan.

Then, it was better and far more effective to kill the ordinary martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region.

Mobilizing his soul force to the limit and with his battle spirit and also Demonshine's support, this became a completely one-sided massacre. The South Sea Demon Region martial artists simply had no ability to resist. Some frightened Revolving Core martial artists tried to fight back against the tentacles, but none of their attacks were even able to make a dent in the tentacles' skin.

With Revolving Core martial artists like this, there was no need to even mention the Xiantian and Houtian martial artists. A single strike from a tentacle was enough to kill a Xiantian realm martial artist. As for Houtian realm martial artists, as long as they were even touched by the aftershocks of energy they would simply perish where they stood!

After giving up his attacks on the Life Destruction Elders, Lin Ming's killing efficiency multiplied!

In just a short 10 breaths of time, several hundred South Sea Demon Region martial artists died, their corpses turning into bits of ground meat and blood that covered the skies.

Those that died were all the core of the South Sea Demon Region and Lin Ming's killing speed was far too terrifying. Xuan Yuqie felt her heart chill. She had personally controlled the Giant Leviathan so she naturally knew just how difficult it was to manipulate the Giant Leviathan's tentacles. To use several thousand tentacles at once, every one required its own separate conscious control.

When Xuan Yuqie had controlled the Giant Leviathan's tentacles to try to just kill Lin Ming by himself, that was already very difficult. But now, Lin Ming was able to control thousands of tentacles to simultaneously chase after thousands of people!

The difficulty of this was several times higher than what she had ever done!

And now, in Lin Ming's hand, this horrifying scene played out in front of her. These several thousand tentacles seemed to have their own eyes, searching for targets on their own initiative. This accurate attack was enough to make one's scalp tingle with dread!

What sort of terrifying control was this?

“Just how can Lin Ming achieve this?” Xuan Yuqie's mind raced. Lin Ming's soul force was strong to the point of surpassing her understanding. She couldn't help but admit that in Lin Ming's hands, the strength that the Giant Leviathan was able to display was several times what she was capable of. This made her feel both incomparably depressed and incomparably spooked.

She had a faint feeling that ever since the war in the South Sea started, the greatest error that the South Sea Demon Region had ever made was not by the hands of others, but only by Lin Ming!

At this time, within the dimension of the Giant Leviathan, it wasn't as difficult as Xuan Yuqie imagined for Lin Ming to reach this degree of control. It was true that to simultaneously control thousands of tentacles together required a massive amount of soul force. But, Lin Ming's soul force was already extremely formidable to begin with. With Demonshine supporting him and also having a much more efficient way to control the Giant Leviathan, these three factors combined together allowed him to easily do this.

No matter how the Demon Region martial artists in the sky cried or wailed, Lin Ming didn't hesitate once in his actions. He simply didn't need to worry about killing all of these martial artists. When these Demon Region martial artists had chosen their path, they

were already destined to do evil in the world. Moreover, for them to be able to cultivate to such a degree, who knew how many women's Primordial Yin essence energy they had snatched away.

In the Seven Profound Valleys, a mere Acacia Faction had already ruined the lives of so many women, much less the South Sea Demon Region.

But, these little fish and shrimp underlings weren't the goal that Lin Ming most wanted to deal with. What Lin Ming wanted to affect was Xuan Wuji, who was in closed-door seclusion as he tried to reach the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

In the process of a human martial artist crossing the fourth stage of Life Destruction, they had to destroy their entire body and reform their Revolving Core after shattering it into fragments. In the first three stages of Life Destruction, one only had to destroy and reform the body. But, in the fourth stage of Life Destruction, one had to destroy and reform both the body and Revolving Core. This was an extremely dangerous process; the risks entailed were much higher than in the first three stages of Life Destruction. If there was even the slightest accident and any part of the process of reforming the body or Revolving Core failed, they would fail to cross Life Destruction, instantly perishing!

During this closed-door seclusion to cross the fourth stage of Life Destruction, Xuan Wuji was at his weakest period. As long as he could find Xuan Wuji during this time, then he could seriously wound him or even kill him.

Lin Ming was well aware that he wasn't able to stand against

Xuan Wuji when he was at his pinnacle. Once he successfully crossed the fourth stage of Life Destruction, then without a doubt he would organize a final total assault. Whether it was him or Divine Phoenix Island, everyone would be in danger.

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't sit back and let this happen. He had to take advantage of Xuan Wuji's weak period and strike the first blow. But, Xuan Wuji was exceptionally sly and cunning. Elder Sun and Elder Zhou simply didn't know where he was in closed-door seclusion, thus Lin Ming didn't even know where to begin looking for him.

If he couldn't find Xuan Wuji, then he would deal with his disciples and followers instead. Even if he couldn't force that old geezer out of seclusion, he would still be able to severely damage the South Sea Demon Region so they wouldn't be able to organize a large scale attack any time soon.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Several thousand tentacles were like pythons and they shot towards everyone. In just a short half incense stick of time, these tentacles had swallowed the lives of nearly a thousand Demon Region martial artists!

And this number would still rise! The Giant Leviathan's reputation as a top beast of war was not for nothing!

As the masked Elder saw this happen, his eyes grew so red from anger that they nearly popped out of his head. However, he simply

couldn't stop Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, you remember this old man!”

With a shout, the masked Elder left behind a threat and then flew away. He didn't do anything nor could he.

Lin Ming didn't even care about him. As a second stage Life Destruction master, even if Lin Ming tried his best to keep him here, it would be nearly impossible to stop him.

At this time, Lin Ming's speed of killing had slowed down. Most of the fleeing martial artists had escaped the hunting range of the Giant Leviathan and had reached relatively safe areas.

Because these South Sea Demon Region martial artists had scattered away, no matter how powerful Lin Ming was, it was impossible to keep them here.

Finding the direction with the highest concentration of martial artists, Lin Ming chased them for another hundred miles. After he killed another hundred martial artists, the battle began to wind down.

In this battle, the South Sea Demon Region martial artists had left more than 1000 corpses behind. This could be called an extremely desolate and tragic battle.

The most that died were the Houtian martial artists. They were

the slowest and also had the weakest defenses. Just by being caught up in the true essence energy fluctuations they were ground to death.

A good number of Revolving Core martial artists had died because Lin Ming had focused his attention on them. In fact, it wasn't much harder for the Giant Leviathan to kill Revolving Core martial artists than Xiantian martial artists. Thus, Lin Ming certainly decided to kill the more powerful ones.

In the air, the Life Destruction Elders of the South Sea Demon Region had already escaped. After Xuan Yuqie left behind some vicious curses, she also fled. They were all aware that none of them could defeat Lin Ming, thus, staying here just because they were emotionally affected by all this destruction was simply idiotic.

This caused Lin Ming to feel some regret. Originally, he had wanted to play a bit with the masked Elder or Xuan Yuqie; he wanted to see how good the Giant Leviathan was at killing second stage Life Destruction powerhouses.

The entire South Sea Demon Region was nearly emptied of people. But, Xuan Wuji hadn't shown up from start to finish.

Lin Ming didn't know whether that old fellow could see this scene. But if he could, what expression would he have? Would he be so apoplectically angry, frothing with so much hate that he failed to cross Life Destruction?

As Lin Ming maliciously thought this, he began to use the Giant

Leviathan to pick through all the corpses on the islands.

To more accurately say it, he was collecting their spatial rings.

The current Lin Ming no longer desired the wealth of these low level martial artists. But, although a single martial artist wasn't worth too much, 1000 of them was different.

There were also the buildings throughout the South Sea Demon Region. Lin Ming didn't plan on letting them go – he'd loot them too.



# Chapter 686 – Pillage

---

The Giant Leviathan's giant tentacles were like a group of locusts. Wherever they traveled, they caused ruination as they recklessly looted everything. All of the valuable things that could be taken away were carried off, and as for those that couldn't, they were destroyed with beams of energy.

In just a single incense stick of time, buildings throughout the entire South Sea Demon Region were put into an absolute mess with a massive number of palaces and temples destroyed, flames rising from all directions.

Beside Lin Ming, Lan Xin looked on, a bit dumbfounded. Killing, burning, robbing, this was no different than the actions of a bandit.

In truth, to Lin Ming, being cavalier or being a bandit, he really didn't care about either one. His actions and conduct were all dependent on being able to smoothly flow through his mind and not betraying his heart.

As for his methods, it was all the same to him. The grudge from the looting of Divine Phoenix Island naturally had to be returned, and in the most striking and graphic manner possible.

“Doesn't seem like there's anything valuable.” As Lin Ming was using the Giant Leviathan to devastate everything around him, he was also rapidly inspecting all the treasure he picked up. There wasn't anything of too much value. This was also within his

expectations. After all, those sorts of things were usually carried by the Life Destruction Elders, or placed in some secret hidden location so they were hard to find.

In the buildings of the South Sea Demon Region, besides some great array formations for training, there wasn't much else. Since these great array formations couldn't be taken away, Lin Ming simply destroyed them all. He didn't plan on leaving any resources to the enemy so that they would be able to recover in the future.

“Lin Ming, go to the medicine garden. There's definitely something good there.” Demonshine suddenly said.

“Okay!”

As Demonshine mentioned this, Lin Ming remembered that fresh medicinal plants couldn't be placed in a spatial ring; they had to be planted in a medicine garden with rich origin energy.

Spreading out his perception and with the support of the Giant Leviathan, Lin Ming was able to quickly scan every nook and cranny of the South Sea Demon Region. He soon discovered where the medicine garden was located.

There was a defensive array formation here. But for Lin Ming, ripping it open was easy.

Several dozen tentacles pulled up. In less than a quarter of an hour of time, the array formation was torn apart. This was because

Lin Ming cared about the plants within the medicine garden, thus his actions were much gentler. Otherwise, he would have broken through the array formation even quicker.

After the array formation was sundered, an incomparably pure origin energy dispersed into the air. As Lin Ming looked within, he soon found that the herbs in the medicine garden were much richer and more valuable than those of Divine Phoenix Island!

In addition, there were several herbs that were far more valuable than the Demon Heart Flower.

Because Lin Ming had inherited the memories of the Realm of the Gods' alchemist, he had a very keen understanding of the multitude of medicinal herbs. Within the Realm of the Gods was where the richest and rarest herbs were found. Everything within the Sky Spill Continent could be found within the Realm of the Gods, but not everything in the Realm of the Gods could be found in the Sky Spill Continent.

Lin Ming soon classified all of these herbs, dividing them by their different pharmacological properties. He plucked out some and organized them, and as for those medicinal herbs that were more difficult to transport, he directly ripped them up and sealed them in a jade box.

There were even some that could be transplanted. He picked them up with their soul and moved them into the Giant Leviathan's dimension.

Generally speaking, these herbs were all inferior to the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass that Lin Ming had found in the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, high level alchemy didn't always use high grade materials for medicines; sometimes low grade materials were required to direct, catalyze or support the medicine. Moreover, training as an alchemist wasn't done in one day – the start was the most difficult. At the beginning, Lin Ming would have to practice in order to lay down his foundation as an alchemist. At this time, using these medicines to practice his technique would be useful.

If the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region knew that Lin Ming was brutally and violently looting everything they had built as well as gathering all of the medicinal herbs they had planted with care, classifying them as 'low level medicinal herbs for practice' so that he could train his technique, then they would probably be vomiting blood in a mad rage.

In the South Horizon Region, all of these things were considered rare heavenly materials; even a Life Destruction Elder would covet them.

However, Lin Ming, who had seen the Nirvana Dragon Root and profound gold divine fruit, simply didn't care much for these things.

All the medicinal herbs, spatial rings, and other resources were completely taken away. Before leaving, Lin Ming also didn't forget to have the Giant Leviathan shoot out a massive beam of golden light to level the South Sea Demon Region's true essence stone mine.

Although it was impossible to destroy the true essence stone mine like this, it was still enough to bother them. They wouldn't be able to mine anything for at least an entire month.

With all of this completed, Lin Ming controlled the Giant Leviathan and slowly flew away from the South Sea Demon Region.

.....

The South Sea Demon Region had lost over a thousand martial artists in a single day. As for Xuan Yuqie and the many other Elders, they fled deep into the South Sea. The news of the South Sea Demon Region being pillaged soon spread throughout the entire South Horizon Region.

At first, people couldn't believe this incredible news. But later, the information became increasingly intense and known. The South Sea Demon Region didn't come out with any intention of clarifying this issue, and not just that, but they also had their outer encirclement troops retreat, making a few threats before retreating back deep into the South Sea.

Suddenly, all of the aggression and activities of the South Sea Demon Region within the South Horizon Region came to a complete halt.

The entire time, this was just too difficult to believe!

If in the past the South Sea Demon Region was known as being so extraordinarily powerful that no one was able to bring up a thought of resistance, then that South Sea Demon Region had now become a joke. Someone killed their way into their sect, breaking apart their great protective array, razing all their buildings to the ground, recklessly looting all of their resources and scorching everything else. The martial artists of the sect didn't even have pots to use. This was something that would normally occur only at the annihilation of a sect.

If the South Sea Demon Region didn't have Xuan Wuji still supporting them from his closed-door seclusion, then their entire sect might have really been stamped out of existence!

It was simply unimaginable that all of this was done by a single youth!

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, The Xing couple inevitably heard this news.

“Husband, what do you think?”

Within a magnificent temple, a woman in a white robe said as she closed an ancient book, placing it on a table.

She looked to be around 40 years old, but one couldn't find any weariness of time on her face. Her features were beautiful and her body was mature and full, containing all sorts of subtle flavors.

This woman was one of the Twin Stars of the Yin Yang Profound Palace, Xing Can. She was the wife of Xing Ji. Together, the two of them held the position of the Yin Yang Profound Palace's Palace Masters.

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, many positions were held by couples. This was because of the unique features of their cultivation methods. Often, a couple would train and fight together. Only this way, by combining their powers, would they be able to display their mightiest combat strength. Thus, whether it was training, missions, or adventuring, both husband and wife would often go together.

Xing Ji said, "This youth must be a peak Emperor level talent from one of the four Divine Kingdoms. Perhaps he might even be a Divine Kingdom's Crown Prince. I estimate that he is 30 years old. I heard his cultivation is at the Revolving Core realm, so I assume he must be mid or late Revolving Core. For him to have such a cultivation at this age, this is truly horrifying! This is a cultivation that only a peak Emperor level talent can have."

"As for his combat strength, there is no need to speak of it further. He can kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse! Not defeat, but kill! For someone at the Revolving Core to jump ranks and fight a Life Destruction master is far more difficult than someone at the Xiantian realm fighting someone at the Revolving Core realm. This person is without a doubt from a Holy Land and he also must have top resources and supreme masters supporting him from behind. His talent in itself is amazing, and he might possibly be one of the most extraordinary geniuses that the entire Sky Spill Continent has seen in the last thousand years."

“Husband, why do you think this sort of character would come to our South Horizon Region?”

After Xing Can obtained this news, this was her greatest doubt. The mainland of the Sky Spill Continent was shaped like a cake with its center dug out; it was in the shape of a ring. The center was an inland sea, and this sea was surrounded by four Divine Kingdoms.

Because most of the landmarks were focused in this central region, this area had a much higher concentration of spiritual mountains and forests.

The more spiritual lands there were, the thicker and purer the heaven and earth origin energy was, and the more heavenly materials and true essence stone mines there were. Most of the Holy Lands were also located in this area.

By all reasoning, a favored son of heaven of the Divine Kingdoms would not come to the South Horizon Region. This area was simply too remote. The only exception was the inexplicable appearance and rise of Silent Demon Emperor City three thousand years ago. Somehow, the Netherworld Great Emperor had appeared with strength equal to a Divine Kingdom Holy Land's Holy Lord. This was the only time that the South Horizon Region ever entered into the vision of the four Divine Kingdoms. For the rest of the time, the South Horizon Region was nothing at all to the four Divine Kingdoms; it was the difference between a great city and a small mountain village.

This was also reason that the South Sea Demon Region wanted to



gradually make their way back towards the mainland – the resources at the sea were always somewhat barren.

“Is he here for adventure and experience? Or has he taken a liking to something from the South Sea Demon Region and wants to steal it?” Xing Can said after deeply thinking about it.

“How could he want to steal anything? I doubt there is anything within the entire South Horizon Region that would enter into the eyes of such a son of heaven. My guess is that there is some old hatred or revenge involved. 3000 years ago, the Netherworld Great Emperor needed the young girls with special physiques in order to further cultivate his devil arts. But after looking and looking, he finally ended up laying his eyes on the youngest daughter of one of the four Divine Kingdom’s Holy Lords. He actually planned on secretly kidnapping her; what a crazy idea that was. Finally, this matter was exposed and the Netherworld Great Emperor was killed by the combined forces of several Holy Lords.

“From then on, the South Sea Demon Region was not welcomed by the Divine Kingdoms. It was just that the other party had withdrawn to the South Sea and kept a low profile, and the rank of their sect wasn’t high either so the Divine Kingdoms simply didn’t bother to deal with them. Now that they wish to re-enter the Sky Spill Continent and invade the South Horizon Region once more, there must be some individuals in the Divine Kingdoms that aren’t too happy about this. Perhaps a Crown Prince from one of the Divine Kingdoms has chosen this period to go out and gain some experience. He could annihilate the South Sea Demon Region at the same time while he journeyed around. It appears that this mysterious youth truly is a young dragon! He is far too horrifying!”

“Mm, Husband, what you said is reasonable, it should be mostly true. What should we do now?”

“We don’t do anything. The affairs of the Divine Kingdoms are not something we can meddle with. It’s better for us to seize this opportunity to contact this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince. If we can be on good terms with him, then we will have infinite profit in the future.” Xing Ji said.

“Although you say that, for a low level fifth-grade sect like us to know such a character is far too difficult!” Xing Can shook her head. How could she not want to form a good relationship with a Divine Kingdom?

“Everything depends on your own effort, there is always a chance. If we don’t try, then we’ll never know what could have happened. Speaking of this, Divine Phoenix Island, Dire Space Sect, Supreme Mystery Temple, and the seven sects of the Five Element Region really ran into a stroke of good fortune. With a Divine Kingdom helping them, they might not even need to worry about the South Sea war anymore.

As Xing Ji mentioned Divine Phoenix Island, Xing Can’s eyes brightened. “Husband, that’s right, how has the research into extracting the Vermillion Birds’ blood essence and integrating it into our bodies been going?”

The reason that Yin Yang Profound Palace was willing to take in Divine Phoenix Island was in large part because of the two Vermillion Birds. They wanted to use the blood essence of these Vermillion Birds to enhance their own cultivation methods. If the

Vermillion Birds worked out, then they would continue to test with the Blue Luan.

As Xing Can mentioned this, Xing Ji's face darkened. "That old hag Mu Fengxian, she would rather die than reveal the secret skill to transplant the Vermillion Bird blood essence."

## Chapter 687 – Paying Respects to the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

---

It had to be known that once a martial artist lost their blood essence, it was extremely difficult to restore it. Thus, any secret skill related to the restoration or supplementation of blood essence was extremely precious.

As for Divine Phoenix Island's method of transplanting a Vermillion Bird's blood essence, that was obtained from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, thus only high level figures from Divine Phoenix Island knew it.

In fact, the founding ancestor of Divine Phoenix Island was only a mortal; she had no relation with the Ancient Phoenix Clan. She accidentally stumbled into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and there she obtained various cultivation methods and secret skills, and used these treasures to form Divine Phoenix Island.

So theoretically speaking, a martial artist from any other sect could have Vermillion Bird blood essence transplanted into them, and this would increase their talent in fire-attribute cultivation methods.

Thus, Yin Yang Profound Palace had always coveted this secret technique. When Divine Phoenix Island was in its glory days, Yin Yang Profound Palace wasn't willing to pay such a steep price and attack Divine Phoenix Island to obtain this secret technique, but now that Divine Phoenix Island was in trouble, they began to move towards this objective.

Yin Yang Profound Palace focused on water and fire cultivation methods, it was extremely similar to the ice and fire cultivation methods that Divine Phoenix Island practiced. In particular, the fire-attribute cultivation method was especially similar. Thus, they first planned to obtain the two Vermillion Birds first and take out a part of their blood essence to see whether or not they could use it to increase the fusion compatibility of their Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation methods.

This was the most fundamental reason that they were willing to bear the pressure of the South Sea Demon Region and take in Divine Phoenix Island.

Xing Can said, "Husband, we must hurry. If the South Sea Demon Region is subdued by this Divine Kingdom then we won't have any more bargaining chips in our hand. When that happens, Divine Phoenix Island might not be willing to submit to us."

"Humph, that might not be true! After this war, Divine Phoenix Island's strength has plummeted. Mu Fengxian has already injured her life source, and even though she is still at the first stage of Life Destruction, the truth is that her strength is now only comparable to the late Revolving Core. As for Mu Yuhuang, she just recently passed into the first stage of Life Destruction and her cultivation is unstable. With most of their Revolving Core Elders already fallen, Divine Phoenix Island can now only be compared to an upper middle fourth-grade sect. They aren't much better than the seven sects of the Five Element Region. They simply do not have the ability to compete with us. Now that they've come to my Yin Yang Profound Palace, they can forget any thoughts of leaving!"

As Xing Ji spoke he sneered, subconsciously gripping his palms together as if he wanted to completely control Divine Phoenix Island in his hand.

As Xing Can saw Xing Ji's confident appearance, she said, "Husband, with you presiding over the situation I can rest assured that Divine Phoenix Island's secret skills will be handled. As for establishing a good relationship with that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, I shall handle that..."

As Xing Can spoke, the sound of footsteps suddenly rang out in the temple along with a clear voice, "Great Father, Great Mother, what are you talking about?"

The one speaking was a tall and heroic-looking youth. He was handsome and his eyebrows shot up like swords. He was Xing Ji and Xing Can's most talented son... Xing Yang.

After Xing Yang was identified as having the potential to become an Emperor level powerhouse, the Xing couple had placed all of their high expectations on him. They were counting on him to help Yin Yang Profound Palace rise to a Holy Land in the future.

"Yang'er, you've come at just the right time. Have you heard about the pillaging of the South Sea Demon Region?"

"Your child has certainly heard about such a grand matter. To think that all of this came from the hands of a mysterious youth is truly unbelievable!"

“Mm, that’s right. Your father and I suspect that he is a Divine Kingdom’s Crown Prince. If you can be on good terms with him, that would be very advantageous for you and us. Yang’er, I plan on taking you to meet him. Your talent is truly extraordinary, but it may still be too difficult to compare with him, so just make sure that you don’t show any arrogance or foolishness in front of him. Your age should be close to his. As long as you can manage to become friends with him, your struggle to become a Peerless Emperor in 100 years will be much easier!”

As Xing Can spoke, Xing Yang’s eyes began to shine. Although he was an Emperor level talent, it wasn’t true that any Emperor level talent could become a Peerless Emperor. One needed to constantly push their potential to the limits, finding resources even in the face of absolute danger. When one could combine lucky chances, destiny, effort, and all other factors together, then it was possible to become a true Emperor powerhouse.

If he exhausted his potential or encountered an accident, he might fail.

But if he knew that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, it would be different!

Over these years, Xing Yang had already been considered and raised as the future successor of his sect. As he diligently trained his cultivation, he was also well versed in human nature and befriending others.

He believed that as long as he had a chance, he would certainly be able to win the favor of that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

At that time, if he had the chance to go to a Divine Kingdom Holy Land and adventure for a bit, then the benefits could be imagined!

Thinking of this, an excited light shined in Xing Yan's eyes. He said, "What Great Mother says is true. In this world, there is always a higher mountain and a higher heaven. Your child has always understood this truth. I shall go with Great Mother, and if I have a chance to befriend that Crown Prince, then I certainly will not miss it."

"Mm, good, truly worthy of being my son!" Xing Ji laughed. This South Sea war was definitely a great opportunity for their Yin Yang Profound Palace. Not only would they soon be able to obtain the secret skills of Divine Phoenix Island, but they could even befriend a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

If they could succeed in both of these goals, Yin Yang Profound Palace would rise yet another step!

As Yin Yang Profound Palace was drawing up their grand plans, Divine Phoenix Island was also considering the future of their sect.

Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang were both characters that had lived for several hundred years, so how could they not have seen through Yin Yang Profound Palace's tricks? It was just that before, under duress, they had no choice but to strike a bargain with Yin Yang Profound Palace and crawl into the snake's den, counting on



the eventual day when Lin Ming would return.

There were still seven more years from the 10 years' time that Lin Ming had promised. But before that, there had already been a favorable chance in the South Sea war. Now Divine Phoenix Island had to consider their next step.

At this time, in a courtyard of Divine Phoenix Island's temporary residence, there was a long and wide table, where seven or eight key figures of Divine Phoenix Island were seated.

"Sect Master, Master Ancestor." A blue-clothed woman politely bowed as she sat down. She was Mu Bingyun, having just returned from the Five Element Region.

"Bingyun, about those rumors of the South Sea Demon Region, how exaggerated are they?"

The high level figures of Divine Phoenix Island were all hidden within Yin Yang Profound Palace, and it was hard for them to know what was happening in the outside world. A great deal of their information was sent to them by Mu Bingyun.

Before, when that mysterious youth had completely annihilated the South Sea Demon Region's Divine Phoenix Island Branch with just his own strength, that already seemed quite exaggerated.

Afterwards, Xuan Yuqie had led three other great Elders along with the Giant Leviathan to personally go out on a hunting

mission. However, they had suffered a disastrous defeat. Not only had they lost the Giant Leviathan, but two Elders also died. Finally, the entire South Sea Demon Region was looted and pillaged by the mysterious youth.

This was truly incomprehensible.

This was the same as the mysterious youth sweeping out the entire South Sea Demon Region with just his strength alone, completely routing Xuan Yuqie and the other Life Destruction Elders there as if they were nothing more than dead dogs. With the massive number of martial artists that were slain throughout all of the South Sea Demon Region, they were fortunate that Xuan Wuji was still alive, otherwise the entire sect might have already collapsed because of this.

This was simply a fairytale-like legend – it was unimaginable. As for that mysterious youth, his identity became increasingly obscure even as his fame rose to unprecedented levels. It could be said that now, in the entire Five Element Region, South Horizon Region, Profound Province, or other lands nearby, there was no high ranking sect that didn't know of this youth. Perhaps even the Great Zen Region had learned of this too.

“Reporting to Sect Master, my words are not exaggerated at all.”

“Mm...” Mu Yuhuang nodded. With the appearance of this mysterious youth, the landscape of the entire South Sea war had rapidly changed. This was also a favorable turning point in their Divine Phoenix Island's fate.

“Now we only do not know when Xuan Wuji will leave seclusion. Xuan Wuji is the South Sea Demon Region’s very soul. Although the South Sea Demon Region has suffered great losses this time, they will never perish as long as Xuan Wuji is still living. The South Sea Demon Region still holds absolute dominance with him, and we still have no choice but to stay in Yin Yang Profound Palace and be pressed down by others.”

As Yin Yang Profound Palace was mentioned, a trace of grief and pain flashed through Mu Qianyu’s eyes. At the time, under the pressure for her sect to survive, Divine Phoenix Island had no option but to yield to certain conditions. Her Saint Beast, Little Flame, was now in the hands of Yin Yang Profound Palace. Now that they had taken Little Flame, it certainly wasn’t to raise it but rather to steal its Vermillion Bird blood essence.

As Mu Qianyu thought of this, it felt as if a heated knife was twisting in her heart. Although Little Flame was a contract beast, to Mu Qianyu, Little Flame was no different from her sister. To sacrifice Little Flame to secure Divine Phoenix Island’s continued future would always be one of Mu Qianyu’s inner demons.

As Mu Yuhuang saw Mu Qianyu’s expression, she sighed and said, “Yu’er, don’t worry. Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Palace Masters made an oath on their heart of martial arts that they wouldn’t harm Little Flame’s life. It... it’s just... they are taking some of Little Flame’s blood essence...”

As Mu Yuhuang spoke to her, she also felt sad. Her contract beast Firespine was taken away too. Whether it was to a martial

artist or Vermillion Bird, blood essence was extremely precious; it wasn't possible to lose too much. If one did lose too much, not only would one's cultivation drop but it would also shorten their life.

“Us seeking asylum in Yin Yang Profound Palace was pure wishful thinking to begin with; we always had to pay some price. We can only hope that this mysterious youth will cause the South Sea Demon Region to suffer great losses and give us some respite. We must persist until Lin Ming returns. But in the meantime, we'll have to patiently endure these coming years. We simply have no other choice.”

“Mm, I understand.” Mu Qianyu reluctantly smiled, motioning that she was feeling better.

Mu Yuhuang sighed and no longer said anything.

As the high level figures of Divine Phoenix Island were gathered together to discuss their sect's future, at the great temple of Yin Yang Profound palace, a high-grade earth-step spirit boat had quietly been launched. After passing through several transmission arrays, it shot straight towards the South Sea. The people on board this boat were the mother and son, Xing Can and Xing Yan.

They planned to go to towards Divine Phoenix Island to pay a visit to this 'Divine Kingdom Crown Prince'.

However, someone was already much closer. As Yin Yang Profound Palace set out, the scouting party of Storm Valley had already landed on Divine Phoenix Island and was planning to greet

Lin Ming.

“Storm Valley’s Free Wind Temple Protector requests an audience with the great expert!”

Seeing there was no response, the scout repeated himself. Although his voice was vigorous, his heart was beating like a wild drum. This other force was an existence able to kill off a first stage Life Destruction master and there was also no telling how great of a status he had. This scout was only a Protector of a small fourth-grade sect. In the eyes of people like this, he was no different from an ant. Was his abrupt arrival and greeting causing displeasure?

If this person had an eccentric personality, then they might ignore them or even play around with them.

After several breaths of time passed, a young man’s voice suddenly echoed out from all directions.

“Storm Valley? Is it the Five Element Region’s seven sects’ Storm Valley?”

# Chapter 688 – Towards the Yin Yang Profound Palace

---

Mm?

The four scouts from Storm Valley were shocked. This mysterious youth actually knew of their Storm Valley?

This other character was likely some Divine Kingdom Crown Prince or a Holy Land's Holy Son. As for them, they were from a tiny fourth-grade sect that didn't even have a Life Destruction Elder. In front of a Holy Land, they were just a little ant.

In addition, the Five Element Region was far, far off from the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. By all reasoning, they would barely even know of them. But, they never imagined that this mysterious youth would speak of their Storm Valley.

Could it be that the Five Element Region's seven sects were somewhat famous?

Thinking of this, the four scouts' hearts filled with bravado. "Reporting to Great Expert, us four are indeed from the Five Element Region's Storm Valley."

There was silence for a moment, and then, "Enter!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The four scouts were overjoyed as they began to respectfully walk through the entrance.

As the four of them passed through rows of ruining buildings, they finally made it to a great temple. Upon entering this temple, they could feel a powerful energy emanating from within.

As they entered the temple, they could see a black-clothed youth appear in front of them, his arms crossed behind his back.

This black-clothed youth seemed like a straight and sharp spear. He emitted an extraordinary aura, and all of the heaven and earth origin energy within the temple seemed to be stirred up by him in a completely spontaneous manner. As for the black-robed youth, he simply didn't seem to notice or care.

This degree of cultivation was truly shocking.

The black-clothed youth turned around, his eyes sweeping across the Storm Valley symbols on the four scouts' clothes. Then, he slowly said, "Storm Valley... if I remember correctly, you have a chief disciple named Zhan Yunjian?"

Hearing Lin Ming mention Zhan Yunjian's name, the four scouts were surprised. It was already unbelievable to them that he knew of their Storm Valley, but he even knew of Zhan Yunjian. How was this possible?

“Great Expert knows my sect’s Little Valley Master?”

“Just a brief meeting.” Lin Ming casually said.

“Great Expert truly has an extraordinary memory.” The four Protectors didn’t recognize Lin Ming. They only assumed that Lin Ming had a near-photographic memory, able to recall any small fish and shrimp-like characters that he met. To them, it wasn’t strange that a top talent would be able to do this.

However, when did the Little Valley Master ever have a chance to see this great expert?

As the four Protectors were thinking about this, Lin Ming said, “Do you four know where the survivors of Divine Phoenix Island have gone?”

“Divine Phoenix Island?”

The four Protectors were surprised. Why would this great expert care about Divine Phoenix Island’s survivors?

They didn’t dare to ask such a question. They bowed and said, “Reporting to Great Expert, this little servant does not know where Divine Phoenix Island has gone now. But, my sect’s Valley Master and Little Valley Master should know.”

Lin Ming didn’t have much hope in the beginning, but after hearing the four Protectors say this, a sharp light shined in his



eyes.

“Ask for me!” These few words were said with a tone that brooked no doubt. It was simply impossible to defy this youth’s will.

The four Protectors didn’t ask why Lin Ming wanted this information. They respectfully said, “Yes Sir, this little servant will take at most one hour of time.”

Divine Phoenix Island was extremely far away from the Five Element Region. Information had to cross through the transmission arrays of several relay stations. A round trip for a message would take at least one hour.

After Zhan Yunjian received the news from this sound transmission of the four scouts, he was also shocked. He didn’t ask why this mysterious youth wanted this information either.

He naturally didn’t dare to be negligent towards this mysterious youth’s question. Not to mention what sort of mighty background this person might have, it was simply impossible for such a character to covet anything from Divine Phoenix Island. Even if he was harboring some evil intent, Zhan Yunjian would still honestly tell him of Divine Phoenix Island’s situation. What a joke. This person had nearly completely annihilated the South Sea Demon Region, much less their tiny Storm Valley. Zhan Yunjian feared that even a little sneeze from the Giant Leviathan would leave their entire sect in ruins.

“Yin Yang Profound Palace?”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose. He had just obtained information that Divine Phoenix Island had gone to Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Lin Ming had only heard about this sect in passing before. As for its peculiarities or even where it was, he didn’t know any of this at all. He casually traced his spatial ring and tossed two treasures towards the four scouts.

“Lead me there.”

The two treasures shined with a cold light. As the four scouts caught them in their hands, they found that they were a sword and a spear.

As soon as the four scouts discovered the rank of these two treasures, they were immediately left dumbfounded.

High-grade earth-step treasures!

Generally speaking, within the South Horizon Region, Five Element Region, and surrounding area, only a large sect’s Sovereign or Life Destruction Elder would have the qualifications to wield a high-grade earth-step treasure. Even someone as illustrious as Nanyun Wang only used a peak high-grade earth-step treasure.

As for a heaven-step treasure, within the entire South Horizon

Region only Xuan Wuji was known to have one.

For two high-grade earth-step treasures to be so casually awarded to them for just a little bit of information and to lead the way, this was something that would only happen in a dream.

It had to be known that these four scouts' cultivations were at the extreme Xiantian. A single one of these treasures was several times their entire net worths combined.

“Yes... yes... this little servant will report to Storm Valley.” The four scouts stuttered. This youth was truly worthy of being a great figure from the four Divine Kingdoms. Just a casual reward was with high-grade earth-step treasures.

On the trip to Ying Yang Profound Palace from the South Sea, one had to pass through multiple transmission arrays. This was only possible if one applied for passes from the involved sects. This was also the reason that Lin Ming brought the four scouts as guides. He was impatient to return; he wanted to see Mu Qianyu even if it was a quarter of an hour earlier.

As for those two high-grade earth-step treasures that Lin Ming tossed out, he was already extraordinarily rich to begin with. And now that he had also looted the South Sea Demon Region, those two treasures were simply a drop in the ocean. Let alone high-grade earth-step treasures, even low-grade heaven-step treasures didn't concern Lin Ming that much.

In response to Lin Ming's request, Storm Valley immediately

wrote an order so that he could use all transmission arrays as he pleased.

Lin Ming took out a spirit boat. As the four Storm Valley scouts began boarding the boat, they discovered Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Before this, they had felt several powerful energies besides Lin Ming in the temple. Now, this was the first time that they had seen just who these energies belonged too.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin were all the favored of heaven, each being a high Emperor level talent. As the four scouts from Storm Valley saw them, they all sucked in a deep breath.

Without a doubt, these were all proud sons of heaven and arrogant daughters of Divine Kingdoms.

‘The four Divine Kingdoms truly live up to their reputation.’

The four scouts thought to themselves. All of these four outstanding youths were dragons and phoenixes; when had such a scene ever appeared in the South Horizon Region?

Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin smiled at the four scouts. Like this, the spirit boat embarked on its journey.

The speed of a peak high-grade earth-step spirit boat was close to a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Behind them, Divine Phoenix Island rapidly shrank. Soon, all they saw was the vast and endless sea.

Looking at the passing scenery around him, Lin Ming's heart filled with emotion.

After two and a half years, he was finally returning home.

.....

As Lin Ming was leaving Divine Phoenix Island, above the ruins of the South Sea Demon Region, Xuan Yuqie and the remaining Elders were floating high above. As for the other martial artists, they were slowly trickling back in.

Xuan Yuqie was known as the woman with a thousand flavors, but now, all she showed was a gloomy anger, her face twisted to the point that it seemed she would leak water.

As she looked over the palaces that were destroyed, the great training arrays that had collapsed, her milk-white breasts heaved with anger and her entire body trembled.

When Lin Ming invaded them, he shattered their great protective array, recklessly killed off their disciples, and then even pillaged all of the buildings, looting everything he could and using the Giant Leviathan to raze the rest to the ground.

This included even the Netherworld medicine garden that the South Sea Demon Region had spent countless resources and over a thousand years of effort to establish. Because everyone had been panicking and in a hurry, they hadn't had the time to move all the precious medicines away. The result was that they had all been taken or destroyed by Lin Ming!

If she could endure this, what could she not endure?

“Lin Ming!” Xuan Yuqie clenched her teeth, her fists clenched until her knuckles turned white. “You have gone too far! I will remember this hatred! If I don't take revenge, then I shall never rest!”

Beside Xuan Yuqie, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was emitting a thick killing intent from his entire body. Because he was wearing a mask, no one could see his expression.

“Sovereign Xuan! All of this is thanks to you!” The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign coldly humphed. His descendants had also perished in this catastrophe. If it wasn't for Xuan Yuqie losing the Giant Leviathan, how could this have happened?

Xuan Yuqie angrily glared at the masked Elder, her eyes nearly spitting fire. “Zhou Yantian, I have already said it. I will bear all responsibility for this. Once Elder Xuan leaves his seclusion, I will take the appropriate punishment! But now is not the time to fight!”

“Humph!” Zhou Yantian coldly snorted and said no more.

“Take a count of everyone!” Xuan Yuqie breathlessly said to a Life Destruction Elder.

“Everyone’s already been counted for. The number of disciples that died in the Giant Leviathan’s raid is about 1200 to 1300. In addition, 800 to 900 disciples ran away and still haven’t returned...”

The Life Destruction Elder ruefully smiled. The South Sea Demon Region had simply been invaded too suddenly. Most of the disciples didn’t even know what was happening. All they thought was that the South Sea Demon Region had managed to provoke some immeasurable power, and now that power came to exterminate them all, and they had managed to escape this calamity with a stroke of luck. If they returned to the South Sea Demon Region then they might have to suffer a similar fate once again. That time, their luck might not be so great. Since it was so, it was better to just leave.

In any case, for most of them, as long as they didn’t try to further their cultivation, then with their strength they could live extravagantly for a lifetime.

Even the worst martial artists with a Houtian realm or Pulse Condensation period cultivation, if they went to a small mortal country they would still be able to receive a luxurious reception. After all, relative to mortals, they were considered top geniuses.

“I know!”

Xuan Yuqie took a deep breath. The result wasn't beyond her anticipation. Lin Ming was just too fateful! Because of that raid, the backbone of the South Sea Demon Region had weakened by 30 to 40%. Moreover, nearly all of their sect's resources were destroyed.

Reconstructing the buildings and mines wouldn't be too difficult. But, the medicine garden, training arrays, testing arrays, any of those would consume a massive amount of time and resources to rebuild.

She knew that in truth, Xuan Wuji had been paying attention to the situation in the South Sea Demon Region the entire time. She had no idea if he had been affected in his seclusion. If he really was affected even just a little bit, the losses would be difficult to measure.



## Chapter 689 – Meeting Once Again

---

Deep within the South Sea, 70 thousand feet underwater in an underground trench, the water pressure reached a terrifying level. Even a Revolving Core master would find it difficult to protect themselves with their true essence this far down. If their bodily true essence were to be broken then their mortal body would suddenly be exposed to the entirety of this horrible pressure. Their eardrums would shatter, their organs would rupture, their heart would stop beating, and finally they would die a miserable death.

In the deepest parts of this trench, there was an artificial space opened up by an array formation. A thick shield of energy isolated all of the seawater outside. A dim light emanated from here, seeming particularly bright in the deep darkness.

Within this space, a man was sitting naked on a bed made of polar jade, in deep meditation.

His left and right arms had been turned into ground meat and even his bones were shattered into a fine powder. But, what was strange was that there wasn't any blood leaking out.

If one looked carefully, one could see that this ground meat was actually constantly growing. From its mashed face, it slowly reorganized itself...

This was Xuan Wuji, who was currently crossing the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

He had now been in closed-door seclusion for over four months. His legs and waist were already completed, and now he was in the process of reforming his arms. As for the riskiest part of breaking his core, he still hadn't yet started that.

Although Xuan Wuji was in closed-door seclusion, he was still well aware of every matter occurring in the South Sea Demon Region!

At the time when Lin Ming had ridden the Giant Leviathan and shattered apart the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array, recklessly killed the Demon Region disciples and even pillaging and razing all of the South Sea Demon Region's resources, all of this had fallen into Xuan Wuji's eyes.

Even though Xuan Wuji was deep in meditation, he was still angry to the point of nearly vomiting blood!

The anger had nearly led to a mental breakdown, causing the fires of anger to reverse the energy in his body and have him fail in breaking through the fourth stage of Life Destruction. At the time, he was fortunate that he was in the relatively simple process of reforming his arms. Xuan Wuji had crossed through Life Destruction three times before and thus he was very familiar with restructuring his flesh. Only by suppressing this sudden anger had he been able to safely continue through Life Destruction. If Lin Ming had crashed into the South Sea Demon Region during the more dangerous reconstruction of his core, then he might have fallen into depravity because of this.

Xuan Wuji certainly wouldn't let the situation in the South Sea

Demon Region affect his fourth stage of Life Destruction. After that event, he simply shut off all his perception, completely focusing on passing through this process. Now, his two arms were already 30% complete. In 10 more days he would finish, and then he would begin the most difficult process of remolding his core.

“Lin Ming, I will tear you to pieces, suck out your marrow, and refine your soul!”

.....

Over one million miles away, Yin Yang Profound Palace –

A spirit boat slowly descended. Atop this spirit boat was the mother and child, Xing Can and Xing Yang. They had originally wanted to go and meet the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, but soon after they embarked they had received the news that this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had already left Divine Phoenix Island.

And looking at their direction they had flown towards the Five Element Region. Divine Phoenix Island and the Profound Province were separated with the Five Element Region in between them. In order to reach the Profound Province, one first had to cross through the Five Element Region.

After having the initiative taken by someone else, Xing Can and her son were both feeling depressed.

Xing Yang Said, “Great Mother, if the Five Element Region’s Storm Valley first contacted the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, what sort of flowery sweet words did they use? Why would the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince leave Divine Phoenix Island now? Is he planning on going to Storm Valley?”

“Humph, such a small sect like Storm Valley is even inferior to Divine Phoenix Island; how could they possibly have anything that can attract his attention? The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince must have come to the South Horizon Region to accomplish some special goal. If we can learn what this goal is and help him complete it, then perhaps we might be able to win his favor.”

In Xing Can’s opinion, there was naturally no need to question the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince’s strength. But, if there was some information he needed or if he was looking for something in particular, then it was best to ask a sect that had been established for thousands of years in the south of Sky Spill Continent.

If they could be this sect, then that would be perfect.

“We’ll put that matter of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince on hold for now. First, we must tighten our grip on Divine Phoenix Island.”

As Divine Phoenix Island was brought up, Xing Yang’s eyes flashed with an avaricious light. He had long desired Divine Phoenix Island’s secret technique of transplanting Vermillion Bird blood essence.

In addition, there was also Mu Qianyu's pure Vermillion Bird bloodline in her body. Rumors said that if a man took the crown of her virginity, then they would be able to inherit a part of her Primordial Yin Energy, transforming it and obtaining an extremely pure Vermillion Bird bloodline.

Xing Yang naturally cultivated in fire. If the Vermillion Bird bloodline could increase his talent then how could he not be tempted?

In addition, Xing Yang always had thoughts to move onto Mu Bingyun. Mu Bingyun had the Blue Luan bloodline with her. This was useless to Xing Yang, but Yin Yang Profound Palace's secret skills focused on Yin and Yang complementing each other. If Mu Bingyun was willing to double cultivate with him, then he wouldn't mind marrying Mu Bingyun and taking her as his wife.

First he would have relations with Mu Qianyu, and after taking her Vermillion Bird bloodline he would then double cultivate ice and fire with Mu Bingyun, using her Yin physique to have his Yin Yang Profound Law reach large success. This would be the best outcome possible.

However, as he thought about it, Mu Yuhuang would never allow either of these two situations to occur. The Mu sisters would be the future leaders of Divine Phoenix Island. How could they possibly be married into Yin Yang Profound Palace and become their little princesses?

Originally, Divine Phoenix Island and Yin Yang Profound Palace had signed a 100 year agreement. Xing Yang had been willing to

allow the situation develop at a slow simmer, having his plans come to fruition a bit at a time. But now, because of the appearance of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, the war in the South Sea had changed far too much. Once the South Sea Demon Region was defeated, they would no longer have any chips to threaten Divine Phoenix Island with. This made him feel a sense of impending crisis.

There was such a beautiful dish in front of him, and yet he could only see it and not eat it. How could Xing Yang be willing to accept this?

.....

At night, the fall wind was chilling and desolate. All around the Yin Yang Profound Mountains, lights glittered. And south of the Yin Yang Profound Mountains was a low mountain range called the Little Swallow Mountains.

This was the spiritual land that Yin Yang Profound Island had rented to Divine Phoenix Island.

A sect didn't necessarily need palaces, practice arrays, and in a short time, even the support of a true essence stone mine or medicine garden.

But no matter what, there was one thing that they couldn't be without.

That was... a spiritual land.

This so-called spiritual land was an area where heaven and earth origin energy gathered. There were many Houtian martial artists that would rather indenture themselves into a large sect than to go to a mortal country as a general or ruler. This was all because of a spiritual land!

Without a spiritual land it was immensely difficult to practice. This was why nearly all high level martial artists were gathered in great sects or martial families, and why it was difficult to find a single Xiantian martial artist in a mortal country.

A spiritual land had certain features within it that were able to naturally gather heaven and earth origin energy. At the Seven Profound Valleys, the heaven and earth origin energy was several times greater than at Sky Fortune Kingdom. And even then, the heaven and earth origin energy within Divine Phoenix Island was several times higher than the at Seven Profound Valleys.

Thus, the higher grade a sect was, the higher grade spiritual land they would live on.

Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, not to mention the high level spiritual lands, but even the low level ones had nearly all been taken by others. Divine Phoenix Island was willing to seek refuge with Yin Yang Profound Palace not only to seek refuge with them but also to have a spiritual land for their disciples to practice in.

Without a spiritual land, a sect would lose the fundamental basis of its existence and it would be impossible to attract other martial artists.

Although this temporary residence's heaven and earth origin energy was far inferior to Divine Phoenix Island's, it was still comparable to the worst of fourth-grade sects.

And, what was most unusual was that because Yin Yang Profound Palace cultivated Yin and Yang, the origin energy here was also rich in fire and water; this fit very well with Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation methods.

It was already midnight and the dark night sky was like a thick black velvet curtain that extended across the world. Little stars decorated the vault of heaven like sparkling gems. In the dim mountains and the gently blowing breeze, one could occasionally hear the rustling sound of the tides and the pleasant sound of insects chirping at night.

The gentle moonlight illuminated a cliff in the back mountains of Little Swallow Mountains. Because it was cold here, the ground was dusted with a layer of silver frost. A red-dressed woman was sitting on a rock, meditating. From the back, one could see her long black hair fall down like a waterfall as it scattered on her clothing. Looking from afar, one could sense a stunning yet sorrowful beauty.

This woman was Mu Qianyu.



Although she was meditating, the heaven and earth origin energy around her was in chaos, not even forming a vortex of energy. This sort of practice condition was a mistake that normally new and amateur martial artists would commit. Mu Qianyu had already stepped into Revolving Core. By all reasoning, this should have never happened.

Mu Qianyu shook her head and lightly sighed. She stopped her meditation and helplessly mumbled, “My mind is a mess and my true essence is in disorder.”

These days, she was always worried about Little Flame. The guilt she felt caused a knot in her heart that she couldn’t undo. Her dark and mournful thoughts thus caused damage to her heart of martial arts, making it so that her true essence circulation had trouble flowing smoothly. This was a condition completely unsuited to cultivating.

“Sect Master placed all her hopes on Lin Ming. There is still seven and a half years until the 10 year meeting... Lin Ming... where are you and how are you doing?”

What the world would be like in that 10 years’ meeting’s time, Mu Qianyu found this impossible to imagine. At that promised meeting, would Lin Ming be able to safely return? Would he be able to shoulder the burden of reviving the sect? None of this could be predicted.

In order to revive the sect, he must have strength equal to a Life Destruction master. At that time, Lin Ming would be 27 or 28 years old. To have the strength of a Life Destruction master at that stage,

that would mean that his talent surpassed even those peak Divine Kingdom geniuses.

Mu Qianyu always felt that it was unfair for Divine Phoenix Island to place all of their hopes, dreams, and burdens all on Lin Ming's shoulders. Many of her fellow disciples hoped that Lin Ming would return and make them proud once more. But, what if Lin Ming couldn't achieve this? What sort of tremendous pressure would he have to withstand then?

Mu Qianyu shook her head and no longer thought of these things. She returned to her meditation. She had to become more powerful. All she could do was reach a cultivation high enough that she was able to contend with a Life Destruction master. Then she would be able to help Lin Ming shoulder the weight of his burdens.

Power... Mu Qianyu bit her lips. Everything that had occurred made her intensely wish that she had more power!

If she had absolute power, she never would have needed to watch helplessly on as Lin Ming was forced to flee. She would never have had to watch Divine Phoenix Island be destroyed. She would never have had to watch Little Flame be taken away by Yin Yang Profound Palace.

If she was strong, then why would she have to live under the cold indifferent eyes of other and why would she have to suffer the insult of having her Divine Phoenix Island's secret techniques be desired by others?

As the night wind whistled and Mu Qianyu had returned to meditation, a fire suddenly sparked in front of her. This was a sound transmitting talisman.

After hearing the message, Mu Qianyu was suddenly shocked. She turned to stone on the spot!

How... was this...

She blankly looked towards the back mountains, her fingers stiff as her breath caught in her chest. It was like she had forgotten how to breathe. After several breaths of time, she heard the sound of rustling clothes as a black-clothed figure appeared in front of her, gradually coming closer.

Mu Qianyu subconsciously covered her mouth. Although her mentality had always been strong and stable, at this time, she was unable to stop her vision from blurring as tears began to form in her eyes.

That sound transmitting talisman just now was sent by Mu Yuhuang. It was a short message.

“Lin Ming has returned. He is going towards the back mountains to look for you.”

## Chapter 690 – Kiss

---

Ever since Lin Ming left and Divine Phoenix Island had encountered disaster after disaster, Mu Qianyu had imagined countless times in her mind just what her reunion with Lin Ming would be like.

In her most ideal dreams, it was nothing more than Lin Ming returning back stronger. He would return to her, help her hold up the skies, shelter her from wind and rain, and do his best to turn the tide.

However, this was nothing but her wishes.

When Lin Ming left, he had only been at the Xiantian realm. As for Xuan Wuji, he would soon reach the fourth stage of Life Destruction. If just a short 10 years, even if Lin Ming's talent far surpassed everyone else within the Sky Spill Continent, a genius that had never been seen since ancient times, it would still be impossible to reach such a formidable degree.

10 years was simply too short a time for the growth of a top master. Moreover, there was the possibility that Lin Ming's potential would be exhausted. After all, there were many variables in the growth of a genius. Just because they were rising stars in their youth didn't mean they would absolutely become top masters in the future.

What Mu Qianyu cared about was not what degree of strength Lin Ming could obtain, but whether or not he would be able to

return safe and sound. With Lin Ming's personality, she knew that he wasn't someone that would resign himself to mediocrity.

On this journey that he traveled alone, he would undoubtedly enter into all sorts of mystic realms and danger zones. The risks and perils he would encounter could be imagined.

Mu Qianyu feared that if Lin Ming left, she would never hear from him again.

In that case, she would really perish from her suffocating sadness.

She was looking forward to meeting after this 10 year promise, but at the same time she was also scared. She was scared that 10 years from now, she would go to Thundercrash Mountain to wait for something that was only a dream!

She never imagined that in just a short two and a half years of time, Lin Ming would actually appear in front of her, well and safe. Compared to when he left, his appearance hadn't changed much. It was just that the temperament and aura revealed between his brows was different from before. He had lived through many great changes, and the air around him seemed much sharper and fiercer than before.

Although his temperament was different, he still gave off an incomparably familiar feeling that absolutely proved it was him beyond a shadow of any doubt.

Mu Qianyu's soul trembled.

This time, she no longer cared about what he had experienced or how strong he had become. A single thought echoed out again and again in her mind...

He returned! He had safely returned!

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth. She didn't know why, but at the moment she saw Lin Ming, all the grievances and pained she had suffered for this past two and a half years, all of that pressure she had to bear, all of it seemed to be washed away from her heart.

As she saw Lin Ming, her heart and mind filled with an overwhelming joy, so great that she couldn't help but burst into tears.

Was this a dream?

Lin Ming stopped a few dozen feet in front of Mu Qianyu, neither of them speaking.

When Lin Ming first saw Mu Qianyu, it was like their souls connected, blending together, allowing him to experience everything she was feeling.

He could feel her helplessness and her fragileness. He could feel that the walls she had set up to support herself had come tumbling down, all of her emotions pouring out from her.

Lin Ming felt fortunate. He was glad that he had come back early. Otherwise, if seven and a half years of time passed again, he couldn't imagine just what would have happened.

He subconsciously opened his arms, wanting to hold her. But, he actually stopped halfway, stiffening a bit.

His love towards Mu Qianyu was intermingled with respect, a sense that came from Mu Qianyu's otherworldly temperament that seemed to defy being defiled or blasphemed by anyone.

This was also the reason that Lin Ming referred to Mu Qianyu as Miss Mu and Senior-apprentice Sister.

However, Lin Ming hadn't thought that just as he opened his arms, he would see a flash of red in front of him, and suddenly a warm and fragrant body came rushing into his embrace.

Smooth arms were like snakes that wrapped around Lin Ming's back and neck. Mu Qianyu seemed to exhaust all of her strength as she hugged Lin Ming without reservation, as if she wanted to meld her body into his.

Lin Ming could even feel a slight ache from his back from the force of those two arms.

“Hold me...”

Mu Qianyu whispered into Lin Ming's ear, as if she was afraid he would disappear once she let go.

Lin Ming hugged Mu Qianyu. As he ran his hands down her back, he could feel her smooth and tender body through the silk fabric of her clothes. As they held onto each other with no space between them, he could feel the touch of a beautiful woman's breasts against his own chest.

The light fragrance of a woman filled his senses. He could hear Mu Qianyu's heartbeat and feel her breath.

This sort of wonderful feeling held an incomparably charming and tender warmth. Ever since those three sweet days at Thundercrash Mountain, Lin Ming hadn't had such intimate contact with Mu Qianyu.

In this moment, in the entire world it was as if only the two of them existed. In the silence of the mountains, as the stars brightly shimmered in the night sky, their two lonely hearts seemed to support each other.

Mu Qianyu quietly fell into Lin Ming's arms. From when she was born until now, she had never felt as fragile or happy as she did today. She wanted to hug Lin Ming and place everything she had with him.

In this brief instant, all she felt was him. Any sort of rain or wind or disaster, nothing mattered anymore.



The two of them hugged for an entire quarter of an hour. When Mu Qianyu's tears finally stopped flowing, she said in a quiet voice, "I've missed you..."

These simple words, without an embellishment, actually contained all of her true feelings for these last two and a half years.

"I know." Lin Ming gently said. As he looked down, he could see Mu Qianyu looking up at him. A crystal clear tear still shined at the corner of her eyes, sparkling like radiant silver underneath the moonlight, like bright pearls blooming in the deep sea.

In this cold moonlight, with this beautiful woman looking at him, everything seemed hazy as if it were a perfect dream.

Lin Ming felt his heart throb.

He cradled Mu Qianyu's face in his hands, he paused for several breaths of time.

Then, he kissed her.

Mu Qianyu's body trembled. The world faded away. Her arms instantly tightened around his body and her entire body seemed to soften into his. She closed her eyes as her long lashes gently trembled, lost in this deep abyss of this kiss.

This was Lin Ming's first kiss, and it was also Mu Qianyu's first kiss.

He greedily nibbled on her cherry-red lips, sucking on the tip of her wet tongue until Mu Qianyu's entire being shivered. Only then did the two of them reluctantly break away from each other.

"Everything will be fine now." Lin Ming whispered in Mu Qianyu's ear. These words were not empty words of comfort. This was a vow. A vow he made from the confidence in his own strength.

As long as he was here, everything would be fine!

However, Mu Qianyu could no longer tell the difference between these words now. She gave a soft cry of pleasure as her face flushed red with blood. Her cheeks seemed like a ripe peach right now, wet enough that they would drip water with just a little pinch.

She softly poured herself into Lin Ming's chest, allowing her entire body to weigh down on Lin Ming's shoulder. Her breath caught in her chest and she exhaled. Ever since Mu Qianyu was young, she had rarely come into contact with men at Divine Phoenix Island. Thus, she was unfamiliar with the relations between men and women. Within Thundercrash Mountain, although it was an ambiguous time, that was only a chance meeting that Mu Qianyu had with Lin Ming; it was impossible for her heart to be affected. That sort of ambiguous encounter had allowed left her shy and embarrassed, charmed by Lin Ming. It wasn't like now, where her heart throbbed and she was unable to stop her actions.

“Senior-apprentice Sister, how are Xingxuan and my parents?” Lin Ming suddenly asked. Besides Mu Qianyu, his greatest worries were Qin Xingxuan and his parents.

Mu Qianyu said, “When Divine Phoenix Island was destroyed, the sect was in a very precarious situation. Honorable Sect Master asked the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island whether or not they were willing to go to Ying Yang Profound Palace. Many of the lower level disciples left because of this... and as for Xingxuan... she originally wanted to come with us, but I was worried that she might have an accident if she stayed with us. I arranged for her to secretly go to a mortal country in the Five Element Region where your parents are also staying.

For a martial artist’s cultivation, they needed spiritual lands, resources, practice arrays, and so forth. Normally, a martial artist wouldn’t go to a mortal country. But, Mu Qianyu believed that what Qin Xingxuan needed the most was not cultivation, but to go on living in peace and safety. If Qin Xingxuan went to a mortal country, then with her Houtian realm strength, that was enough to guarantee her and Lin Ming’s parents’ safety. As for the South Sea Demon Region, it was impossible for them to chase down a single unknown Houtian realm martial artist over a million miles away.

“I see...” Hearing that Qin Xingxuan and his parents were safe, Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. As long as they were safe and alive then it was great. As for everything else that was lost, it could be taken back.

At this time, Mu Qianyu finally discovered Lin Ming’s

cultivation. Her eyes widened as she said with disbelief, “Lin Ming... you... you’ve broken through to Revolving Core?”

“Yes. Just several days ago I made a lucky breakthrough.”

“This...”

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth, shocked speechless. Two and a half years ago, Lin Ming was at the early Xiantian realm. After leaving for such a short time, he actually managed to break through to Revolving Core!

And looking at Lin Ming’s dantian, the energy was collected, the origin energy was dense, and a faint vortex could be vaguely seen. This was not an ordinary Revolving Core!

Although Mu Qianyu was also at the Revolving Core realm, this was far too different compared to Lin Ming!

“How could... this be so fast...”

With Mu Qianyu’s talent, she broke through to the Xiantian realm when she was 22 years old and then to Revolving Core when she was 30. This had taken a full eight years. But, Lin Ming had only used two and a half years, and he wasn’t even 21 years old yet!

When Mu Qianyu was Lin Ming’s age, she was only at the peak Houtian realm!

This was simply the difference between the heavens and earth.

This was no longer something that could be described as just an Emperor level talent.

“Lin Ming... how strong are you now?” Mu Qianyu asked with wide eyes. When Lin Ming had left, he was at the early Xiantian realm and Mu Qianyu was at the extreme Xiantian realm. The difference between their strength hadn’t been too great.

Now Lin Ming had jumped an entire boundary. By all reasoning he should have strength at least equal to a late Revolving Core master. Or perhaps he could even compare with the weakest of Life Destruction powerhouses.

Lin Ming naturally didn’t need to hide anything from Mu Qianyu. “I’m not too sure what the limits of my strength are. It’s only a rough estimate, but I can kill a first stage Life Destruction master. As for Xuan Yuqie and other second stage Life Destruction powerhouses, I’m probably not their match yet.”

“You can kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse?” Mu Qianyu’s heart jumped. Lin Ming’s strength was far more terrifying than what she had imagined.

In truth, Life Destruction was equal to the extreme Revolving Core. It was a very special stage within the Revolving Core realm. For Life Destruction martial artists, their true essence was also located in their dantian’s Revolving Core. It was only because they

experienced a remolding and transformation of their bodies and dantian that a Life Destruction martial artist's strength far surpassed that of a Revolving Core martial artist.

If Lin Ming could kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist, what would happen once he reached Life Destruction?

As Mu Qianyu thought of this, she was suddenly startled. She seemed to think of something. If Lin Ming could kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist...

She looked towards Lin Ming, an expression of disbelief on her face as she asked, "Lin Ming... 10 days ago, the one who pillaged and razed the South Sea Demon Region... that couldn't have been you right..."

# Chapter 691 – A Night Of Tender Warmth

---

In the rumors that Mu Qianyu had heard, the so-called Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had the strength to kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist.

By himself, he stirred up the South Sea Demon Region, upheaving their world. He killed over a thousand disciples of the South Sea Demon Region and forced Xuan Yuqie into a miserable state where she couldn't even fight back.

And now she asked Lin Ming because their two strengths seemed similar. Such a coincidence would certainly have Mu Qianyu associate them.

Hearing Mu Qianyu's question, Lin Ming was a bit surprised. He never tried to deliberately hide his identity; he assumed that the people of Divine Phoenix Island would have already known about him. But now it seemed that the South Sea Demon Region had set up a blockade of all news, afraid that Great Zen Temple, Black Flood Dragon, or some other fifth-grade sect would try and partake in the share of Lin Ming.

Thinking about this, Lin Ming only sneered. The South Sea Demon Region had thought he was a lamb to be butchered, but they never imagined they would already be ruined before they could taste the meat.

Lin Ming said to Mu Qianyu, "Senior-apprentice Sister, I returned to the South Horizon Region one month ago yet I

couldn't find you. I learned that Divine Phoenix Island had been destroyed, and in sadness, I went to Divine Phoenix Island to search for clues. There, I discovered that the South Sea Demon Region had set up a branch. At the time, I didn't know where you went, so I killed the branch Elder there to search his soul. The result was that I didn't even obtain any news of you and instead brought Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan to come knocking on my door. As for the matters after that, I'm sure that you're well aware."

Lin Ming's words seemed understated, but Mu Qianyu was already completely bewildered.

The death god of Divine Phoenix Island that had killed three Life Destruction Elders, stolen away the Giant Leviathan and even killed his way into the South Sea Demon Region...

All of these unbelievable events had come from Lin Ming's hands!?

Venturing a guess was one matter, but hearing Lin Ming confirm her suspicions was a completely different matter.

"Lin Ming... you..."

Mu Qianyu didn't know what to say.

Before this, Mu Yuhuang and everyone else was hoping that Lin Ming would be able to return in ten years and hold up the heavens



for their Divine Phoenix Island. To Mu Qianyu, this already seemed like a very exaggerated possibility. After all, 10 years from now, Lin Ming would be around 27 or 28 years old; it would still be difficult for someone so young to face a fifth-grade sect by himself.

But, she never imagined that in just a short two and a half years, Lin Ming would not only return, but completely flip over the entire South Sea Demon Region!

Just what had Lin Ming experienced in these two and a half years? His talent was far more terrifying than when he left through the transmission array!

At that time, if a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince or some other favored son of heaven could compare with Lin Ming, then to the current Lin Ming, such a Crown Prince or Holy Son wouldn't even be able to touch the hem of his pants!

It had to be known that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was reported to be nearly 30 years old. For a 30 year old youth to be able to change the entire South Sea war with just his own strength was already extremely shocking.

And Lin Ming was only 20 years old!

That was an entire 10 years young! This was a difference of 10 years in talent and this was even when compared to a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!

Mu Qianyu didn't know what to say to Lin Ming. After being stunned for a long time she mumbled, "Lin Ming, what have you been through these past two and a half years?"

Thinking of his experience through these past two and a half years, Lin Ming was also filled with emotion. For this entire time, nearly every day was filled with thoughts of death and battle.

"It's a long story. Let's go somewhere else and I'll slowly tell you." Lin Ming didn't plan on hiding anything from Mu Qianyu. He wanted to tell Mu Qianyu about everything he had experienced in the Holy Demon Continent.

No matter how tough and stable Lin Ming's will was, if he fought on the edge of danger for too long, he would still accumulate too much tension in his nerves and mind. What he wanted was some time to relax, and to be able to confide in someone who understood him that he had absolute trust in.

"Mm, let's go to my cabin. It's just underneath the mountain cliffs." As Mu Qianyu spoke to here, her beautiful face flashed with a red blush like the glow of a setting sun.

Little Swallow Mountain didn't have any buildings on it to begin with. The cabins were temporary residences set up for the Divine Phoenix Island disciples. Besides the courtyard for meetings and other official business, there were no other large scale constructions. Mu Qianyu didn't want to bring Lin Ming to the meeting hall. Thus, the best place was naturally her own cabin.

To invite Lin Ming to her own bedroom in the dead of night was truly a bit... suspect. But, thinking about the relationship between them, this wasn't anything strange. A martial artist who always acted according to their own heart and objectives simply didn't care about the gossip from others.

Thinking like this, Mu Qianyu also calmed down, becoming much more confident in herself. Without waiting for Lin Ming's reply she immediately jumped down the cliff.

The wind blowing down the mountain caused Mu Qianyu's silk clothes to flap in the wind. Lin Ming was startled for a moment before he followed her, a strange sense of happiness surging in his heart.

If Mu Qianyu hadn't felt that he belonged to her, she would never have made such an invitation.

The cliff was only a few hundred feet high; they arrived at the bottom of the cliff in an instant.

In the night of Little Swallow Mountain, the skies were black like ink and the stars dazzled against the vast vault of heaven. At the bottom of the cliff, the mountain winds washed over the grassy land like undulating waves. The sounds of insects were everywhere and the air was clear and fresh.

Walking on such a mountain, one's mood would be especially tranquil.

Stepping through the soft grass, Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming soon came to a group of cabins. This area was one of the places with the richest heaven and earth origin energy on the entirety of Little Swallow Mountain. Not only was Mu Qianyu's cabin here, but also Mu Bingyun, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Fengxian's.

A martial artist's perception was very sensitive. As Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu walked near with no intention of hiding themselves, everyone naturally sensed the two. However, they all had a mature and tacit understanding of the situation and thus no one came out to greet them.

Quietly looking at this group of cabins, Mu Qianyu suddenly felt extremely embarrassed. Originally she didn't think this was a big deal, but now that she was in this situation, Mu Qianyu began to have a guilty conscience as if she were doing something naughty.

"Mm... there isn't an extra cabin, so you'll have to stay here with me tonight." Mu Qianyu awkwardly said as she opened the cabin door.

Naturally, Lin Ming would never say something ridiculous at this moment like that Duanmu Qun and the others were staying in the spirit boat, and there was actually plenty of room there. Wouldn't that just be spoiling the fun too much?

After he calmed his mood, he stepped foot in Mu Qianyu's room.

The layout of Mu Qianyu's cabin was very simple. The wood furniture was newly carved and it hadn't even been baked through

with fire. It retained a great deal of its moisture, filling the entire cabin with a light scent of bark.

The cabin was comprised of one bedroom and one living room. There was a simple bookshelf in the living room, and on this bookshelf were several types of jade slips and dozens of ancient-looking books.

In her bedroom was a large wooden bed. On the bedside was a small set of drawers, and on this set of drawers was a small jade bottle with a Vermillion Bird Flower blooming within.

In truth, all of a martial artist's belongings could be placed into their spatial rings. Anything that was placed out in this room was there for decoration.

“Is... is it too simple?” Mu Qianyu hesitantly asked. This was the first time that a man had ever entered her room. Even when they both stayed at Divine Phoenix Island, Lin Ming had never entered her room before.

This nervous feeling was a bit strange.

“It's great.” Lin Ming lightly said, feeling the awkward atmosphere.

“Tell me about what you've been through these past two and a half years. I want to hear it.” Mu Qianyu pulled Lin Ming's hand and they sat on her bed together. She lifted her chin, her bright

eyes staring at Lin Ming just like a young girl that was eager to listen to bedtime stories.

“Okay.”

Thus, Lin Ming began his story from when he left the Demon God Imperial Palace. He recounted from the point he took the transmission array to the Holy Demon Continent. He recounted to her everything he knew about the races, customs, and influences of the Holy Demon Continent. He spoke of when he was severely wounded in the Bewitching Cloud Prairie and forced into slavery because he lost his strength. Then, he traveled to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and climbed up Polar Skysplit Tower. From there, he fought Xing Tian in a fatal battle on the second floor, stepping onto the third floor and then entering the King’s Cage where he faced the plotting of High Lord Heian.

Afterwards, he continuously defeated three great masters of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, and then killed High Lord Heian with his own hands. With his fame having sharply risen, through so many twists and turns, he then had to suffer the Polaris Tower Master planting a slave seal within him.

By tricking the Polaris Tower Master, he had managed to enter the Road of Emperor and comprehend his own battle spirit. Finally, he ventured into the Eternal Demon Abyss, capturing the demon bone and then being forced to stray into the 1000 mile forbidden zone. There, he picked up a profound gold divine fruit, discovered the corpse of a 100,000 year old goddess, and then, having broken through to Revolving Core, he then killed the Polaris Tower Master...

Besides matters related to Demonshine and the Magic Cube, Lin Ming didn't conceal anything else. He truthfully told her everything.

Although Mu Qianyu knew that Lin Ming would experience many trials and tribulations through these two and a half years, she never imagined that he would wade through so many life and death dangers. Even with Lin Ming sitting safe and sound right beside her, as Mu Qianyu listened to him explain all of the perilous situations and dead ends he had run into, she felt her heart tightly clench in her chest. But as she listened to how he saved the day, turning danger into safety and reversing the situation, she also felt happy for him, a joy that came from the depths of her heart.

After Lin Ming finished speaking, because Mu Qianyu's emotions had risen up and down several times, her face was blushing red. She gradually fell into Lin Ming's arms.

The two of them supported each other as they kissed. Each of them felt the warm temperature of the other, gently stroke and caressing each other's skin.

Whether it was Lin Ming who had experienced constant death and fighting for the last two and a half years, being worried most of the time, or whether it was Mu Qianyu, who had suffered through the great pressure of her position and watching everything around her fall apart to the wind and rain of life, both of them needed comfort, both of them needed warmth.

With a warm and fragrant body pressed into his chest, Lin Ming's entire senses were filled with a delicate scent. Lin Ming felt as if he had embraced the entire world. This intoxicating feeling that set off butterflies in his stomach made his mind throb, even as a surge of lust and desire ignited in his heart, quietly simmering...

After so many years of martial arts practice, Lin Ming was no longer that newbie who had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, nearly losing his mind in the pass of passion on that sea jade platform.

Instead, he was a master who was capable of controlling his own emotions.

His thoughts stirred, and a light flashed in his eyes. He wanted to use his battle spirit to cut this rising desire. But then, he thought about it some more.

The fires of his desire were in truth the development of his own consciousness, a natural progression of his growth as a man. Why would he want to cut it?

From when he first encountered her at Thundercrash Mountain to when she welcomed him to Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu had truly cared for Lin Ming every step of the way.

When he entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it had seemed that Lin Ming was a star that fell from the heavens, and Mu Qianyu had fallen into sadness and despair for him.



In the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming had to face being hunted by Lei Jingtian. He had given her the Escape Symbol and the two of them had made a life and death vow. Finally, before he left through the ancient transmission array, they had promised each other a meeting ten years from now.

Every condition had been successful.

Then he would naturally allow this pass of passion to take its course.

Lin Ming slightly suppressed the desire in his heart and softly said, “Yu’er, how have you been for these past two and a half years?”

As Mu Qianyu heard Lin Ming refer to her as Yu’er, her heart throbbed. She didn’t know, but this small change in her name was in truth a decision from Lin Ming...

As she thought of these two and a half years, Mu Qianyu felt a bit sad. She hesitated for a moment and then truthfully spilled out her story. Now that Lin Ming had grown up, there was no need to hide anything from him anymore.

From the time that she and Lin Ming separated, she spoke of Xuan Wuji recklessly searching the entire South Sea for him. Then, she replayed the demise of the Wartime Alliance, the destruction of Divine Phoenix Island, then being forced to take refuge in Yin Yang Profound Palace, and then having to have their two Vermillion Birds taken away as well as having to suffer all

sorts of harsh conditions.

Hearing this, Lin Ming frowned. “Little Flame and Fireshine were taken by Yin Yang Profound Palace?”

## Chapter 692 – Negotiations

---

During that time in Thundercrash Mountain when Mu Qianyu and Little Flame had encountered trouble, Lin Ming had looked after Little Flame, even cooking up some deer meat for him to eat. In the relatively long life of a Vermillion Bird, Little Flame was only a child and still somewhat naïve and innocent. Although Lin Ming had only known Little Flame for a brief period of time, he still had a very good impression of this silly and foolish Vermillion Bird.

Little Flame was Mu Qianyu's life Vermillion Bird. Both beast and person had extremely deep feelings towards each other. And now, Little Flame was actually taken by Yin Yang Profound Palace?

“What are they planning to do with the Vermillion Birds?” Lin Ming said, a bit incensed. Listening to Mu Qianyu's words, Yin Yang Profound Palace were obviously taking advantage of Divine Phoenix Island while they were suffering, demanding such an outrageous price. Not only did they want two Vermillion Birds, but they also desired the secret techniques of Divine Phoenix Island and even had thoughts of subtly annexing Divine Phoenix Island.

Listening as Lin Ming spoke, a trace of sadness flashed across Mu Qianyu's eyes. She said, “They want the Vermillion Birds in order to extract their blood essence and transplant it into the bodies of the male disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace. After the Vermillion Birds, they will want the Blue Luan in order to transplant its blood essence into their female disciples. These days, we nearly have to negotiate what price we have to pay to Yin Yang Profound Palace. Because we have no other choice, we are forced to continually give in. Yet, even when we give an inch, they want to

take a yard...”

Before Divine Phoenix Island took refuge in Yin Yang Profound Palace, they hadn't yet held bargaining talks concerning the resources and secret skills involved. These sort of negotiations were of significant interest to both sects, and they would often be conducted in a marathon-like manner. Even having talks for an entire year wouldn't be strange.

In these past months, Yin Yang Profound Palace had already negotiated with Divine Phoenix Island over 20 times, repeatedly scrutinizing the details. Generally speaking, Divine Phoenix Island had to suffer increasing losses. Because they were weaker, they had no choice but to suffer these insults at the negotiations.

Lin Ming scowled. So this was it...

Yin Yang Profound Palace now had two Vermillion Birds. The blood essence of a Vermillion Bird was extremely precious. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that one or two drops of this blood essence, combined with some talent and secret skills, would be able to train a Divine Phoenix Island disciple into a Revolving Core powerhouse!

It was because of this Vermillion Bird blood essence that Lin Ming had been able to pull Qin Xingxuan back from the precipice of death.

Blood essence was incomparably precious, whether it was for a martial artist or Saint Beast.

Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird blood essence was only withdrawn when a Vermillion Bird was nearing the end of its natural lifespan. Even then, this was only 20 to 30 drops of blood essence.

For a Vermillion Bird with vibrant blood vitality, Divine Phoenix Island wouldn't risk damaging its life in order to extract its blood essence. After all, blood essence was extremely difficult to recover. Extracting one drop meant that there was one drop less.

Especially Little Flame. Little Flame was so young; just how could it bear having its blood essence taken out?

The smaller a Vermillion Bird, the more frail it was. If one extracted its life essence, then not only would its lifespan shorten but it would also greatly affect its strength.

Perhaps the Vermillion Bird might even directly die.

Looking at Mu Qianyu's reddened eyes, Lin Ming suddenly became incensed with pure anger. "Yu'er, you said that they were trying to subtly annex Divine Phoenix Island. Just what is happening?"

Mu Qianyu sighed. She said, "Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation method is focused on Yin and Yang, having both elements complement each other. As such, they specialize in water and fire origin energy, which is similar to Divine Phoenix Island's ice and fire cultivation method. In these past months, there were

some disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace who perhaps used the temptation of benefits, coercion, intimidation, or maybe even drugs... but... of my Divine Phoenix Island disciples...they had sex with them. Both parties walked past the line of no return, and so they became married...”

Mu Qianyu had a very bad taste in her mouth when she spoke of this. In truth, only around half of Divine Phoenix Island’s disciples were deceived in some way. The other half were completely voluntary. Or at least they did so with a half-hearted resistance.

Divine Phoenix Island was still a fourth-grade sect. In truth, now they didn’t have many training resources, practice arrays, or medicine gardens...even the spiritual land underneath their feet, Little Swallow Island, was only equal to a third-grade sect’s spiritual land.

In such harsh conditions, just how could they attract new disciples?

Not to mention that Divine Phoenix Island was also facing an all-encompassing crisis from the South Sea Demon Region; even their very existence was in a precarious state. The majority of disciples from Divine Phoenix Island were mostly women. Even though they were martial artists, they were still naturally soft-hearted; they needed to feel protected by others. Drifting around in a displaced manner like destitute vagabonds in a situation where death loomed close to them made it very easy for them to be touched by the sweet talk and the honeyed words of men. From the first touches of love to going to bed, they finally became confused about what they wanted and ended up married.

Thus, for these past months, many female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island repeatedly lost their virginity. Some of them were even pregnant.

Once they married they would naturally stay in Yin Yang Profound Palace with their husbands. One reason was because Yin Yang Profound Palace was much stronger; another was because whether it was their practice arrays, resources, or spiritual land, everything was a higher grade, even better than when Divine Phoenix Island was at its peak.

If this continued, then Divine Phoenix Island would soon be hollowed out. And, the most exasperating problem was that the male disciples of Yin Yang Profound palace chose the most extraordinary and beautiful women to pursue. They wouldn't consider those girls who were less fortunate, or perhaps might even sleep with them and then abandon them afterwards.

“Yu'er, you said that they used drugs?” Lin Ming's voice became extremely cold.

“There were two who used drugs. We investigated this and requested that those two scumbags be punished. But I have no idea what Yin Yang Profound Palace did to them afterwards. As for those two girls who suffered, they didn't pursue any further and instead accepted their fate....”

As Mu Qianyu spoke to here, she let out a deep sigh. She remembered that the one responsible for dealing with this matter

had been Xing Yang and then her heart filled with utter hatred. She said with loathing, “Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Little Palace Master Xing Yang has intentions to seduce my little sister. He wants to marry her. Moreover, the Palace Masters have already officially brought this matter up with Honorable Sect Master. Although they were refused, the future days are long. It’s still possible that there might be some accident that happens.”

Mu Qianyu was very worried for her little sister. This was why she considered for a moment before informing Lin Ming of this matter. She didn’t mention that Xing Yang also coveted her, but just the matter with her sister was enough to make Lin Ming livid with rage.

The first one to have relations with Divine Phoenix Island’s Mu sisters would be able to inherit a touch of their Saint Beast bloodline. For Xing Yang, this was an unbelievably good plan!

Lin Ming said “Tomorrow morning, I will go to the peak of Yin Yang Profound Palace with you. I want to personally see just what sort of person that Little Palace Master of Yin Yang Profound Palace is like!”

Lin Ming’s voice was filled with a domineering tone that seemed as if it could change the destiny of others. This came from the absolute belief in his own strength. Lin Ming might not be Xuan Wuji’s match, but against this Yin Yang Profound Palace, he didn’t fear them at all!

This unquestionable aura warmed Mu Qianyu’s heart.



Although she didn't care about how strong Lin Ming was, what girl didn't hope that the one she loved would have extraordinary strength, being able to shelter her from the world's pains and problems?

The two of them didn't speak anymore. They paused, holding each other and enjoying this gentle moment as the night passed without words.

.....

In the early morning, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu rose from bed early. Outside, the bright sun was rising and the grass was heavy with new dew, the air fresh as if it had just been washed.

Lin Ming pushed open the door and walked out. Not too far away he could see two men and one woman standing. The three of them had amazing temperaments. One blue-clothed girl was looking at Lin Ming, a slight grin tracing her lips as humor twinkled in her eyes.

This young girl was Lan Xin. She clucked her tongue as she smiled and said, "Brother Lin, were you happy last night?"

Listening to the obvious question in these words, a strange blush colored his face. He didn't want joke around with Lan Xin at this moment so he simply ignored this question.

Lan Xin stuck out her tongue, still devilishly grinning as before.

“Brother Lin, is this the sect you grew up in? Divine Phoenix Island?”

Beside Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun asked this question. Before the sun rose, he had already investigated Divine Phoenix Island and was able to approximate their situation. He had already expected that Divine Phoenix Island wasn't some great sect, otherwise they wouldn't have been destroyed by the South Sea Demon Region. But as he saw their current state, he really couldn't help but think they were in extremely squalid circumstances.

There was just more than 1000 people in the entire sect, a mere 10 Revolving Core masters, and just two first-stage Life Destruction masters. Out of these two, one of them had already damaged her life source; she didn't have much combat efficiency left.

This temporary land was only a third-grade spiritual land. Within the Holy Demon Continent, this would only be a small, off-the-road sect. It didn't even have a medicine garden. It was truly quite hard to look at it.

Just how could this sort of sect raise such a monstrous genius like Lin Ming?

Whether it was Duanmu Qun or Feng Shen, neither of them could understand this.

“Mm....” Lin Ming nodded. This was his sect. Lin Ming didn’t have much attachment to the Seven Profound Valleys. But of Divine Phoenix Island, he actually thought of them as his second family.

“Brother Lin, if Divine Phoenix Island needs any resources, we can help look.”

In Duanmu Qun’s eyes, a fourth-grade sect like Divine Phoenix Island was limited in its ability to help Lin Ming find resources. Yet, it would be too rude to invite Lin Ming to join his Divine Wood Holy Land, thus he could only offer to help Lin Ming look for resources.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, “Thank you Brother Duanmu for your kind intentions. If I return to the Holy Demon Continent in the future, then perhaps I really must take you up on your offer.”

Lin Ming planned to travel down the path of alchemy in order to pave the way for opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates as well as the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. When that time came, he would inevitably need to purchase certain rare resources.

If he had a network of connections and was able to borrow the strength of a Holy Land to find resources, then Lin Ming’s road would become much easier.

“Brother Lin is too humble.” Duanmu Qun smiled in return.

At this moment, Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and Mu Bingyun came walking by from not too far away. Because Lin Ming had been anxious to see Mu Qianyu yesterday, he had only hastily greeted Mu Yuhuang and the others; they didn't even have time to exchange proper greetings.

Today, Mu Yuhuang wanted to talk to Lin Ming some more, but as she saw Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin, she was startled. These three didn't seem like humans...what race were they? Where had they come from?

Mu Yuhuang hesitated for a moment before she sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, "Lin Ming, are these three your friends?"

Lin Ming nodded.

Without a doubt, these three all had great backgrounds and stories behind them. Mu Yuhuang didn't inquire further. What she wanted to do was ask Lin Ming what sort of adventures he had gone on these past two and a half years, and just how he was able to break through to Revolving Core so soon.

But at this moment, a spirit boat came whistling over their heads, falling into the meeting hall not too far away.

As Mu Yuhuang saw the twin water and fire symbol on the spirit boat, she suddenly grimaced. This was Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit boat. Naturally, they must have come to Little Swallow Mountain to negotiate matters.

She said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission, “Lin Ming, you wait here. We absolutely must keep quiet about your safe return and not let anyone know. Otherwise, others might do something to you.”

## Chapter 693 – Conflict

---

In the eyes of Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, Lin Ming was Divine Phoenix Island's ultimate secret weapon. Yesterday, Lin Ming had been in a hurry so they didn't even really greet each other, much less have an in-depth conversation. Thus, they believed that the South Sea Demon Region hadn't yet learned of Lin Ming's return.

It had to be known that Lin Ming had once messed up all of Xuan Wuji's plans in the Demon God Imperial Palace, even snatching away the Nirvana Dragon Root from beneath his fingers. If Xuan Wuji knew that Lin Ming had returned then the consequences could be imagined.

It was imperative that they train Lin Ming until he grew to the point at which he could stand alone. Until then, it was impossible to reveal him too early.

Lin Ming didn't reply. The spirit boat had fallen down from the official business courtyard.

"Lin Ming, go back in!" Mu Fengxian told Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. She was afraid that the martial artists of Yin Yang Profound Palace would recognize Lin Ming. Although it was a very minor possibility, she had to prepare for all contingencies.

As soon as she finished speaking, her feet, of their own accord, moved her towards the meeting courtyard with Mu Yuhuang. Mu

Bingyun glanced at Lin Ming before closely following behind them.

For a time, the only ones left were Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Lin Ming's eyes narrowed as he glared at Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit boat. As his gaze fell on the spirit boats twin water and fire symbols, he paused for a moment and then said, "Yu'er, that spirit boat carries the negotiators from Yin Yang Profound Palace?"

"Mm." Mu Qianyu nodded. "Lin Ming, I suddenly remembered something. When we went to the Demon God Imperial Palace, it wasn't just Xuan Wuji that was there, but also Nanyun Wang and Great Zen Temple's Abbot Whitebrow. The three of them all had third stage Life Destruction cultivation. Because of you, they lost a Nirvana Dragon Root. If news of your survival spreads, then it would be bad for you if you caught their attention. Perhaps it might be wise to follow Honorable Sect Master's advice and conserve your strength for the time being. It wouldn't be too late for you to grow stronger before clearing all these old debts."

"It doesn't matter." Lin Ming shook his head. "After such a long time, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow should have already guessed that I've used up the entire Nirvana Dragon Root by now. Although my strength has its limits, with the Giant Leviathan, I have the strength to deter a sect that even has a transcendent third stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Unless Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow are consumed by their obsessions then there's no way they will try to do something to me."

Lin Ming's plan was very simple. Since he had returned, he had no intention of acting in a low-key manner. Otherwise, it would be the same as showing weakness to others. This was a world of martial artists—only when the strong were feared by their enemies. Every fool knew that the four Divine Kingdoms controlled an unbelievably massive amount of resources, but who would dare to steal it? On the other hand, if someone weak were to have a massive amount of resources, then others would covet it, try to steal it, and even kill to do so.

.....

At this time in the meeting hall's courtyard, three old men and a youth stepped out from a spirit boat. The yellow-clothed young man was around 30 years old, and he was tall with an arrow-straight posture. He was Yin Yang Profound Palace's Little Palace Master, Xing Yang. As for the three old men behind him, they were the Elders of Yin Yang Profound Palace.

“Fairy Maiden Mu, it's been a while. I hope you've been well.”

Xing Yang lightly smiled at Mu Fengxian. Because someone had snatched away his chance to meet the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince first, he was in a poor mood. Thus, he decided to switch his aim towards Divine Phoenix Island. He was hoping to obtain Mu Bingyun and Mu Qianyu's Primordial Yin Energy. Although this was less beneficial than befriending the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, it would still help pave his road to becoming an Emperor-level powerhouse in the future. Additionally, if he could really subdue these two women and marry them as their husband, then enjoying their love-making and warm nights in bed would also be



great.

Thinking this, Xing Yang grinned from ear to ear.

“Thanks to the blessing of your Yin Yang Profound Palace, this old woman still hasn’t died yet.” Mu Fengxian’s response was a bit dreary. In negotiations within the world of martial artists, one never made concessions to the other party because of something as silly as courtesy. Indeed, if it weren’t because of all this then Mu Fengxian would never have bothered speaking to such a slimy snake like Xing Yang.

“Hehe, Fairy Maiden Mu, then let’s cut with the nonsense and continue with our previous conversation—the secret transplant method of the Vermillion Bird blood essence!” As Xing Yang spoke, he walked straight over to the meeting table and gestured. “I’ve come with enough sincerity this time in the hope that Fairy Maiden Mu will know when to kindly give way!”

Xing Yang’s voice was filled with warning. Divine Phoenix Island had hurriedly taken asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace, not even having time to discuss all the major details. With such important interests of both sects at stake, naturally negotiations would carry on for a long time.

Mu Fengxian sneered inside. She was well aware of just what disgusting plans this Xing Yang was making. She knew that the reason he continuously set up obstacles was not only for the secret skills of Divine Phoenix Island, but also because he desired the Mu sister’s bodies.

How could Mu Fengxian possibly let him continue this wishful thinking?

If it were a few days ago, then under the absolute threat of the South Sea Demon Region where Mu Fengxian was in a much weaker position, she would have no choice but to endure this rude oppression from Yin Yang Profound Palace. But now, with this unknown factor of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince and the South Sea Demon Region having suffered loss one after another, Mu Fengxian didn't intend to keel over so easily.

When she was about to go to the negotiating table to argue with Xing Yang, she suddenly turned around to look at the courtyard entrance.

She saw five people standing there. They were Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen.

Damn! Just what were they doing here?

Mu Fengxian's heart skipped a beat. Lin Ming's return was Divine Phoenix Island's greatest, absolute secret! Once this news was leaked then the consequences would be unthinkable!

It wasn't just Mu Fengxian, but Mu Yuhuang was also looking ill.

Mu Yuhuang tried to suppress her panic. Although Xing Yang might not have seen Lin Ming's portrait, his age contrasted with

his cultivation too spectacularly to not be noticed.

She yelled, “Yu’er, what are you here for?”

Mu Yuhuang was thinking to bring up Mu Qianyu to distract Xing Yang’s attention and allow Lin Ming an opportunity to leave. But currently, Mu Qianyu seemed to be at a loss for words.

Xing Yang glared at Lin Ming. He coldly said, “Who are you?”

Xing Yang truly didn’t know Lin Ming. He was sure that he didn’t see Lin Ming when Divine Phoenix Island first came to Yin Yang Profound Palace. If he did, then he definitely would have remembered him. Lin Ming seemed to be only 20 some-odd years old but his cultivation was at the early Revolving Core. Not just that, but the true essence around his body was exceptionally thick. He was obviously not some ordinary early Revolving Core powerhouse.

Of course, he may look to be in his early twenties but his age might actually be closer to 30. After all, a martial artist aged at a very slow pace. There wasn’t that great a difference between 30 years and 20 years of age. Because he wasn’t able to determine Lin Ming’s age, he had no grounds to ascertain the degree of Lin Ming’s talent. But he had to be at least at the pinnacle of Saint level talents.

The reason that Lin Ming caught Xing Yang’s attention was not just because of Lin Ming’s talent, but rather because of a much more important reason.

That was...because Mu Qianyu was holding Lin Ming's hand!

Xing Yang felt his heart sink as a dense light of jealousy entered his eyes. He clearly knew Mu Qianyu's origins. She only had a younger sister, and had no older or younger brother.

Then this meant that Lin Ming could only be her lover.

Mu Qianyu's and Mu Bingyun's feelings and sentiment were no small matter. This was because the first time they had sex with someone else, they would pass a part of their Primordial Yin energy to that man. This would also dilute the Saint Beast bloodline within the Saintess to a certain degree.

But looking at Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang, they obviously didn't oppose Mu Qianyu being together with this man. That meant they had already agreed to their union.

Just who was he!?!?

Looking at how attached Mu Qianyu seemed to be with that man, he feared that she would have no qualms giving her virginity to the man! This caused Xing Yang's heart to surge with a thick killing intent!

Although Lin Ming's talent was good, Xing Yang didn't fear him. Xing Yang was already 35 years old and he had just reached the late Revolving Core period. After that was Life Destruction. If he could

reach Life Destruction before he was 45 years old, then his chances of becoming a Peerless Emperor would be that much higher.

Although Lin Ming was younger, his cultivation was two whole small boundaries fewer.

Once one reached Revolving Core, the difference between every small boundary was not minor. Xing Yang didn't worry about Lin Ming's combat strength, only what sort of background he had. This sort of genius would never originate from some mediocre background.

As Xing Yang noticed the two handsome men and the pretty woman behind Lin Ming, he paused. They were obviously not human, but at the same time he couldn't recognize what race they were.

Furthermore, what was strange was that Xing Yang was completely unable to tell what their cultivation was.

This was because the Fey cultivation system was different to that of humanity.

“You dare to trespass within my Yin Yang Profound Palace!? Just who are you?” Xing Yang wanted to find out about Lin Ming's origin. If he came from a fifth-grade sect then he wouldn't do anything to him. But if this man came from a small sect, then he would quietly kill him.

Lin Ming sneered and said, “I am a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, surnamed Lin. Little Swallow Mountain has already been designated as the residence for my Divine Phoenix Island. Why would it be strange for me to be here?”

Hearing Lin Ming not avoid referring to himself as someone surnamed Lin, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian became worried. That explosive last name along with Lin Ming’s talent...Xing Yang would find out sooner or later.

Mu Yuhuang repeatedly sent true essence sound transmissions but couldn’t obtain a response from him. Mu Bingyun also frowned as she looked at Lin Ming, not sure what he was planning on doing.

Mm? This boy was actually a Divine Phoenix Island disciple?

Xing Yang narrowed his eyes as he sized up Lin Ming. He didn’t understand Divine Phoenix Island’s history too much, so he temporarily didn’t associate this Lin character with “that” Lin Ming. He only found it strange that Divine Phoenix Island still had this sort of talent remaining. Still, since he was a Divine Phoenix Island disciple, there simply wasn’t anything to worry about.

He began to think about finding an excuse to punish Lin Ming, and then quietly slipping him some medicine to ruin his abilities to function as a man in bed, thus removing his chances of taking Mu Qianyu’s virginity.

But then, at this moment, Lin Ming opened his mouth wide to

spout out some fantastical and stunning words....

Lin Ming said, “You there, the one called Xing Yang, I came here today to tell you...negotiations are over. Immediately return the Vermillion Birds. Yin Yang Profound Palace will also divide half of their territory as a temporary residence for Divine Phoenix Island. This includes practice arrays, medicine garden supplies, true essence stone, and all other resources. Half of everyone’s daily share will be given to Divine Phoenix Island as an offering.”

When Lin Ming finished speaking, Xing Yang’s jaw fell wide open. He nearly couldn’t believe his own ears. What had this boy said just now?

It wasn’t just Xing Yang; Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were also shocked silly. Even the normally indifferent Mu Bingyun was staring at Lin Ming with a puzzled expression. Lin Ming definitely didn’t seem as if he were joking around. Thus, she turned to look at Mu Qianyu.

Mu Qianyu was also surprised. She never thought that Lin Ming would suddenly demand such excessive conditions. This was the same as slicing off the flesh from Yin Yang Profound Palace!

Duanmu Qin, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all seemed to not care too much. As descendants from a Holy Land, they naturally didn’t have any interest in the resources of a minor fifth-grade sect.

How valuable could it possibly be? Any one of the earth-step Demon God Bones that Lin Ming had obtained in the 1000-mile

forbidden zone was enough for a fifth-grade sect to recklessly spend wealth for ten years.

After several breaths of time, Xing Yang suddenly laughed. “I thought you were some sort of genius but I never imagined you were such an idiot. You must have thought these negotiations were too boring so you wanted to tease me into laughing! Hahahaha! You not only succeeded, but you also did a great job!”

Xing Yang’s expression then turned icy. “Elder Jiang, Elder Sun, seize that boy for me!”

Behind Xing Yang there were three black-clothed Elders. Two of them were late Revolving Core and the last was at the first stage of Life Destruction. They had come up to provide suppressive support.

Yin Yang Profound Palace couldn’t be considered a fifth-grade sect with too prestigious a background; they weren’t able to have each of their Elders at Life Destruction. Because they lacked masters, most of their Elders were actually at the mid or late Revolving Core.

Xing Yang simply couldn’t bother to deal with Lin Ming himself. Elder Jiang and Elder Sun behind him both had cultivation at the late Revolving Core, more than enough to deal with the likes of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming casually swept his eyes over the two Elders and chuckled. He already knew that speaking with this Xing Yang was



the same as exchanging nonsense.

Today he had come to ruin him.

Two Elders approached Li Ming from the left and right. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian's complexions changed. They were well aware that Lin Ming wasn't an idiot, but what could he do in this situation? Even if he was extraordinarily strong, what would happen even if he was able to jump ranks and defeat these two Revolving Core Elders? Could he take the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace as his enemy?

At this time, Lan Xin clucked her tongue as she slightly tittered, her laugh sweet like silver bells. Her tone was laced with sarcasm as she bluntly said, "Is this still a fifth-grade sect? A fifth-grade sect's Elders should accordingly be Life Destruction masters. But you use late Revolving Core Elders as an in-between and still think that you can be acknowledged as a fifth-grade sect! How ridiculous!"

As Lan Xin said this, Elder Sun and Elder Jiang both became furious. This was not only cruelly mocking Yin Yang Profound Palace but also mocking them, exposing all of their shortcomings that no one dared to voice out loud. What Lan Xin had said was truly toxic. Although Yin Yang Profound Palace was known as a fifth-grade sect, they really did have many places where they didn't meet the definition of a fifth-grade sect.

"Little girl, since you want to die so badly then this old man will show you just how high the heavens are and how the low earth is!" Elder Jiang couldn't see what Lan Xin's cultivation or race was. He

assumed that she was some sect talent, and was also the naïve sort that had never left their sect before. The type that assumed just because their talent was a little high they could act like an idiot.

“Haha, you’re going to make me die of laughter! I’m standing right here. If you can approach within three feet of me then I’ll count you as having won!” Lan Xin winked at Duanmu Qun. She had never been a polite, good little girl to begin with. With such a fun opportunity in front of her, she certainly wouldn’t want to miss it.

Duanmu Qun was speechless. He thought that Lan Xin would take action, but he never expected that this little lady would circle everything back to him.

Indeed, with Lan Xin’s strength she would be able to defeat Elder Jiang. But it wouldn’t be easy; she might even be wounded. If so, it would be difficult for her to maintain her lofty attitude.

“You are far too arrogant! Old Sun, you deal with that boy and I’ll capture that little girl!” Elder Jian said in a furious rage.

“Okay!”

The two Elders rushed out to the left and right.

Facing this situation, Lin Ming didn’t even take out his spear. He flicked his index finger and attached his battle spirit to the air, shooting it out.

In the next moment, Elder Jiang only saw an azure light flash in front of him. With the sound of a muffled crashing sound, Elder Sun, who had rushed out with him, had suddenly disappeared!

Elder Jiang turned his head and saw that a massive, human-shaped hole had formed in the wall behind him. As for Elder Sun, he was toppled over on top of the courtyard fence, vomiting blood as his limbs hung lifelessly down like a dead dog...

## Chapter 694 – Absolute Disparity

---

Elder Jiang had only rushed out halfway when he suddenly stopped in his tracks. He had run out with Elder Sun, but Elder Sun had suddenly disappeared in the blink of an eye. The next moment, he was hanged up on the outer courtyard fence like a piece of cured meat.

The great human-shaped hole was still rustling with falling dust. As for Elder Sun, his entire body had gone soft; it was unknown whether or not he had fainted.

The entire meeting venue fell in absolute silence. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were stunned. Although they had guessed that Lin Ming's strength had sharply risen after breaking through to Revolving Core and that it should be easy for him to jump ranks when fighting, they didn't think that Lin Ming could send a late Revolving Core martial artist flying with just a flick of his finger.

Even Mu Qianyu, who had heard about Lin Ming's strength from the person in question, was bewildered, her beautiful eyes wide and bright. Hearing Lin Ming's words was one thing, but seeing it happen in front of her was another.

“Elder Sun!”

Xing Yang was frightened. He had never even dreamed that such a scene would occur. He quickly used his soul force to investigate what the dangling Elder Sun's situation was like.

His bodily true essence had shattered apart, and all the bones near the right side of his chest had been broken to pieces!

It was obvious that Elder Sun had been struck by a massive blow to his right chest. But... Just how had Lin Ming made this attack?

Xing Yang could only feel a chill crawl down his spine. All he had managed to see was a flash of azure light past his eyes. Lin Ming hadn't even taken out his weapon. All he had done was to send that Elder Sun flying with a flick of a single finger!

Elder Sun's cultivation was at the late Revolving Core realm. Although it was impossible for him to reach Life Destruction in his life, he wasn't much weaker than the late Revolving Core Xing Yang. And, Xing Yang didn't dare to say he could easily defeat Elder Sun, much less send him flying with a flick, like Lin Ming had done.

Recalling the power of that finger just now, Xing Yang was frightened. He hadn't even been the target, but he still felt as if a massive will pressure was pressing down between his eyes, into his spiritual sea. Even his soul trembled from that terrifying feeling.

Xing Yang looked at Lin Ming, feeling faint of heart, "Second Uncle, just what was that?"

Xing Yang's Second Uncle was the present first stage Life Destruction Elder. He was Xing Yang's god uncle, Xing Zizan. He had come to the negotiations to help shore up Xing Yang's prestige, but he had never imagined such a matter would occur.

He hesitated for a moment before saying, “This should be a type of spear wind formed from some kind of extraordinary technique...”

In truth, what Lin Ming had just used was his battle spirit. However, the battle spirit was something that only Emperor level powerhouses and peak Emperor level talents could ever touch upon. Normally, only Holy Lands with a profound history had some sort of inheritance regarding battle spirits.

Yin Yang Profound Palace was a newly promoted fifth-grade sect. Their history was shallow. From the very beginning, Xing Zizan had never even heard of a battle spirit before.

Xing Zizan continued to analyze the situation, “There are some special cultivation methods such as Divine Sword Sect’s ‘Blue Yang Sword Law’ where one could forge and form several sword energies within their body to constantly improve it. In a critical moment, they wouldn’t even need to use their swords, and could instead shoot out these sword energies to kill others. Moreover, the strike power behind them is immense. It could even be stronger than that person’s all-out attack. Perhaps this boy’s attack was done using a similar cultivation method!”

Listening to Xing Zizan’s reasonable ‘analysis’, Xing Yang relaxed. What Lin Ming had done just now did seem like a similar cultivation method, and indeed, he had heard of this before. Although it was extremely powerful, it also had several flaws. First, one could store a limited number of these sword energies. They cost a great deal of time and effort to improve, and once they

were used they would simply disappear.

If Lin Ming had used a spear energy that he had cultivated for a long period of time to injure Elder Sun like this, then Xing Yang could also accept that.

If he gathered all of his potential and energy to strike, then he could also achieve a similar result.

Xing Zizan and Xing Yang used true essence sound transmissions to speak with each other. That Elder Jiang who followed Elder Sun hadn't heard any of this. Facing such a violent Lin Ming, he was dumbfounded.

Elder Jiang couldn't rush forwards, but he couldn't retreat either.

The words that he had previously spoken were too prideful and arrogant. If he allowed his face to be ruined here, then how could he ever hold his head up high in front of the juniors of Yin Yang Profound Palace?

At this time, Lan Xing chortled and said, "Are you coming or not? What happened to all your bluster just now?"

Lan Xin felt that Lin Ming sending that Elder Sun flying back with just a flick of a finger was very normal. She made sure to not forget to mock this frightened Elder Jiang.

After having his weakness poked by others, Elder Jiang became extremely angry.

He glared at Lan Xin, calculating the situation in his heart. Dealing with that finger-flicking boy was definitely not good, but dealing with this ridiculous yellow-clothed girl shouldn't be a problem. As long as he could mess with her a bit, then he would be able to restore some of his lost face.

Thinking of this, Elder Jiang coldly snorted and said, "Little girl, you've gone too far. Do you really think that you are unrivalled in this world? This old man will teach you to know your place!"

Lan Xing laughed and said, "I never said that I would deal with you. I said that if you could approach within three feet then you'll win. Right, Duanmu Qun?"

Hearing Lan Xin kick the ball towards him, Duanmu Qun helplessly shook his head. But now that things had reached this point, he certainly wouldn't sit around and watch Lan Xin needlessly suffer.

Elder Jiang looked at Duanmu Qun and his heart started beating rapidly. He wasn't able to see through this fellow's cultivation, but his intuition told him that he was surely an astonishing character!

Did these three people use some kind of secret skill to hide their cultivation? Just how strong were they really?



Elder Jiang hesitated to do anything. But at this moment, Xing Yang's true essence sound transmission echoed in his mind. "Elder Jiang, you don't have to be afraid. That boy just now used some secret ability similar to the 'Blue Yang Sword Law' to defeat Elder Sun. His strength isn't as amazing as you think it is."

"Blue Yang Sword Law?"

Hearing Xing Yang's true essence sound transmission, Elder Jiang was startled. Divine Sword Sect was near their Profound Province, so he naturally knew of the 'Blue Yang Sword Law'.

So it was like this...

Elder Jiang sullenly glanced at Lin Ming, feeling relieved. It must have been a similar secret skill. Otherwise, with Lin Ming's early Revolving Core cultivation, just how was it possible for him to send Elder Sun flying away with the flick of a finger?

Thinking like this, Elder Jiang felt some fear, but he wasn't too terrified now. Of course, even if Lin Ming used some kind of trick, Elder Jiang knew that he still could in no way be Lin Ming's match. After all, the strength of that spear energy was a reflection of the user's strength.

He decided to target Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin instead.

"Getting within three feet of you? Good! Very good! Are the juniors of this era always so arrogant? I'll see just what you can do

as I approach you!”

Elder Jiang seemed brimming with confidence, but the truth was that he was in a critical situation. After learning from Elder Sun’s example, he certainly didn’t dare to relax his guard. He revolved all the true essence within his body and extracted the thick saber from his back. Then, he rushed towards Lan Xin and Duanmu Qun.

As he shot forward, he paid particular attention to what Lin Ming was doing. Seeing that Lin Ming’s hands were crossed over his chest with no intention of helping, Elder Jiang breathed a sigh of relief.

“It’s only approaching them; it shouldn’t be too difficult.”

As Elder Jiang thought this, he stimulated all of his bodily protective true essence. He didn’t believe that this strange white-clothed youth was also a freak like that finger-flick fellow just now.

This sort of targeting juniors, and especially bullying the weak while avoiding the strong, was extremely despicable. Even Xing Yang found this hard to look at.

Duanmu Qun was calm as he brought his hands forward from behind him. As Elder Jiang was thirty feet away, a sharp light suddenly flashed in his eyes. The next moment, he formed a sword with his fingers and a fierce sword energy savagely shot out, creating sword lights so brilliant that they were hard to look at.

Rushing forward, Elder Jiang only felt a turbulent energy come at him, as if it would be able to split him in half. His expression suddenly changed. On instinct, he slashed out with his saber!

This saber strike was Yin Yang Profound Palace's Mountain Breaking technique. Saber light filled the skies like snow as it was used!

However, as the saber light and sword energy collided, a strange distortion suddenly appeared in space. The saber lights were pulled into the strange twisting space, bending, until finally, with a loud cracking sound, the bent saber lights were completely sliced apart by the sword energies, shredded to pieces!

The next moment, sword energy smashed into Elder Jiang's chest. Elder Jiang gave a stuffy cough as his bodily true essence broke apart. He flew backwards, his entire chest wet and dripping with blood.

Following this scene was a deafening silence.

Lin Ming was also slightly surprised. Duanmu Qun was in truth a two-star Fey King. That was equal to a middle Revolving Core martial artist. His cultivation wasn't much worse than Elder Jiang's, thus he was easily able to defeat him.

Lin Ming wasn't surprised that Duanmu Qun easily won. No, what he found interesting was the Concept of Space that was imbued into Duanmu Qun's attack. Their respective Concepts of Space had taken entirely different paths, but both were

incomparably exquisite styles. Originally, Duanmu Qun already had some understanding of the Concept of Space, but after gaining experience via passing through the ancient transmission array, his progress in that aspect had increased by leaps and bounds.

Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Duanmu Qun's talent.

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian also looked at Duanmu Qun with amazement. Duanmu Qun seemed to be in his twenties, but he actually had the strength of a peak Revolving Core master, no worse than Lin Ming!

Just this Duanmu Qun was already like this, and looking at Feng Shen and Lan Xin, neither of them seemed like common geniuses either. Were they all Lin Ming's friends? Mu Fengxian and the others hadn't been able to discover Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin's cultivation level, so they hadn't paid too much attention to them. But, thinking about it now, did these three people come from the four Divine Kingdoms?

It wasn't just Mu Yuhuang that thought this, but Xing Yang and Xing Zizan as well.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Lin Ming, altogether four youngsters... Were they all Emperor level talents?

This year, had Emperor level talents become common to this degree? Were they growing around like cabbages or something?

Xing Yang's expression was dismal, as if he had taken a great blow. He originally had pride in his own talent that barely qualified him as an Emperor level talent, but now facing Lin Ming and Duanmu Qun, all of his pride had been shattered.

Whether it was Lin Ming or Duanmu Qin, neither was weaker than him. Both were actually stronger than him!

Ca!

Xing Yang extracted a thick crimson saber that looked as if it was on fire. In Yin Yang Profound Palace, it was custom for men to use sabers and for women to use swords.

“I admit that you are strong. Very well, I will fight you with everything I have!”

Xing Yang pointed his treasure saber straight at Duanmu Qun. His treasure saber was a peak high-grade earth-step weapon, forged from refined fire gold. It was just a single step away from being a heaven-step treasure. And, most importantly, it had an additional function of boosting fire-attribute cultivation methods. It was the best weapon for him to use.

Xing Yang had chosen Duanmu Qun as his opponent after a long period of careful consideration. Before, Lin Ming had only used his spear energy to attack, so the true depth of his strength was still unknown. He didn't dare to risk fighting him at this time. If he lost, then any face still he had would be swept away.

If he was facing Duanmu Qun, Xing Yang still had some confidence in himself.

# Chapter 695 – All Daggers Drawn

---

Hu – !

In Xing Yang's hand, the high-grade earth-step saber flared with a faint crimson flame, as if the entire blade had been heated up to a scorching degree.

This saber could increase Xing Yang's fire-attribute cultivation method by 10-20%. Having paid a hemorrhaging price to forge this weapon, now that it was in his hands, Xing Yang could feel the burning flames emanating from it suddenly emboldening him.

“My saber is called Scarlet Flame, and my name is Xing Yang!”

Xing Yang pointed his saber straight towards Duanmu Qun, issuing this official challenge.

Naturally, Duanmu Qun didn't fear this sort of challenge. A young outstanding elite like Xing Yang would count as just one of the mob on Skysplit Tower's third floor.

He drew his sword to meet Xing Yang. However, at the same time, sudden rambling footsteps sounded outside the courtyard. About seven or eight Yin Yang Profound Palace martial artists suddenly crashed into the courtyard. Many of them had a cultivation at the early or middle Revolving Core realm, while the one leading them was a late Revolving Core powerhouse.

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, those below the late Revolving Core realm were Protectors, and those at the late Revolving Core realm or above were considered Elders.

These seven or eight martial artist were Xing Yang's own guard retinue. They were skilled in martial abilities and array coordination. They had come together with Xing Yang to join in on the negotiations, and had originally been waiting on the spirit boat. But when they saw the walls of the hall being smashed apart, they all rushed in to protect Xing Yang.

Ca! Ca! Ca!

Several people immediately drew their weapons. A barrier of sabers and swords suddenly surrounded Lin Ming and the others.

For a while, the atmosphere was tense, weapons drawn and killing intent overflowing, ready to explode at any moment.

Seeing this volatile atmosphere, Mu Yuhuang's breath caught in her chest. Lin Ming's strength that had been able to defeat Elder Sun with just a flick of his finger truly did exceed her expectations. But, how could Lin Ming alone face the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace?

The situation had seriously devolved once Xing Yang's guards had arrived. Once they started fighting, the consequences would be calamitous.



Even more so if it ended with casualties. There was no chance of a pleasant outcome.

As the saying went, the strong dragon would not bother with the little snakes. In the current state of things, not only was Yin Yang Profound Palace their literal landlord, but they also far exceeded Divine Phoenix Island in strength. The difference was far too great. If Yin Yang Profound Palace claimed that their own disciples had been beaten to take advantage of things, then Divine Phoenix Island would truly suffer in negotiations. It was likely that Yin Yang Profound Palace would demand a sky high price.

Being thrust into this situation, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were both nervous; it had already spiraled out of their control. If this continued...

Mu Fengxian sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, "Yin Yang Profound Palace has two Palace Masters, both at the second stage of Life Destruction. The two of them use a complementary Yin Yang cultivation method. If they join forces they can vastly increase their strength, achieving a stage comparable with a third stage Life Destruction master, to a certain degree. Not just that, but we need Yin Yang Profound Palace's protection. If we fight with these people, not only would it be difficult to win, but even if we did, the ones who lost in the end would still be us."

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian's worrying was understandable. Even Mu Bingyun was unable to stay indifferent in this situation. She did not blame Lin Ming for his recklessness. Instead, in a show of support, she took a half step back, keeping a forceful posture. At

the same time, her left hand traced the spatial ring on her right hand, ready to draw out the Blue Luan sword at any moment.

Lin Ming didn't say anything. But, Lan Xin was already itching to stir up some chaos. She rowdily shouted, "You want a group fight? Let's do this!"

Ca!

Lan Xin flourished her sword.

Feng Shen and Duanmu Qun wordlessly drew theirs. As Holy Land descendants, they had never held this Yin Yang Profound Palace in their hearts, not to mention that Lin Ming was also here.

Three shining and dazzling swords faced the seven or eight surrounding weapons.

The atmosphere was ripe with tension, about to explode into a battle at any time. This was precisely Lin Ming's intention. He quietly took out a long spear from his spatial ring. Actually, with Lin Ming's strength, he didn't even need to take out his spear. But then he considered that Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were also here. Once a fight started, the two of them might easily be captured by that first stage Life Destruction master. In order to prevent such a situation from occurring, Lin Ming decided to no longer hold back at all.

Watching Lin Ming pull out his spear, Xing Yang smiled fiercely.

He didn't fear a fight here. After all, this was their Yin Yang Profound Palace's home ground. Once they fought, the ones to have the last laugh would definitely be them. They weren't in a weaker position either. There was Xing Zizan, as well as the eight Revolving Core guards who could lay down an array formation to greatly increase their strength.

As long as he persisted, support from Yin Yang Profound Palace would continuously pour in. Then, if the situation spiraled out of control even further, his father and mother would also arrive. At that time, even if Lin Ming was some superhuman with multiple limbs and heads he would still be captured!

Thinking of this, Xing Yang soon calmed down. Before, he had panicked a bit because Lin Ming and Duanmu Qun's strength had completely exceeded his expectations, catching him off guard.

Xing Yang sneered and said, "Truly, you have no idea what death or danger means. Since you dare to act so brashly in my Yin Yang Profound Palace, it no longer matters how great your background is! You dare to sneak into my Yin Yang Profound Palace's meeting hall, disrupt negotiations, provoke my Yin Yang Profound palace?! Then even if I punish you, waste you, or kill you, all of it is within reasoning. Your sect can no longer say anything!"

"Everyone obey my commands! Capture these thieves for..."

Xing Yang was about to say 'capture these thieves for my punishment', but as he spoke, his voice actually trailed off until he turned silent.

He blankly stared at Lin Ming's long spear, a faint foreboding feeling in his heart, as if something was off. Then, as if he had suddenly realized something, he instantly looked at Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen's swords. As he saw the chilling light and incomparably sharp energy they gave off, he sucked in a breath of cold air, his heart trembling.

Heavens!

Four!

Four heaven-step treasures!!!

He looked at the Scarlet Flame Saber in his hands, on which he had spent a massive amount of money. This was a peak earth-step treasure. Within the entire southern tip of the Sky Spill Continent, this was already an extremely kick-ass weapon. But compared to Lin Ming and the other three, his weapon was nothing more than garbage.

Even though a peak earth-step treasure was just a single step away from being a heaven-step treasure, the truth was that the disparity was gargantuan. It was like comparing late Revolving Core to Life Destruction, or a high stage Life Destruction to the Divine Sea.

Looking at his guards' weapons, they were nothing but high-grade earth-step weapons; there were even some medium-grade earth-step weapons! Even the weapon in Xing Zizan's hands was

only a slightly better high-grade earth-step treasure.

This is... Just what was going on here?

Since when did heaven-step treasures litter the streets as if they were cabbages?

Within the entire Profound Province, there was not a single heaven-step treasure. Only the top ranked abbot of Great Zen Temple, who had already returned to seclusion, and the South Sea Demon Region's Highest Elder Xuan Wuji had a heaven-step treasure each.

Could these people...

Xing Yang's eyebrows shot up. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, only the four Divine Kingdoms in the central region had that many heaven-step treasures.

These people, could they have come from the four Divine Kingdoms?

Thinking of this, Xing Yang's heart shrank in fear. To fight with the descendants of the four Divine Kingdoms, that was just running headlong into death!

The Divine Kingdoms cared not for reasoning; they did not care about what was right or what was wrong.

That was because strength was the final and ultimate truth!

In front of a Holy Land, Yin Yang Profound Palace was nothing but bottom dwelling scum.

“No, no, ah, something’s wrong, the four Divine Kingdoms shouldn’t have such a strange race with long ears and scales. Also, didn’t that spear-carrying boy say he was from Divine Phoenix Island? Why would he have a heaven-step treasure? Did they manage to obtain these weapons through some kind of colossal lucky chance?”

# Chapter 696 – Broken Blade

---

Xing Yang's face was filled with a gloomy uncertainty. As for Mu Yuhuang, she was panicking. She had no idea just how this situation would end.

“Prepare a sound transmission talisman, report what is happening!”

As the guard captain spoke, several Revolving Core Protectors quickly reacted, their fingers tracing their spatial rings. After all, this was the territory of Yin Yang Profound Palace. As long as they called for more manpower, they would be the ones with the advantage.

Seeing a Revolving Core Protector light up a sound transmitting talisman in front of her, Lan Xin sneered. She instantly flash-stepped in front of that martial artist, her sword slashing at the wrist!

Having stayed in Skysplit Tower for several years, although Lan Xin looked like a beautiful sun-dappled girl, in truth she was a decisive person with no soft corners. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for her to survive in Skysplit Tower.

“Evil girl, you dare!?” The guard captain's eyes flashed with anger. He slashed with his saber at Lan Xin's neck.

“Humph!”

Lan Xin showed no weakness. Her sword slashed upward, intersecting with the saber. True essence collided, and the guard captain's saber light was ripped to shreds by Lin Ming, followed by Lan Xin's sword light slicing towards his vital points.

The guard captain's complexion paled. He never imagined that this twenty-or-so-year-old girl could make him suffer a loss with a single sword strike.

Just who were these people?

“Line up in formation!”

The guard captain shouted, shocked. Although the eight of them were only mid and late Revolving Core martial artists, once they fell into formation and combined that with several array flags and array discs, together they could actually resist a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse for quite a bit of time.

Woosh!

Several keen saber lights fused together. As the eight guards combined their power, their aura suddenly shot up drastically.

Lan Xin came into contact with this saber light and gave a stuffy cough, her beautiful face paling. Luckily, Duanmu Qun was quick of eye and hand. He slashed downward with his sword, fending off the fused sword energy that rushed towards Lan Xin.



“Very well, since you want to play so much, then this old man will accompany you!” Xing Zizan stepped forwards. With it, his aura suddenly erupted. Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and everyone else felt a great pressure pushing down on them. Xing Zizan was a first stage Life Destruction master as well as the Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Vice Palace Master and the strongest powerhouse present.

With Xing Zizan’s status, participating in the battles of these juniors and Revolving Core martial artists was somewhat embarrassing. But, seeing that Xing Yang had already lost control of the situation, he had no choice but to step in.

“Second Uncle, they might be related to a Holy Land somehow,” Xing Yang quickly reminded.

For Duanmu Qun and those others to be so young and to also have a heaven-step treasure on them, they must have either come across a massive chance, or they must have come from a Holy Land.

“I know,” Xing Zizan coldly replied. Now it was no longer the time to consider the other party’s origin. Even if they did come from a Holy Land, he still had to establish his dominance.

Everybody was already at odds, swords drawn. If they could capture the other party, then they would have the advantage. But, if they could offend them and still defeat them, then that would be an even better result. In the world of martial artists, strength was everything. One’s background was never as good as the person. At

the very least, he had to suppress them in strength.

Xing Zizan specifically targeted Lin Ming. “So young and yet already so greedy. You dare to propose such a ridiculous request to us? This old man just wants to see whether or not you’re capable of backing up your preposterous words!”

Lin Ming glanced at Xing Zizan and sneered, “Greedy? Are you talking about your own Yin Yang Profound Palace? You rented a third-grade spiritual land to Divine Phoenix Island. Even you lot feel it doesn’t match their worth and on top of that you didn’t even give them any training resources. With this alone, you wanted to exchange for Divine Phoenix Island’s fundamental Vermillion Bird bloodline and all sorts of secret skills? You even hid your goals and plotted to annex Divine Phoenix Island! And now, you want to say that I’m the greedy one here? Should we also bow down as we hand over all of Divine Phoenix Island to you? The South Sea Demon Region is already publically trying to destroy us, and yet you try to secretly absorb us. In my eyes, there’s no difference between you all!”

“Hahaha, what a well-spoken young man! Your Divine Phoenix Island came to my Yin Yang Profound Palace to rent a spiritual land and also seek refuge, so what problems are there in the conditions we presented? But you, you are unbelievably greedy. As soon as you opened that mouth of yours you demanded half of Yin Yang Profound Palace’s resources. How laughable!”

Lin Ming scoffed as he derided Xing Zizan, “I really admire how thick-skinned you are. Is deceiving the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island also part of the conditions you set for Divine Phoenix

Island?”

After being questioned like that, Xing Zizan could no longer keep calm. He glowered, “What an impossible pompous and arrogant junior! You keep spitting out such rude insults. Then, this old man will teach you a lesson as your elder!”

“Humph! With me here, it’s not your place to teach my disciples anything!” said Mu Yuhuang, stepping in front of Lin Ming. Xing Zizan’s cultivation was an entire great boundary higher than Lin Ming. At this time, Mu Yuhuang could no longer bother to be conflicted about her dealings with Yin Yang Profound Palace. Since Xing Zizan wanted to act, then she naturally had to follow him as the only one in Divine Phoenix Island who had the combat strength of a Life Destruction powerhouse. As for Mu Fengxian, although she also had a Life Destruction cultivation, her life source was too greatly damaged and now her strength had fallen to that of an ordinary late Revolving Core martial artist.

In this situation, she had to stand up in order to support those on her side.

Lin Ming only needed to look at Mu Yuhuang and Xing Zizan’s contrasting auras to instantly perceive that Mu Yuhuang was simply not Xing Zizan’s match. Mu Yuhuang had just broken through into Life Destruction one year before, and she hadn’t yet consolidated her strength. Her foundation was still shaky. But looking at Xing Zizan, he had already been stranded at the Life Destruction level for 100 years. Now, his strength was a large cut above Mu Yuhuang.

Seeing that Mu Yuhuang was willing to stand up for him even if it meant disgracing herself, Lin Ming felt grateful for her actions. Although Divine Phoenix Island had become increasingly pitiful these last years, losing a massive amount of disciples while their resources rapidly disappeared, and dropping from a peak fourth-grade sect to a medium fourth-grade sect, one thing that never changed was Mu Yuhuang's character, proud and loyal to a fault. Even if Divine Phoenix Island was suppressed by Yin Yang Profound Palace from all sides, she would never show weakness in front of others.

Lin Ming calmly walked beside Mu Yuhuang and stood side by side with her. With a true essence sound transmission, he told her, "Sect Master, I have confidence in myself."

"Mm?"

Mu Yuhuang was startled. At that moment, Xing Zizan glared at Mu Yuhuang with contempt and said, "Mu Yuhuang, you really care too much about saving face. You simply relied on medicine to reach Life Destruction; your talent isn't even at the Saint level. Since you want to die so badly, then allow me to help you!"

"I am your opponent." Lin Ming waved his spear, gripped the shaft with one hand and pointed the shimmering white tip at Xing Zizan's eyes, his aura dominant and forceful.

Pointing at someone with the spear point was already a great provocation. Xing Zizan immediately became furious. "You really don't know what it means to die! You are arrogant and you have talent, but arrogant talents often die young! This old man will help

you! Since you're a junior, then this old man won't bully the young. If you can force me to use my saber then it'll count as your win!"

In Xing Zizan's eyes, he didn't care too much about Lin Ming using that spear energy to wound Elder Sun. Even if that were his normal strength, Xing Zizan was still confident he could deal with him. Moreover, although Xing Zizan's weapon was a saber, the truth was that he could use his palm as a saber and his strength still wouldn't weaken by too much.

What he didn't notice was that when he said these words, a strange look came over Duanmu Qun's face. Lan Xin also faintly smiled, waiting to see the good play about to take place.

"Pooh! Old fool, you are far too shameless. At your age, you're already over thirty times older than Lin Ming! Let me accompany you!" Mu Yuhuang was afraid that Lin Ming would suffer a loss. She immediately extracted her long sword, ready to fight Xing Zizan.

At this time, Mu Qianyu's voice suddenly sounded out in Mu Yuhuang's ear, "Sect Master, Lin Ming is very strong. As long as it's just forcing him to use a weapon, he should be able to do that."

Hearing Mu Qianyu's words, Mu Yuhuang was startled. Indeed... Knowing Lin Ming, she could tell that he never acted recklessly. Even though he liked taking on challenges a bit too much, he would only do so if he had confidence in himself.

Perhaps he really could force Xing Zizan to use his weapon. If so, then even if Lin Ming couldn't defeat Xing Zizan, it would still be possible with her help. With two against one, it would be more than enough to defeat him.

Thinking this, Mu Yuhuang gave one final look at Lin Ming before stepping back.

“Humph, since you don't care about your life, then this old man will be rude!” Xing Zizan lifted his hands. Even without a saber, his palm saber was still incomparably sharp. As he closed his fingers together, the space around them seemed to tremble!

This degree of combat strength... Lin Ming simply didn't place it in his eyes. He felt no threat at all from someone like Xing Zizan, or anyone else there. Within the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace, the only ones that could possibly endanger Lin Ming would be the Xing couple, the two Palace Masters.

Lifting the white spear in his hands, thunder began to flicker atop the shaft. After infusing his spear with his battle spirit and the power of thunder, Lin Ming suddenly thrust out.

Chasing Thunder!

In that instant, the entire courtyard lit up with the radiant light of thunder. A sharp and savage aura recklessly surged forward. Everyone felt as if they had gone blind, their souls completely exposed, as if they were nothing more than common mortals standing in an endless plain of cold snow.

Woosh!

Lin Ming's spear shot through space, instantly arriving in front of Xing Zizan!

How!?!?

Xing Zizan was scared witless. He was about to thrust out his palms when something felt wrong. And sure enough, when his saber energy touched Lin Ming's spear light, it shattered like a pane of glass!

Xing Zizan paled. He no longer cared about status and quickly drew a saber from his spatial ring. He fiercely bit down on his tongue, spraying out a mouthful of blood onto the saber and then slashed out!

The violent saber energy was like a storm as it rushed outward.

Kacha!

Sword and spear collided; Xing Zizan's saber was straight out cut in half!

What!?

Xing Zizan couldn't even believe this was real. He had completely

forgot his rank and pulled out his weapon, hoping to keep this strike away. But just as he had struck out with his saber, even using blood essence to enhance the blade, his saber had actually been cut in half!?!?

In that split-second, Xing Zizan hadn't even had time to realize what had happened.

After the white spear shattered the saber, its momentum didn't slow at all. Without any ability to respond, Xing Zizan gave a miserable shout as he felt the cool touch of the spear light as it pierced through his chest, blood spraying out from behind!

An energy fused with battle spirit savagely poured into Xing Zizan's meridians. It tore his lungs into a mess and even crushed several of his ribs.

A crazy shockwave flushed out in all directions, completely blowing away all the walls of the meeting hall and sending every standing structure collapsing to the floor, pulverized into gravel. As for the courtyard, everything had been razed and even the roof had been blown away.

Xing Zizan spat out a mouthful of blood. On the right side of his chest, a massive bloody hole appeared, bright-red blood gushing out from it. His vision turned black, and he nearly fainted where he stood.



# Chapter 697 – Hall of Flowing Blood

---

How...how could this be?

Xing Zizan covered his right chest, the blood thickly flowing through the cracks of his fingers. As he looked at his blood-soaked hands, his eyes filled with panic and disbelief.

Xing Zizan had instantly been defeated!

Behind Xing Zizan, Xing Yang was shocked speechless. He couldn't bother to figure out how Lin Ming had done this. He just knew that chills were crawling down his back. With Lin Ming's strength, killing him would only take an instant.

And before now, Lin Ming had already revealed a thick killing intent against him.

This was also natural. If Xing Yang was in Lin Ming's position and someone had thoughts to take his woman, then he too would kill or castrate his enemy.

Moreover, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all had heaven-step weapons and likely originated from a Holy Land. In front of a Holy Land descendant, he was the same as a beggar in front of a rich young lord. For these types of people, killing commoners over things like jealousy or disputes was nothing unusual!

It could be said that even if Lin Ming killed him, with the absolute suppressive strength from a Holy Land, there was nothing his parents would be able to do.

Thinking of this, Xing Yang was extremely horrified. That impact of energy just now was so amazingly intense that it should have been sensed from the main peak. But could he persist until his parents arrived?

If he died because of something like jealousy, then he really would die in an unjustified manner.

‘Capture Mu Qianyu first!’

This thought suddenly flashed through Xing Yang’s mind. He was close to Mu Qianyu, and after Lin Ming used that Chasing Thunder spear skill to severely wound Xing Zizan just now, he was now several hundred feet away.

Xing Yang grit his teeth, a fierce light suddenly bursting out from his eyes. Mu Qianyu’s cultivation was only at the early Revolving Core realm and Xing Yang was at the late Revolving Core realm. In terms of talent, Xing Yang was above Mu Qianyu, and in terms of strength, he far exceeded her.

Quietly, with the slightest movement, he took a step backwards. He sent a true essence sound transmission to the eight Revolving Core Protectors, then he suddenly launched forwards!

Mu Qianyu was Lin Ming's lover. Naturally, he would especially care for her safety. As long as he could capture Mu Qianyu then he wouldn't need to fear being randomly harmed or killed, and he would be able to last until his parents came.

Xing Yang was not weak. He was an Emperor-level talent with a late Revolving Core cultivation. He could be said to be a powerhouse that had reached the limits of power beneath the Life Destruction realm!

Xing Yang's sudden attack surpassed everyone's expectations. Lin Ming, Mu Yuhuang, and everyone else were very far from Mu Qianyu now. Since Xing Yang was the first to move, he naturally held an advantage in speed.

“Yu'er, be careful!”

Mu Fengxian cried out in alarm. At this time, Mu Fengxian was the closest to Mu Bingyun. Because her life source had been damaged, she had stood far back from the battlefield with Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun. Now that she saw Xing Yang suddenly rush towards Mu Qianyu she had no other choice but to block him!

In terms of strength, Mu Fengxian was no longer Xing Yang's match. But if she could delay him for even just a single breath of time that was enough for Lin Ming to catch up!

However, just as Mu Fengxian made her move, Xing Yang's eight Revolving Core Protector guards also made theirs!

Just now they had received Xing Yang's true essence sound transmission and were already prepared. The eight of them had trained together for a very long time and had incomparably tacit understandings with each other. As soon as one moved, all of them moved in unison.

These eight guards all had a cultivation at the mid or late Revolving Core. If they were able to set down a formation on the battlefield, then they could use this to delay even a first-stage Life Destruction master for at least ten breaths of time.

Eight saber lights fused into one, cutting towards Mu Fengxian. Right now, Mu Fengxian was only equal to an ordinary late Revolving Core martial artist. There was no way she would be able to withstand this attack!

As Mu Yuhuang saw this she became full of anxiety. "Honorable Master!"

Mu Yuhuang was still 70-80 feet away from Mu Fengxian. As a first-stage Life Destruction master, she could quickly cross this distance in a brief moment. However, no matter how fast Mu Yuhuang's steps were, it was still impossible for her to respond in time to that saber light!

As Mu Yuhuang's feet began to move, the eight Revolving Core Protector's saber lights had shot in front of Mu Fengxian. At the same time, Xing Yang had also appeared in front of Mu Qianyu, his hands reaching out for her soft, jade-white neck!

Mu Qianyu had experienced battles both great and small; she did not panic in the least. She revolved all of her true essence to the limit and flew out towards Lin Ming. But the difference in strength was too great and Xing Yang also had the advantage of surprise. In that instant, Xing Yang was only a foot away from Mu Qianyu.

Xing Yang's eyes flashed with brutal light. In order to ensure the absolute success of grabbing her, this hold contained enough strength such that it was certain injure her.

“You want to die!?” Lin Ming's eyes widened as an unparalleled, pure killing intent flashed in them. His feet pushed off and then unbelievable scene occurred. He was hundreds of feet away, but distance seemed to lose all meaning beneath Lin Ming's movements. He flash stepped right to Xing Yang's side, the spear in his hand already slamming down into Xing Yang's wrist.

The heaven-step treasure struck Xing Yang's flesh and blood body.

Puff!

With a light sound, Xing Yang's wrist was crushed broken!

“Ahhhhh!”

With severe pain streaking throughout his body, Xing Yang grasped his wrist with a miserable scream as he tumbled away. Lin Ming didn't even bother caring about him. Because behind him,

not too far away, Mu Fengxian's sword was about to collide with the saber light of those eight Revolving Core Protectors.

As for Lin Ming, not only was he far away from Mu Fengxian but he had just used his momentum now to stop Xing Yang. In this case, no matter how skilled Lin Ming was in the Concept of Space, he still wouldn't have enough time to make it.

If Mu Fengxian bore the brunt of this attack, at most she would be injured; it wouldn't endanger her life. But Mu Fengxian was already old and had damaged her life source. Even a minor wound now was not a trivial matter.

Lin Ming fiercely clenched his teeth and condensed his true essence. With the support of his battle spirit, the Asura force field erupted!

A force field was a special existence. In a vacuum without resistance, it traveled at the speed of light. To this force field, a 70-80 foot distance held no significance!

Bang!

Under the fires of Lin Ming's anger, the force field's energy spread out like an unstoppable tsunami.

Within the Asura force field, all power was suppressed. This included organs, muscles, bones, true essence, and even the soul!

The eight Revolving Core protectors were swallowed up by the surging waves of this Asura force field. Immediately, all of them felt as if they had smashed into an invisible brick wall.

Lin Ming's strength was in-between the first and second stage of Life Destruction. Now, with the increased power of his battle spirit, his Asura force field was comparable to the original force field within the King's Cage. If a weak martial artist were trapped within this force field they would simply perish on the spot!

Although the eight Revolving Core Protectors had formed a battle array, this battle array's function was only to combine their saber light attacks together. As for this overwhelming force field that came instantly crashing down on them, they had no defense against it at all!

“Ahh!”

Several middle Revolving Core martial artists couldn't withstand such an immense pressure suddenly weighing down on them. They fell over, gurgling blood!

This was just like an ordinary person suddenly appearing on one of the Sky Spill Continent's stars where gravity was dozens or even hundreds of times stronger. Their organs, skeleton, dantian, spiritual sea, everything that comprised them would instantly come under a massive wave of pressure several dozen times greater than normal!

Peng!

A mid Revolving Core martial artist's Revolving Core suddenly shattered, all of the true essence in his body suddenly vanishing. At his side, another mid Revolving Core martial artist's heart stopped beating because of the heavy pressure. All of the blood vessels in his body burst apart and blood gushed out of his head!

Soon after, for all those Revolving Core martial artists, whether it was their dantian, heart, or spiritual sea, underneath the immense pressure of the Asura force field, everything began collapsing, instantly killing them all. Even the guard captain was bleeding from his ears. His face was paler than death and his body was limp as he almost fell to the ground.

After being devoured into that Asura force field, the battle formation of those eight Revolving Core Protectors naturally broke. As for that attack that was aimed towards Mu Fengxian, it no longer held any real threat and was easily countered by her.

“You...”

That late Revolving Core guard captain kneeled on the ground, barely supporting himself with his saber. He bit his lips as he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes full of fear and horror.

An uncaring expression remained in Lin Ming's face. A blood-red light flashed in his eyes.

The Death God force field erupted!



The Death God force field superimposed onto the Asura force field. Although this was simply stacking them together, it was still enough to multiply their strength.

The guard captain only felt as if he had fallen into a blood pond from hell, drowning in its bloody waters, the manifested killing intent so thick and pure that it was swallowing him alive.

This so-called killing intent was in truth the will and desire of a martial artist to utterly extinguish the life of an enemy.

When martial artists desired to kill someone, they would first produce this will within their hearts, thus sending out a thick killing intent. When this killing intent coalesced into material essence, one could directly cut off the life of another without even moving a step!

The Asura force field could be said to be a crushing suppression of a martial artist's body, true essence, dantian, energy, and spiritual sea.

As for the Death God force field, that was the will to snuff out a martial artist's source of life. If one's will wasn't firm or their cultivation was insufficient, then once enveloped by this Death God force field, they would immediately be killed where they stood.

As the guard captain was simultaneously covered by the Death God force field and Asura force field, he vomited a mouthful of

blood and his eyes turned white. He crumpled onto the ground, his fate unknown.

As Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian saw this, both of them were shocked speechless.

Just how was this possible?

How had Lin Ming done this? Mu Bingyun also looked at Lin Ming, her indifferent eyes now filling with awe, horror, and complete disbelief.

When Lin Ming had sent a late Revolving Core Elder flying back with just a flick of his finger, that was still a movement, and he might have possibly even used his spear energy to wound him. Although it was truly the ability of a monstrous genius, it was still understandable.

But just now, Lin Ming had only turned around with death in his eyes, and that entire group of guards had suddenly and inexplicably died!

That was a battle array that could withstand a first-stage Life Destruction powerhouse for a period of time!

This had completely surpassed their understanding.

“Lin Ming, you...” After seeing this terrifying strength, Mu Fengxian looked at Lin Ming as if she didn’t recognize him

anymore. This young man had surpassed all reckoning. In just two and a half years, Lin Ming had actually protected her, whereas she should be protecting him as he was her junior!

Not too far away, Duanmu Qun sucked in a deep breath, secretly admiring Lin Ming. Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon force field had already gained a standard of proficiency at which he could freely use it and control it to a minute degree. In that moment when the force field had erupted like a devastating tsunami, it had instantly killed several Revolving Core Protectors. But as for himself, who had been standing just a few dozen feet away, all he felt was a light breeze without even a hint of suppression.

Lin Ming's absolute control of his force field was bewildering!

Without a doubt, this was all because of Lin Ming's powerful soul force and also because of his battle spirit.

Because he had formed his own battle spirit, Lin Ming's will was exceedingly powerful. The will was in itself a kind of force field, and the battle spirit was a manifestation of that energy. Thus, a battle spirit could easily be fused into the Heavenly Demon force field, drastically increasing its strength.

At this time, the broken-handed Xing Yang was still rolling on the ground, crying in pain. Lin Ming sneered, angled his long spear, and slowly walked towards Xing Yang....

## Chapter 698 – Threaten

---

The heaven-step white spear, along with the battle spirit fused into it—just what sort of terrifying smashing strength did it have? From Xing Ying’s elbow and downwards, his entire arm had been ruined. All of his bones there had been crushed to smithereens and his arm looked like a pile of gooey mud; even the tiles had been shattered by the force.

Xing Yang held onto his wrist as he howled in excruciating pain. If he had top-quality medicines, then it would still be possible to rejoin his hand. But he would have to slowly readjust in order to restore it to its original level. This would require require a large amount of time and would greatly hinder his growth.

“You! You will pay for this!” Xing Yang spat out between clenched teeth as he saw Lin Ming walk towards him. But in truth his heart was quaking with immense fear. He was afraid that Lin Ming would kill him or castrate him on a sudden impulse. It wouldn’t be strange for a powerful young lord of a Holy Land to do so.

Seeing Lin Ming near, the aura that Lin Ming exuded gave a deep sense of suppression at Xing Yang.

Xing Yang tried to be angry, but his voice still trembled as he said, “What are you going to do!? The disciples of Divine Phoenix Island are currently within Yin Yang Profound Palace! If you kill me then none of them will leave here alive!”

When Lin Ming heard Xing Yang's threat, he merely sneered and raised his spear. Ever since he had experienced the Blood Slaughter Steppes for over two years, Lin Ming was inevitably affected by the killing aura there, even though his mind was firm. This resulted in a more bloodthirsty and vicious him than previous.

Just now, Xing Yang had attacked Mu Qianyu, and those eight other Revolving Core Protectors had jointly attacked Mu Fengxian. In this critical situation, all of the anger and murderous feelings that Lin Ming had been suppressing had suddenly erupted. He hated beyond measure those who attacked people important to him. For this, he was willing to completely unleash his strength and annihilate all of his enemies. This was also the reason that he had suddenly turned hostile against Yin Yang Profound Palace.

“Lin Ming, don't be so rash.” Mu Qianyu's figure flashed and she appeared in front of Lin Ming. She said to him with a true essence sound transmission, “If you kill some Protectors of Yin Yang Profound Palace, that won't yet place you in an irreconcilable position. But if you kill Xing Yang, then this will become an absolute blood feud with Yin Yang Profound Palace. For better or worse, Yin Yang Profound Palace is a fifth-grade sect. No matter how strong you are, it's impossible for you to protect everyone at once. Once Xuan Wuji leaves his seclusion, it will be dangerous if we don't have some reliable foothold. You are not yet Xuan Wuji's match!”

“Also, if news of you leaving leaks and Nanyun Wang or Great Zen Temple finds out, and you also have a deep enmity with Yin Yang Profound Palace, you will probably be backstabbed by your enemies....” Mu Qianyu nervously spoke.

Although Nanyun Wang wouldn't engage in some life or death battle with Lin Ming just because of some resentment from the past, it would still inevitably lay down in a knot in his heart. If Lin Ming provoked Yin Yang Profound Palace now, that was the same as simultaneously offending the four great influences of the South Sea Demon Region, Great Zen Temple, Nanyun Wang, and Yin Yang Profound Palace. That was the same as Lin Ming becoming enemies with all of the powerful forces near the South Horizon Region! How would he still continue living!

Even Duanmu Qun joined in with some advice. "Brother Lin, this Xing Yang is the child of Yin Yang Profound Palace's Palace Master? If you kill him then Divine Phoenix Island and Yin Yang Profound Palace will become as irreconcilable as water and fire. We and you might be safe, but there are many Divine Phoenix Island disciples who are at the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm. They will not be in a safe position."

After Lin Ming listened to Duanmu Qun's words, he appeared neutral. Suddenly, from a static position, he shot out, his fist crashing into Xing Yang's chest. Lin Ming's vibrating true essence poured into Xing Yang's meridians, causing Xing Yang to vomit a mouthful of blood and his eyeballs to bulge.

"You...you..."

Xing Yang pointed a trembling finger at Lin Ming, his mouth flapping like a dying fish even as fear filled his widened eyes.

Lin Ming rubbed his spatial ring and took out a pill. With a flick of his finger, it directly shot into Xing Yang's mouth.

Xing Yang wasn't even able to respond before he swallowed this pill.

His expression changed, his hue turning pallid as he asked in a panic, "What did you make me eat!?"

Lin Ming didn't bother responding. This medicine that he just force fed Xing Yang was an energy scattering pill he had taken from the corpse of an Imp High Lord. The Imps were experts at soul techniques as well as all sorts of alchemical skills and medicines. Their alchemy system was immensely different from those of humans'. Finding or creating a cure for this poison would be difficult.

This sort of energy scattering pill was used to make the user's body completely weak and useless. The level wasn't too high. If Xing Yang ate this pill in his peak form, it wouldn't have too great an effect. But, if Lin Ming repeatedly "cared" for Xing Yang, making it so that he remained seriously injured, the effects of this pill would be obvious.

"Lin Ming, what are you planning on doing!" Mu Yuhuang was worried to death. As soon as Lin Ming met Xing Yang, a fierce melee had suddenly broken out and then turned into a group battle. She didn't even have time to dwell on what was happening before a great disaster had occurred. Now it would be difficult for this to end in any good way.

"Honorable Sect Master, it is too late for me to elaborate in

detail. Please have all the disciples pack up their belongings and stand by for further orders. The Life Destruction Elders of Yin Yang Profound Palace will soon catch up.”

“Pack their belongings? You want to hold Xing Yang hostage to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace?” Mu Yuhuang’s thin eyebrows shot up. This really was an absurd idea.

Currently, Divine Phoenix Island basically didn’t have anywhere to go. Nearly all of the available spiritual lands were occupied by other sects. The higher level a spiritual land, the higher grade of people stationed there. Without a spiritual land, Divine Phoenix Island would lose the faith and will of the people. Then it would only be a matter of time before everything fell apart.

At this time, she felt several powerful energies quickly approaching. Mu Yuhuang’s expression changed. She was worried that Lin Ming would stay here. Still, she first lit a sound transmitting talisman to spread Lin Ming’s orders to everyone.

As for Xing Yang, who was lying on the ground, as he sensed the energies of those Yin Yang Profound Palace powerhouses close in, he was overjoyed. The high level characters had finally arrived!

And judging from the fluctuations of these energies, one of them was his mother.

He was saved. He was finally saved!



Xing Yang cried out. As long as his mother arrived he could be saved. Although his arm was cut off, it could still be joined back together. Thus, as he withstood the pain and mental anguish, he firmly decided to pay back Lin Ming ten times his due.

Thinking of this, Xing Yang looked at Lin Ming, his eyes suffusing with a manic hatred. “Boy! You are done for! If you kneel down and beg for mercy, then cut off your hands and legs, I will leave you your cheap life!”

Xing Yang’s mind had long fallen into madness and fury. He only wanted to waste Lin Ming now. And the reason he said he would leave Lin Ming his cheap life was to keep him alive after he was crippled with his limbs cut off. And then, in front of Lin Ming, he would wantonly ravage Mu Qianyu and also Mu Bingyun. What revenge was more cruel and depraved than completely crippling a person and then raping their wife in front of them?

‘Just you wait! I will make you experience such suffering that you will bite off your own tongue to commit suicide!’

All sorts of cruel and insidious thoughts crossed through Xing Yang’s mind.

Lin Ming could also feel this. He coldly glanced at Xing Yang, his eyes filling with killing intent.

Originally, he hadn’t planned on beating Xing Yang into this condition. However, because Xing Yang had tried to grab Mu Qianyu to make her a hostage, Lin Ming had become incensed. As a

result, he had cut off Xing Yang's arm, making Xing Yang's hatred towards him even deeper.

Once hatred reached this degree, it would be extremely difficult to resolve. Lin Ming was also disinclined to fix it. The most simple, direct, and ideal solution would be to eliminate him as soon as he found a chance. But this was not the time.

Bang!

The other side of the courtyard exploded. Xing Can appeared there, leading a group of four old men behind her. The high-speed flight here had stirred up a massive cloud of dust and dirt in the air.

Because all the structures here had nearly been destroyed in the previous fight, Xing Can was able to see Xing Yang's sorry state.

Seeing her own son's hand cut off and the eight Protectors dead on the floor, her face became as cold as the arctic frost with killing intent surging outwards from her.

Before she had even spoken, Xing Yang was already trying to crawl towards her, struggling on the floor as he writhed towards her, "Mother! Mother, save me!"

Swish!

A cold spear edge suddenly touched Xing Yang's neck, drawing a

fine line of blood. Xing Yang stiffened, no longer daring to crawl any further.

Like this, Lin Ming indifferently held his spear down, resting it against Xing Yang's cold and pale neck.

“What do you want?” Xing Can's eyes blazed as she looking at Lin Ming, the frostiness in her eyes seeming as if it came from the ninth level of the abyss. Although she was furious, she still noticed many details. The spear in Lin Ming's hand was actually a heaven-step treasure; it was even better than her own weapon.

In addition, Xing Zizan had been at the first stage of Life Destruction for a hundred years already. Yet, he had a hole through his chest and was lying prone on the ground, grievously wounded. By all reasoning, the strongest person in Divine Phoenix Island right now was Mu Yuhuang. But, even Mu Yuhuang would absolutely not have the strength to do this. And, looking at the wound on Xing Zizan's chest, it seemed to be from a spear. Had that been done by that boy?

Looking at him, he seemed just over 20 years old and his cultivation was at the early Revolving Core realm. It shouldn't have been possible, but no matter the case, this boy was undoubtedly a top-level genius. One that surpassed even Xing Yang.

Xing Can's feelings mixed anger and killing intent. If Xing Yang didn't have a spear pointed at his neck, then she would have already tried to kill Lin Ming. If she allowed such an extraordinary young elite like Lin Ming freely grow, then in just a few dozen

years he would definitely become a terrifying enemy.

“Don’t move. Otherwise, I may tense up and my hands might tremble,” Lin Ming calmly said as he kept his spear pointed at Xing Yang. In terms of strength, Xing Can had been in the second stage of Life Destruction for over a hundred years. He was likely not her match. But the key issue here was Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and everyone else. In front of Xing Can, they wouldn’t have any ability to resist her.

“I hate others threatening me the most. Release him now and I will leave you your life!” Xing Can drew out the sword from her spatial ring, pointing it straight at Lin Ming. Suddenly, her aura erupted like a billowing tide. If normal Revolving Core martial artists faced this aura they would be hard pressed to move and wouldn’t even be able to steady themselves, let alone keep their spear pressed against Xing Yang’s neck as a threat.

However, against this pressure, Lin Ming only felt as if a cool spring breeze had skimmed past his cheek, simply not even feeling it at all. He merely said in a chilling tone, “Move again, and prepare to gather your son’s corpse.”

As Lin Ming spoke he released an invisible killing intent; this was the Death God force field. Although he wasn’t activating it with his full strength, it was still enough for Xing Can to feel as if she had fallen into a bloody pond of hell, leaving her feeling afraid. Even the two first-stage Life Destruction Elders and two late Revolving Core Elders felt scared. They looking at each other, traces of fear in their eyes.

Was this really the aura of an early Revolving Core martial artist? And just why wasn't he even remotely affected by Xing Can's pressure just now?

"Who are you? Where did you come from?" Xing Can asked with a grimace. She felt as if this situation was becoming complicated. This fellow obviously wanted to stall for time. As for what he was waiting for, she had no idea.

"I am Lin Ming, from Divine Phoenix Island," Lin Ming calmly replied. He had never planned on hiding his status to begin with, nor could he have.

## Chapter 699 – Traveling Far and Wide, Only To Find It So Easily

---

“Lin Ming...you are Lin Ming!?” Xing Can was stunned as she heard Lin Ming give his name. Then she suddenly recalled everything at once. Two and a half years ago, the South Sea Demon Region had desperately searched for a youth called Lin Ming who had shaken the foundations of the South Sea, even posting a massively astronomical reward for him. The reason for this was that Lin Ming had entered into the Demon God Imperial Palace with a gaggle of Life Destruction old monsters, and then had bizarrely gone missing. The two immeasurably precious treasures of the Demon God Imperial Palace had also disappeared along with him.

The South Sea Demon Region believed it was highly likely that Lin Ming had taken these treasures.

But Divine Phoenix Island had announced that Lin Ming had died. Nanyun Wang and Great Zen Temple seemed to think this too, and didn't desire to waste time searching for Lin Ming. Only Xuan Wuji had been willing to use an immense amount of manpower and over half a year of time to do so. Finally, after the search was over, nothing had come from it and it had been acknowledged that Lin Ming had truly died.

Now, as Xing Can heard this youth suddenly call himself Lin Ming, she thought up a slight possibility. Lin Ming had likely tricked Xuan Wuji and all those others in the Demon God Imperial Palace those two and a half years ago. Then he had somehow escaped and found an isolated hiding spot where he had gone into

closed-door seclusion for over two years, his strength rapidly rising.

Thinking of this, Xing Can sucked in a breath of cold air. It was said that Lin Ming had been a peak Houtian martial artist. In front of those old Life Destruction monsters, he was nothing more than a little newborn baby. Yet how had managed to capture two precious treasures and also safely escape the Demon God Imperial Palace?

In this mere two and a half years of time, how did he reach Revolving Core from the peak of Houtian?

All sorts of thoughts and scenarios flashed through Xing Can's mind. Currently, this Lin Ming in front of her was an incomparably mysterious existence. He was absolutely not some simple youth!

But on the other hand, now that she knew Lin Ming's identity that meant that he also didn't have any relations with a Holy Land. Thus, she had no need to fear his origin.

"Lin Min...I see. Xuan Wuji wants to tear you to shreds, and yet you dare to appear before me! You truly love striding to your death! I will warn you one last time. Immediately release my son, otherwise, I won't even let you have a complete corpse left over, and all of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island will also be buried along with you! Your lover, your family, everyone you ever knew or loved will be sent to the South Sea Demon Region! I'm sure that Xuan Wuji will be very, very happy to see them.

Xing Can's lips curved into a cruel and sinister smile. The unknown enemy was the most fearful. But now she knew Lin Ming's background. Although Lin Ming's talent was extraordinary and he did indeed have some ability, a commoner was still a commoner. Without a powerful background, just what waves could a merely 20-something youth make when facing the millennium-long legacy of a fifth-grade sect?

Underneath Lin Ming's spear, Xing Yang felt exceptionally wronged as he heard Lin Ming's identity. If he had known that he was just a little, young disciple of a fourth-grade sect, then he never would have feared him to begin with.

If it were a Holy Son of a Holy Land who had beaten him into this state, then he would have been able to acknowledge that. After all, against a Holy Son, he was inferior in background, talent, resources, and tutelage. The Holy Son's status would also have been much loftier and nobler. If so, then he could accept it.

But as for Lin Ming...he was only a commoner of humble origin. To think that some little boy from Divine Phoenix Island had made him into such a mess...Xing Yang felt a fire raging in his soul.

“Lin Ming! So it was you all along! So you just wanted to show your anger? I have to say that you are an absolute idiot! Because of you, Divine Phoenix Island will no longer obtain the refuge of Yin Yang Profound Palace! On the contrary, Yin Yang Profound Palace will join forces with the South Sea Demon Region to completely annihilate Divine Phoenix Island! Your master, your little lover, all of them will die a miserable death because of you! Hahahahaha!”



Xing Yang wantonly laughed, his face twisted gruesomely. Only by verbally attacking Lin Ming like this would he be able to soothe his state of mind.

“You think that with the little strength you have you can fight on behalf of Divine Phoenix Island and obtain more benefits from us? How ridiculous! Because of your stupid approach, Divine Phoenix Island will pay the ultimate price!”

Lin Ming remained expressionless as Xing Yang spat out these words. But Mu Yuhuang’s and Mu Fengxian’s complexions became much uglier. What Xing Yang said was true. If Lin Ming could only form a stalemate like this by holding Xing Yang hostage, then that was basically a meaningless action. Sooner or later, Lin Ming would have to admit defeat. Then Yin Yang Profound Palace would certainly chase him down and kill him. Moreover, he had now given Yin Yang Profound Palace a righteous and valid reason to deal with Divine Phoenix Island. Before this, Yin Yang Profound Palace could have been considered an orthodox sect. In order to peacefully coexist with the other sects around it, it didn’t dare to forcefully plunder all of Divine Phoenix Island’s resources. But now, even ravaging them would be justified!

If Lin Ming didn’t compromise, then he could only continue to take Xing Yang hostage and lead all the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island in leaving Yin Yang Profound Palace. For such a massive group of people, it was simply a dream to think that they could hide from Xing Ji and Xing Can, whose combined power could compare with a third-stage Life Destruction martial artist. Moreover, if they left, then Divine Phoenix Island wouldn’t have any place they could settle. Their only choice then would be to

dissolve the sect, everyone going their own way. They would either be forced to return home or join some other sect to continue their path of martial arts.

If so, then Divine Phoenix Island would be no more.

Relative to the anxious and worrying Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, Lin Ming was actually very calm. He didn't even bother to return Xing Yang, instead keep his posture and remaining still, not revealing what he was planning at all.

For Xing Yang, Lin Ming's silence was nothing but a sign of his fear and signal of defeat. His laugh became increasingly loud and carefree. At this time, it was as if Lin Ming wasn't the one pointing the spear at his neck, but he instead was the one with the spear to Lin Ming's neck.

“Are you feeling guilty now? Are you planning on taking me hostage and leaving? Does your Divine Phoenix Island have a place to go? Even if it does, can you handle the South Sea Demon Region hunting you down? Hahahaha!” Xing Yang taunted, giving vent to all of his pent-up hate and anger. The more miserable Lin Ming became, the more smooth his thoughts would be.

Xing Can also stepped forward and coldly warned, “Immediately release my son and I might only cripple all your martial arts and let you keep your whole corpse. I might even let your Divine Phoenix Island continue staying in Yin Yang Profound Palace. Otherwise, there won't be a chicken or dog left in Divine Phoenix Island once I'm finished!”

Xing Can's voice was relentless. No one doubted she had the courage to follow up her words.

In terms of the battlefield, Yin Yang Profound Palace obviously held the upper hand. It was impossible for Lin Ming to continue this stalemate.

Xing Yang depravedly smiled at Mu Qianyu as he heard his mother issue out this threat. He could see that Mu Qianyu was still a virgin. This was far too perfect. With Lin Ming rousing up so much trouble, it was the same as gifting both Mu sisters to him together. As for the secret techniques of Divine Phoenix Island, they would be successively obtained now.

Mu Qianyu frowned as she felt Xing Yang's eyes on her, her face filled with absolute loathing and disgust.

But, when Xing Yang saw Mu Qianyu's expression, he was even happier.

'Mu Qianyu, I really feel sad for you. You actually ended up liking someone like Lin Ming, a stronger but stupid idiot. If you are willing to serve me with your sister in the future, then perhaps I might allow Divine Phoenix Island some shelter here.'

As Xing Yang thought this, the scene of both women serving him in bed appeared in his mind. Not only would he receive the service of the two talented twin sisters, but he would even be able to make love to them. Xing Yang was thoroughly anticipating this, not least

that he would also receive the bloodline inheritance from the two Mu sisters.

If he weren't afraid of angering Lin Ming and having Lin Ming kill him and drag him down just before Lin Ming's own death, then Xing Yang would have already described this dream-like scene to Lin Ming.

But as Xing Yang was weaving this beautiful dream in his mind, his eyes suddenly shrank. On the distant horizon, he could see a vague shadow rapidly approaching. It started off the size of a palm, but in the blink of an eye, it was the size of a house.

“Mm? What is that?”

It wasn't just Xing Yang that noticed the shadow on the horizon, but everyone else did too. It was obviously very far away from everyone, but its body already seemed as big as a palace. Because of its terrifying size and its fast flying speed, all of the surrounding clouds were wiped away.

Xing Can and the others were all stunned. This seemed like a massive, deep sea monster, but they could clearly make out fishlike fins, massive wings, and even the mouth of a whale.

“What is that thing?”

Xing Can and the others weren't sure, but Mu Yuhuang's and Mu Fengxian's expressions had already greatly changed.

In their entire lives, they would never forget this creature. Its attack had ripped open Divine Phoenix Island's great protective array, destroying the 3000-year-old inheritance of Divine Phoenix Island in a single stroke.

“Giant Leviathan!!!”

Mu Yuhuang shouted out in fright as she reflexively unsheathed her sword, her expression grim. She had already been conditioned to associate this great beast with the attacks of the South Sea Demon Region. But, as she thought about it some more, the Giant Leviathan had already been conquered by that 30-year-old Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, so why was it coming here at this time? Was this an enemy or a friend?

“Giant Leviathan?” Xing Can's eyebrows shot up. “So this is the Giant Leviathan! It truly lives up to its name!”

In these past few years, the Giant Leviathan had made too great a name for itself in the South Sea battlefield.

In terms of one-on-one combat, the beast was lacking. The Giant Leviathan's uniform speed and attacks made it so that it couldn't prevent a second-stage Life Destruction master from escaping.

But, in terms of its ability to destroy a sect, the Giant Leviathan could be called an invincible war beast. Even if it were the fifth-grade South Sea Demon Region, they also didn't have any strength to resist, equally being destroyed by this Giant Leviathan.

“The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince should be riding the Giant Leviathan. Why would he come to my Yin Yang Profound Palace?” Xing Can was alarmed. Within the Profound Province, the only fifth-grade sect here was the Yin Yang Profound Palace. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was definitely looking for them.

‘Could it be that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince needs us to help with some matter?’

As Xing Can thought of this, Xing Can couldn’t help but look forwards to this. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was indeed strong, but if he wanted to search for something within the Profound Province or handle some other matters, then it would certainly be easier to use some of the local powers.

Several days ago, they hadn’t been able to make contact with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince to form a relationship with him. But now, the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had actually walked right up to their door!

If they could establish good relations with this Divine King Crown Prince, the benefits to their Yin Yang Profound Palace were obvious.

‘To think we’ve searched so far and wide for nothing, and yet it’s so easily found here!’

As Xing Can thought this, she was prepared to immediately solve the problem that was Lin Ming. If the Divine Kingdom Crown

Prince saw what was happening here, then she feared his first impression of them would be greatly damaged. If even the Little Palace Master was captured, how could the Divine Prince still trust their sect?

“First, several Elders should seal up Little Swallow Mountain with an array. Do not let the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince see what is happening here!”

Xing Can sent a true essence sound transmission to the four Elders behind her. Currently, solving this problem in a short time was clearly impossible. She could only cover it up first.

# Chapter 700 – Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

---

“Yes, Palace Master!” The four Great Elders quickly laid down a simple array formation. This array formation could easily be broken by the likes of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, but he shouldn’t do something so impolite to begin with.

The four Elders linked their fingers and waggled them together, forming a series of array symbols that shot forth and formed a massive barrier of light that enveloped the entire Little Swallow Mountain.

Lin Ming was a bit confused when he saw this; what were they doing?

Xing Can had spoken to the four Elders with a true essence sound transmission. As such, Lin Ming had absolutely no idea why they were setting up tricks like this.

“We’re good!”

The four Elders smiled confidently as they replied with a true essence sound transmission. They had great trust in the speed and the quality of the array formation they had laid.

“Mm, very good. Palace Master Xing Ji had some business to attend to, so he was away. However, I’ve already sent out the news about what’s happened here right now so he should be returning



soon. This must all be handled to ensure the safety of the Little Palace Master. Also, nothing must go wrong with this meeting with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.”

Xing Can quickly told the four Elders with a true essence sound transmission. But then, her complexion suddenly changed. The Giant Leviathan was directly rushing towards Little Swallow Mountain and not the main peak of Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Little Swallow Mountain was only a hundred miles away from the main peak of Yin Yang Profound Mountain. By the time that Xing Can had discovered where the Giant Leviathan was heading, with its speed, it had already paused over the skies of Little Swallow Mountain.

With a body that was several dozens of miles long, the Giant Leviathan gave off a terrifying energy. This was truly a great sense of oppression.

“Damn!” Xin Can panicked. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was acting completely contrary to common sense. Little Swallow Mountain was so chaotic right now... how should she clean up this mess?

At this moment, Xing Can saw two black-clothed men jump down from the Giant Leviathan. Both of them had a cultivation at the first stage of Life Destruction.

“Those are the servants of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince! To have first stage Life Destruction martial artists as servants, that is

truly worthy of a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!”

This was what everyone was thinking. It had to be known that within Yin Yang Profound Palace, there were only 10 Life Destruction powerhouses in total. Because there were so few, a majority of the Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Elders were substituted by late Revolving Core martial artists. This was also the reason that the Yin Yang Profound Palace had been mocked by Lan Xin.

Xing Can was about to fly up to meet them, but she suddenly stiffened. She could feel that these two black-clothed old men’s auras were mixed with a deep and heavy killing intent!

“Mm?”

Xing Can was shocked. Could this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince have evil intentions in mind?

If so, then they were in trouble. But, that shouldn’t be right. The Yin Yang Profound Palace had been careful about its appearance for the last thousand years. Even if they had offended one of the four Divine Kingdoms somehow, it still shouldn’t be to the level where they would become so violent and murderous.

As Xing Can was surprised, unsure of what was happening, she suddenly glimpsed the mark of a demon on the two Elder’s chest. These black demon heads were surrounded by a flame-like pattern.

This... were these South Sea Demon Region Elders?

How was this possible?

As Xing Can was startled, she saw that Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian's complexions had completely changed. They both drew out their swords, and their violent reactions confirmed Xing Can's guess. These two were without a doubt South Sea Demon Region Elders!

“Be careful!”

Mu Yuhuang shouted as she pushed Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun behind her.

Could the South Sea Demon Region be attacking? They had just suffered a serious defeat so why would they recklessly attack Yin Yang Profound Palace? Did Xuan Wuji finally leave his seclusion?

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian tightly grasped their swords, their faces pallid. Mu Bingyun was also on full alert.

The two South Sea Demon Region Elders were extremely fast. They were middle-upper first stage Life Destruction powerhouses that had been stranded there for 100 years now. They dove down like hawks, falling straight behind Lin Ming, not even glancing at Mu Yuhuang's sword.

“Demon One and Demon Two greets master!”

The two South Sea Demon Region Elders, one left and one right, bowed to Lin Ming, then extracted their weapons and faced Xing Can.

Hearing them call Lin Ming master, everyone besides Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were dumbfounded. Even Xing Yang's chin nearly fell down.

Mu Qianyu understood how strong Lin Ming was, but she didn't know why these two South Sea Demon Region Elders would call him master.

These were first stage Life Destruction powerhouses! Within the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace, there were only 10 Life Destruction martial artists. Even the South Sea Demon Region didn't have that many.

Why would they take Lin Ming as their master? What was going on here?

Xing Can's eyes widened, her eyelids jumping straight up. The sword in her hand faintly trembled. She was not an idiot. After connecting the dots, she suddenly realized a possibility!

“You... you are the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!?”

These words shocked everyone present. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were dazed for a moment before they snapped out of it. Before now, the sudden changes in events had confused them all.

They were only worried about how to manage the situation. But now that they thought about it, besides Lin Ming's age, he really did have many similarities with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!

Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang glanced at each other, disbelief scrawled on their faces. They knew that Lin Ming was a dragon in a pool, but they never thought that the truth would be so exaggerated. They had simply underestimated him far too much. Lin Ming had only left for two and a half years, but when he returned his cultivation had reached the Revolving Core realm. With just his strength, he stole away the Giant Leviathan, razed the South Sea Demon Region, and was now resisting the Yin Yang Profound Palace with the Giant Leviathan!

Mu Bingyun gave Lin Ming a deep look and then glanced at her sister before putting away her sword, not sure what to do.

"I am a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince?" Lin Ming asked, slightly puzzled. But soon enough, he was able to deduce just why everyone had assumed this. He didn't show much expression, instead, he sent out some simple orders to the slave seals of the two South Sea Demon Region Elders. With these two Elders, in addition to himself, he wouldn't fear Xing Can even if they fought. Moreover, he also had Xing Yang as his hostage.

Lin Ming had originally come to Yin Yang Profound Palace to reunite with Mu Qianyu and the others. He never knew that Yin Yang Profound Palace had been trying to subtly swallow up Divine Phoenix Island and had also forced them into this situation. The Giant Leviathan was massive so he naturally couldn't bring it with

him everywhere. When Lin Ming had visited Yin Yang Profound Palace, he had done so with a friendly mindset. Thus, he didn't bring the Giant Leviathan here to intimidate Yin Yang Profound Palace, only letting it rest in the deep sea.

It was only after he met Mu Qianyu and learned about Divine Phoenix Island's situation did he issue out an order that night, having the Giant Leviathan arrive at the Yin Yang Profound Palace. This was why he had stalled for time and had taken Xing Yang hostage to do so.

Xing Can grit her teeth, completely unsure of what to do. The sudden changes in events had completely surpassed her every expectation. She thought that everything was in her grasp and that Lin Ming would never be able to escape her reaches, but now that had suddenly changed and her Yin Yang Profound Palace was at an absolute disadvantage.

Thinking about this, Xing Can felt her heart twist with bitter regret. If she had known about all this earlier, she wouldn't have dared to try annexing Divine Phoenix Island. Although the Giant Leviathan wasn't extraordinary in single combat, it had a near invincible defense. Under the Divine Sea realm, it was extremely difficult to cause major damage to it. But, as long as this beast attacked, it would be able to completely destroy Yin Yang Profound Palace's great protective array.

At this time, underneath Lin Ming's spear, Xing Yang felt his heart fading away like a dying fire. He had never thought that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince that he had been doing everything to form a friendly relationship with, was actually Lin Ming.

‘Heavens, were you playing with me?’

“You... what do you want?” Xing Can asked in a low voice. Under the immense pressure of the Giant Leviathan, she had no choice but to capitulate.

Lin Ming said, “First, return the Vermillion Birds. Second, all Yin Yang Profound Palace disciples that violated the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island will be turned over for punishment. Third, hand over one-third of the fire-attribute medicines and spirit earth from your medicine garden to help the Vermillion Birds restore their blood essence.”

Lin Ming unhurriedly spoke his request.

“You want one-third of our medicine garden? You think this is a dream or something?” Xing Can’s eyes flashed with a cold light, a caustic expression on her face. From Lin Ming’s three requests, the most she could agree with was the first. For the second, at most, they would punish their disciples in place of Divine Phoenix Island. But, the third was absolutely impossible!

“My conditions will not change. If you don’t agree, then I will take them myself.” Lin Ming said in a low voice.

“Hahaha!” Xing Can laughed furiously. “Who do you think you are? Do you really think you are a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince? Very well! It’s true that I’m afraid of the Giant Leviathan, but don’t think that you’re invincible just because you have that beast!

The Giant Leviathan can deal with our Yin Yang Profound Palace, but it cannot harm me or my husband. Also, do not forget that behind you are 1000 more Divine Phoenix Island disciples. If you use the Giant Leviathan to attack my Yin Yang Profound Palace, then I will join forces with the South Sea Demon Region to annihilate Divine Phoenix Island! I want to see just where in this wide world will you be able to take shelter!”

Xing Can’s aura exploded as she spoke. She was a Palace Master and also had a strong character. She never liked succumbing to the threats of others, especially threats as excessive and ridiculous as Lin Ming’s.

She estimated that Lin Ming’s weakness was the 1000 disciples of Divine Phoenix Island. If these people left Yin Yang Profound Palace, there was simply nowhere for them to go. Moreover, it would be extremely easy to attack them. It was impossible for Lin Ming to guard them day in and day out.

Lin Ming sneered, “I gave you a chance. Since you did not cherish it, then don’t blame me!”

As Lin Ming spoke, the Giant Leviathan suddenly opened its massive maw, issuing forth a long and rumbling roar like a thunderstorm spreading over the entire horizon. From the Giant Leviathan’s mouth, countless tentacles fell down like limitless pythons snaking down from the sky.

Xing Can paled, “What are you doing!?”



She subconsciously thought that Lin Ming was about to fight. Although her words were tough, the truth was that she was afraid. If she truly did fight with Lin Ming until the bitter end, then that meant both sides would perish. If she completely destroyed Divine Phoenix Island here, then her Yin Yang Profound Palace would also be buried along with them.

Once Lin Ming turned crazy, she had no idea how this would end.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Over a thousand tentacles soared down into the back mountains of Little Swallow Mountain. This was where the disciples of the Divine Phoenix Island lived!

“Sect Master, please tell the others not to panic.”

“Ah?” Mu Yuhuang was startled. She faintly guessed just what Lin Ming was planning to do. Before this mess started, Lin Ming had her tell all the disciples to pack up their belongings, obviously to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Could it be...

Mu Yuhuang didn't question him any further; she immediately lit a sound transmitting talisman.

Quickly, under the direction of Lin Ming's soul force, each of those tentacles would wrap around a Divine Phoenix Island

disciple and pulling them into its mouth.

There were more than 10 dimensions within the Giant Leviathan, each one of these containing a space. Some of these dimensions were extremely large. Combined together, it was more than enough to accommodate a thousand Divine Phoenix Island disciples.

And, most importantly, the Giant Leviathan was a great beast that could swallow heaven and earth origin energy. A single gulp could suck in all the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding 100 miles. It could be said that the space within the Giant Leviathan was a natural spiritual land. Moreover, the grade was extremely high. It was more than enough for the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island to cultivate with!